

Presented by Dr. Alexander
Ninian Bruce (1882-1968)
via Mrs. Dryerre.



ACCESSION NUMBER

323187

PRESS MARK

Spec. Coll.
Strong Room.



22501270576

Ninian and Louise
with wishes for a
merry Christmas
from Vernon

1938



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Wellcome Library

https://archive.org/details/b29825362_0002

HISTORY AND GENEALOGY
OF THE
BRIGGS FAMILY
VOLUME II



HOUSE OF CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, SR., PEMBROKE, MASS., WHERE HIS SON, CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, JR., WAS BORN, 1761, AND
HIS GRANDDAUGHTER, MERCY LITTLE THOMAS, THE MOTHER OF LLOYD BRIGGS, WAS BORN, 1791

(See Chapter XHI)

HISTORY AND GENEALOGY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY 1254-1937

IN THREE VOLUMES
VOLUME II

By
L. VERNON BRIGGS

Honorary Member of the Kansas State Historical Society, Macon Public Library and Historical Society (Georgia), New London County Historical Society (Connecticut), Wyoming Historical and Genealogical Survey, Washington State Historical Society (Tacoma), Theatre of Arts and Letters, and Société Académique d'Histoire Internationale (Paris); Trustee of the Pilgrim Society (Plymouth, Mass.); Mate and Director of the Nautical Historical Society (Scituate, Mass.); Life Member of the Bostonian Society, New England Historic-Genealogical Society and Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities; Member of the Old Colony Historical Society (Taunton, Mass.), Essex Institute (Salem, Mass.), Beverly Historical Society (Massachusetts), Arizona Pioneer Historical Society, Sons of the American Revolution, Scituate Historical Society (Massachusetts), American Folk Lore Society, New Haven Colony Historical Society (Connecticut), New Hampshire Historical Society, Hancock, N. H., Historical Society (Charter Member and President), Missouri Historical Society, Marine Museum of Boston, Military Historical Society of Massachusetts, Maine Historical Society, Stetson Kindred of America, National Geographic Society, Braintree Historical Society (Massachusetts), Norwell Historical Society (Massachusetts), Minnesota Historical Society (St. Paul), American Association for the Advancement of Science, Academy of Political Science (Columbia University), American Academy of Political and Social Science (Philadelphia, Pa.); Chairman of the Committee for the Preservation of the Park Street Church (Boston); Affiliated Member of the Business Historical Society of Harvard University; and Fellow of the Society of Genealogists of Great Britain, the Royal Geographic Society (London), and the Hakluyt Society (British Museum, London). Author of "History of Shipbuilding on the North River, Plymouth County, Mass., with Genealogies of the Shipbuilders," "History and Records of the First Congregational Church of Hanover, Mass.," "History of St. Andrew's Church, Hanover, Mass.," "Kent Genealogies, 1295-1898," "History and Genealogy of the Cabot Family in America, 1474-1927," etc.

PRIVATELY PRINTED

BOSTON
CHARLES E. GOODSPEED & CO.
1938



(2) BZP (Briggs)

CONTENTS

VOLUME II

	PAGE
CHAPTER XI: GENERATION V CONTINUED—ANCESTRY OF LUCY OTIS, WIFE OF THOMAS BARKER ⁵ BRIGGS THE OTIS — CUSHING — ENSIGN — GILMAN — JACOBS — LORING AND DOANE ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY	403
CHAPTER XII: DESCENDANTS OF WALTER ¹ BRIGGS, GENERATION VI	521
CHAPTER XIII: CUSHING OTIS ⁶ BRIGGS, HIS WIFE, MERCY LITTLE ⁶ THOMAS (CONTINUATION OF GENERA- TION VI, INCLUDING HENRY ⁶ BRIGGS)	539
CHAPTER XIV: BRIGGS ANCESTRY WILLIAM THOMAS LINE HON. WILLIAM ¹ , CAPT. NATHANIEL ² , HON. NATHANIEL ³ , LIEUT. ISAAC ⁴ , ISAAC ⁵ , POLLY ⁶ , MERCY LITTLE ⁷ , WHO MAR- RIED CUSHING OTIS BRIGGS; AND MATTHEW ¹ AND JOHN ² CUSHING LINE MATTHEW ¹ , JOHN ² , JOSHUA ³ , ABIGAIL ⁴ , WHO MARRIED LIEUT. ISAAC THOMAS, FATHER OF ISAAC ⁵ , WHO WAS FATHER OF POLLY ⁶ THOMAS, WHO MARRIED ICHABOD THOMAS	595
CHAPTER XV: BRIGGS ANCESTRY JOHN THOMAS LINE JOHN ¹ , SAMUEL ² , NATHAN ³ , CAPT. ICHABOD ⁴ , SR., CAPT. ICHABOD ⁵ , JR., MERCY LITTLE ⁶ THOMAS, WHO MARRIED CUSHING OTIS BRIGGS, MAJOR GENERAL JOHN THOMAS OF REVOLUTIONARY FAME	662
CHAPTER XVI: DESCENDANTS OF WALTER ¹ BRIGGS, GENERATION VII	732

	PAGE
CHAPTER XVII: DESCENDANTS OF WALTER ¹ BRIGGS, GENERATION VII CONTINUED WILLIAM T. ⁷ , HANNAH B. ⁷ , JAMES E. ⁷ , HARRISON O. ⁷ , MARY T. ⁷ , CHILDREN OF CUSHING OTIS ⁶ BRIGGS	753
CHAPTER XVIII: DESCENDANTS OF WALTER ¹ BRIGGS, GENERATION VII CONTINUED — LLOYD ⁷ BRIGGS CUSHING OTIS ⁶ , THOMAS BARKER ⁵ , JAMES ⁴ , JAMES ³ , COR- NELIUS ² , WALTER ¹	776
CHAPTER XIX: SARAH ELIZABETH ELMS KENT, WIFE OF LLOYD BRIGGS MOTHER OF 193. L. VERNON BRIGGS AND GRANDMOTHER OF 209. LLOYD CABOT BRIGGS	814

ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME II

	FACING PAGE
HOUSE OF CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, SR., AND CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, JR., PEMBROKE, MASS., <i>frontispiece</i>	
JAMES OTIS, THE PATRIOT	413
CAPT. STEPHEN OTIS' HOUSE, 1697	426
JOSHUA OTIS HOUSE	426
MONASTERY NEAR BURGOS, SPAIN	430
DR. EPHRAIM OTIS' HOUSE	430
SKATUTAHKEE HOUSE, ON FARM OF DR. AND MRS. L. VERNON BRIGGS, HANCOCK, N. H.	434
FOUNTAIN AND FLOWERS, SKATUTAHKEE HOUSE	434
DR. ISAAC OTIS' HOUSE, SOUTH SCITUATE, MASS.	444
HOUSE BOUGHT BY DR. ISAAC OTIS IN 1723	444
DRUMMER STETSON HOUSE, CENTRE HANOVER, MASS.	446
EARLY PRINT OF DR. ISAAC OTIS' HOUSE	446
BRIGGS, OTIS AND KENT ANCESTRAL AUTOGRAPHS	456
SAMPLER OF LUCY OTIS, 1773	458
BEACON STREET RESIDENCE OF DR. AND MRS. L. VERNON BRIGGS	468
WILLIAM H. BRIGGS	477
REV. NEHEMIAH THOMAS	477
CHATEAU OF MARQUIS D'EVRY, FRANCE	477
"DELANO MANSION," SOUTH SCITUATE	480
DR. CUSHING OTIS HOUSE, SCITUATE	480
HELEN, CHARLOTTE AND CAROLINE OTIS, PAINTED BY THOMAS SULLY	505
CHARLOTTE DOWNES, 1779-1820	510
CHARLOTTE DOWNES OTIS, 1800-1851	510
PICTURE, WORKED IN COLORED SILKS BY DEBORAH C. BRIGGS, 1796	518
PARLOR AT 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON	536
CONSERVATORY AT 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON	536
BIRTHPLACE OF LLOYD BRIGGS, SCITUATE	540
SCHOOLROOM OR KITCHEN OF HOUSE BUILT IN 1712 AND OCCUPIED BY JAMES BRIGGS, SCITUATE	540

	FACING PAGE
CERTIFICATE OF VESSEL BUILT BY CUSHING OTIS BRIGGS	548
LIBRARY, 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON	548
SCHOOLHOUSE, SOUTH SCITUATE	554
SARAH ELIZABETH BRIGGS	554
ICHABOD THOMAS, JR.	554
FAMILY COAT OF ARMS	558
HONORABLE DISCHARGE FROM MASSACHUSETTS MILITIA OF CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, JR.	558
VELMA BRIGGS, 1882	576
LLOYD VERNON BRIGGS, 1882	576
CASTLE IN BELGIUM	588
DR. PIERRE JANET AND MADAME JANET OF PARIS, MRS. L. V. BRIGGS OF HANCOCK, COMTESSE DE BEAUFORT OF CZECHOSLOVAKIA, AT SKATUTAHKEE HOUSE, HAN- COCK, N. H.	588
HOUSE OF LOUIS CABOT, BROOKLINE	626
CHIEF JUSTICE WILLIAM CUSHING AND HANNAH PHILLIPS, HIS WIFE	640
DR. CUSHING OTIS	640
LUCY OTIS	640
CLUB MEMBERSHIP OF L. CABOT BRIGGS	663
THE "BEDFORD," BUILT BY ICHABOD THOMAS	707
THE "BEAVER," TEA SHIP, 1773	708
ICHABOD THOMAS, SR.	708
BOSTONIANS PAYING THE EXCISE MAN BY TARRING AND FEATHERING	708
THE "BEAVER," FAMOUS TEA SHIP	710
SHIP "MARIA," 1782	714
ICHABOD THOMAS' SHIPYARD	716
COMMISSIONS TO CAPT. ICHABOD, SR., AND TO ENSIGN (AFTERWARD CAPTAIN) ICHABOD THOMAS, JR.	724
MUSTER ROLL OF CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, JR.	726
DEACON NATHANIEL HAYWARD HOUSE	767
ABIGAIL CUSHING	767
HARRISON OTIS BRIGGS	767
HANNAH ELIZABETH STETSON	767
LLOYD BRIGGS, ESQ.	776
RECORDS OF BIRTH OF LLOYD BRIGGS AND HIS WIFE	778
ALGER'S FOUNDRY	780
DISTANT VIEW OF ALGER'S FOUNDRY	780
LLOYD BRIGGS IN 1846	784

ILLUSTRATIONS

ix

	FACING PAGE
HOUSE OF LLOYD BRIGGS, SOUTH BOSTON	801
LUTHER HOUSE, HANSON, MASS.	802
POND AT THE REAR OF THE LUTHER HOUSE	802
LLOYD BRIGGS' HOUSE IN HANOVER, MASS.	806
GROUNDS IN FRONT OF THE HOUSE OF LLOYD BRIGGS	806
RESIDENCE OF LLOYD BRIGGS, HANOVER, MASS.	808
HARRIETTE STETSON BRIGGS	818
HARRIETTE S. BRIGGS, L. VERNON BRIGGS AND VELMA BRIGGS, 1867	818
ATKINSON, NEW HAMPSHIRE, ACADEMY	818
SARAH ELIZABETH ELMS KENT, 1858	822
LLOYD VERNON BRIGGS, 1930	826

CHAPTER XI

ANCESTRY OF LUCY OTIS, WIFE OF THOMAS BARKER⁵ BRIGGS

THE OTIS — CUSHING — ENSIGN — GILMAN — JACOBS —
LORING AND DOANE ANCESTRY OF THE
BRIGGS FAMILY

1. JOHN² OTIS (Ottis — Oates), first of the name in New England, was born in 1581, a son of RICHARD¹ OATES of Glastonbury, County Somerset, England, who was born about 1550 and whose will, dated 17 Nov. 1611, is recorded in the old records at Wells, England (N. E. Gen. Reg., Vol. IV, p. 163), mentions his wife, son Stephen, *John*², Thomas and two daughters. The name in England has continued to be written Oates, but John, after coming to New England, spelled it Ottis. In New England the name as now written, Otis, was not universally adopted by the family until about 1700. In deposition (Mass. Reg., Vol. 39) made 7 Apr. 1657 John² Otis says he is 76 years old.

JOHN² OTIS, "Gentleman," married in Glastonbury about 1603 Margaret ——. He had a family of eight children, seven of them baptized in Glastonbury. He was a substantial yeoman, but apparently left his native place to escape religious persecution. It is believed that he resided for a time in Hingham, England, before embarking for New England with the first company of settlers from that place, late in 1630. He is said to have been at "Bare Cove" (Hingham, New England) as early as 1631, with his wife and family, as on 1 June of that year a house lot was granted him. In 1635, when the Rev. Peter Hobart and a larger company arrived, his former grant was confirmed or enlarged to 5 acres on Town, now North, Street not far from Ship Street. On 1 June 1636 John Otis was granted a planting lot of 10 acres on a hill near the harbor. He called it "Weary-All-Hill" for one near his old home in Glastonbury, England, which it somewhat resembled in contour, as it reminded him of his childhood home at that place. On this hill in Glastonbury,

England, is a slab marking the spot where Joseph of Aramathea, A.D. 41, is said to have rested when with his disciples he stayed his wanderings in Glastonbury and built a little wattled church, the mother church of England's worship; and on the top of "Weary-All-Hill" (so called even to this day) he stuck his staff — a thorn branch — into the earth and it burst into bloom, the first of all the famous thorns to blossom in England after Christmas time. This still blossoms at Christmas, and an offshoot was brought to America and is planted by the great Episeopal Cathedral at Washington, D. C. The hill at Hingham, Mass., has later borne the name of Otis Hill, but is still called by many to this day by its old name of "Weary-All-Hill," given it by John Otis nearly three hundred years ago. John Otis resided in the house on North Street until 15 Mar. 1646, when it was burned to the ground. On 13 Apr. 1646 he purchased a house and 5 acres of land of Thomas Turner, between Joseph Andrews' on the east and Edmund Pitts' on the west, on North Street, "beyond Crooked Meddow or Bridge." This site is near that of "The Cushing House," which stands beside the old Andrews Garrison (1936).

In 1651 "John Ottis of Hingham" was brought before the County Court held in Boston, and fined £5 for resisting the Constable.

7th of 3^d Moth 1651, at a General Court of Eleccons held at Boston John Oatis of Hingham ofered a petition for the abatement or remission of a fine imposed upon him at a Court in Boston, for his resistance of the Constable, which the Court thinks meete he should pay his whole fine. (Court Rec., Vol. 3, p. 233.)

Att a General Court of Eleccons held at Boston, the 3^d of May 1654. In ans^r to the peticon of Jn^o Ottis, the Court judeth it meet to remit all the fine that was imposed on the peticoner, except thirty shillings, twenty whereof to belong to the Countye, and tenn to the Constable, so as the peticoner on a Lords day after exercise or on some publicke assembling of the Congregation, make likefull acknowledgment of his miscarriage as he hath in this petocon, by word or writing, or otherwise shall pay wth in one six weekes five pounds, a fine to the Countye. (Court Rec., Vol. 4, p. 191.)

JOHN² OTIS' wife MARGARET died in Hingham 28 June 1653. Two years later he conveyed to his son, John³ Ottis, Jr., all his real estate in Hingham, and removed to Weymouth, where he married his second wife, Widow Elizabeth Streame.

To all Christian people to whom these presents shall Come JOHN OTTIS gentleman of Hingham in ye County of Suffolk in New England Planter sendeth greetings. Know yee y^t the said John² Ottis Senio^r in persuanee of his promise about six years since made for y^e preferment of JOHN³ OTTIS his sonne in his marriage wth MARY JACOB daughter to NICHOLAS JACOB of Hingham aforesaid together with y^e Consideration of Seven pownds p ann^o by y^e said John Ottis Junio^r to bee paid annually to y^e s^d Jan Ottis Senio^r dureing his naturall Life and other Considerations him there unto moveing hath given granted bargayned and sold unto y^e said John Ottis Junio^r His sonne all his right tytle & interest in one howse and Lott w^{ch} is in hingham and was lately purchased of Thomas Turner, with all the priveleges and Appertenenees thereunto belonging as in that deede dated the 13^d: of y^e 2^d month 1646 Largely appeereth Together with all his Right tytle and Interest to all those severall pareells of lande both vpland and Meadow w^{ch} by the towne of hingham was granted to y^e said John Ottis Senior viz — his howse lott beeing 5 Aeres next to W^m Moultons land be It more or less A planting lott of Tenn Aeres be it more or less on *weariall hill* next to W^m Moulton at broade Coave & A littell spott of marsh at the end of the same. And a smal planting lott Two Aeres be It more or less by y^e fresh Ryver Caled Lyefords Lykeing next to Edmund Hubbard Senior & fower Aeres of meadow in y^e home Lott or meadows Lying next to Joseph Andrews to the Northward And Sixteen Aeres of vpland next to Edmund Hubbards Senior to the westward, And lying against the Ryver ealed Weymouth Ryver and One Aere more of fresh meadow in A dyvition Caled by y^e name of Nan Taseott divition bee it more or less And doe by theise presents give grant bargain and sell unto his said sonne John Ottis Junior and to his heyres and Assignes forever all any every the Above mentioned severall parcels of vpland and meadows with y^e howse and land aith all the Lybertyes priveledges And Appertenenees to them and every of them in any wise Appertayneing or belonging. To have and To howld y^e said howse and severall pareells of Lands To him y^e said John Ottis Junior his heyer's and Assignes from the tenth of May 1649 forever to be holden in free and Common soecadge, And y^e said John Ottis Senio^r doth further Covenant promise & grant by theise p^rsents, That hee the said John Ottis Senior was the true & propper owner of all the above mentioned premises at the 10th of May 1649. . . . The said John Ottis . . . in Rattification of his former Engagement hath now Confyrmed and Signed these presents this 23th day of may in the yeere of our Lord one thousand Six hundred fivety & five.

JOHN OTTIS with a seale

Endorsed, Entered and Recorded.

(Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 71, p. 161.)

JOHN² OTIS died in Weymouth 31 May 1657, aged 76 years. His will, dated the day before his death, made bequests, as follows:

Impris: I give to my daughter Margaret Burton and her three children twentie shillings amongst them and a small brass pott and a canvas sheete. I give to my daughter Hannah Gile two feather bolsters, one Rugg, one cotton blankett, my biggest brasse kettle. I give to Mary Gile one Cowe and one pillober. I give to Thomas Gil junior one Muskett. I give to my daughter Anne and my daughter Allice five shillings a peece. I give to my wife fortie shillings. It is my will that my sonne John Ottis shalbe my Exccutor to pay my debts and these Legacies and he be excepting of it.

Children of JOHN² and MARGARET OTIS:

- i. Alicia (Allice), bpt. Glastonbury 23 June 1604; living in 1657, probably unm.
- ii. Joan, bpt. Glastonbury 15 Dec. 1610; bur. 22 Dec. 1611.
- iii. Joan (Anne), bpt. Glastonbury 1 Dec. 1612; living in 1657, probably unm.
- iv. Elizabeth, bpt. Glastonbury 12 Nov. 1614; bur. 31 Mar. 1615.
- v. Richard, bpt. Glastonbury 17 Feb. 1616; probably d. young. Unmentioned in will of 1657.
- vi. Hannah, bpt. Glastonbury 16 Aug. 1618; m. about 1642 Thomas Gill in Hingham, New England.
- vii. JOHN³, bpt. Glastonbury 14 Jan. 1621; m. MARY JACOB 1649.
- viii. Margaret, bpt. about 1619; m. Thomas Burton of Hingham, New England, one of the signers of Dr. Child's petition for "redress of wrongs and grievanees in the Government," which William Vassall of Scituate went to England to present in 1646.

RICHARD³ OATES (*Stephen*², *Richard*¹), a nephew of John of Hingham, born at Glastonbury, England, about 1626, was mentioned in the will of his father Stephen². He came to New England about 1649. In May 1655 he was admitted an inhabitant of Boston, and the same year was in Dover, N. H., where he received grants of land of more than 100 acres. By occupation, he was an iron worker, and in 1660 was a Selectman of Dover, N. H. ("Cochecho").

He married first, about 1650 or 1651, Rose Stoughton, who was born in England Nov. 1629. She was a daughter of Anthony and Agnes Stoughton, and a sister of Sir Nicholas Stoughton, Bart. In 1643 she had been sent by her father to New England with a kinsman, Israel Stoughton, who was prominent in affairs of the Massachusetts Bay colony. She died about 1676, leaving a family of seven children, and Richard Otis married, second, the following year, Sarah ("Shuah") Heard, widow of James Heard of Dover. No children by this marriage.

Richard married, third, about 1686, Grizzel (or Grizet) Warren, a daughter of James Warren of Kittery, Me. (The name Grizzel

is said to be a nickname for Grace.) She was born in 1662. Richard and Grizzel Otis had two children: Hannah, born 1687, and Margaret (?), born in Mar. 1689.

The fate of this family is one of the most tragic events of the Indian wars. Stimulated by the thirst for taking vengeance on Major Waldron for the seizure of their brethren thirteen years before (see chapter on Slavery), an event remembered by them with deep though silent resentment, a plan was laid by the Indians to surprise the settlement of Dover. There were several garrison houses; the three on the north side were Richard Waldron's, Richard Otis' and John (or Elizabeth) Heard's. These garrison houses were surrounded by timber walls, the gates of which, as well as the house doors, were secured with bolts and bars. Approaching the place with professions of peace, the Indians sent two of their squaws to each garrison house to ask lodgings for the night, with the intention of opening the doors after the inmates were asleep. The stratagem succeeded, and on the night of 27 June 1689 the unsuspecting families retired to rest. As soon as they were asleep the squaws gave the signal by a whistle, and the frightful massacre began. The Indians rushed into Major Waldron's house first; although he was 80 years old he kept them at bay until they stunned him with a hatchet; they then cut him to pieces and set the house on fire. Richard Otis and his son Stephen were killed, and his two-year-old daughter Hannah was killed by having her head dashed against the stairs. His wife and her three-months-old child, three of his daughters and his son Stephen's children, with others, were taken captive. The three daughters were rescued at Conway, and the rest carried to Canada and sold to the French, the first English prisoners carried to that country. The French citizens in Canada took no part in this war between England and France, and the prisoners were kindly treated and eventually received by the Catholic Church and baptized with French names. Richard's wife, married for a second time in Montreal, had a second family and lived there to a great age. The young daughter, Margaret Otis, was christened *Christine*. She was married, against her wishes, it is said, in 1707, to Louis LeBeau, who died in 1713. An exchange of prisoners, arranged in 1714, found his young widow determined to return with them to New England, although in order to do so she was obliged to leave three young children and a respectable estate. With this company, commanded by Colonel Stoddard and Capt. Thomas Baker, Christine LeBeau undertook the arduous journey to Boston, and on 16 Dec. 1714, in Charlestown, she was

married to Captain Baker under her former name of *Margaret Otis*, that being considered to be her legal name in New England. The diary of Colonel Stoddard is said to contain many references to Madam LeBeau. She was thereafter known as Christine Baker. A few years after her marriage to Captain Baker she returned to Canada, and though highly esteemed there, was unable to accomplish the purpose for which she went, — the recovery of her children and their removal to New England. The Bakers lived for a few years in Northampton, where Captain Baker had formerly lived; later in Brookfield, Mendon, and Newport, R. I. In 1735 they were in Dover, and in May of that year Christine petitioned Governor Belcher and the House of Representatives of the Province of New Hampshire to be allowed to open a tavern, or "house of entertainment for travellers," their property having been lost by poor investments and the great cost of her futile visit to Canada in the attempt to recover her children. The tavern on the corner of Silver and Pleasant streets, Dover, was kept by her for many years. She died in Feb. 1773, leaving descendants in Canada and in Dover.

The other children and grandchildren of Richard Oates, who were carried captive to Canada, remained there, married and left many descendants. Their name became "Hotesse" and "Otess."

Richard³ has often been called a son of John¹ of Hingham, who had a son Richard born in Glastonbury in 1616, but not mentioned in his father's will in 1657. Stephen² of Glastonbury also had a son, Richard Oates, who was mentioned in his father's will in 1637, and whose birth in 1625 agrees with the age of Richard³ at the time of his death in Dover in 1689. It is now accepted that Richard of Dover was the *nephew* and not the *son* of John¹ of Hingham.

Descendants of Richard³ of Dover, N. H., by sons not taken captive to Canada, and by his daughters, remained in and around Dover, N. H., and in Maine.

2. JOHN³ OTTIS, JR. (1. John², Richard¹), born in 1620 and baptized in Glastonbury, England, 14 Jan. 1621, came with his parents to New England when he was about ten years old. In 1655, in accordance with a promise made to him at the time of his marriage in 1649, his father conveyed to him all of his real estate in Hingham, including the home on North Street. John³ Otis and his family resided there until 1661, when he purchased from Deacon Thomas Robinson a house, formerly that of Gen. James Cudworth (his second home in Scituate), on the

south side of Colman hills in Scituate, and here he removed from Hingham. The site of this house is now covered by the railroad track of the Scituate Sand and Gravel Company. It was on the north side of the road called (1936) "The Driftway," nearly opposite the Gillis house, formerly John James'. (Authority, the late Charles Otis Ellms.)

Hobart's Journal, 15 Mar. 1646, records "All the houses of Thos. Loring and John Otis were burnt to the ground."

In 1678 when JOHN³ OTIS' eldest living son John⁴ was 21 years of age, the father removed with his family from Scituate to Barnstable, and settled on the so-called "Otis Farm" in the West Parish opposite Hinckley's lane, near the Marshes. He remained in Barnstable until his son, STEPHEN⁴ OTIS, was about to come of age, when he returned to his former home in Scituate, leaving his son John⁴ on the Barnstable estate. John³ Otis died in Scituate 16 Jan. 1684, and was buried in the old burying-ground in Meeting-house lane, where his monument, although broken and defaced, was legible in 1830. His will, dated at Scituate in 1683, gave "To eldest daughter Mary (wife of John Gowin), and daughters Hannah and Elizabeth £50 each. Houses and lands at Hingham and Barnstable to John, Stephen, James and Job. To Joseph, the homestead at Scituate with lands, after his mother's decease."

John³ Otis married in 1649 Mary Jacob, daughter of Nicholas Jacob, and sister of DEBORAH Jacob, wife of *Hon. Nathaniel Thomas* of Marshfield. NICHOLAS JACOB of Hingham, County Norfolk, England, arrived in Boston with his wife Mary, son John, and daughter Mary, 15 June 1633 on the Ship *Elizabeth Bonaventure* from Yarmouth, England, and went first to Watertown, Mass. (See further account of Jacob family under Dr. Isaac Otis.)

Children of JOHN³ OTIS and MARY JACOB:

- i. Mary, b. 14 Mar. 1652/3 in Hingham; m. Col. John Gorham of Barnstable. (Name also written Gowin.) Lieut.-Col. John Gorham commanded most of the expeditions of the so-called "Whaleboat Fleet," which were of great assistance to the Colony in the French and Indian War, 1689-1704. He made a brilliant record as a soldier.
- ii. James, b. 1655 in Hingham; d. in infancy.
3. iii. JOHN⁴, b. 21 Sept. 1657 in Hingham; m. Merrey Bacon of Barnstable.
- iv. HANNAH, b. 22 Mar. 1659 in Hingham; m. her cousin THOMAS GILL, Jr.

4. v. STEPHEN⁴, b. 1661 in Hingham; m. HANNAH ENSIGN of Scituate.
- vi. James⁴, b. 1663 in Scituate; is said to have lived at Weymouth and had land in Hingham, inherited from his father John. In 1690 he joined the *Canadian expedition under Sir William Phipps, was at the taking of Port Royal, and was killed in the attack on Quebec*. He was unm. and before joining the expedition made his will, dated 3 Aug. 1690, giving most of his estate to his brother Stephen⁴, and his property in Hingham to his youngest brother Job⁴ "when he comes of age."
5. vii. Joseph⁴, b. 1665 in Scituate; bpt. in Hingham 3 June 1666; m. Dorothy Thomas.
6. viii. Job⁴, b. 20 Mar. 1667 in Scituate; m. Mercy Little.
- ix. Elizabeth, b. 1669 (or 1671) in Scituate; m. (1) Thomas Allyn of Barnstable; (2) David Loring of Hull.

3. CHIEF JUSTICE JOHN⁴ OTIS (2. John³, John², Richard¹), born 21 Sept. 1657, in Hingham, was known as Hon. John and Col. John Otis. He was left in possession of the estate in Barnstable, where he moved in 1686, when his father returned to Scituate. He was admitted a "freeman" in June 1689; was for 20 years Representative to the General Court; 13 years *Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and first Judge of Probate for the County of Barnstable; Commander of the Militia as Colonel of the county for 28 years; 1706, chosen one of His Majesty's Council*, and held the position until his death in 1727, aged 70. He was one of the most respected men in the Colony, and discharged his various trusts with fidelity and skill. He was noted for his wit and humor and fine talent for conversation, as well as his pleasant and affable disposition. He was grandfather of James Otis the Patriot (see "Boston News Letter" Oct. 1727).

At the Great and General Court or Assembly held in Boston 30 Oct. 1697 the following order sent up from the Representatives was read and concurred in:

Whereas, It is thought by many to be very necessary for the Preservation of Man, and Estates, and a very Profitable and useful to the Publick, that a *Passage be cut through the Land at Sandwich* from Barnstable Bay, so called, into Monument Bay, for vessels to pass to and from the Western Parts of this Country

Ordered, That Mr. John Otis, Capt. William Bassett and Mr. Thomas Smith be, and hereby are appointed to view the place and make Report to this Court at their next session, what they Judge will be the general Conveniences or Inconveniences that may accrue thereby & what the Charge of the same may be, and probability of effecting thereof. (Court Records, Vol. 6, p. 565; Mass. Rec., Vol. 62, p. 225.)

This order for a Cape Cod Canal in 1697 was not realized for 200 years.

BARNSTABLE Sep^{br} 2^d 1717.

May it Please Your Excellency —

I sometime since Rec^d your Excellencies Comand By Mr. Boydell to send a list of those Gentlemen that should be thought fitt or proper to be commissioned officers in the Militia in the Regiment in this County of Barnstable & to consult with my field officers in order thereunto p'suant to your Excellencies Comand.

We have drawn up a list but not fully p'fected yc same, by Reason that the Late alteration made by Col. Taylor hath occasioned some Difficulty which call for Consideration & therefore I begge your Excellencies pardon in that I have not yett made a Return thereof & purpose with all convenient speed to deliver your Excellencies comands I hope to satisfaction.

I have an Extraordinary case to acquaint your Excellency with & pray for direction therein so it tis a small number of Indians have Left the English & betaken themselves to the woods & Live upon Robing, Stealing & Killing sheep & have of Late broke open divers houses & stole money & goods from several p'sons in this County of Barnstable & Plymouth & they are of Late armed & stand upon there defence if they are accidentally seen & it is said that their Number increase & doubtless it will so do unless your Excellency shall give some Effectuall order for taking them they broke open a vessell which came in from Boston Last Night money goodware & merchandize to a very considerable value. We have not been wanting to p'sue them by such methods as the Law directs in ordinary cases, the names of the cheife of them are Thom Tripp Joshua Packnutt, Joseph pease & Indian Jabez all which is submitted to your Excellencies Direction & Commands.

By your Excellencies Dutyfull & obedient Sev^t,

JNO OTIS.

(Mass. Records, Vol. 51, p. 296.)

John⁴ Otis married 18 July 1683 Mercy Bacon, born 28 Feb. 1659, daughter of NATHANIEL Bacon and HANNAH (Mayo) Bacon of Barnstable. He died in Barnstable 23 Sept. 1727 (also given 30 Nov.), aged 70.

Children of Col. John⁴ Otis and Mercy Bacon:

- i. Mary, b. 15 Dec. 1685; m. Isaac Little of Marshfield, later of Plymouth, a *grandson* of Thomas Little from Devonshire, England, who married 1633 Ann Warren, daughter of Richard Warren of the *Mayflower*.
- ii. JOHN⁵ (Hon. John), b. 14 Jan. 1687; graduated from Harvard College in 1707; was a Representative from Barnstable, and member of "His Majesty's Honorable Council" from 1747 until his death in 1758. He was *King's Attorney*. He m. at Barnstable 13 Dec. 1711, Grace

Hayman of Bristol, R. I., whose family name was originally Van Hayman.

- iii. Nathaniel⁵, b. 28 May 1690; was *Register of Probate* for Barnstable County for many years. He m. 21 Dec. 1710, Abigail Russell, dau. of Rev. Jonathan of Barnstable, "a very interesting woman of natural ability and dignity," and settled in Sandwich, where he d. Dec. 1739. His son Nathaniel⁶, b. 1720, joined the *troops under Admiral Vernon*, which took Porto Bello and destroyed its fortifications in 1740. Of 1,000 New England men, less than 100 returned. He was among the many who perished.
- iv. Merey, b. 15 Oct. 1693; m. Rev. Jonathan Russell of Barnstable.
- v. Soloman⁵, b. 13 Oct. 1696; grad. *Harvard College 1717*; was *Registrar of Deeds*, County Treasurer and Special Justice of the Peace for Barnstable County. He m. Jane Turner, b. 4 May 1697, dau. of Amos, the youngest son of John Turner, Sr., and Mary (Brewster) of Seitate. He d. 1778.
- vi. James⁵, b. 14 June 1702 (father of the Patriot); was known as Col. James Otis, as he had been *Colonel of a Troop of Horse* in the County of Barnstable in 1757. He was appointed Judge of Probate for Barnstable County, 1763, and *Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas* in Feb. 1764, and continued in that office until the Revolution. In 1758 he had been elected a member of the Provincial Legislature, *Speaker of the House* in 1760, and one of *His Majesty's Council*, but being found to be opposed to government policies, he was negatived by Governor Bernard. Every succeeding year he was elected to the Council, and regularly negatived, until 1770, when Chief Justice Hutehinson "approbated" the choice. He was the *President*, and oldest member of the Council, and sat at the meetings of the Board during the first part of the war. He served on many committees of the Legislature during the period from 1760 to 1775, which reported some of the most remarkable of the sincere and masterly state papers which were produced during the period preceding the American Revolution. Between the departure of General Gage and the adoption of the State Constitution, he exercised the functions of *Chief Magistrate of Massachusetts*. His name has frequently been mentioned in terms of high esteem as a compeer with Adams, Quiney and Hancock. His last years were saddened by his son James' tragic injury. He d. 9 Nov. 1778, having lived to see his country glorious in her struggles for freedom, with a prospect full in view that her mighty efforts to secure independence would be crowned with success.

Col. James⁵ Otis m. about 1723 Mary Alleyne of Wethersfield, Conn., a woman of superior character, b. in 1702 in the ancient Alleyne house at Plymouth, which stood on Cole's Hill, where the Universalist Church is now (1936) standing. She was a daughter of Joseph Alleyne and Mary Doten of Plymouth, the latter a granddaughter of Edward Doten of the *Mayflower*. Joseph Alleyne subsequently removed to Wethersfield, Conn.



JAMES OTIS, THE PATRIOT

By R. S. Chase, from a portrait by Blackburn, 1755
Original in Bostonian Society

Of the thirteen children of James⁵ Otis and Mary Alleyne, several were distinguished and influential, especially James, the Patriot, General Joseph, Samuel Alleyne and Mercey, of whose interesting histories we give only the following brief summaries.

JAMES⁶ OTIS, THE PATRIOT

James Otis was the eldest son of Col. James Otis of Barnstable. He was born 5 Feb. 1724/5 in the family mansion at Great Marshes, now West Barnstable.

James Otis was prepared for college under the care of Rev. Jonathan Russell, the clergyman of the parish, and entered Harvard College in June 1739. During the first two years of his college life we are told that "his natural ardors and vivacity made his society much coveted by the other students and engaged him more in amusement than in study, but he changed his course in his junior year, and, though yet in his boyhood, began thenceforward to give indications of great talent and power of application." He took his A.B. in 1743 and that of A.M. in due course, three years afterwards.

After leaving college, Otis devoted eighteen months to the pursuit of various branches of literature, previously to entering on the study of jurisprudence. He always regretted that he had not given an even longer time to the acquisition of general knowledge before he directed his attention exclusively to reading law. A letter to his father on the subject of his younger brother Samuel Allyn Otis' education expresses this feeling: "Very surc I am, if he should stay a year or two from the time of his degree for general inquiries into the Arts and Sciences, before he begin with the law, he will make better progress in one week than he could now, without a miracle, in six."

James Otis began the study of the law in the office of Mr. Jeremiah Gridley, at that time the most eminent lawyer in the province. After completing his studies under him, he went to Plymouth, was first admitted to the bar of that county, and entered there upon the practice of law. But the narrow range of country business could not long detain a character like his from appearing in a scene more suited to his powers. After two years residence in Plymouth, which were occupied more in study than in practice, he removed to Boston, and very soon rose to the first rank in his profession. His business as a lawyer became very extensive and his reputation was firmly established for learning, eloquence and the most high-minded integrity. . . . At one time he yielded to

the urgent solicitations that were made to him to proceed to Halifax in the middle of winter to plead the cause of three men accused of piracy.

Through all his professional engagements he still retained his taste for literature, and to aid the general cultivation of classical learning he wrote a treatise, entitled "The Rudiments of Latin Prosody with a Disertation, etc.," published in 1760. He also composed a similar work on Greek prosody which remained in manuscript "as there were no Greek types in the country, or if there were, no printer knew how to set them." This treatise perished with almost all the rest of his papers.

Of all the extensive correspondence of James Otis, two letters, one addressed to his father and one to his brother, are almost the only vestiges in his own handwriting that are still in existence.

BOSTON, October 11, 1752

DEAR BROTHER: — . . . I am sorry to find by your letter that you are yet so weak. I am no physieian, as I could wish, but reecomend the advice of Sir William Temple, which is eare, temperancee and patience. Whatever you do, engage in no pursuit of business till you find yourself strong: even thinking with any degree of intenseness may be prejudieial. If you can, bring yourself to a moderate degree of cheerfulness, for I am of opinion that bodily infirmities may sometimes be gradually allayed, if not removed, by getting the mind into the easy, facetious frame — But above all things, abstain from meat of any kind and from anything stronger than beer. . . .

I am your affectionate brother,

J. OTIS.

JOSEPH OTIS, Esq.

BOSTON, April 3, 1758

HONoured SIR: — Since mine of this morning, I have been sent for by the Governor, upon the receipt of yours by Mr. Coffin, and he hath sent the enlosed orders. Methinks it as strange as you do, that they don't know their own minds at York. However he saith you have nothing to do but obey orders, and whatever extraordinary expenses acerue you shall be allowed, and that you may draw on him for money as you want it. By his order I send Barker with this, which will all go into your account as it ought; I received these orders at sunset, and have desired Barker to ride all night, for fear of any delay — as our Court sits tomorrow and as my affairs here are situated, I could not come to Plymouth. . . .

I am your dutiful son,

JAMES OTIS.

Hon. JAMES OTIS, Barnstable.

In the spring of 1755 James Otis married Miss Ruth Cunningham, the daughter of a prominent merchant. The lady was very beautiful and was possessed of a dowry which in those times was considered very large. Few characters could be more unlike than those of Mr. Otis and his wife, yet they were deeply attached to each other. She was placid and formal, suited to a calm and quiet existence, while his ardent mind, impetuous genius and energetic will qualified him to direct the leading events in the great crisis of national affairs which was fast approaching. She died 15 Nov. 1789, aged 60.

The northern colonies had no great staple of agriculture to employ their labor and afford them wealth. Industry and enterprise might make them amends by enabling them to secure the comforts and gradually to accumulate the wealth that would furnish the luxuries of life. But they found their exertions impeded in every direction. Even the fisheries which formed a very important part of their employment were put in jeopardy by some of the regulations consequent on the Acts of Trade. They seemed, in fact, to be made the victims of every separate interest of the Empire. In all acts of rivalry they were the party to be sacrificed. They were not allowed to manufacture because the manufactures of the parent country would be injured. They were confined in their navigation because the shipping interests in England would suffer. They were not allowed to sell their fish for French and Spanish molasses because the sugar colonies would not have the monopoly of supplying them. They could not import teas from Holland because it interfered with the East India Company. They could not trade with Spain and Portugal nor any other nation because it infringed on navigation laws.

Yet not satisfied with exclusive possession of their trade, the English government claimed the right of unlimited taxation, and to render their proceedings more irritating to the colonies, the principal argument in favor of the colonists' ability to pay such duties was the liberality of their grants for the late war.

Immediately after the conquest of Canada, when the good will of the colonists or their Legislature was no longer wanted in the prosecution of the war, the Commissioners of Customs were directed to enforce the obnoxious acts of parliament regulating the trade of the colonies. The first demonstration of the new course to be pursued was the arrival of an order in Council to carry into effect the Acts of Trade and to apply to the supreme judicature of the Province for Writs of Assistance to be granted to the officers of the customs.

These Writs of Assistance were intended to make it "lawful for any person or persons authorized by a 'Writ of Assistance Under the Seal of His Majesty's Exchequer' to take a constable or other public officer inhabiting near unto the place and in the daytime to enter and go into any house, shop, cellar, warehouse or room or other place, and in cases of resistance to break open doors, chests, trunks and other package therein and seize and from thence bring any kind of goods or merchandise whatsoever prohibited and uncustomed and to put and secure the same in his Majesty's storehouse in the port next to the place where such seizure shall be made." Mr. Paxton, who was at the head of the customs in Boston, consulted with government and all the crown officers and then directed his deputy at Salem, Mr. Cockle, in Nov. 1760, to petition the Superior Court, then sitting in the town, for Writs of Assistance. Chief Justice Sewall doubted the legality of such a writ, and none of the other judges said a word in favor of it, but, as the application was on the part of the Crown, it could not be dismissed, and a hearing was fixed for the next term of court, Feb. 1760 at Boston.

The mercantile part of the community was in a state of great anxiety. The officers of the customs called upon Otis for his official assistance, as Advocate General, to argue their cause, but as he believed these writs to be illegal and tyrannical he refused. He would not prostitute his office to the support of an oppressive act; and with true delicacy and dignity, being unwilling to retain a station in which he might be called upon to argue in support of such odious measures, he resigned it, though the situation was very lucrative and might lead to the highest favors of government.

The merchants of Boston applied to Mr. Otis and Mr. Thacher who engaged to make their defence and both of them without fees, though very great ones were offered.

Mr. Thacher's reasoning was ingenious and ably delivered in a tone of great mildness, but in the language of John Adams, "Otis was a flame of fire."

Taking a rapid survey of the terrors and vexations the colonies were exposed to under the reign of Charles the First, and their tranquillity under the Commonwealth, he came to the first fruits which they tasted of the restoration, to the celebrated Navigation Acts, and he dwelt upon this as the first in order among those acts which were now to be enforced by the Writs of Assistance. The main provisions of these Navigation Acts may be comprised in a very few words: nothing shall be imported into any of the English possessions in Asia, Africa or America excepting in vessels

belonging to the people of England, Scotland or the town of Berwick on Tweed, and besides being truly belonging and owned in said possessions the master and three fourths of the sailors must be English, and no goods of foreign production could be brought even in English shipping except from the countries that produced them.

From the Navigation Act Otis passed to the Acts of Trade, and these, he contended, imposed taxes enormous, burdensome, intolerable, and on this topic he gave full scope to his talent for powerful declamation and invective against *the tyranny of taxation without representation*. From the energy with which he urged this position that taxation without representation is *tyranny*, it came to be a common maxim in the mouth of every one.

In the course of his argument Otis said, "One of the most essential branches of English liberty is the freedom of one's house. This writ, if it should be declared legal, would totally annihilate this privilege. Customs house officers may enter our houses when they please, their menial servants may enter, break locks, bars and everything in their way; and whether they break through malice or revenge, no man, no court, can inquire. Bare suspicion without oath is sufficient. . . . I will mention some facts: Mr. Pew had one of these writs and Mr. Ware succeeded him. He endorsed over to Mr. Ware, so that these writs are negotiable from one officer to another, and so Your Honors have no opportunity of judging the person to whom this vast power is delegated. . . . Another instance: Mr. Justice Walley had called this same Mr. Ware before him by a constable to answer for a breach of the Sabbath Day Acts, or that of profane swearing. As soon as he had finished, Mr. Ware asked the Justice if he had done. He replied, 'Yes.' 'Well, then,' said Mr. Ware, 'I will show you a little of my power. I command you to permit me to search your house from the garret to the cellar.'"

The last ground taken by Otis in commenting on the Acts of Trade was their incompatibility with the Charter of the Colony. He went over the history of the Charters: "Pym, Hampden, Sir Harry Vane and Cromwell did not surely wish to subject a country which they sought as an asylum to the arbitrary jurisdiction of a country from which they wished to fly." The main question constantly recurred, "*Where* is the authority for the Writs of Assistance?" Otis denied either authority or precedent.

"I do say," asserts John Adams, in the most solemn manner, "that Mr. Otis' Oration against Writs of Assistance breathed into this nation the breath of life. Every man of an immense crowded

audience appeared to me to go away as I did, ready to take up arms against Writs of Assistance. Then and there was the first scene of the first act of opposition to the arbitrary claims of Great Britain. Then and there the child Independence was born. In fifteen years he grew up to manhood and declared himself free."

"Although," says Adams, "Mr. Otis had never before interfered in public affairs, his exertions on this single occasion assured him a continuing popularity with the friends of their country and the terror and vengeance of her enemies, neither of which ever deserted him. He was transferred at once from the ranks of private life, not merely to take the side but to be the guide and leader of his country in opposition to the British menace."

Mr. Otis was chosen almost unanimously representative to the Legislature at the ensuing election in May 1761, and from his first appearance in the house in that year showed such superiority of talents, information and energy over every other member that he took the lead in 1763.

In Oct. 1769 a town meeting was held in Boston to consider the state of affairs. Of this meeting Otis was the moderator. He had been gradually relinquishing his professional practice and the care of his private concerns to devote himself almost exclusively to those of the public, which grew rapidly more arduous and interesting. At this meeting in Boston, which is an example of them all, resolves were passed unanimously "against the consumption of the obnoxious merchandise (articles that had been taxed); in favour of economy, particularly in dress, expensive funerals and mourning; and to encourage the use of domestic manufactures."

When the new Legislature assembled in Boston at the close of May 1769 they found the building surrounded with cannon and military guards. Otis rose immediately after they were organized and in a brief address of deep energy and impassioned eloquence declared how unworthy it was of a free Legislature to attempt any deliberations in the presence of an embattled fort, and moved the appointment of a committee to make an immediate protest. This was followed after some days' delay by the Legislature being transferred to Cambridge, where they assembled in the college Chapel. Otis again addressed them before proceeding to business. Besides the members, deeply affected, mortified and indignant at the insult which they had received from a standing army, and revolving in their minds the growing tyranny and the gloomy prospects before them, the students were attracted by the novelty as well as by a sympathy that was felt with all the ardor of youth

for a patriotic Legislature placed under a kind of proscription and driven from their own halls. These youths were clustered around the walls in listening groups to witness the opening of the deliberations.

On 4 Oct. 1769 a town meeting was called and a report was ordered to be printed and several copies of it sent to different persons in England. This document, which was a joint production of Otis and Samuel Adams, contained statements of the occurrences which had excited attention as they actually happened, and a very close and severe examination of the false coloring that had been given them by the civil and military officers. It is a masterly investigation of the real conduct and feelings of the citizens. It throws great light on the history of the time, and ably vindicates the reputation of the town. The following paragraph will show that the citizens of Boston were resolved to make no compromise:

The rights of the citizens are invaded by these acts; therefore until they are *all* repealed the *causes* of their just complaints cannot be removed. In short, the aggravations which lie heavily upon us we shall never think redressed until every act passed by the British Parliament for the express purpose of raising revenue upon us without our consent is repealed, until the American Board of Commissioners of Customs is dissolved, the troops recalled, and things restored to the state they were in before the late extraordinary measures of administration took place. Notwithstanding the town had been obliged, in justice to themselves, to say this much in their own vindication, we should yet be glad that the ancient and happy union between Great Britain and this country might be restored.

The following from the debates in Parliament, on the answer to the King's speech 23 Jan. 1769 will show how Mr. Otis' name predominated in the minds of those members who were interested in the ministerial plans against America: Lord Clare urged the danger to the colonies, hearing there was any doubt in Parliament of their guilt, or any appearance of dis-union, wished his noble friend to consider whether the alteration would not be such as Mr. Otis himself would have proposed, and whether what was agreeable to Mr. Otis would be probably approved by the house?

On the evening of 5 Sept. 1769, about seven o'clock, Mr. Otis went to the British Coffee House, which stood on what is now State Street, where one of the Commissioners of Customs named Robinson was sitting, as also a number of army, navy and revenue officers. As soon as Mr. Otis came in an altercation took place, which soon terminated in Robinson striking him with a

cane, which was returned with a weapon of the same kind. Great confusion ensued. The lights were extinguished, and Otis without a friend, was surrounded by the adherents of Robinson. A young man by the name of John Gridley, passing by, very boldly entered the coffee house to take the part of Otis against so many foes; but he was assaulted, beaten and turned out of the house. After some time the combatants were separated, Robinson retreated by a back passage, and Otis was led home wounded and bleeding. Five or six bludgeons and one scabbard were found on the floor after the struggle. Otis received a deep wound in the head, which the surgeons, Drs. Perkins and Lloyd, testified must have been given by a sharp instrument. The accusation of a preconcerted intention to murder is doubtless unfounded, though John Gridley testified that he heard the exclamation, "Kill him! Kill him!" From all evidence in the case it is plain that it was a brutal and cowardly assault in which several persons took part with a disposition that in the fury of the moment sought to disable this great patriot. Mr. Otis instituted an action against Robinson and the jury awarded two thousand pounds sterling damages. This sum, a very considerable one in those times, at least, Otis nobly gave up on a written apology being made, in which the defendant acknowledged his fault and begged Mr. Otis' pardon.

At a town meeting held in Boston on the 8th of May 1770, for the choice of representatives, the following vote was passed:

The Honourable James Otis, having by the advice of his physician retired into the country for the recovery of his health — Voted: that the thanks of the town be given to the Hon. James Otis for the great and important services which as a representative in the general assembly through a course of years he has rendered to this town and Province; particularly for his undaunted exertions in the common cause of the colonies, from the beginning of the present glorious struggle for the rights of the British constitution. At the same time the town cannot but express their ardent wishes for the recovery of his health, and the continuance of those public services that must long be remembered with gratitude, and distinguish his name among the patriots of America. Voted, that the gentlemen, the selectmen, appoint a committee to transmit to the Honourable James Otis an attested copy of the foregoing vote

Attest,

WILLIAM COOPER, Town Clerk

The manner of James Otis' death was a singular coincidence. He had often said to his sister, Mrs. Warren, "I hope that when God Almighty, in his righteous providence, shall take me out of

time into eternity, it will be by a flash of lightning." This singular wish was granted. On 23 May 1783, as he was standing at the door of a house in Andover, he was instantly killed by a flash of lightning.

John Adams, who was then Minister to France, wrote, "It was with very afflicting sentiments that I learned the death of Mr. Otis, my worthy Master Extraordinary in death as in life. He has left a character that will never die while the memory of the American Revolution remains; whose foundations he laid with an energy and with those masterly abilities which no other man possessed. I have been young and now am old, and I solemnly say, I have never known a man whose love of his country was more ardent or sincere, never one who suffered so much, never one whose services for any ten years of his life were so important and essential to the cause of his country, as those of Mr. Otis from 1760 to 1770. Language equally strong was used by Chief Justice Dana when speaking of him in one of his charges to a Grand Jury, and similar opinions were held by all those who acted with him."

COPY OF A LETTER * FROM COL. JAMES⁵ OTIS, FATHER OF THE PATRIOT,
TO MOSES PEARSON, IN FALMOUTH, CASCOBAY, MASS. (AFTERWARDS
MAINE)

BARNSTABLE, September 18, 1772

SIR:—I saw by the newspapers that I received this week an advertisement to notify the Proprietors of Pearson Town in the County of Cumberland that on the 19th of March 1771 a tax of twelve shillings was voted on each Right, and at another meeting of said Proprietors on the 31st of March 1772 a tax of Eight shillings was voted to be raised on each Proprietor Right for the support of the Minister and other charges of carrying forward the settlement of said township, and the Proprietors are requested to pay said Taxes as well as all former taxes or Arrearages due on their several Rights to Ephraim Jones of Falmouth, their Treasurer on or before the fifth day of December next or their rights will be sold at public vendue, &c: now I always have put confidence in you, my attorney and friend, that none of my interest in said Township should be sold for taxes; and I find that in fifty-eight I wrote you fully on that matter by Benjamin Crocker, and gave him orders to collect monies to pay my taxes up to that time, and on August 29th, 1770 I wrote you about a 20/ tax that was laid in 1770, and I then desired you to pay that tax, and draw on me for it; and I wrote you again on February 26th, 1771 about it all, which letters I suppose you have by you and if you have I shall be much obliged to you to observe the

* Belonging to L. Vernon Briggs.

contents of them, more especially my request to you in both to let me know what taxes have been laid on my Rights from first to last, what is paid of them and by whom; and which request I now renew, and I desire this 12/ and 8/ tax may be paid by you to Prescott, my lands being sold, and whatever you pay for me shall be repaid on sight or of an order from you. And pray be kind enough to let me know what Strout has paid you on my account and whether any thing and also to send me your account current against me, and then I will send you mine, that as we are now both grown old we may come to a final settlement in our day. I want also to know the number of my Right in Pearson Town and what is laid out upon it, and also to know the value of it, and of my 30 acre lot I had of Joshua Freeman; and I trust that you won't let any of my lands in sd. Town be sold for taxes, for I shall think myself very much wronged if you should, as I have taken so much pains for the interest of that township and that my lands should not be sold. Pray be kind enough to write me an answer to these matters by the first conveyance to Boston, to be left at my son Samuel Allyn Otis' who will send it to me from there. Sir, your compliance herein will much oblige

Your Humble Servt.

JAMES OTIS.

WILL OF JAMES⁶ OTIS THE PATRIOT

Vol. 82, p. 439

1783. In the name of God — Amen. I James Otis being in no kind of fear of death tho' by some called the King of Terrors and by old Barminister in his will a Sergeant, I make this my last will & testament. Imprimis — Whereas my dearly beloved wife before marriage with me received my bond fore one thousand pounds sterling payable at my decease which obligation was lodged in the hands of Peter Choudon Esq. deceased and as I understand in the hands of Edward Paine Esq. My will is that the same sum of one thousand pounds be paid my said Ruth at my decease whether said bond shall then be in existence or not. And whereas my daughter Elizabeth in my absence without my knowledge & without leaving or asking her Mother's consent in the year A.D. 1776 Feby. contracted matrimony with Mr. Leonard Brown a Lieut. in y^e King of Great Britain's Service & who had been in arms against America & was wounded at y^e battle of Bunker Hill & whereas the said Elizabeth went from hence with the said Leonard Brown at the evacuation of Boston to Halifax & thence for England & with him settled at Steaford in Lincolnshire, and as I hear he has left his wife & joined the British Arm again, and the last I hear is that she was in a consumption I give the said Elizabeth five shillings if alive. The rest & the residue of my estate Real & personal I give & bequeath & devise as following except a small legacy or two hereafter mentioned. I give, bequeath & devise I say the residue & remainder to Ruth Otis my wife & Mary Otis my beloved daughter & their heirs forever.

I give to Mary Grover ten pounds sterling as also a decent suit of mourning at the discretion of my executors.

I make the said Ruth Otis my beloved wife and Mary Otis my beloved daughter my executors to this my will.

Witness my hand and seal this thirty first day of March in the year of Jesus Christ one thousand seven hundred & eighty three & of the assumption or declaration of the Independence of the thirteen United States of America the seventh year.

JAMES OTIS Seal

Witnesses Edward Payne, Benj. Lincoln, Jr., Jonathan Mason, Jr.

The only son of James⁶ and Ruth (Cunningham) Otis was James⁷, born in 1755. He enlisted at the beginning of the Revolutionary War as a volunteer midshipman, aged 21. It is said that he died aboard the British prison ship *Jersey* in 1777.

Their daughter *Elizabeth*⁷ married Captain Brown, an officer of the British army who had been wounded at the Battle of Bunker Hill. She left the country with her husband during the war, and Captain Brown was placed in command of one of the fortresses on the English coast. Her marriage to the English officer greatly offended her father, and during his lifetime she never returned to America. He left her only five shillings in his will. She made a short visit to Boston in 1792, after the death of her mother, and was living in England, a widow, in 1821.

*Mary*⁷ *Otis*, the youngest daughter of James⁶, married, first, Benjamin Lincoln (Harvard, 1777), son of Gen. Benjamin Lincoln of the Revolution, and his wife, Mary Cushing. He was a lawyer of great promise, but died at the age of 28. Mary (Otis) Lincoln married, second, Feb. 1807, Rev. Henry Ware, Hollis Professor at Cambridge, as his second wife.

General Joseph⁶, son of James⁵, born at Barnstable, 6 Mar. 1725-6; married, first, Rebecca Sturgis; second, Maria Walter. He was for many years a Clerk of the Court of Common Pleas, a member of the Legislature, and Brigadier General of the Militia.

Gen. Joseph Otis was one of the leaders of the most ardent Whigs of Barnstable. Washington appointed him Collector of Customs for the District of Barnstable, an office which he held for many years. He was of very essential service in the Revolutionary War, in opposing all attempts of the English to destroy a privateer, with their boats, which sought refuge in Barnstable Harbor. He died 24 Sept. 1810, aged 84. His second wife died in 1826.

Mercy⁶ Otis, daughter of James⁵, born in Barnstable 14 Sept. 1728, married Gen. James Warren of Plymouth, a lineal descendant of Richard Warren who came over in the *Mayflower*. He succeeded James Warren as President of the Provincial Congress and died in 1808, aged 83. Mercy Warren had an active mind, took much part in politics, and held correspondence with statesmen of the times. She wrote several satirical pieces, poetical and dramatic, full of patriotic feeling and heroic sentiment. She is said to have written patriotic speeches for some of the members of the Convention called for adopting the Federal Constitution in 1788. In 1805 she published a history of the Revolutionary War, in three volumes octavo, said to be an excellent work of its kind. She died in the autumn of 1814, aged 86.

HON. SAMUEL ALLEYNE⁶ OTIS, son of Hon. James⁵ and Mary (Alleyne) was born in Barnstable 22 Nov. 1740; graduated at Harvard College 1759. Studied law and afterwards engaged in mercantile pursuits in Boston. During the Revolution he was member of the Board of War, and at one time Speaker of the House of Representatives. In 1787 was appointed by the Governor one of the Commissioners to negotiate in Shays' Rebellion. He was elected a member of Congress in 1788, and after the adoption of the Federal Constitution was chosen Secretary of the Senate of the United States, being the first to occupy that position, which he filled with "scrupulous fidelity and amenity of manners, without being absent from his post a single day during thirty years. He was much esteemed for his probity and attention to all public duties and for his bland and courteous manners." In his capacity of Secretary of the Senate he held the Bible upon which Washington took the oath, at his inauguration 30 Apr. 1789. He died in Washington, D. C., 22 Apr. 1814.

Hon. Samuel Alleyne Otis married, first, 31 Dec. 1764, Elizabeth, only daughter of Hon. Harrison Gray, Receiver General of Massachusetts. She died in 1779. He married, second, 28 Mar. 1782, Mary, widow of Edward Gray, Esq., and daughter of Isaac Smith. By his first marriage he was the father of Harrison Gray Otis, the first mayor of Boston, and Samuel Alleyne Otis, Jr.

Jan'y 2 1798 Saml Allyne Otis now of Philadelphia sold to son Harrison Gray Otis of Boston land received from his children Elizabeth, Lewis, Abigail and George land on Cambridge St. formerly property of Harrison Gray, Esq. (Plym. Rec., Vol. 190, p. 132.)

Saml Allyne Otis for £20000 deeds John Codman of Charlestown 26 1779. (Vol. 131, p. 96.)

Saml Allyne Otis of Boston merchant sold Isaac Smith lot near Cam-

bridge St. Given to Otis by his father in law partly on a street leading to Beacon St. 10 July 1785. (Vol. 151, p. 5.)

Saml Allyne Otis & Mary his wife £60 deeds John Winthrop deeds land on Clapboard St. Beacon Hill near John Wheelwrights 1787. (Vol. 161, p. 134.)

Saml Allyne Otis, Jr. £200 deeds Harrison Gray Otis all right in a tenement on Cambridge St. 1791. (Vol. 170, pp. 171, 271.)

Hon. Harrison Gray⁷ Otis, named for his maternal grandfather, was also a son of Samuel Alleyne⁶ and Elizabeth (Gray) Otis. He was one of the most prominent men of his day. Although thrown on his own resources in early life, by 1795 he was able to build the beautiful mansion now standing at the corner of Cambridge and Lynde streets, Boston, the property and headquarters of the Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities (1936). His wife, Sally Foster, daughter of William Foster, a Boston merchant, was a cultured and brilliant woman, whose miniature by Malbone shows her to have been of considerable beauty. That beauty, however, was less striking than that of her daughter-in-law, Emily Marshall, wife of her son, William Foster Otis; her social activities were eclipsed only by those of another daughter-in-law, Eliza Boardman Otis, wife of Harrison Gray Otis, Jr.

James⁶ Otis, the Patriot, Samuel Alleyne⁶ Otis and their sister Mercy (Otis) Warren were second cousins of the author's ancestor, Dr. James⁶ Otis (Isaac⁵, M.D., Capt. Stephen⁴, John³, John², Richard¹) and of Dr. Ephraim⁶ Otis (Ephraim⁵, Job⁴, John³, John², Richard¹) of Scituate.

4. CAPT. STEPHEN⁴ OTIS (2. John³, John², Richard¹) (in line of L. Cabot Briggs' ancestry) was born in 1661 in Hingham, New England, the year that his father moved to Scituate. He went to Barnstable with the family when he was 17, and returned with them to Scituate when about 21. He was a tanner, and his tannery housing and vats were a little way up Satuit Brook, not far from his residence and west of the bridge. He was *Commander of the militia of the town*, an office of considerable importance in the early days. As *Captain of the Grenadiers*, at the outbreak of the *War with the French and Indians*, Stephen Otis was given *command of an Expedition to L'Acadie* 23 Apr. 1707, for which he was ordered to enlist forty or fifty Indians. The hardships of that expedition are spoken of in a letter written to Governor Dudley by his son, who was in command at Province Galley in June 1707. It said:

We are willing and ready to return to ye Camp with a good reinforcement, notwithstanding all our Difficultys and their thirty-two pounders, which we were somewhat used to at last, we had one man killed in our Ravage up the river, and the man wounded of Otis Company Dead since our Passage. . . .

STEPHEN⁴ OTIS inherited considerable property in Scituate from his father and from his brother James; and after his marriage to Hannah Ensign his possessions in Scituate were increased by her inheritance from her father and grandmother. He added materially to his property by his thrift and enterprise, and at the time of his death was one of the wealthiest men of the town. He resided in the Ensign house north of Satuit Brook. In 1697 he purchased land for a new house "north of Job Otis' warehouse." This house built in 1697 was standing until 1927, when it was demolished. It was known as the Capt. James Little and the William Paley Allen house, and stood on Front Street at the Harbor Village, just south of the Jesse Dunbar "Mansion House," now (1936) standing and occupied by Capt. Edward Edson. It was the first Young's Tavern, and in this house in 1767 the *last meeting of the Conihassett Partners was held*. The land upon which the house stood was a part of the house lot of Will James, whose dock, which he dug for building and launching his vessels, is today (1936) known as "Will James' dock."

9 Feb. 1703/4 Stephen Otis sold land granted to successors of Thomas Ensign's descendants. (Plym. Co. Rec., Vol. 5, p. 108.)

In 1725 Stephen⁴ Otis bought of Daniel Smalie, Jr., of Cape Cod his house and land in Truro.

HANNAH ENSIGN and "STEVEN OATICE" were married in Scituate 16 Jan. 1685. She was born in Scituate in 1669, the only child of JOHN ENSIGN and his wife ELIZABETH WADE, who died about the time of her daughter's birth. JOHN ENSIGN was one of the *heroes under Capt. Michael Peirce* of Scituate, who *fell when Capt. Peirce and nearly all of his men were slain* in the Rehoboth battle in 1676, better known as "Pawtucket Fight," in which Capt. Michael Peirce and above sixty of his men were slain on a Sabbath day 26 Mar. 1676. The last will and testament of John Ensign, made before leaving home reads:

I, JOHN ENSIGNE of Scituate in the Government of new plimouth being to goe forth in the present Expedition *against the Barbarous natives* and doe not know how it may please God to deal with me doe therefore make this my last will and Testament in forme as followeth: And first



CAPT. STEPHEN OTIS' HOUSE, BUILT IN 1697

From "Old Scituate"



JOSHUA OTIS HOUSE

From "Old Scituate"

I comit my soule into the hands of Almighty God my Creator and of Jesus Christ my Blessed Saviour and Redeemer. Item: I give & bequeath unto my dear mother ELIZABETH ENSIGNE all my lands meadoes & uplands w^{ch} my father gave me in a will of his Bearing date the sixteenth of July 1663: during her Natural life: Item: I give to my daughter HANNAH ENSIGNE after my mother's deeease my now dwelling house and Barne and other housing with all the upland lying by my house and one Lott of meadow adjoyning to the first Clift. Item. I give to my daughter hannah one 20 aere lott lying and Being in the Woods near unto the swamp Called Round head all which land and meadow I give to my daughter Hannah & to the heirs of her Body forever. I give to my sister hannah Shepheard her son Thomas Shepheard Jun^r one 20 aere Lott lying in the Woods adjoyning to the Lott of Isaae Chittenden and to the Lott of Edward Ginkens, and also one Lott of meadow being at Conihasset adjoining to the meadow of John Vinals, and he is to pay unto Every of his Brothers and Sisters forty shillings a year. I give unto my sister Hannah Wade and her son Jacob the *first Clift* and one meadow which joynes to the Beach near the harbour and he is to pay to his Sister Silenee ten pound and to his Brother Joseph five pounds. Item. I give unto my mother all the rest of my Estate Cattle and movables Exeepting two cows and I doe will that my mother do pay to my Sister Sarah Wade the ten pound Leggaie that my father gave her. Item. I give Sarah Underwood two cows which was before Exeepted. my mind and will is that my mother Bring up my daughter Hannah as her own ehild: And after her deeease my sister Sarah: I doe appoint and ordaine my mother to be my executrix and do joyn with her Respecting her weakness and Inability my Brother Thomas Wade Joynt Exeeutors of this my last Will and Testament. In Witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seal.

JOHN ENSIGNE (and a seal)

Signed and sealed ye 5th of July 1676

In the presence of us

JOHN VINAL

THOMAS GINKINS

THOMAS ENSIGN, father of John, was born in Cranbrook, Kent, England, and died in Scituate, 1663. Thomas Ensigne, of Cranbrook, Kent, yeoman, in his will, dated 3 Sept. 1637, names "My father, Thomas Ensigne, in New England, my brother and sisters in New England." (Principal Probate Registers, London, P. C. C. 188, Wotton.) Thomas Ensign married 17 Jan. 1638/9 Elizabeth Wilder of Hingham, daughter of widow Martha Wilder of Ship-lake, Oxford, England, who sailed on the *Confidence*, of London, from Southampton, the last of Apr. 1638. The "History of Hingham" says that she came with two daughters in 1638, while Banks mentions only "spinster daughter Mary." It is possible that

Elizabeth came earlier, with her brother, Edward Wilder, who was in Hingham in 1637. Widow Martha Wilder was given a house lot of five acres on Main Street, near Pleasant Street, South Hingham.

Edward Wilder, son of Widow Martha and brother of Elizabeth, was given a grant of ten acres in Hingham in 1637. After 1642 he purchased the property of Samuel Ward on Main Street, between High and Friend streets, which became his residence. Edward Wilder married about 1650 Elizabeth Eames, daughter of Anthony, Sr., of Marshfield, formerly, it is thought, of Dorset, England, where he married Margery —. Mary (Molly) Wilder, youngest daughter of Edward and Elizabeth (Eames), born in 1668, married in 1695 Dr. Francis LeBaron. The house in which Edward Wilder lived is still standing (1936), and is spoken of as "the Nameless Nobleman house." It was in the attic of this house that Molly concealed the young French refugee, as told by their descendant, Mrs. Jane Goodwin Austin in that delightful story of Colonial life, "The Nameless Nobleman." The house was owned by the Wilders until a few years ago, when it was sold by the late Edward F. Wilder to Frank W. Wright, President of the Rockland Trust Company, who now (1936) lives in it.

Children of THOMAS¹ ENSIGN and ELIZABETH WILDER:

- i. JOHN ENSIGN, b. abt. 1640; m. ELIZABETH WADE, dau. of NICHOLAS and ELIZABETH (HANFORD) WADE. She was b. abt. 1650; d. soon after the birth of her dau. Hannah (see Hanford under Turner-Jenkins). One Nicholas Wade ae. 19 embarked on the *Falcon* from London for Barbadoes 14 Apr. 1635.
- ii. Hannah Ensign, m. Thomas Shephard of Charlestown or Cambridge.
- iii. Sarah Ensign, m. Thomas Wade, son of Nicholas.

Hannah (Ensign) Otis, daughter of John Ensigne, died 1 May 1729, aged 60. About two weeks after her death, her husband, Capt. STEPHEN⁴ OTIS, made his will, dividing his estate between his children. This will was not signed until 1733, just before his death. He was buried in Meeting House Lane burying ground. The slate stone marking his grave was imported from Wales. (The inscription is legible in 1936.)

I STEPHEN OTIS of Scituate in the county of Plymouth in New England yeoman . . . do make this my last will and testament . . . Imprimis, I give and bequeath unto my son Ensign Otis, all my homestead where I now dwell on both sides of the way with buildings, tan housing, lots on the first cliff & my meadow thereto adjoining. To have and to hold the same with the appurtenances . . . Provided upon condi-

tion that neither my son Ensign nor his heirs nor any of them shall or do at any time hereafter in any wise molest or disturb or endeavor to hinder my son John Otis his heirs or assigns from the quiet and peaceable possession of ye land hereafter in my will given him & also provided that my sd son Ensign or his executors pay unto my daughter Hannah Richmond seventy pounds & to my daughter Thankful Otis seventy pounds, within three months after my decease in such specie as shall then be passing, — Item. I give & bequeath unto my son John Otis all that my estate of housing & lands where he lately dwelt sd land being about sixty acres more or less to have & to hold the same with the appurtenances to him his heirs & assigns forever. He or they paying to my son ISAAC OTIS 60 £ & to my sd daughter Hannah thirty pounds, and to my sd daughter Thankfull thirty pounds within three months after my decease in such specie as shall then be passing. And further it is my will that if sd Ensign or his heirs shall at any time hereafter molest, disturb, & recover ye possession of ye lands herein before to sd John given from ye sd John his heirs or assigns or any part thereof that then the sd John Otis shall have & hold the sd buildings, cliff & meadow, Tan House & tan pits where I now dwel & which is herein given to sd Ensign to him sd John his heirs & assigns forever. Item. I give to my son Stephen Otis his heirs & assigns forever all my salt marches at Cohassett being about six acres & my upland thereto adjoining & two shares of Cedar swamp in ye Town Cedar Swamp & one acre of *Garnetts* Swamp near Cedar Swamp & all my upland adjoining thereto being about one acre. — Item. I give to my son ISAAC OTIS his heirs & assigns forever my three shares of Cedar Swamp Hooppole Hill Swamp & four acres of land adjoining James Cudworth's land which was Garnetts & also what is yet to lay out in right of ye suc^r of Jn^o Ensign & my personal rights in the second division of Scituate commons & in any other division or divisions which is yet to be made of sd common also I give to sd Isaac the sixty pounds I have herein ordered John to pay him. Item. I give & bequeath unto my son Joseph Otis his heirs & assigns forever my twenty five acres of land joining to Mr. Tildens land & Israll Chittendens land. Part of which I bought of Thomas Shepard also two acres & a half more or less near ye bridge called Nicholls Bridge joyning to Nash's Land & Bailey's land & 2½ shares of meadow near ye Harbour betwixt ye clay pit & ye creek to have & to hold yt to him his heirs & assigns forever. Item. I give & bequeath unto my son Joshua Otis his heirs & assigns forever about 15 acres of land joining to Jon^a Merritt Jr's land which I bought of Henry Chittenden & my son Stephen & part of which I laid out, also I give to sd Joshua his heirs & assigns forever my five acres of land joining to ye Mill Brook & Nashes swamp also about one acre & one half on ye north side of ye Brook by Mr. Bourn's joining to Cohassett line. Item. I give to my daughter Hannah afores^d £100 to be paid her by my sons Ensign & John as before ordered. Item. I give to my daughter Thankful afores^d £100 to be paid her by my sons Ensign & John as before ordered. Item. I give & bequeath unto my six children hereafter

named viz: Stephen, ISAAC, Joseph, Joshua, Hannah & Thankful all my movable & personal estate of every sort & kind whatsoever to be equally divided betwixt them, my just debts & funeral charges being first paid out of them by my executors. Lastly, I do hereby appoint my sons Ensign Otis & John Otis to be joint executors of this my last will & testament & in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seal the day & year first above written. (16 May 1729)

Signed sealed etc in the
presence of us.

STEPHEN OTIS

Seal

JN ^o CUSHING Jr.	} 1733.
STEPHEN VINAL Jr.	
TIMOTHY WHITE	

(Plymouth Co. Records, Vol. 6, p. 401.)

23 Apr., 1728 Stephen⁴ Otis, Sr., eordwainer, and Stephen⁵ Otis, Jr. exchanged land by deed recorded Plym. Co. Rec. Book 23, Folio 28: 29. Stephen Otis, Jr. was a mariner. The land was land adjoining Town Cedar Swamp, Seituatue Common Shore, and land near Jos. Merritt's dwelling house and joining Israel Chittenden's land.

6 Nov., 1701 Stephen Otis for £18 sold to Samuel Stodder, blacksmith, a swamp next land of Rodolphus Elmes & J. Jackson, or James, in Conihassett. (Vol. 17, p. 42, Plym. Co. Deeds.)

9 May, 1685 Stephen Otis sold for £80 land, house, buildings, fenees, Weymouth, Mass. to Wm. Adams, elerie, Dedham, next to Hunt, Pratt, & Richards.

In Vol. 10, p. 297, is recorded deed from Stephen⁴ & Hannah Otis to Benjamin & Mary Studley, "6 aeres land with housing, etc.," £10, Ewell, Hilard, Piercee.

In Plymouth County Deeds I find transfers of land are recorded to and from Stephen Otis as follows: Vol. 3, p. 140, 1699, pp. 141, 147; Vol. 6, p. 259; Vol. 41, p. 55; Vol. 38, pp. 37, 44; Vol. 29, p. 173; Vol. 7, p. 210; Vol. 10, p. 297, land and housing, Conihassett; Vol. 11, pp. 66, 227, 54, dwelling house and 600 aeres of land in Plymouth, Nath^l and Abigail Otis; Vol. 23, p. 28; Vol. 62, p. 187; Vol. 16, p. 141; Vol. 11, p. 782; Vol. 77, p. 12; Vol. 44, p. 105, land at Cat Hill, Seituatue; p. 155 land next Ensign Otis.

Capt. Stephen⁴ Otis died 26 May 1733 at Scituatue.

Children of Capt. STEPHEN⁴ OTIS and HANNAH ENSIGN:

- i. Hannah, b. 16 May 1686; m. John Riehmond 1709.
- ii. Mary, b. 7 July 1689; d. young.
- iii. Ensign⁵, b. 29 Jan. 1691; inherited the Ensign property; house and lands, with the tannery established by his father (see Plym. deeds, vol. 34, p. 206). He was a Representative to the General Court 1751-52-53. He lived in the Ensign house. He m. Jan. 1713/14



MONASTERY NEAR BURGOS, SPAIN, WHERE DR.
AND MRS. L. VERNON BRIGGS WERE ENTER-
TAINED IN 1930



DR. EPHRAIM OTIS' HOUSE

(See page 441)

Print from "Old Scituate"

Mary Barker, dau. of John, Esq., and Desire (Annable) and d. Nov. 1774. Of his nine children, four only were living at the time of his death.

His son John⁶, b. 11 Apr. 1725 next inherited the Ensign property. He m. Jane Turner 1746, dau. of Amos and Elizabeth (Stockbridge) Turner and lived in the Ensign house. He later built the house on the north corner of Front and Otis streets at the Harbor, where his son Ensign⁷ afterwards lived. The latter m. Luey, dau. of Amos Lapham and their daughter, Jane Otis, m. John Beal, and afterwards lived in the Ensign house, or one built on the same site. Ensign⁷ also had a son Ensign⁸ the 3d, who m. Lucy Little, and they were the parents of the wives of George Minot and William Paley Allen, sons of Rev. Morrill Allen of Pembroke. The Allen brothers were the proprietors of the Allen store at the Harbor, which carried on a large and active business for many years. It was the largest trading center for miles around. George M. Allen was engaged in the shipping industry, being part owner of many vessels, and accumulated much property. His son and daughter, George Otis and Cornelia M. Allen, gave to the town of Scituate the Allen Memorial Library in memory of their parents, George Minot and Hannah (Otis) Allen. (See "History of Shipbuilding on North River.")

Ignatius⁶ Otis, son of Ensign⁵ and Mary Barker Otis, b. 2 Feb. 1731/2; m. Thankful Otis, dau. of Job⁸ and Thankful, b. 15 July 1735 in Hanover. They were second cousins. She d. in 1826. Ignatius d. in 1802. They lived in Scituate near Halifax Hill, now known as Otis Hill, on Grove Street (Norwell), formerly the residence of Barnabas Barker. (See Barker.) Ignatius⁶ Otis was a member of the *Committee of Inspection* of the town of Scituate, chosen 3 Oct. 1774. He was an ardent Whig, and was very active in the Revolutionary cause. He d. in 1802. Of his family of eleven children two d. in infancy, Oliver moved to Hallowell, Me., Job and Fanny died unm. at Otis Hill. Thankful m. George Torrey 1782, and lived in the Job Randall house on River Street, Norwell. They were the ancestors of all bearing the name of Torrey in the Town of South Scituate. Division of land in Hanover (Plymouth County Records, Vol. 65, pp. 164, 166).

Capt. Noah⁶ Otis, son of Ensign⁵ and Mary Barker Otis, b. 1734; m. Phoebe Cushing, 1766, dau. of Ezekiel and Hannah (Doane) of Falmouth, Cape Elizabeth, and a sister of Luey Cushing, the wife of James Otis, M.D. Noah Otis was a soldier in the Revolution, and commanded a Guard which was on duty both day and night during the war. He was also a member of the Committee of Correspondence and Inspection in 1774. He died 6 Nov. 1798. Noah Otis was a hatter, and resided at the Harbor Village. An item in the will of his father, dated 1773, reads:

"I give to my son Noah Otis the Hatter's shop wherein he now worketh, and the land whereon it stands, & also one half acre of

land more or less whereon his dwelling house & barn now stand lying between the house that was Amos Lapham's, & the land which I sold Obadiah Merritt; & one half of my cedar swamp lying in Scituate & two thirds of my land lying in Nottingham in N. Hampshire, & my part of the wharf & warehouse that stands by the harbour; and my interests in the meadow Lots that Lye by the Harbour in this side the mill creek that cometh up to the upper landing by my house, & also one bed with the furniture thereto belonging, *after Ignatius has chosen his.*" Amos Lapham's house stood on Front Street, Scituate, just north of the George M. Allen, later Charles W. Frye, store. It was later attached to the store building, and used as a part of it until the building was demolished in 1933. Samuel Woodworth, author of "The Old Oaken Bucket," was born in the house formerly of Amos Lapham in 1786.

NOAH OTIS appears on a List of Officers commissioned for the 2nd Reg't of Militia in the County of Plymouth; Rank, Ensign 1st Scituate Co. Col. T. (Thomas) Clapp's Reg't. Reported commissioned Oct. 31, 1765. also, on a List of Officers commissioned for the East Division and late 1st Battalion of the 2d Reg't of Militia in the County of Plymouth, September 1771; rank Captain 1st Scituate Co. Col. David Stockbridges Regt. (Mass. Archives. Muster Rolls, Vol. 99, p. 79.)

For children of Capt. Noah⁶ Otis and Phoebe Cushing, see Cushing, 4. Ezekiel.

- iv. JOHN⁵, b. 7 Apr. 1694; m. 1 Feb. 1715, Leah Stodder, dau. of Deacon Samuel of Brushy hill, on the "Country Way" near Greenbush Village. In 1729 John Otis was living on what is now called Branch Street, where Dreamwold Hall stands (1936). When it was proposed in 1729 to build a new meeting house for the First Parish, to be placed on "a certain Piece or gore of land," the location of John Otis's house was mentioned. This gore of land lay "betwixt two highways, which two highways open from that which goeth by Baleh's towards Cohasset, the one by James Cudworth's house, the other by John Otis's." James Cudworth's house is in 1936 occupied by the Scituate Historical Society. John Otis' was the nucleus of the Lawson estate. The Otis Genealogy says, "He lived in Boston 1750, where he kept a public house." He left no family on record.
- 7.v. ISAAC⁵ (M.D.), b. 1699; m. DEBORAH JACOB.
- vi. THANKFUL, b. abt. 1702/3; m. Job⁶ Otis, Jr.
- vii. STEPHEN, b. 3 Nov. 1699 or 1707; mariner; unm.; will dated 1734/5.
- viii. JOSEPH⁵, b. 16 Mar. 1709/10; m. 1740 Mercy Little, dau. of David, Esq., of the "Two Stacks," built in 1700. This old Mansion on Mann Lot Road stood on an elevation that brought its two stacks of massive chimneys in full view of vessels coming into Scituate Harbor from the north. When the spire of the First Church, called the "Old Sloop," was in line with the "Two Stacks" and a certain tree, vessels were on a safe course to avoid the dangerous ledges.

Merey Little m. (2) Rev. John Hancock, father of Governor John Hancock.

Joseph⁵ and Merey (Little) Otis lived at the "Two Stacks" with her brother, Barnabas Little, a wealthy and influential man, who held many town offices, and loaned large sums of money to help carry on the Revolutionary War. He was unm., and on his death left the estate to his nephew, John⁶ Otis, son of Joseph and Merey (Little), b. 9 July 1754, who m. (1), Winnet Atkins; (2) Widow Lydia Bailey.

Merey⁶ Otis, daughter of Joseph⁵ & Merey Little mar. Nathaniel Waterman, then of Boston, who settled at Scituate, and purchased from Noah⁶ & Phoebe Otis their homestead place and buildings &c, next land of Ensign⁷ Otis, also $\frac{1}{4}$ of wharf and store, in partnership with Capt. George Morton and others. (Plymouth Rec., Vol. 58, p. 187.)

The oldest son of Joseph⁵ and Merey (Little) Otis was Joseph⁶, bpt. 15 May 1743; m. Abigail Otis, daughter of Ephraim⁶ and Rachel (Hersey) Otis. Joseph⁶ Otis, Jr., d. in Boston 22 May 1790. Joseph⁵, Sr., d. in Scituate 1788, ae. 79.

Another son of Joseph⁵, Sr., and Merey (Little) was Barnabas⁶ Otis, b. 1756. He lived in Plymouth and m. (1) Polly Richard; (2) Fanny Totman.

A most interesting old letter was found in the "Two Stacks" before it was destroyed, dated Plymouth, 26 Aug. 1803, written by Barnabas⁶ Otis to his mother, and inscribed on the back:

Mrs. Marcy Otis, Scituate,
To the beautiful Mrs. Marcy Otis.

Honored Mother,

I am under the disagreeable necessity to inform you that my dear and only son Barney was prest on Board of a British Frigate called *L'Immortality* the 29th of last May in the English Channel for the want of a protection — the Brig he was in from Malaga to St. Petersburg in Russia.

The above disagreeable news I received By Last Tuesday mail By a letter from Captin of the Brig to Mr. Hedge his owner.

Dear Mother, this is harder than Death to his parents for the Almighty has a right to take his creation out of the World when he pleases. But to have our dear child taken from us By an arbitrary stretch of power of man it is attended with such aggravations too hard for human mortals to Bair.

. . . the principal men of Plymouth are all interested in this Disagreeable event everything is done towards obtaining his release. their are such Certificates with pressing letters Gone on to London to the American Ambassador that will obtain his release when he can be found. Likewise Certificate to the Secerity of State that are sufficient to prove him to be an American & the Secerity it is his duty as an officer to demand him from that power that detains him. . . . must conclude by subscribing myself your affectionate Son Barnabas Otis.

- ix. Joshua⁵ Otis, "gentleman and shipwright," youngest son of Capt. Stephen⁴ and Hannah Ensign, b. 1711, bpt. 28 June 1713, was a

ship captain. He was part owner of the schooner *Polly* 1784, and of the schooner *Friendship* 1788. Joshua's wife was Hannah Barker, b. in the old Williams-Barker house at Scituate in 1713, dau. of Samuel Williams and Hannah (Cushing) Barker. Intentions of the marriage of Joshua⁵ Otis and Hannah Barker were recorded 13 Dec. 1735. On his marriage, Joshua⁶ Otis took up residence in a house near that of his wife's father, that had been built as early as 1634 by Benjamin House. Joshua Otis, or his son Joshua, Jr., built a large addition to the original structure, and this addition is still standing (1936) on Turner Avenue near Hatherley Road, in the newly developed section of shore property. The old structure built by House was not demolished until the property had been sold by James Turner, a descendant of Joshua Otis, in 1925. A view of the Joshua Otis house made after 1900 shows the ancient structure on the right. In 1742 Joshua Otis, shipwright, bought land and one quarter of a wharf of Isaac Chittenden, and more land on 7 Mar. 1749. In June 1788 he conveyed a salt marsh near Briggs' meadow to Robert Lenthal Eels of Hanover.

George⁶ Otis, b. 1744, son of Joshua⁵ and Hannah (Barker), was a schoolmaster. He did not marry, but in 1765 built the house in Greenbush Village, later that of Dr. Elisha James, and now owned by Gorham Peters (1936), according to the late Charles Otis Ellms, a descendant of Joshua Otis, Jr. George⁶ Otis taught what was known as "the higher branches," including *mathematics, navigation, astronomy, and kindred subjects*, which may partly explain the fact that so many young Scituate men were master mariners, prepared to take command of vessels at an early age. Another son of Joshua⁵ and Hannah (Barker) Otis, Joshua⁶ Otis, Jr., b. 20 Apr. 1748, was sent to Harvard College, and there his social and lively disposition led him to take part in all the sports and social events. This brought an end to his college career; he was expelled, never to return, for taking the part of the devil, dressed in scarlet, in a college play entitled "The Day of Judgment," which gave great offence to the college authorities. Joshua⁶ Otis, Jr., m. 23 Nov. 1769 Mary Thaxter, dau. of Major Samuel Thaxter of Hingham, who was an *officer* in the *French and Indian War*, and was *present at the massacre after the capitulation of Fort William Henry in 1757*. He was tied to a tree, awaiting a horrible death at the hands of the savages, when French officers passing by took pity on him and cut his bonds. He made his escape to Fort Edward, while in the meantime the news of his horrible fate had been carried to Hingham by another escaped soldier. On a certain Sunday, Rev. Ebenezer Gay of Hingham preached his funeral sermon. On the following day a neighbor met Major Thaxter riding into town, and exclaimed in amazement, "Great Heavens, Major! Is that you? Why, we've just buried you!" Joshua⁶ Otis, Jr., was an ardent patriot in the Revolution, and entered heart and soul into the cause of Independence. The Thaxters



SKATUTAHKEE HOUSE ON FARM OF DR. AND MRS. L. VERNON
BRIGGS, HANCOCK, N. H.



FOUNTAIN AND FLOWERS, FRONT OF SKATUTAHKEE HOUSE

(See Chapter XXVII)

Views taken by L. V. Briggs

were Tories, and Mary, a woman of remarkable character, was strongly in sympathy with King George, and they had many a hot discussion. When a son was born to her in 1775 she insisted that he be named George, for her beloved King, and after much argument her husband was obliged to promise her that he should bear that name. He took the baby away to be baptized, and when he came back the child bore the name of George Washington Otis, — the George Washington⁷ Otis whose family resided at 34 Chambers Street, Boston, for a period of ninety years.

Mary Thaxter's sister, Sally Thaxter, m. Capt. John Pulling, the close friend of Paul Revere, who was supposed for many years to have placed the signal lanterns in the belfry of the Old North Church. Although the honor of that action has after many years been decided in favor of the sexton, Robert Newman, Captain Pulling, who lived near by, was immediately suspected, and his house searched by the British troops. But his plucky wife hid him under a wine butt in the cellar, and after nightfall the couple escaped in a small boat manned by two sailors. Wending their way between the British Men of War in Boston Harbor, they headed down the coast toward the home of Sally's sister in Scituate. Off Pleasant Beach in Cohasset the young wife was taken ill, and they landed, and took shelter in the shanty of a fisherman on the beach. There the next morning a daughter was born to Sally Pulling, and the child survived, married, and lived for many years in the town of Abington.

Mary Thaxter Otis lived, a widow, to be ninety-two years of age, with two maiden daughters, Sally and Abigail, in the Joshua Otis house. A third daughter, Mary Otis⁸, m. Charles Ellms, and lived in half of the house, while her mother and sisters lived in the other half. Mary Ellms, daughter of Charles and Mary (Otis)⁸, m. Capt. Nathaniel Turner of the "Scituate packet." Captain Turner was noted for his ready wit, and many bits of his humor are remembered. James Turner, who sold the old place in 1927, was a grandson.

5. JUDGE JOSEPH⁴ OTIS (2. John³, John², Richard¹) b. 1665 in Scituate, was baptized in Hingham 3 June 1666. He lived first in Scituate south of Colman Hills (in a house that afterward belonged to Gilbert Brooks), until 1721, when he moved with his family to the vicinity of New London, Conn. There he purchased a tract of 650 acres in the North Parish of New London, on Obplinksok Pond, now known as Gardiner's Lake, and was received in communion of the church of New London 19 Nov. 1722.

Joseph⁴ Otis was *Judge of the Court of Common Pleas for Plymouth County* from 1703 to 1714. His contemporaries upon the bench of this court were his father-in-law, Nathaniel Thomas of

Marshfield, John Cushing (Judge John 1st) of Scituate, James Warren of Plymouth, and Isaac Winslow of Marshfield. The "Boston Evening Post," in an obituary to Judge Winslow in Dec. 1738, said that "universal confidence and esteem, integrity, fortitude and humanity, was an equivalent to knowledge of the law for service in the judiciary in those years." In 1710 Joseph Otis was elected, under the Governor's order, a *Representative to the Great and General Court*, and again in 1713. While living in Scituate he held several town offices, and was much in the public employ, — moderator of town meetings and on parish and church committees. He was a man of great integrity, a judicious and useful citizen. He died 11 June 1754 in Montville, six miles from New London. His will was dated 9 Jan. 1754.

Joseph Otis married 20 Nov. 1688 his cousin, Dorothy Thomas, second daughter of Hon. Nathaniel and Deborah (Jacob) Thomas of Marshfield. She was born in Marshfield 6 Nov. 1670, and died in Montville, Conn., 10 Jan. 1755. (See Thomas.)

Children of Judge Joseph⁴ Otis and Dorothy Thomas:

- i. Nathaniel, b. 30 Jan. 1690 at Scituate; moved to Conneecticut with his father in 1721, and lived in Colchester, Conn., on land purchased by his father in 1624 of Capt. Samuel Gilbert. The farm of 280 acres included a house, for "770 £ lawful money of New England." In 1735 Judge Joseph deeded this farm to his son Nathaniel "for and in consideration of the love, good will and affection which I have for and do bear unto my beloved son, and is the whole of what I design my said son shall have of my estate." Nathaniel Otis erected a new house on this estate which has been occupied successively by five generations. Nathaniel Otis' wife was Hannah Thatcher of Yarmouth, Mass.
- ii. James⁵, b. 21 Jan. 1692/3 in Scituate. He settled in Montville, Conn., abt. 1721; was of East Haddam; d. Saybrook, Conn., 1754. He m. Sarah Tudor, dau. of Colonel Tudor of New York, who returned to England with all of his family except Sarah and one sister. Mrs. Otis d. at Colchester, Conn., Feb. 1788, ae. 91. She made her will Mar. 1784, and mentioned sons John, Stephen and Richard; daus. Elizabeth Bigelow and Lueretia Skinner; granddaughters Sarah Ann Wattles and Abigail Hide; grandsons Joseph and Asa Hineckley, children of her daughter Elsie.

Stephen⁶ Otis, son of James⁵ and Sarah (Tudor) Otis, b. 30 Sept. 1738; d. Halifax, Vt., 1 Dec. 1831; m. Lucy Chandler of Duxbury, Mass., 9 Feb. 1762. She was b. 21 June 1738, d. 4 Mar. 1837, ae. nearly 99 yrs. They settled at Colchester, Conn., where their children were born. Stephen Otis was in the *French War under General Putnam, also in the Revolution*. Children: Arumah, b. 1763; Caroline, b. 1764; Calvin, b. 1766; Elsie, b. 1768; Chandler, b. 1770;

Luey, b. 1772; Stephen and James (twins), b. 1773; Seth, b. 1777; Nathaniel, b. 1778; James, b. 1780; Joseph, b. 1782. ("Boston Evening Transcript," 7 July, 1920.)

- iii. Deborah, b. 24 Apr. 1694 in Scituate; m. David Clap, son of Samuel of Scituate, and resided in Scituate.
- iv. Mary, b. 20 Mar. 1695/6; m. John Thompson of Hebron, Conn.
- v. Dorothy, b. 24 Apr. 1698 in Scituate; m. (1) Patrick McClanen (McLaren); m. (2) Cary Latham; m. (3) John Bissel.
- vi. Elizabeth, b. 2 Sept. 1700; m. Luke Lincoln, son of Caleb of Hingham. Resided first in Scituate, later removed to Leicester, Mass. She died before 1735/6.
- vii. Anne, b. 21 Sept. 1702 in Scituate; m. Robert Clelland (Cleveland).
- viii. Bethia, b. 20 Nov. 1703; m. (1) Rev. — Billings; m. (2) Rev. — Mosely.
- ix. Delight, b. 19 Dec. 1706 in Scituate; m. Jabez Lothrop.
- x. Hannah, b. 10 Dec. 1709 in Scituate; d. 1725.
- xi. Joseph⁵, b. 1 Oct. 1712 in Scituate; m. 1738 Elizabeth Little, dau. of David Little of the "Two Stacks," Scituate, and moved to Richmond, Mass.

James⁶, son of Joseph⁵ Otis and Elizabeth Little, b. 1746, m. (1) Sarah Holmes, presumably dau. of Jabez Holmes; (2) Mary Phelps of Wethersfield, Conn.; (3) Belinda Clapp of Southampton, Mass. The eldest son, Jabez Holmes Otis, of Westfield, Mass., m. Luey Ely of West Springfield, Mass. (See Ely Genealogy.) (From "Life and Letters of Harrison Gray Otis," by Morison.)

Nathaniel Waterman, husband of Joseph⁵ Otis' daughter Marcy, came to Scituate from Marshfield, was a brother of Capt. Anthony Waterman who settled on the farm of Capt. Joseph Sylvester, at Church Hill, built a tannery, and carried on a successful business. Captain Anthony was the ancestor of the Watermans of South Scituate and Hanover, who intermarried with the Cushing family of South Scituate.

Nathaniel Waterman settled at Scituate, and purchased from Noah & Phoebe (Cushing) Otis their homestead place and buildings &c, next land of Ensign Otis, also $\frac{1}{4}$ of wharf and store, in partnership with Capt. George Morton and others. Consideration paid, £15. (Plymouth Records, Vol. 58, p. 187.)

Nathaniel Waterman was distinguished for his firmness and zeal in the Revolution, a member of the town's Committee of Correspondence.

Their children:

- i. Deborah Waterman, b. 1768; m. her cousin Anthony Waterman, Jr., 1787. Res. Scituate, near Buck's Corner.
- ii. Merey Waterman, b. 1770; m. Thomas Hobart of Pembroke (Hanson).
- iii. Nathaniel Waterman, Jr., b. 1772; m. Lydia Phillips of Marshfield; removed to Maine.

- iv. Polly Waterman, b. 1778; m. Lemuel Vinal of Scituate 1798, son of Israel, Esq., and Mercy Cushing.
- v. Hannah Waterman, bpt. 1792.
- xii. Rachel, b. 1 Dec. 1713 in Scituate; m. Jonathan Harris, and resided at Colchester, Conn.

Many descendants of Judge Joseph Otis lived in Vermont, New York State, Connecticut and in the West.

6. **JOB⁴ OTIS** (2. *John³, John², Richard¹*), born 20 Mar. 1667 in Scituate, was an enterprising and prosperous man. He succeeded Will James as a shipbuilder at the "Will James dock," near the north town landing at the Harbor, as early as 1700. On October of that year Isaac Little of Marshfield made oath "that the katch *Little Otis* of Scituate, in the Province of Massachusetts Bay, in New England, . . . was built at Scituate aforesaid, in this present year 1700, And that Job Otis of said Scituate, together with him the said Isaac Little, are at present owners thereof," etc. Between 1699 and 1706, sixteen vessels were built at Scituate, and it is probable that most if not all of them were built by Job Otis and **JOHN KENT**. Many records of vessels built at Scituate after 1715 were confiscated at the time of the Revolution. (See Briggs' "History of Shipbuilding on North River.")

In 1710 Job⁴ Otis purchased from William Ticknor, Jr. for £400, the warehouse and farm of Sergeant William Ticknor. The warehouse was mentioned as early as 1660, and is said to have stood near the location of the Jesse Dunbar store, near the head of the dock. The farm was on the hill above the Scituate railroad station, where the large house, known as the Abijah Otis house, is still standing (1936). Job lived at that place until his death in 1758, after which his son Job, Jr., went there from Hanover and occupied it.

Previous to his marriage, Job⁴ Otis sold to Matthew Cushing Jr. of Hingham, wheelwright, for £160, 30 acres of land, and 5 shares in undivided Commons in Hingham, "at a place called the plane," being the land bequeathed him by the will of his brother James⁴ Otis. (Suffolk Co. Deeds, Vol. 18, p. 209, 1697/8.)

Job⁴ & Mercy Otis sell to Lazarus Beale of Hingham for £30, the sixty-seventh lot in 2d Division "of Connihasett upland in Hingham" granted to John Otis, "containing 28 a, $\frac{3}{4}$ & 20 rods, bounded by highway between First & Second Division," and another between Second & Third Division (1700). (Suffolk Deeds, Vol. 20, p. 173.)

Job⁴ Otis was partner in the Land Bank of 1740. (New Eng. Hist. Rec., Vol. 50, p. 31.)

Job & Mercy Otis of Scituate Yeoman for £100 in bills of credit called manfactory bills from Robert Auchmuty of Roxbury Esq., Samuel Adams & William Stoddard of Boston Esqrs., Peter Chardon of Boston, merchant, Samuel Wath (?) of Chelsea Esq. all of Co. of Suffolk. George Leonard of Norton in the Co. of Bristol Esq., Robert Hale of Beverly Esq., John Choate of Ipswich Esq. & Thomas Cheever of Lynn, gentⁿ, all in the Co. of Essex. Direction of the Manufactory Company (so called) by the said Job Otis for his share as a partner in said Company land in Scituate next land of Timothy White, Capt. Samuel Barker & Damon (about 60 acres) Provided nevertheless the said Job and Mercy Otis shall at the expiration of every year from this date annually during the space of twenty years pay to said Robert Auchmut'y &c five in the hundred of ye principal sum now received & three per cent interest for ye principal enjoyed in manufactory bills as aforesaid, or in merchantable hemp, flax, cordage, bar iron, cast iron, linnens, copper, Tann^d Leather, flaxseed, bees Wax, baybery Wax, sail cloth, Canvas, nails, Tallow, lumber viz shingles, staves, hoops, white pine boards, white oak plank, white oak boards & shiptimber; barrel beef, barrel pork, oil, whalebone, or cordwood of the manufacture or Produce of ye province aforesaid, or logwood at such prices as the Directors shall judge they pay for in lawful money at six Shillings & eight pence per ounce with one per cent. advance thereon, at the respective times of payment then this deed shall be void; but if any one payment above conditioned for shall be behind in ye whole or in part or unperformed for the space of one month after the time above set for it then to remain in full force & virtue (security for subscription to shares) 9 Sep. 1740. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 34, p. 35.)

Job Otis of Scituate, Joseph & Sam^l Barstow of Hanover, in consideration of *Hanover being a new Town, land for building a meeting house near Drummer Stetson's*, 1728. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 26, p. 37.)

Stephen and Hannah Otis for £17, Shopkeeper land adjoining Job Otis' former land, 1709. (Vol. 8, p. 33.)

Abijah Otis, cabinet maker, the whole of Job Otis' farm in Scituate. (Vol. 70, p. 273.)

Job Otis, shopkeeper, for 375 ounces silver from David Little, carpenter, messuage with land and dwelling house in Conihasset, next land of Capt. Stephen Otis. (Vol. 9, p. 164.)

Job Otis married about 1698 or 1699, Mercy (or Mary) Little, probably a daughter of Ephraim and Mary (Sturtevant) Little of Marshfield. She was a sister of David Little, the builder of the "Two Stacks" on Mann Lot Road, Scituate, and of Rev. Ephraim Little, pastor of the First Church of Plymouth 1699-1723. (In Davis' "Ancient Landmarks" she is named Mary, in Suffolk Deed, above, her name is Mercy Otis.) Her father, Ephraim Little, was a son of Thomas Little from Devonshire, Eng., a lawyer, who

was in Plymouth 1630, and married 1633 Ann, daughter of Richard Warren of the *Mayflower*. He removed to that part of Marshfield known as Littletown, where his descendant, Luther Little, now (1936) resides. The above-named Isaac Little, owner with Job Otis of the ketch *Little Otis*, 1700, was either Lieut. Isaac Little of Marshfield, uncle of Job's wife, or his son, Captain Isaac, b. 1678, later of Pembroke, who married, second, Abigail (Cushing) Thomas, widow of Isaac. (See William Thomas line.)

By his will, dated 13 Mar. 1752, he disposed of a large estate in Scituate and in Kingston. He had provided liberally for his daughters when they married.

Children of Job⁴ Otis and Mercy Little:

- i. Mercy, b. 12 Dec. 1700; m. 1724, Capt. John Clap, son of Judge Thomas (Rev.) Clap. Capt. John was an *officer in the French War*. His father, Judge (Rev.) Thomas grad. Harvard College 1725, was minister of the First Church of Taunton for a few years, then returned to Scituate and built the old Clapp mansion house near the Tan Brook. He was afterward a *Judge of the Plymouth County Court*, and a *Colonel* in the *militia*. Judge Clap m. (1) Mary Leonard, dau. of Judge George Leonard of Norton, and a niece of the wife of the Rev. David Barnes of the Second Church of Scituate; he m. (2) Esther Chandler, dau. of Hon. John Chandler of Worcester.

In his will, Job⁴ Otis gave his daughter Marcy "all my land in Kingston . . . with my interest in the Iron works there called Seabury Forge with its appurtenances which I bought of Daniel Little Esq."

- ii. Job⁵, Jr., b. 28 Mar. 1702; m. 16 Feb. 1726, his cousin, Thankful Otis, dau. of Captain Stephen⁴. He was a trader, and lived first in Hanover, near Circuit Street, in the Drinkwater section, where he was a member of the church in 1728-9. By his father's will, Job, Jr., was given the farm on which his father resided, described as "on both sides of the road being about 60 acres with the buildings & my three acres at Buck's field & my seven acres of salt marsh on the east & west side of Damon's creek next the beach, also my 30 acres of woodland cedar swamp near the mill brook also about 60 acres of upland meadow which I bought of William Ticknor and others joyning to Scituate harbour also about one hundred acres of land which I bought of Thomas Clark and others with the buildings on both sides of the way at a Place called the Clay pits," with the residue of the estate after bequests to wife and other children. Thankful⁶ Otis, a dau. of Job⁵, Jr., and Thankful, m. Ignatius⁶ Otis (Ensign⁶, Capt. Stephen⁴, John³, etc.).

David⁶ Otis (Job⁵, Jr.) m. Mary Vinal, and built the old mansion near the railroad station, where their grandson, Edward Otis Cooke, later built a house still standing, occupied (1936) by George T. Otis. Prince⁶ Otis (Job⁵, Jr.) m. his cousin, Ruth Otis, dau. of Ephraim⁵.

Abijah⁶ Otis (Job⁵, Jr.) m. Mary Turner, and succeeded his father and grandfather in the family homestead. The following military records are those of two sons of Job⁵ Otis, Jr.:

Job⁶ Otis appears on a Return dated Scituate April 12, 1759 of men enlisted or impressed for His Majesty's Service in Col. Thomas Clapp's Reg't to be put under the command of His Excellency Jeffry Amherst Esq., General and Commander in Chief of his Majesty's force in North America, for the invasion of Canada. Age 28, residence Scituate; enlisted April 6. Reported in the King's Navy. (Mass. Archives. Munster Rolls, Vol. 97, p. 136.)

Lemuel⁶ Otis appears on a Return, dated Scituate April 12, 1759, of men enlisted or impressed for His Majesty's Service in Col. Thomas Clap's Reg't to be put under the command of His Excellency Jeffry Amherst Esq. General and Commander in Chief of His Majesty's forces in North America for the invasion of Canada. Age 25, Residence Scituate; enlisted April 6. Reported in the King's Navy. (Mass. Archives. Munster Rolls, Vol. 97, p. 136.) [He is not mentioned in his father's will 1781.]

- iii. Abigail⁵ Otis, b. 28 Aug. 1703; m. (1) 22 Feb. 1730 Andrew Halliburton, who d. Jamaica 1755, where they were then living; (2) 18 Oct. 1756 Dr. Edward Ellis at Narragansett, R. I. Abigail's grandson, Henry Otis Halliburton, was appointed one of the *King's Councilors for Nova Scotia* 21 May 1817. The latter's son, Hon. Thomas Chandler Halliburton, whose *nom de plume* was "*Sam Slick*," was a well-known writer. He was appointed Judge at Halifax, N. S., in 1842; resigned that office and settled in England, where he sat in Parliament from Launceston, and was *Knighted by Queen Victoria*. (Otis Genealogy.)
- iv. Mary, b. 26 Nov. 1705.
- v. Ephraim⁵, b. 28 July 1708; settled on the estate in Scituate (Pleasant Street, Norwell), which has been in the possession of his descendants until 1930, when sold by his great-great-grandson, Joseph Clapp Otis, to Torrey Little. This 200-acre farm was bequeathed to Ephraim⁵ by will of his father, Job⁴. Ephraim⁵ was a successful farmer, managing his large estate with the *aid of his slaves*, frugally and successfully, until he had acquired a respectable competence. The house on Pleasant Street was built for Ephraim⁵ by his father in 1731. Ephraim⁵ Otis m. 17 Feb. 1732 Rachel Hersey of Hingham, dau. of James and Mary (Hawke) Hersey, b. Hingham 29 May 1714, d. Scituate 26 Dec. 1793. Ephraim d. 1794 in his 88th year. Both were buried in the family lot on the estate. Ephraim and Rachel deed land, Hingham 1742, inherited from her grandfather, James Hersey.

The dowry of Rachel Hersey consisted of 500 acres of land *and two slaves*. She was a sister of Dr. Ezekiel Hersey of Hingham, whose widow Sarah (Langley) Hersey m. (2) 1771, Capt. Richard Derby of Salem. Dr. Hersey in his will dated 29 Nov. 1770, *gave to Harvard College a bequest of £1,000*, the interest to be appropriated toward the support of a professor of anatomy and physics, and his

widow gave a like sum for the same purpose. She survived her second husband, Captain Derby, and, having no children, gave the money inherited from her first husband, Dr. Hersey, to found an academy in Hingham, to be known as "Derby Academy."

Ephraim and Rachel (Hersey) Otis had a large family of 12 children, of whom 2 sons and 8 daughters survived. The oldest son, Dr. Ephraim⁶ Otis, b. 1735, grad. Harvard 1756, was a *surgeon at Fort William Henry in 1757*, and was one of the few who escaped the massacre when the fort was captured Aug. 9, 1757. He received *degree of M.D. at Yale in 1759*, and settled first as a physician at Taunton, Mass. In 1769 he m. Sarah Harris, dau. of David and Martha (Jencks) Harris of Providence, who belonged to the *Society of Friends*. Dr. Ephraim Otis became a convert to that faith, and about 1773 returned to Scituate to his father's home, and established an extensive medical practice. In politics he was an uncompromising Whig, and in Mar. 1774 was one of a committee chosen to draft resolutions touching the difficulties of the times, as requested by William Clap and others. He d. 1816, and was succeeded in the family home by his son, Daniel Otis, a compounder of drugs and medicines, who was also of the Quaker faith. The last owner of the estate was Daniel's grandson, Joseph Clapp Otis, d. 1931, without issue.

Charles⁶ Otis, son of Ephraim⁵ and Rachel (Hersey) Otis, m. (1) 1779 his cousin, Luey Ellis, b. 1748. Their dau., Rachel Hersey Otis, m. 1812 Stephen Jacobs of Assinippi. They had a family of nine children, among them William Jacobs of Randolph, whose dau. Annie Loring Jacobs m. Charles B. Briggs (see *Briggs*); Stephen Otis Jacobs of Assinippi; and Dr. Franklin Jacobs, whose dau. Stella Jacobs m. Dr. W. P. Brown of Plymouth. Luey, another dau. of Charles Otis, m. John Clapp of South Street, Norwell.

Mary Otis, dau. of Ephraim⁵ and Rachel (Hersey), m. William Lincoln of Hingham. A grandson, Hon. Solomon Lincoln, b. 1804, *grad. Brown University 1822*; attorney at law; Representative to General Court 1829-41; *Senator 1830-31*; *United States Marshal 1841-44*; master in chancery 1842-43; Bank commissioner 1849; Cashier of Webster Bank, Boston, 1853-69; and its President 1869-76; member of Massachusetts Historical Society and of New England Historical Genealogical Society; President of Hingham Agricultural and Horticultural Society; and author of a "History of Hingham," published in 1827.

Abigail Otis, dau. of Ephraim⁵ and Rachel (Hersey), m. Joseph Otis, son of Joseph⁵ and Mercy (Little) of the "Two Stacks." (See Joseph⁵.)

Ruth Otis m. her cousin, Prince⁶ Otis (Job⁵, Jr.), and lived on Circuit Street, Norwell. The cellar hole of their house is a short distance south from the corner of Circuit and Pleasant streets on right-hand side of Circuit Street (1936).

Lydia Otis m. Abiel Smith of Boston, a wealthy merchant of Revolutionary days.

Hannah Otis, called Nancy, m. Barney Smith, and resided in Milton.

Susanna Otis m. her cousin, William Halliburton, of Windsor, N. S.

Rachel Otis m. Benjamin DeWolf of Windsor.

Priscilla Otis m. William Clap of Scituate, and lived on the corner of South and Pleasant streets, Norwell, where their son, Allen Clapp, later resided, whose dau., Lucy Clapp, was the grandmother of Joseph Clapp Otis. Three daughters of Allen Clapp m. Nathaniel B. Clapp, son of Nathaniel and Anna (Briggs) Clapp, and his son Allen m. Deborah A. Clapp (the latter a dau. of Nathaniel and Anna (Briggs)). They were the parents of Eugene Clapp of the Clapp Rubber Company at Luddam's Ford, between Hanover and Pembroke, now (1936) destroyed by fire.

vi. Ruth, b. 13 Mar. 1712; m. 3 June 1731 Dr. Benjamin Stockbridge, son of Benjamin and Mary (Tilden) of the old Stockbridge mansion at Greenbush. Dr. Stockbridge was the second regularly educated physician to settle in Scituate, Dr. Isaac Otis having been the first. Dr. Stockbridge studied medicine under Dr. Bulfinch of Boston, and there is undoubted testimony to the fact that he was the greatest physician of his day. He was a consulting physician in difficult cases, over a wide territory, extending from Falmouth to Worcester, and as far north as Ipswich. He was succeeded by his son, Dr. Charles Stockbridge, who m. Eleanor Stetson, dau. of John. Their dau. Ruth Stockbridge m. Dr. Isaac Winslow of the old Winslow house at Marshfield. Elizabeth Winslow, dau. of Dr. Isaac and Ruth (Otis), m. Hon. Kilborn Whitman of Pembroke. (See Briggs, Harriet (Briggs) Whitman.) Elizabeth Whitman, their dau., m. Samuel K. Williams of Boston, who purchased the house at Greenbush built by Capt. Henry Bowers on the site of the Stockbridge mansion (built before 1660). They made this house their summer home, and it remained in possession of the Williams family until after the death of the Rev. Pelham Williams, a former rector of the Church of the Advent, in Boston.

vii. Sarah, b. 27 Feb. 1714; d. 9 Aug. 1715.

viii. David, b. 5 Aug. 1716; was lost at sea. He lived at Jordan, N. Y., and m. Susan Hadden.

ix. Sarah, b. 16 Apr. 1719; m. Mordecai Ellis 1740. A dau., Lucy Ellis, b. 1748, m. her cousin, Charles Otis, 1779 (see Ephraim Otis), and their dau. Rachel Herscy Otis, m. 1812, Stephen Jacobs of Assinippi, one of whose nine children was William Jacobs of Randolph. The latter's dau. Annie Loring Jacobs, m. Charles B. Briggs. (See Briggs.)

x. Priscilla, b. 1721; d. unm. 1750. She made a curious and interesting will, leaving legacies of £13 6s 8d to be "laid out in plate" marked

with her name to several relatives, and making her brother-in-law, Mordecai Ellis, executor for this purpose. To her brother-in-law, Benjamin Stockbridge, £40 for funeral charges, viz: "for eight funeral rings one hundred pair of gloves & all other decent things convenient for my funeral." She also left him "All the rest of my estate Real & personal, Lying & being in Scituate, Hanover & Abington or elsewhere . . . he paying my just debts and legacies."

Division, 1749, of 675 acres in Hanover and Abington. (Plymouth Co. Rec., Vol. 40, p. 253.)

Job Otis sold Benj. Lincoln of Hingham 30 Apl. 1698 land in Hingham at "Wearill Hill so called in Broad Cave Field near Wm. Noltton." (Vol. 57, p. 181.)

Sold land in "6th Div. of Conohasset near Briggs Lott" 1705 to Jos. Bayley and to Isaac Bucke. (Vol. 7, pp. 40-44.)

Land to Peter Collamer 1703. (Vol. 5, p. 181.)

7. ISAAC⁵ OTIS, M.D. (4. *Stephen*⁴, *John*³, *John*², *Richard*¹) (in line of Briggs ancestry) was born in the Ensign house at Scituate in 1699. He was the first regularly educated physician to settle in Scituate. In 1719 the town of Scituate "voted a settlement of £100 to encourage him to remain in Town." He purchased first a property on what is now called Old Oaken Bucket Road, near Greenbush Village, known as the "widow Nichols property," where he lived until 1723, when he bought of Joseph Nash the house near Stony Cove Brook, built by him in 1700, on land that was a part of the Rawlins grant of 1636, and later the property of Deacon Thomas King. There was an exchange of properties at this time, Joseph Nash taking title to the larger estate, and Dr. Otis, the smaller, which was more desirably situated for a doctor, being located on the main highway leading to the "up river settlement." The widow Nichols property was near George Moore's bridge, over which the highway ran, at the present cranberry bogs (1936).

The property conveyed to Dr. Otis by Joseph Nash is described as —

"containing by estimation forty-six acres more or less, being partly up-land, swamp land and salt marsh land, bounded as follows, — The piece on which the house stands is bounded southerly by the highway; westerly, northerly and easterly by land of George King. The tract of land lying on the southerly side of said way on which the barn stands is bounded westerly by lands of George King, southerly by meadow lands of said King, meadow land of Thomas Pucin, meadow land of Benjamin Curtis and Joseph Curtis, and meadow land of Samuel Clap. Easterly by land



WEST VIEW OF THE DR. ISAAC OTIS HOME, SOUTH SCITUATE, MASS.



HOUSE BOUGHT BY DR. ISAAC OTIS IN 1723, AND WHERE HE LIVED (EAST VIEW)

in the improvement of Joseph Neal; north-easterly by land of Peter Colamore, and northerly by the highway. The piece of meadow or salt marsh land lying adjoining to the southward of Will's Island, 'which I had of John Cushing Sr.' being seven acres more or less, is bounded westerly by the marsh land of said Cushing; southerly by a creek; south-easterly by the North River; easterly by a ditch, being the bounds between the seven acres and the meadow of Isaac Turner, and northerly on Will's Island. Together with the House and buildings, orchard and fencing thereon." Then followed certain rights of way to the Curtis, Pincin and Clap meadows.

After taking over this property in 1723, Dr. Isaac Otis built an addition to the house; this addition is part of the house as it stands today near Stony Cove Brook, on the main road. It has virtually no front yard; old flagstones form the walk which leads from the street to the front door. The house looks south on an attractive view of the North River fields, in which, in the day of Dr. Isaac and his son, Dr. James Otis, the barn and outbuildings stood. It is a simple and beautiful colonial house with hand-hewn beams and hand-made nails and dowels, built to suit the needs of the early physician. The Doctor's office is finished in Colonial style with a fair-sized closet or small room where his slaves slept. The old kitchen, with its ceiling of rough-hewn timbers and old gun racks on the wall, is thought to have been part of the first house. This house is now (1936) the residence of Miss Antoinette Pray and her sister, Mrs. Cora Poe.

Dr. Isaac⁵ Otis is said to have been a "gentleman of uncommon accomplishments of person and mind." He died 11 Nov. 1777.

Dr. Isaac Otis, "Gentleman" for £250 deeds upland and cedar swamp called the Great Share in Plymouth Co., 23 Nov. 1733. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 31, p. 188.)

25 Mch. 1743 Isaac Otis of Scituate, chyrurgien, deeds land in Scituate near the dam.

25 May 1765, Isaac Otis of Scituate, physician, and Deborah his wife deed to William and Stephen Otis land in Hanover which David Jacob left his dau. Deborah. (Vol. 50, p. 205.)

29 Apl. 1726, Isaac Otis sold Jonathan Elms for £65, Lot 41 in 1st Div. Scituate Commons. He also owned Lots 372, 251, 26 in 2nd Div.

6 Oct. 1726, Isaac Otis, for £62 10s., deeds George King Lot 341 in 1st Div. given Hezekiah Hatch.

Isaac Otis, Chyrurgeon, deeds Barialiel Palmer, Cordwainer, Lot 372, 1st Div. (Vol. 33, p. 173.)

Isaac Otis to James Otis, physician, land where Joseph Parker dwelt, 3 Apl. 1765. (Vol. 49, p. 246.)

Isaac Otis of Bridgewater, physician, for £150 paid by Josiah Otis, physician, deeds, 9 Feb. 1779, ½ dwelling house, land and farm. (Vol. 60, p. 128.)

17 July, 1722, Bathsheba Nickols sells farm and lands to Isaac Otis.

Isaac Otis deeds land to Nath^l Ray Thomas, 14 Sept. 1771. (Vol. 56, p. 251.)

24 March, 1730, David Jacob sells to Dr. Isaac Otis 40 acres land in Hanover. (Plymouth Records, Book 26, Folio 71.)

1765 Isaac and Deborah Otis deed to sons William and STEPHEN 20 acres land next to father Isaac Otis.

5 Jan., 1722, Joseph Nash conveys land, housing, &c to Isaac Otis near Will's Island.

DR. ISAAC OTIS married 25 May 1718/19 DEBORAH JACOB, born in Scituate 22 Apr. 1698, died 1783, daughter of Deacon David and Sarah (Cushing) Jacob of Greenbush (Scituate).

JACOB ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY

1. "NICHOLAS JACOB with his wife and two children and their cosen Thomas Lincoln, weaver, came from Old Hingham, England, and settled in this Hingham, 1633," according to the old Daniel Cushing manuscript, which says he was one of the earliest arrivals at "Bare Cove" (Hingham). In Sept. 1635 a house lot of three acres was granted him on Town (later North) Street, a little west of what is now called Fountain Square.

Banks says: "Nicholas Jacob, Mrs. Mary Jacob, John Jacob, Mary Jacob of Hingham, County Norfolk, Eng. sailed in the *Elizabeth Bonaventure* from Yarmouth, Norfolk, May 1633; arrived at Boston June 15; settled first at Watertown."

NICHOLAS JACOB was a freeman in Hingham 1635/6; Selectman 1637; *Deputy to General Court* 1648 and 1649. His wife was Mary ——. He died 5 June 1657, leaving an estate appraised at £343 8s 6d. His will dated 18 May 1657 mentions wife Mary, and children Joseph, Jacob, Mary Otis, Elizabeth Thaxter, Sarah Cushing, Hannah Jacob and Deborah Jacob.

Children of NICHOLAS JACOB and MARY —:

2. i. JOHN, b. England, abt. 1630; m. (1) Margery Eames; (2) MARY RUSSEL.
- ii. Elizabeth, b. England 1632; m. (1) John Thaxter; (2) Daniel Cushing (second wife).
- iii. MARY, b. Hingham, New England, abt. 1635; m. JOHN OTIS, JR.
- iv. Sarah, b. Hingham, New England, abt. 1637; m. Matthew Cushing, Jr.



DRUMMER STETSON HOUSE, CENTRE HANOVER, MASS., GIVEN TO
SOCIETY FOR PRESERVATION OF NEW ENGLAND ANTIQUITIES
BY L. VERNON BRIGGS AS A MEMORIAL TO HIS PARENTS AND
SISTERS



AN EARLY PRINT OF DR. ISAAC OTIS' HOUSE, MAIN STREET, NORWELL, MASS.
(SOUTH SITUATE)

- v. HANNAH, bpt. Hingham, New England, 23 Feb. 1639; m. THOMAS LORING.
- vi. Josiah, bpt. Hingham, New England, 6 Nov. 1642; d. 24 Nov. 1642.
- vii. DEBORAH, bpt. Hingham, New England, 26 Nov. 1643; m. HON. NATHANIEL THOMAS of Marshfield. (See Thomas chapter.)
- viii. Joseph, bpt. Hingham, New England, 10 May 1646; m. Hannah
—.

2. CAPT. JOHN² JACOB (1. *Nicholas*), born in Hingham, Norfolk, England, about 1630, came to New England with his parents in 1633. He resided on Main Street near the meeting house of the Second Parish in South Hingham, described by Barry as “of Glad Tidings Plain, & Surveyor, 1658.” He was an active business man, and owned much land as well as a saw-mill and a fulling mill “on the river.” He was Selectman 1662, 1665, 1683, 1686 and 1689; one of the proprietors among whom the common lands were divided, and contributed generously for public good, especially toward the erection of the new meeting house. Captain Jacob was a member 1682, and *Captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*. He was an able and trusted officer in *King Philip’s War*, and succeeded to the command of Capt. Johnson’s Company after that officer’s death, and directed the defences at Medfield when that town was attacked 21 Feb. 1676. That winter he, with others, was engaged in guarding the frontiers of Weymouth, Hull and Hingham against attacks by the Indians. As early as 25 Feb. 1675 it was ordered that “Capt. John Jacob’s house standing in the path between this Colony and Plymouth be forthwith garrisoned and such as were his nearest neighbors are to joyne therein.” Capt. John Jacob died 18 Sept. 1693, aged 63 years, and is buried in the High Street Cemetery, South Hingham.

His will was dated 11 Sept. 1693, disposing of an estate of £1,298. Among its various items it gave —

“To my eldest son David £50 over and above what he hath already had, to sons Peter & Samuel my Saw mill and fulling mill, with the ponds and land adjoining on both sides of the river; to Peter, also £50 additional for his services since he was of full age; to John my house and lands at Conihasset, at a place called Cold Spring if he lives to have children, otherwise one half of it to go to David’s oldest son and the other half to Peter and Samuel; . . . to daughter Mary Bisbee, land at Great Plain etc; . . . to daughter Sarah Hawke . . . to daughter Abigail Jacob, my barn, land &c. at Conihasset, the income from it to be for her education until she arrives at 18 years of age, . . . to daughter Lydia Jacob, one

half my corn mill at Weymouth, and £20, to be paid her at 18 years of age." It mentioned all his living children, and made provision for his "grandfather Russell in his old age," also for his father Russell. He desired brother Joseph and brothers-in-law Nathaniel Thomas and Lieut. Matthew Cushing "to be overseers of this my will and advise with my children."

CAPT. JOHN JACOB married, first, 20 Oct. 1653, MARGERY EAMES, daughter of Lieut. Anthony Eames, who was born at Fordingham, Dorset, England, 1590, and married in England about 1614, Margery —. He resided at Hingham and at Marshfield.

1651. Francis Godfrey of Marshfield sells Anthony & Mark Eames of Hingham, 100 acres with dwelling house and appurtenances lying on North River from Mr. Vassall's range East, and by North by North River. Godfrey guarantees all titles except those of Indians. Signed *before* Miles Standish.

LIEUT. ANTHONY EAMES died after 1670. His daughter MARGERY, wife of CAPT. JOHN JACOB, was baptized 5 Dec. 1630 at Fordingham, England. She died 7 Apr. 1659 at Hingham, and Captain Jacob married, second, 3 Oct. 1661 Mary Russell, daughter of George and Jane (James) Russell. (See Capt. Cornelius² Briggs.)

Children of CAPT. JOHN JACOB and MARGERY EAMES:

- i. John, b. 20 Oct. 1654. On 10 Apr. 1676, preceeding the descent of the Indians upon the southern part of the town, John Jacob, aged 22, *was slain near his father's house*. "He had served in the war, and is, perhaps, the only inhabitant of Hingham ever killed in the course of military hostilities upon her own soil." ("History of Hingham".)
- ii. MARY, b. 30 Mar. 1656; m. (1) 17 Dec. 1675 SAMUEL BACON of Hingham; (2) 25 Mar. 1685, Elisha Bisbee (second wife), son of Elisha Bisbee of Scituate.
- iii. Sarah, b. 29 Sept. 1657; m. 9 July 1678 James Hawke. (See John Cushing, Thomas chapter.)
- iv. Benjamin, b. 2 Apr. 1659; d. 5 Apr. 1659.

Children of Capt. John Jacob and Mary Russell:

- v. Jacl, b. 7 Sept. 1626; m. 31 Dec. 1684 Matthew³ Cushing, son of Daniel² Cushing.
- vi. DAVID, b. 20 June 1664; m. SARAH CUSHING of Scituate.
- vii. Elizabeth, b. 11 Apr. 1666; m. 6 June 1687 Elisha Turner, son of John and Mary (Brewster) Turner of Scituate. (See Turner chapter.)

- viii. Peter, b. 12 Feb. 1667/8; m. 7 Dec. 1693 Hannah Alleyn of Barnstable, dan. of Samuel and Hannah (Walley) Alleyn.
- ix. Hannah, b. 26 Dec. 1669.
- x. Samuel, b. 30 Nov. 1671; m. Hannah —.
- xi. Deborah, b. 15 Aug. 1674; d. 22 Aug. 1675.
- xii. Deborah, b. 8 May 1677; m. (1) 27 Dec. 1694 Matthew Cushing, son of John, Esq., of Scituate; (2) 13 Sept. 1726 Benjamin Loring of Hull. (See Cushing.)
- xiii. John, b. 31 July 1679; m. 19 Feb. 1710/11 Sarah Cushing, dau. of Daniel and Elizabeth (Thaxter) Cushing.
- xiv. Lydia, b. 18 Apr. 1681; m. 17 Jan. 1698/9 John Gould of Hull.
- xv. Abigail, b. 13 Nov. 1683; m. Aug. 1705, Nathaniel Gill of Hingham.

3. DAVID³ JACOB (2. *John*², *Nicholas*¹) born 20 June 1664 in Hingham, purchased the Russell estate at "the green bush" in 1668 (see Briggs, Ensign Cornelius), which had been that of John Stedman, who had built the house upon it. This house was burned in 1712, and David Jacob built another nearly, if not quite, upon the same site. He was an active and useful man, often employed on public business. He was the first *master of the only public school in Scituate until 1712*. In 1701 "The Town agreed with Dea. David Jacob to keep a reading, writing and grammar school for one year, in consideration of the sum of £20; also agreed with the same person to build a school house for £20." This schoolhouse stood between Jacob's house and the Stockbridge mill. "For 300 years in Europe and America, so complete had been the domination of classical learning, that a grammar school everywhere meant a Latin school."

David³ Jacob was a Deacon of the First Church during the time of the controversy over building a new meeting house elsewhere than upon the site of the earliest one on Meeting House Lane. The second house on "the gore of land" near Balch's (now (1936) the Town Common at Scituate Centre) was erected before his death on 10 Feb. 1748, when he was in his 85th year.

David³ Jacob married 20 Dec. 1689 SARAH CUSHING, daughter of JOHN, Esq., and SARAH (HAWKE) of Belle House Neck, Scituate. (See John Cushing line under Isaac Thomas.) Sarah (Cushing) Jacob died 24 Sept. 1723, aged 52 years. Deacon David Jacob married, second, 23 Jan. 1726, in Boston, Mary Gould.

WILL OF DAVID JACOB

Plymouth Records, Wills, Vol. 11, p. 138

In the name of God Amen the Twenty fifth Day of July Anno Dom. 1733, I David Jacob of Scituate . . . yeoman Being aged & Infirm of

Body But of sound mind & memory Doe make & ordain this my Last Will & Testament. . . . I Give Devise & Dispose of the same "(my worldly goods & Estate)" . . . "Imp^s. I give and Bequeath to my well Beloved Wife Mary Jacob (Mary Goold) the Use and Improvement of the one third Part of my Now Dwelling House in said Seituat^e & the one third Part of the Cellar & Well thereto belonging & one third Part of my Guarding Dureing the Time she shall Remain my Widdow & see Reason to Dwell in s^d House, also I give to my s^d wife Forty Pounds a year yearly & eaveary year Dureing the Time she shall Remain my Widdow to be Paid To Her the one Half in Good Bills of Credit, or such money as shall pass Currant at Time of Payment and the other Half in fierwood Corn & Provisions such as she shall stand In need of for house keeping, at Currant Prie^e . . . also I give to my s^d Wife the one third Part of my Household Goods, Beding Lining & Household Stuff of all Sorts within Dore^s To Be at Her own Disposal for ever, all the afores^d Gifts made To my Wife are In full for Her Right of Dower in my Estate . . . Item. I give & Bequeath to my Son Joshua Jacob all y^t Part Hereafter mentioned of my upland & Swamp Land in the Towns of Seituat^e & Hanover Lying at & Near a Plae^e called Jenkins' Meddo & the Rocky Swamp Brook where my Sawmill Now Standeth that is to say y^t Part of said Land whieh Lyeth to the Eastward of said Brook from said Mill Dam Northward by said Brook Till it comes to y^e Vally Swamp & so up to the Damons Land & all my Traet of Land Lying To the Southward of said Dam and Town Highway, to the Eastward of the Countrey Road With the one Half of my Sawmill afores^d Dam stream & appurtenanees with the Housing Buildings and appurtenanees on said Land & to the same Belonging also the one Half of y^e 64th Lott of Ceeder Swamp in ye Valley Swamp afores^d also all that Peice of Salt Marsh Land Lying to the Eastward of Wills's Island, so called Being Twelve aeres more or Less with the flats thereto Belonging & adjoyning Lying in s^d Seituat^e. To Have & To Hold . . . unto him S^d Joshua Jacobs His Heirs & assigns forever He & they Paying unto my s^d Wife the one third Part of the afores^d Forty Pounds yearly & every year . . . and also to my Daughter Mary Barker one Hundred & Twenty Poidms, as Hereafter in this my Will is ordered. Item. I give & Bequeath unto my son Joseph Jacob all the Remaining Part of my Land Lying in Seituat^e & Hanover afores^d all the s^d Rockey Swamp, Jenkins's Meddow & Barstows Hill on both sides of the Country Road & to the Westward of ye Land Before Given To s^d Joshua Being about Two Hundred aeres more or Less with the Buildings & Fenees thereon & the other Half Part of y^e s^d Sawmill, Dam Pond & appurtenanees With convenient Priviledges of Laying Timber & Stuff and Transporting ye Same To & from s^d mill excepting Twenty aeres of Land I sold Doct^r Otis, which Hereafter in this my Will is given To my *Daughter* DEBORAH also I give to s^d Joseph the one Half of the 65th Lott of Ceeder Swamp In the s^d Valley Swamp & one Half Part of my Peices of Salt Marsh Land which

I bought of Daniel King adjoining to the North River In s^d Seituatē the whole Being about Twenty-four Acres To Have & To Hold . . . To Him s^d Joseph Jacob His Heirs & assigns forever & they Paying to my s^d Wife one third Part of s^d Forty Pounds yearly . . . Item. I give & Bequeath To my Son Benjamin Jacob all that my Messuage & Traet of Land where I now Dwell Being forty acres more or Less with the Buildings & fances thereon about one acreer of which I Bought of James Cushing & Lyes on the North Side of the Herring Brook, also I give to s^d Benjⁿ the other Half of the Salt Marsh Land which I bought of s^d Daniel King, & all my Traet of Land upland and Swamp Land Lying to the Westward of John Cushing Jun^rs Land Ewells Land & Benj^a Briggs's Land, the whole of which Lyes in one Body Joyning Together Betwixt the Road going To Anthony Stutson & the Road going from the Mill to Pineins Being eight acres more or Less. . . . His heirs & assigns . . . He & they Paying To my s^d Wife annually the one third Part of s^d Forty Pounds . . . also He or they Paying unto my Daughter Hannah Sparrowhawk one Hundred Pounds, as Hereafter in this my Will is ordered and also allowing my s^d Wife ye Improvement, in this my Will given her. Item. I give & Bequeath unto my Daughter Mary Barker one Hundred & Twenty Pounds In Good Bills of Credit or such money as shall pass Currant at Time of Payment To be Paid by my Son Joshua within Two years after my Decease which is in full of Her Portion with what as further in this my Will given Her she and Her Husband Having had Considerable of me already. Item, I give & Bequeath unto my Daughter DEBORAH OTIS Twenty acres o Land Lying in s^d Hanover in the County afores^d adjoining on the Northerly Side of the Land I Sold to Her Husband *Doct^r Otis* To be of an Equall Breadth on a Square at the Head of a Lott and to Extend from s^d Doct^r Otis Line all along Northward so far as to make Twenty acre . . . which with what she & Her Husband Have already Received is In Full of Her Portion with what is Herein further given. Item. I give & Bequeath to my Daughter Hannah Sparhawke one Hundred Pounds, in Good Bills of Credit or such money as shall pass Currant at Time of Payment To be Paid By my son Benjamin Within Two years after my Decease which with what she hath already Rec^d is In full of Her Portion with what is Herein further given. Item. I give & Bequeath unto my s^d three Daughters all the Rest of my Estate Both Real & Personall where-soever y^e same is or may be found, To Have & Hold etc." Sons Joshua Joseph & Benjamin To be my Executors etc.

Signed sealed etc,

Signed, DAVID JACOB.

JOHN CUSHING

JOHN CUSHING JUN^r

ISRAEL CHITTENDEN,

ANNA STUTSON.

Children of DEACON DAVID³ JACOB and SARAH CUSHING:

- i. David, b. 28 Oct. 1690; settled, according to Deane, at Assinippi, "on the Plymouth road, a half mile south-east of the mill," where the tavern kept by his nephew David is standing, now (1936) Moses Brown's. He d. 3 Jan. 1714/15, ae. 26 years.
- ii. Mary, b. 15 July 1692; m. Francis Barker, Jr., 1710.
- iii. Sarah, b. 12 Sept. 1694; d. 20 Nov. 1711.
- iv. Elisha, b. 30 Oct. 1696; d. 27 Dec. 1696.
- v. DEBORAH, b. 22 Apr. 1698; m. ISAAC OTIS, M.D., 1719.
- vi. Lydia, b. 1 Aug. 1700; d. 16 Sept. 1700.
- vii. Joshua, b. 31 Mar. 1702; resided at Assinippi in the old Jacob's homestead, east of the mill which his father had built for his sons Joshua and Joseph about the time of Joshua's marriage. In 1727, *when the General Court passed an Act of Incorporation for the new town of Hanover*, "*David Jacob's saw mill dam*" was mentioned in it. Both grist and sawmills were erected, the grist mill on the westerly, and the sawmill on the easterly flume. The grist mill was abandoned many years ago, but the old Jacobs sawmill stood until 4 July 1920 when it was burned. Jacob's Mill Pond, with its island near the eastern shore, is the most beautiful and picturesque spot in Assinippi. Joshua Jacob m. 1726 Mary James, a dau. of Deacon John and Eunice (Stetson) James of the old James farm near the "block-house" on North River. The old Jacobs homestead is now owned by Joshua's great-great-grandson, Dr. Henry Barton Jacobs of Baltimore and Newport, whose wife was Mary Frick, widow of Robert Garrett of Baltimore.
- viii. Hannah, b. 27 Apr. 1704; m. John Sparhawk of Plymouth 1724.
- ix. Dr. Joseph, b. 16 Aug. 1707; m. Mary Foster 1734, dau. of Edward of Dorchester and Jemima (Turner) Foster. Jemima Turner was a daughter of Jonathan (son of John, Sr. and Mary (Brewster), who inherited the quarter part of his grandfather's 80-acre grant, upon which the house now owned and occupied by Schuyler Dillon is standing. It was built for or by Jonathan Turner before 1700. Dr. Joseph Jacobs settled on the Plymouth Road, at the foot of Barstow's hill on the northwest side, and east of Gilman Plain, where W. W. Collamore lived later. The old house of Dr. Joseph Jacobs was removed from its former site, and is now (1936) standing nearer the top of the hill, on the east. Elisha, son of Joseph, b. 29 Aug. 1735, was the first to operate the family brick yard. David, Joshua and Joseph all settled in that part of Hanover called Assinippi.
- x. Benjamin, b. 10 Apr. 1709; m. 1737 Mary Thomas of Pembroke, dau. of Lieut. Isaac and Anna (Leonard) Thomas. (See Thomas.) Benjamin inherited his father's home at Greenbush. Samuel Hatch from Marshfield, who m. his granddaughter, Eunice Hatch (dau. of

Mary Jacob), built in 1804 the house now standing on the site of the Jacob house. It is owned (1936) by Albert Gareeau.

xi. Elisha, b. 7 Oct. 1711; d. 27 June 1715.

Dr. Isaac Otis died 11 Nov. 1777. His will, made nearly two years earlier, is as follows:

WILL OF ISAAC⁵ OTIS, M.D.

Vol. 25, p. 65

In the name of God Amen — The eighteenth day of March A.D. 1775, I, Isaae Otis of Scituate in the County of Plymouth in New England, Physieian, being under infirmity of body, but of sound mind, do make this my last will & testament, first I recommend my soul & my body to the earth to decent burial, & as for my Goods, & Estate I dispose of the same in manner following that is to say.

Imprimis. I give my beloved wife Deborah Otis the use & improvement of all my indoor moveables, during her natural life, & also the use of my *negro girl called Sarah*, and at my wife's decease I give said indoor moveables & *negro girl* to my exeecutor hereafter named. Also I give her said Deborah fourteen pounds lawfull money a year during her natural life to be paid her annually by my two sons Isaae & James Otis, that is four pounds thereof by said Isaae and ten pounds by said James & so in that proportion, for any part of a year which may remain unfinished at her decease, all which is in lieu of her dower in my estate, provided she aaccepts of the same as such.

Item. I give to my son Isaae Otis two hundred pounds lawfull money to be paid him by my son James Otis at my decease he paying my wife ten pounds as before mentioned.

Item. I give to my daughter Deborah Rogers £66.13, 4 lawfull money to be paid her by my son James at my wife's decease, which with what I have heretofore given is in full out of her portion out of my estate.

Item. I give unto my daughter Hannah Bird ten pounds lawfull money. Ten pounds lawful money to be paid her by my son James at my decease, which with what I have heretofore given her is in full of her portion out of my estate.

Item. I give to my son-in-law, Nathanel Bird, whatever he is indebted to me on Book, or otherwise, provided he makes no demand upon my estate for what I owe him.

Item. I give to my Grandchildren William Otis, Charlotte & Deborah Otis children of my son Stephen Otis, deceased, one hundred pounds lawfull money to be paid them by my son James Otis in manner following viz: to William Otis Fifty pounds when he shall arrive at the age of twenty one years, to Charlotte twenty five pounds & to Deborah twenty five pounds when they shall arrive at the age of eighteen years old, & if

either of said children should not arrive at the age aforementioned then to the survivors equally to be divided or the whole to the survivor, & if neither should arrive at the ages aforesaid, then to be divided between my two sons Isaac & James equally.

Item. I give to my son James Otis his heirs & assigns forever all my estate both real & personal wheresoever the same may be found, he paying the legacies aforementioned and all my just debts, funeral charges & the charge of settling my estate, also my mind & will is that *my negro servant named Gad shall have the liberty of choosing either of my two sons Isaac or James for a master*, & either of them to maintain him that he shall choose to live with.

Lastly. I do hereby appoint my son James Otis sole executor of this my last will & testament, & to pay out of what I have heretofore given him. In testimony whereof. I have hereunto set my hand & seal the day & year first above written.

Signed, sealed etc. before,

ISAAC OTIS

Seal.

NATHAN CUSHING

JOHN JAMES

BENJAMIN WOODARD

Children of ISAAC⁵, M.D., and DEBORAH (JACOB) OTIS:

- i. Isaac⁶, Jr., M.D., b. 1 Sept. 1719 (Scituate Records) or 8 Oct. 1721 (Otis Genealogy); bpt. 17 May 1724. *Grad. from Harvard College in 1738*, and settled as a physician in East Bridgewater. In 1762 his name appears on a List of Officers commissioned for the 2d Regiment of Militia in the County of Plymouth, with *rank of Captain* of 7th Bridgewater Company, Col. Thomas Clapp's Regiment. In the Revolution he appears with *rank of Surgeon* on Muster and Pay Roll of Colonel Mitchell's Regiment, for service on alarm at Bristol, R. I., Dec. 8, 1776. Time of service, 16 days. He d. 9 Dec. 1787, ae. 66 years.

Dr. Isaac⁶ Otis, Jr., m. 30 June 1746 Mehitabel Bass, dau. of Capt. Benjamin Bass of Bridgewater. Four sons of *Dr. Isaac⁶, Jr., were in the Revolutionary War*. Josiah, M.D., m. Susanna Orr, and succeeded his father as a physician in East Bridgewater, where he had an extensive practice. In the Revolution, 1780, he was a *Surgeon in Col. John Jacob's Regiment* with service for three months to reinforce the Continental Army. Bass Otis, a distinguished artist of New York, and later of Philadelphia, who d. in 1861, was a son of Josiah⁷, M.D., and Susanna Orr. His best known composition, "Interior of a Forge," was presented by him to the Academy of Philadelphia, and is still in its possession. His best works were said to have been his portraits, among them being that of President Jefferson, presented by the Iroquois Club to the Chicago Historical Society in 1923; that of Mrs. Filicia Hemans,

the "poetess," exhibited in 1922 at the Anderson Galleries in New York, where it was admiringly spoken of; and those of several members of the Otis family, which are highly prized by their descendants. Another son of Dr. Isaac⁶ and Mehitable Bass was Capt. Isaac⁷ Otis, an ardent patriot in the *Revolution*, serving in the *war for five years*, a part of the time as *one of General Washington's Life Guards*. After the war he settled in Cumberland, R. I., later emigrating to New York State. He d. at Otisville, Orange County, N. Y., in 1838. Dr. Jacob⁷ Otis, son of Dr. Isaac⁶ and Mehitable, settled as a physician in Providence, R. I. He was in the Revolution, and drew a pension. He became later a member of the Society of Friends, his wife having been of that sect. After middle life he removed to Orange County, N. Y., where he had a private practice. He d. 1850 at Forrestburgh, Sullivan County, N. Y., ae. 91. Dr. Galen⁷ Otis, third son of Dr. Isaac⁶ and Mehitable to adopt the medical profession, and serve in the *Revolutionary Army*, m. Joanna Tilden (dau. of Deacon David Tilden of Hanson and Boston), a second cousin of Abigail Tilden, wife of Judge Nathan Cushing. (See Cushing, under Cushing Otis, M.D.) Dr. Galen⁷ Otis settled in Woolwich, Me., in 1789.

- ii. Josiah, b. 8 Oct. 1721; d. 26 Mar. 1723 (Scituate Records), ae. 1 year 5 months.
- iii. Deborah, b. 18 Oct. 1723; m. Thomas Rogers, Jr., of Marshfield 1744.
- iv. Josiah, b. 4 May 1725; d. 23 Jan. 1744.
- v. William, b. 23 May 1726; living in 1765 (see Stephen, below).
- vi. Stephen, b. 4 Nov. 1728; settled in Hanover on land deeded him by his father in 1765. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 50, p. 205.) Dated 25 May 1765. Rec. 22 Oct.

"Isaac Otis phisician and Deborah his wife, in consideration of £40 convey to their two sons William Otis and Stephen Otis, twenty acres of land in Hanover, in equal halves, to be divided between them according to quantity & quality. To William the westerly part thereof, — to Stephen the easterly part. The s^d Twenty Acres bounded Northherly on the land of Joseph Jacob, — Westerly on the land of Richard Curtis, — Southerly on the land of Isaac Otis which he bought of David Jacob, deceased, — and Easterly on the Highway. Being the twenty acres of land which the said David Jacob in his last will & testament gave to his daughter Deborah Otis."

These twenty acres were upon the westerly side of Washington Street, Assinippi, and the boundaries indicate that they were that tract upon which the Perez Simmons house and the one now (1936) known as "the old alms house" are standing. The Simmons house is said to have been built by an Otis, and it was probably William, above mentioned, about 1765. Stephen Otis built

the "old alms house," and resided there. He d. 18 Feb. 1773, and on 3 Mar. 1783, Stephen's brother, James Otis, M.D., as administrator of his estate, sold land and buildings "at public sale for £96 to Nathaniel Jacobs of Hanover, yeoman, land next land of Joseph Jacobs, William Otis & Dr. Isaac Otis, as from deed of Isaac & Deborah Otis to William & Stephen Otis."

Stephen⁶ Otis m. (int.) 27 Sept. 1755 Elizabeth Wade, probably a dau. of Nicholas, 3d, of Scituate, who m. in 1723 Widow Bathsheba Nichols of Scituate, and settled in Bridgewater. This was the Widow Nichols who sold her husband's property near George Moore's bridge to Dr. Isaac Otis. (See Isaac Otis, M.D.) Stephen settled at Hanover and d. young.

Charlotte Otis, dau. of Stephen⁶ and Elizabeth (Wade), m. (1) Snell Wade of Scituate; (2) Nathaniel Jacobs of Assinippi 1814. Stephen Jacobs, son of Nathaniel, m. Rachel Hersey Otis. (See Ephraim Otis.)

vii. Hannah, b. 9 Mar. 1730; m. Nathaniel Bird.

viii. James, b. 22 Apr. 1733; d. 13 May 1733.

8. ix. JAMES⁶, M.D., b. 3 Sept. 1734; m. LUCY CUSHING of Falmouth, Cape Elizabeth.

x. Thomas, b. 29 May 1736; d. 10 June 1736.

xi. Thomas, b. 20 June 1738; d. 3 Aug. 1738.

xii. Nabby, b. 12 Aug. 1739; d. 18 Nov. 1739.

WILL OF ISAAC⁶ OTIS, JR., M.D.

Vol. 29, p. 446

In the name of God Amen. March the twentieth one thousand seven hundred & seventy nine — I, Isaac Otis of Bridgewater in the County of Plymouth in New England, physician;

Imprimus. I give & bequeath unto Mehitable my true & well beloved wife one half my household furniture, as also a large bible, watch & silver Cann, silver spoons & all plate, *my negro girl Nancy*, a chaise & chaise horse, two cows & five sheep, also one hundred Spanish milled dollars or current money the use of half my dwelling house so long as she continues my widow, and her right of dower in my lands during said term of widowhood viz.: a convenient woodlot & the remainder to be sett of as my homestead farm.

Item: I give to my well beloved son Josiah Otis (whom I constitute & appoint sole executor of this my last will & testament) all my books on Physick & Surgery, drugs & medicines & instruments of Surgery to be at his disposal. I also hereby give unto him as my executor, all the debts that are or may be due by note or otherwise, & all my cash, all my quick stock not heretofore disposed of, and out door moveables & farming utensills, he paying all my just debts, funeral charges & legacies, the overplus after the estate is settled (if any there be) my will is that it should be equally divided between my four sons.

of all Persons, forever hereunto set our hand & Seal
In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hand & Seal
Twenty seventh day of February A D 1815

Signed Sealed & delivered

In presence of us

Hayward Peirce

Lucy Briggs

Henry Briggs

Cushing O Briggs

Witness

Witness

In WITNESS whereof we jointly

do hereunto set our Hands and Seals the Twenty fifth Day of May
In the fifth Year of his Majesty's Reign. Annoque Domini, One
Thousand Seven Hundred and Sixty five

Signed, Sealed and Delivered,
in Presence of

Jos Keall
Lemuel Church

Jos Keall

Deborah Otis

Lucy Briggs

Now fifteen pounds for Lucy Briggs

James Otis

and it is further agreed, that the above-mentioned premises

shall be this fifth day of July in the year of our Lord eighteen

William B Kent

Elizabeth Kent

Item. I give unto my only daughter Bethiah Hudson the remaining part of my Household furniture (not heretofore disposed of) as also one hundred Spanish milled dollars or current money equivalent thereto, to be paid by my executor within one year after my decease, which with she hath already received I judge to be her full share of my estate.

Furthermore I give unto my four sons, Josiah, Isaac, Jacob & Galen & to their heirs & assigns forever all my lands & buildings (the improvements of widows rights of Dower, excepted) to be divided between them . . .

Signed, sealed etc. before

ISAAC OTIS

Seal.

JOSHUA PRATT.

WINSLOW THOMAS.

MATHEW RAMSDELL.

8. JAMES⁶ OTIS, M.D. (7. *Isaac*⁵, M.D., *Stephen*⁴, *John*³, *John*², *Richard*¹) was born 3 Sept. 1734 in Scituate, and died 24 May 1807, aged 73. He succeeded his father in his medical practice in Scituate, and lived in his home at Stony Cove Brook. He began to practice medicine about 1760, after having been, in 1756, a *Surgeon's Mate* in the *French War*, being the third physician in Scituate. For nearly a century the ministers were the physicians. He married Lucy Cushing.

JAMES OTIS appears on a Muster Roll of the *Field and Staff Officers* in Col. Jonathan Bagley's reg't, sworn to at Boston, Feb. 1, 1757; quality *Chirurgion's Mate*; residence Scituate; entered service Feb. 18, 1756; served until Nov. 7, 1756; length of service, 37 weeks 5 days; endorsed "*in the late Crown Point Expedition.*" (Mass. Archives. Muster Rolls, Vol. 95, p. 176.)

JAMES OTIS appears on a memorandum, not dated, signed by Joseph Ingersoll, of Substanance money etc. due said Oates and others in Col. Bagley's reg't; reported Doctor; rank Surgein's Matc. (Mass. Archives. Muster Rolls, Vol. 94, p. 424 a.) [His name appears on the pay roll of the Provincial Army on his return from *Camp at Fort William Henry* 12 Oct. 1756.]

DR. JAMES⁶ OTIS was active in the Revolutionary War, and a member of several important committees of the town of Scituate. His name first appears as a member of the committee chosen by the town in Mar. 1774 to draft resolutions touching on the difficulties of the times. On 23 May 1774 the committee reported:

That we cordially join in sentiment with most of our brethren in this and other Colonies, that those acts of the British Parliament which have a tendency to control our internal commerce and manufactures, and

more especially to extort our monies, are not only dissonant with good and lawful Government, but subversive of those rights and liberties which our fathers have handed down to us.

On 3 Oct. 1774 DR. JAMES⁶ OTIS was one of a committee of 31 — a Committee of Inspection — which on 18 Jan. 1775 reported the names of two refractory shopkeepers who would not adhere to the Continental Association. The town therefore resolved to break off all dealings with said shopkeepers until “they shall give publick and absolute satisfaction to the aforesaid Committee and Town, touching their open refractoriness relative to said salutary Association — trusting in the mean time that the public will condescend to trouble their memories with their names and characters.” (*Re: Charles Curtis and Frederick Henderson, shopkeepers.*)

James Otis (and Lucy, his wife) of Scituate, physieian, deeds land in Hanover to David Jacobs 29 Mar. 1784.

James Otis, John Otis, James Briggs, Jr., gentlemen, et. al., Selectmen of Scituate, sell land and dwelling house in Scituate, 1793. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 65, p. 164.)

James Otis & wife Lucy of Scituate, physieian, sell Noah Price of Scituate, cabinet maker, land in Scituate, 1797. (Vol. 83, p. 84.)

James Otis of Scituate sells James Briggs, Jr., cedar swamp in Scituate, 1787. (Vol. 74, p. 124.)

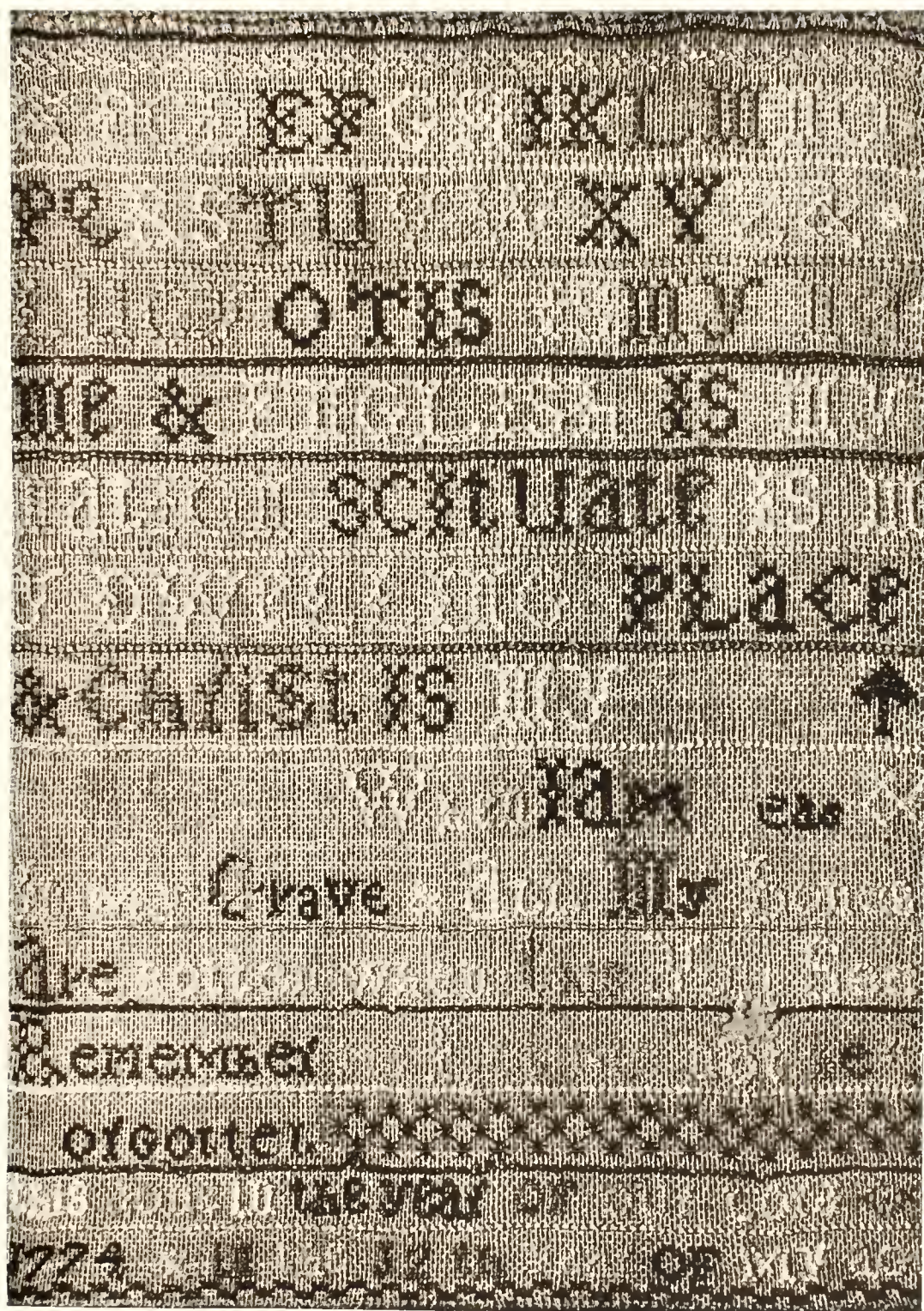
James Otis, physieian, bought of Anthony Collamore and his mother Susannah and wife Merey land at Black Pond Hill, Scituate, 8 June, 1773. (Plym. Deeds, Bk. 62, folio 188.)

James Otis, physieian, buys of Anthony Collamore, 1772, land next to Israel Nicols and John Cushing, Esq., Scituate. (Plym. Deeds, Bk. 62, folio 187.)

DR. JAMES⁶ OTIS married 3 Oct. 1761 (int.) LUCY CUSHING, daughter of Ezekiel and Hannah (Doane) Cushing. Lucy Cushing was born in Provincetown 27 Dec. 1735 and died 24 June 1816, age 83.

CUSHING ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY

“Few families in the country have been more celebrated than the Cushings, and probably no other one has furnished more judges for our Probate, Municipal, and Supreme Courts,” says Barry, in his “History of Hanover, Mass.” It has been known as “The Family of Judges,” and John² Cushing, Esq., of Scituate (1661) as “The Father of Judges.”



SAMPLER OF LUCY OTIS, WIFE OF THOMAS B. BRIGGS AND GREAT-GREAT-GRANDMOTHER OF L. CABOT BRIGGS, WHO NOW POSSESSES THE SAMPLER

(See pages 360, 362, 475)

The first of this name to come to America were THEOPHILUS and MATTHEW⁸ CUSHING, sons of PETER CUSHING of Hingham, England, who was born in Hardingham, which had been the seat of his family from the time of the Norman Conquest. Hon. Caleb Cushing began the research continued by Mr. Lemuel Cushing, published in a *Genealogy of the Cushing Family* in 1877. They established the family lines in Hardingham and Hingham to Galfredus Cusyn of Hardingham, mentioned in the *Subsidy Rolls for Norfolk* in 1327. After the death of Lemuel Cushing, Frank Hamilton Cushing, the noted archeologist of Zuni Indian fame, continued the research, and obtained valuable evidence of the descent of the Cushings from the DeLimisi family.

DeLimisi was of Anglo-Norman lineage. With William of Normandy, in 1066 there came to England several of his nephews (sons of a half sister), by name DeLimisi, among them Ralf and Baldrick, the latter the progenitor of the Scottish Lindseys. William gave to Ralf DeLimisi the barony of Oxenburg in Norfolk, and the 41 manors and lands in several counties belonging to Christina, one of the sisters of Prince Edgar, whom Ralf married. Gerard⁴ DeLimisi, a great-grandson, had sons John and Ralf, the latter surnamed Le Cusyn or Le Cosyn de Limisi, which surname his descendants have borne with various spellings, until the present form of Cushing was evolved, — LeCusyn, Cussyn, Cusseyn, Cussheyn, Cusshyn, Cushing.

GALFREDUS (Gerard or Geoffrey) CUSYN was born in Norfolk, England, in the latter part of the thirteenth century. He had estates in Hardingham, in the reign of Edward First. (*Subsidy Rolls for Norfolk*, 1327.) He descended from Ralf LeCusyn through Roger or Richard Cosyn, probably from Roger.

PETER CUSHING⁷ of Hingham, England, father of Theophilus and MATTHEW, was the sixth and youngest son of THOMAS CUSHYN. He was born at Hardingham, and married 2 June 1585, at Hardingham, Susan Hawes. About 1600 he removed with his family to Hingham, where he died, and was buried 2 Mar. 1615. The *Cushing Genealogy* says, "He was probably one of the first of the Cushings to embrace the Protestant faith, for the wills of his father and eldest brother" (John of Knapton) "are not in the Protestant form." Peter and Susan (Hawes) Cushing had a family of seven children, of whom Theophilus and Matthew were the two oldest sons.

THOMAS⁶ CUSHYN, father of Peter, was the second son of John Cushyng of Hardingham, and inherited the homestead of his

father with all lands belonging to it. He died in Hardingham in Apr. 1558.

JOHN⁵ CUSHYNG, father of Thomas, known as "John Cushyng, the Elder," as he had a younger brother of the same name, called "John, Jr.," was the eldest son of William and Emma Cushing. He was born at Hingham, but lived at Hardingham, where he owned estates. He was also the owner of large properties in Lombard Street, London. In 1512 he resided in the manor of Floekthorp, and in a survey made that year was styled "Gentleman." His will, dated 21 Feb. 1522, was proved 5 Mar. 1523. In it he mentioned his wife and six children. His eldest son John inherited the Floekthorp estate, Markhams in Totthington, and Stalworthy in Wymondham, while the second son, Thomas, inherited the homestead and lands in Hingham, as before stated.

WILLIAM⁴ CUSSHYN, father of John, the elder, was the eldest son and heir of Thomas Cussheyn. He was born in Hardingham in the early part of the fifteenth century, and married Emma ——. He lived at Hingham, and in ancient deeds relating to his estates in County Norfolk was styled "Gentleman." His will, dated 26 Sept. 1492, was long and explicit, and was proved in the Bishop's Court of Norwich 11 Mar. 1493. A copy of this will is given in the Appendix of the Cushing Genealogy.

THOMAS³ CUSSHEYN (or Cussbyn), father of William, was a son of William Cussyn, and was born in Hardingham in the latter part of the reign of Richard II (1377-79). He owned large estates in Hardingham, Hingham and other parts of Norfolk County. He was named in deeds and charters dated 1474, 1480 and 1484. A deed dated 1466 bears his name and that of his son William.

WILLIAM² CUSSYN (Cusseyn), father of Thomas, was a son or grandson of GALFREDUS¹ CUSYN. He was born in the fourteenth century, and added to the original estate in Hardingham the Hingham estates inherited by his son Thomas.

The death of Frank Hamilton Cushing before he had completed his research into the English records left a few unanswered questions regarding the early generations in Norfolk County. One of them was as to whether William, above named, was son or grandson of Galfredus, and the earlier one regarding the descent of Roger⁶ Cosyn from Ralf⁵ LeCusyn (LeCosyn de Limisi). Beyond the statement in Mr. Cushing's manuscript, that they were thus related, he had at the time discovered no further documentary proof.

Theophilus Cushing came to New England in 1633 in the ship Griffin, in company with the Rev. John Cotton and the Rev. Thomas Hooker, and with John Haynes, the first Governor of the Hartford Colony, with whom he lived upon the Haynes farm as his adviser and secretary. Theophilus Cushing was born in 1579; was 54 years of age when he emigrated, and was unmarried. He removed to Hingham, Mass., after the arrival of his brother Matthew, where he died in 1678, at the age of 99 years, having been blind for the last twenty-five years of his life.

1. MATTHEW¹ CUSHING, son of Peter and Susan (Hawes) Cushing, the *founder of the American family of Cushing*, a younger brother of Theophilus, was baptized in Hardingham, Norfolk, England, 2 Mar. 1589, and died 30 Sept. 1660. When he was about 12 years of age his parents moved from Hardingham to Hingham, England, and in these two places Matthew Cushing passed the first fifty years of his life, until on 26 Apr. 1638, with his wife and five children, — Daniel, Jeremiah, Matthew, Jr., John and Deborah (and his wife's sister, the Widow Frances Riecroft, who died a few weeks after arrival), he *embarked at Gravesend on the ship Diligent* of Ipswich, 350 tons burden, John Martin, master, carrying 133 passengers. Among them were James Buck, Stephen Gates, with wife Anne, and Elizabeth and Mary Gates, of Norwich, MATTHEW HAWKE and family, and Robert Peck, M.A., Rector of the Parish at Hingham, England, with his wife, two children and two servants. It was probably on this voyage that Matthew Cushing's son John became acquainted with MATTHEW HAWKE, whose daughter SARAH he married later. They arrived at Boston 10 Aug. 1638, and immediately went to Hingham, New England, where a settlement had been made in 1635 by the Rev. Peter Hobart and members of Robert Peck's church of Hingham, Old England, which had been the home of the Cushing family for many generations. Matthew Cushing became a deacon in Rev. Peter Hobart's church, and built his home the same year, 1638, on Bachelor Row (Main Street), below Pear Tree Hill, where his descendants lived until 1887.

Their departure from Hingham seems to have been due to ecclesiastical trouble. The Rev. Robert Peck, Rector of Hingham Parish, is described in the Norfolk, England, "Antiquarians Miscellany" as a "great schismatic, who being prosecuted for various illegal alterations he had made, fled to America." He

is said to have pulled down the rails of the chancel and altar, and leveled the latter a foot below the church, as it remains today, in defiance of the edict of Archbishop Laud. He and his adherents were prosecuted by Bishop Wren, and, together with those of his church who remained loyal to him and believed as he did, sold their estates for half their value, and to the number of 133 set sail for the New World. The Rev. Robert Peck was of Magdalen College, Cambridge, and was Rector in Hingham, England, over thirty years before his flight. In a few years his party came into power, and at the solicitation of his friends whom he had left behind in England he returned to his old parsonage, sailing 27 Oct. 1641 with his wife and son Joseph, leaving his married daughter in Hingham, Mass.

At a town meeting held in 1636, a house lot of 5 acres was assigned Matthew Cushing on Bachelor Row, now Main Street, the first lot below Pear Tree Hill. This land was owned by his descendants until 1887. He became active in town affairs, and a deacon of Mr. Hobart's church. He died in Hingham 30 Sept. 1660. His will was a verbal one, and was written after his decease by his children, who, on the 15 Nov. 1660, pray that Daniel Cushing, Esq., their eldest brother, may be appointed administrator.

MATTHEW CUSHING¹ married 5 Aug. 1613, in Old Hingham, England, NAZARETH PITCHER, baptized at Hingham 30 Oct. 1586, daughter of HENRY and ELIZABETH PITCHER, of the famous family of Admiral Pitcher of England. Her father, HENRY PITCHER, was buried at Hingham, England, 16 Aug. 1621/2, and his wife Elizabeth on 17 May 1618, also at Hingham. Nazareth (Pitcher) Cushing died in Hingham, New England, 6 Jan. 1682. Matthew Cushing died in Hingham, Mass., 30 Sept. 1660.

WILL OF MATTHEW CUSHING

"This is to certify the Honored Court now Assembled in Boston, That our Honnored Father, Matthew Cushing, who lately depart this life on the 30th day of September last, being somewhiles beefore his decease sensible of his Inability through Age to make Improvement of his estate for his Deare wives, our honored mothers, livelyhood, did call us, his sonns and some-in-Law, whose names are heare under written, together, And acquainted us that hee was desirous to set his house in order, and and on terms to settle his estates on those his Children, and to give us his possession of our severall portions, that is to say, that all his Cattle and Lands, his dwelling house and orchard, with *on* Cowe excepted

which hee reserved for his owne mother use, dureing their naturall lives, with the howse hold goods, after their death, should alsoe fall to us, and be devided amongst us in proportion, Following, to DANIELL, his Eldest sonne, hee gave all the lands, at present, hee paying out of the same, after A double portion to himselfe was taken out, what should make up A single share to such of his Brothers as had not their share, or that the Cattle fell short of Makeing their shares; and for that end valued the Cattle and Lands with what was in his sonn in Law, *MATTHIAS BRIGGS*, his hand, to £155. DANIEL to have A duple portion, and the rest, share and share alike; and soe allsoe, after yr mothers de cease, the house, orchard, household goods, and Cowe, to bee divided, DANIELL to have the house and land at an equall value, and paying what it amounted to more than his double part there from, to the rest, they, allsoe, During his life, paying unto him, £14 —, and their mother after his death, £12 — in goods and suitable pay, Daniell, £4, 5s 8d. Jeremiah Cushin, £2, 2s, 10d. and Matthias Briggs, his sonn in Law to pay 25s, 10d; which we all engaged to performe."

They desire the Power of Administration upon the Estate of said Mathew Cushing may be given to Daniel, his eldest son their Brother, which request was granted 15 Nov. 1660.

This petition was signed by Daniell Cushin, Mathew Cushin, John Cushin, Mathias Briggs, Jeremiah Cushin.

Inventory of the Estate aprised by Mathew Cushin and his sons in his lifetime. Amt. £155. Mentions a house lott in Batchalers streete Saltmosh bought of Wakly, &c., &c., &c. On the 12th Nov. 1660, the remainder of the Estate was appraised by Mathew Hawke and Edmond Pitts. Amt. £92.

Children of MATTHEW¹ CUSHING and NAZARETH PITCHER:

2. i. DANIEL², bpt. in Hingham, England, 20 Apr. 1619; m. (1) LYDIA GILMAN; (2) Widow Elizabeth (Jacob) Thaxter.
- ii. Jeremiah, bpt. 21 July 1621 in Hingham, England; became known as Capt. Jeremiah Cushing. He *commanded a ship trading between Boston and London*, resided in Boston, and was lost at sea, leaving a daughter *Elizabeth Cushing*, who m. (1) — Condry; (2) *Hon. Nathaniel Thomas*³ of Marshfield. (See Thomas.) His first wife was Elizabeth Wilkie, widow of John Wilkie.
- iii. Matthew, bpt. 5 Apr. 1623 in Hingham, England, was prominent in town affairs in Hingham, New England; freeman 1679; a Selectman thirteen times, between 1661 and 1695. He was known as "Serjeant," "Cornet" and later as "Lieutenant" Cushing. Resided at Hingham Centre, "over the river," and by occupation was a wheelwright. Having no children, he took his namesake, Matthew Cushing, son of his brother John, to live with him, and in his will, dated 28 Dec. 1700, after making provision for his wife, he left his estate to his Nephew Matthew, who succeeded to

his occupation of wheelwright and to his home at Hingham Centre. Matthew, Sr., m. 25 Feb. 1653 Sarah Jacob, dau. of Nicholas and Mary Jacob. (See Jacob.) He d. 9 Jan. 1701, and his wife Sarah on 8 Aug. of the same year.

Matthew Cushing, 2d (the nephew), m. 1694 Deborah, dau. of Capt. John and Mary (Russell) Jacob. (See Jacob.) He d. 18 May 1715, and his widow m. (2) Benjamin Loring of Hull. (See Loring.) Matthew, 2d, left an estate appraised at £2,536 5s 2d. He left a family of eight children, of whom Hezekiah, b. 1703, was the father of Nathaniel Cushing, who in 1774 m. Alice, dau. of Deacon Joseph and Lydia (King) Cushing of Scituate and settled on the estate of the late Nathan Cushing, near Henchman's Corner, west of Norwell Village.

- iv. Deborah, bpt. 17 Feb. 1625 in Hingham, England; m. 9 May 1648 Matthyas Briggs in Hingham, Mass. She d. in Hingham 25 Sept. 1700, ae. 76 years. Matthyas Briggs d. 24 Feb. 1696/7. Deborah Cushing was his second wife, as by his will, dated 1696, he left to a daughter Mary, whom he had left in England, "*5 shillings in money to be paid to her by my executor when said Mary Briggs shall come to New England and demand it.*"

In 1657 Capt. Joshua Hubbard (Hobart) as agent for Capt. John Vassall and others, *sold* the *Vassall* property at *Belle House Neck, Scituate*, to Matthyas Briggs and *John Cushing* for £120. The wife of Captain Hubbard was Margaret Vassall, who was one of the heirs of her father, William Vassall, and a sister of Capt. John Vassall. In 1670 Matthyas Briggs *sold* his half of the above property to *his brother-in-law, John Cushing*, who had occupied it as early as 1662, and who then became its sole owner. Matthyas Briggs resided on Main Street, Hingham, near Pear Tree Hill.

Joshua Hubbard of Hingham in New England, Attorney under Will of William Vassall heeretofore of Scittuate in New England late of Barbadoes, Esquire *deceased* for and in consideracon of one hundred and twentie pounds payd by Mathyas Briggs and John Cushen of Hingham aforesaid Yeoman all that dwelling house belonging heeretofore to William Vassall aforesaid and being in Scittuate in New England — with all burns & uplands thereto comonly called *bell house* the ypland lying on bell house neeke, granted by the Towne of Scittuate in New England.

date this eighteeneth day of July one thousand sixe hundred fifty and seaven.

in p ^{nts} of vs	JOSHUA HUBBARD & a sea []	JAMES ADAMS & a set
EDW. RAWSON — MARGARET RAWSON		virte
		(Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 3, p. 34.)

Deborah Briggs of the Town of Hingham in the County of Suffolk in His Majesties Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England widow, relict of Matthias Briggs late of said Hingham deceased, for and in consideration of the sum of three score and twelve pounds in current silver money of New England, sells to Theophilus Cushing of said Hingham,

Yeoman, all that her piece of land lying and being in the said Township of said Hingham which her late husband Matthias Briggs deceased did by his last will give and bequeath to the said Deborah Briggs her heirs and assigns forever — which the said Matthias Briggs purchased of John Jacob, which piece of land is a part of the house lots, viz. a part of a house lott that was Edward Wilder's, and part of a house lott that was John Benson's with the orchards and gardens thereto belonging with the Dwelling house, Barns and all other buildings now standing and being upon the said land, the whole of the said piece of Land being part of the house lots lying together in one bulke as it is now formed, it containeth about four acres of land, and it is bounded with the land now in the possession of John Hull Eastward, and with the highway Northward & with the Common Land Westward and with the land now in the possession of Matthias Whiton Southward, dated the second day of August Anno Domini Sixteen hundred Ninety & Seven in the ninth year of the Reigne of our Sovereigne Lord William the Third etc, etc.

Witnesses

Signed

DEBORAH BRIGGS & a seale

ANDREW LANE

BENJAMIN JACOB

JOHN LOW

(Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 18, p. 116. Recorded 6 Apr. 1698.)

- v. JOHN², b. 1627, in Hingham, England, the youngest child of Matthew Cushing; m. in Hingham, New England, Sarah Hawke. (See this line of JOHN under Lieut. Isaac Thomas.)

The two lines of Cushings who married my Briggs ancestors were descended from MATTHEW¹ CUSHING through his sons DANIEL and JOHN CUSHING, and after several generations these two lines were united. To make this relationship appear less complicated, the descendants of Daniel and then those of John will be carried out separately.

Line of Descent from Daniel, Son of 1. Matthew Cushing.

1. MATTHEW¹ CUSHING.
2. DANIEL CUSHING² (Matthew¹).
3. JEREMIAH CUSHING³ (2. Daniel², Matthew¹).
4. EZEKIEL CUSHING⁴ (3. Jeremiah³, Daniel², Matthew¹).
5. LUCY CUSHING⁵ (4. Ezekiel⁴, Jeremiah³, Daniel², Matthew¹); m. Dr. James Otis.

2. DANIEL² CUSHING (1. Matthew¹) was baptized in Hingham, England, 20 Apr. 1619, and came to Hingham, New England, with his parents in 1635 at the age of 16. A home lot was granted him in 1665, and he became a freeman in 1671. He was an active magistrate; town clerk from 1669 to his death; Representative to General Court, 1681-82 and 1695. As town clerk,

his carefully kept records have been invaluable, also his memorandum books giving information of the early settlers not found elsewhere. He accumulated a large property for those days.

On 1 July 1691 Daniel Cushing loaned to the Selectmen of Hingham "ten pounds in silver money" for the carrying on "the present expedition against the common enemies of the Country." He lived in the house built by his father in 1638, and died 3 Dec. 1699, aged 81 years. Daniel Cushing's will is given in New England Genealogical Register, Vol. 14, p. 293.

DANIEL² CUSHING was married, first, at Hingham, New England, 19 Jan. 1645, by the Rev. Robert Peck, to LYDIA GILMAN, born in England, daughter of EDWARD and MARY (CLARK) GILMAN. Edward Gilman of Hingham, England, with wife Mary, sons Edward, Moses and John, daughters Lydia and Sarah, and three servants, sailed from Gravesend in the ship *Diligent* of Ipswich, in company with the Rev. Robert Peck and his 133 parishioners, in June, and arrived in Boston 10 Aug. 1638. Among the passengers were MATTHEW CUSHING and MATTHEW and MARGARET HAWKE of Cambridge, England. Edward Gilman was son of ROBERT GILMAN, who was baptized in Caston, Norfolk, England, 10 July 1559; married Mary —, and was buried 6 Mar. 1631. ROBERT GILMAN was a son of EDWARD GILMAN of Caston, who married 13 June 1550 *Rose Rysse*, and died between 5 Feb. and 7 July 1573.

EDWARD GILMAN married in Hingham, England, 3 June 1614, MARY CLARK. He settled first in Hingham, New England, where land was granted him in 1638. In 1652 he sold his Hingham property on Bachelor's Row, which he had purchased of NICHOLAS JACOB, to his son-in-law, DANIEL CUSHING, and moved to Ipswich. Later he went to Exeter, N. H., where he remained for the rest of his life. He died in 1655. His wife, Mary Clark, outlived him, and returned to Hingham, where she died 22 June 1681.

Edward Gilman of Hingham served as a *soldier against the French* 14 July 1694 to 29 Oct. 1694. He was undoubtedly a son of Edward and Mary (Clark) Gilman, who before that date had moved to Exeter, N. H.

Gilman Plain, south of Valley Swamp on the Plymouth road (Route 3) now in Norwell, that level tract of land between Assinippi and Ridge Hill, where the Collamore and Farrar families settled, was so called for Edward Gilman, who was one of the early proprietors, he with other men from Hingham having pur-

chased from Mr. Hatherley portions of land of the "three miles square" tract granted to him in July 1656.

Daniel Cushing married, second, 23 Mar. 1690/1, Mrs. Elizabeth (Jacob) Thaxter, widow of Capt. John Thaxter, and daughter of Nicholas and Mary Jacob. (See Jacob, with Thomas family.) She died in Hingham 24 Nov. 1725, aged 93 years. He died 3 Dec. 1699, aged 81.

Children of DANIEL² CUSHING and LYDIA GILMAN:

- i. Peter, b. 29 Mar. 1646; m. Hannah Hawke. (See Hawke, with John Cushing line, Thomas family.) In 1679 his father, Daniel Cushing, built for Peter the house near the Cohasset line, in that part of Hingham known as Rocky Nook, which has been occupied by five generations of Peter's descendants. When the house was built there was no road going by it, the only way leading to it was Turkey Hill Lane, a path leading from the "Plain" to Cohasset. Some of the large timbers of the barn came from the first meeting house, which the present "old meetinghouse" replaced in 1681.
- ii. Daniel³, b. 23 July 1648; m. Elizabeth Thaxter, dau. of Captain John, whose widow, Elizabeth (Jacob) Thaxter, was the second wife of Daniel's father, Daniel² Cushing.
- iii. Deborah, b. 13 Nov. 1651; m. (1) Henry Tarlton; (2) Rev. Benjamin Woodbridge of Bristol and Windsor, Conn.
3. iv. REV. JEREMIAH³, b. 3 July 1654; m. HANNAH LORING.
- v. Theophilus, b. 17 June 1657; m. Mary Thaxter, dau. of Capt. John and Elizabeth (Jacob) Thaxter, and sister of Elizabeth, wife of his brother, Daniel Cushing. Theophilus Cushing purchased from his aunt, widow of Mathyas Briggs, the latter's homestead near Pear Tree Hill. (See 1. Matthew¹ Cushing.)
- vi. Matthew³, b. 16 July 1660; m. Jael Jacob, dau. of John and Mary (Russell) Jacob. (See Jacob.)

3. REV. JEREMIAH³ CUSHING (2. *Daniel*², *Matthew*¹) was born 3 July 1654 in Hingham, New England, graduated from *Harvard College* in 1676, and was educated for the ministry under Rev. John Norton of Hingham. He was preaching in Hingham in 1681, at Haverhill in 1682 and 1683, but declined a settlement. He began preaching in Scituate in 1691, and was ordained there 27th May of that year at a salary of £60. In addition to this salary the Conihassett Partners gave him 20 acres of land, which were laid out to him in 1694. They adjoined the lands of John Curtis and Henry Merritt, and in 1698 Mr. Cushing purchased John Curtis' house, which stood one mile west of the Harbor Village, near the four corners at Willow Street and Tilden Road. Deane says, "He probably resided in it and rented the parsonage."

The parsonage had been built for the Rev. Mr. Chauncey by Mr. Hatherley, who, after the removal of Chauncey in 1654, gave it to the First Church. It had been built in 1640, and stood on the site of a later one built in 1742, on Brook Street.

His ministry in Seituat was short, as he died 22 Mar. 1705/6, and was buried in the old burying ground on Meeting House Lane, where a monument to his memory was erected.

REV. JEREMIAH³ CUSHING married 5 June 1685 HANNAH LORING, born in *Hingham* 9 Aug. 1664, daughter of THOMAS LORING and HANNAH JACOB. He died 22 Mar. 1705, aged 51. Widow Hannah (Loring) Cushing married, second, 22 Jan. 1706/7, John Barker, Esq., of Seituat (see Barker), and she died in Seituat 30 May 1710.

Children of REV. JEREMIAH³ CUSHING and HANNAH LORING:

- i. Hannah, b. 26 Mar. 1687; m. 25 Dec. 1706, Samuel Barker. (See Barker line.) Samuel's father, John Barker, Esq., m. Hannah's mother, Widow Hannah (Loring) Cushing, in 1707.
- ii. Ignatius, b. 22 Sept. 1689; m. (1) Mary Ricard; (2) Ruth Croade, dau. of John and Deborah (Thomas) Croade. (See Thomas line.)
- iii. Jeremiah, b. 4 Sept. 1695; removed to Provincetown and engaged in the fishing and whaling industry there with his brother Ezekiel. He remained in Provincetown.
- iv. EZEKIEL⁴, b. 27 Apr. 1698; m. HANNAH DOANE.

LORING ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY

1. THOMAS¹ LORING came to New England from Axminster, Devon, England, 23 Dec. 1634. He had married, in England, JANE NEWTON, and with wife and two children settled in Dorchester, and in 1635 moved to Hingham. A house lot on Town, now North, Street, near the corner of Ship Street, was drawn by him on 18 Sept. of that year. He was made a free-man 3 Mar. 1635/6, and became a deacon of the church at an early date. In 1637 Thomas Loring was licensed by the General Court as an innkeeper; the same year, he, with some of his neighbors, built a fish weir at Weir River. On 15 Mar. 1645/6, his dwelling house on North Street was destroyed by fire. He did not rebuild, but moved to Hull, where he was a Constable, an office which then included the duties of Court Officer and Tax Collector. In 1660 he purchased a valuable property in Hull of Thomas Chaffee, including *rights in all of the islands belonging to the town of Hull*, with the exception of Peddocks' Island. He became a stockholder in the new plantation at Seakonk (Relho-



64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON, WHERE DR. AND MRS. L. VERNON BRIGGS
ARE LIVING IN 1938. BOUGHT BY HIM IN 1909. IT WAS BUILT PRIOR
TO 1811

both), but did not move there. He died 4 Apr. 1661 at Hull, intestate, and his property there was appraised at £331 15s.

Children of THOMAS LORING and JANE NEWTON:

- i. THOMAS², b. 5 Mar. 1625/6 in Axminster, England; m. HANNAH JACOB.
- ii. John, bpt. 27 Dec. 1630 in Axminster; m. (1) Mary Baker; (2) Mrs. Rachel (Wheatley) Buckland. Resided in Hull.
- iii. Isaac, bpt. 20 Jan. 1639/40 at Hingham; d. 9 Feb. 1639/40.
- iv. Isaac, bpt. 9 Jan. 1641/2 at Hingham; d. 2 Mar. 1644/5 "of a scald."
- v. Josiah, bpt. 9 Jan. 1641/2 at Hingham; m. Elizabeth Prince of Hull.
- vi. Benjamin, bpt. 24 Nov. 1644 at Hingham; m. Mary Hawke.

2. THOMAS² LORING (1. *Thomas*¹) (in line of Briggs ancestry) was baptized in Axminster 5 Mar. 1625/6, and came to New England with his parents when he was about eight years of age. He was a selectman of Hull 1671, 1674 and 1675, and died in Hull between 24 Dec. and 25 Feb. 1678/9, aged 50 years. He married at Hingham, Mass., HANNAH JACOB, daughter of NICHOLAS and MARY, who married, second, Capt. Stephen French of Weymouth, and died 20 Oct. 1720.

The inventory of Thomas Loring's estate totalled £718 18s 6d. After his widow's marriage to Captain French, and when his children came of age, a division of the property was made according to provisions of the will, which gave certain lands to his widow, money portions to daughters Hannah Cushing and Deborah Cushing, while the lands in Hull, Hingham, Cohasset and Boston were divided between the sons. [See Loring Genealogy, by Pope and Loring, for wills, etc.]

Children of THOMAS² LORING, JR., and HANNAH JACOBS:

- i. Benjamin, b. 1662. No further record.
- ii. HANNAH, b. 9 Aug. 1664; m. (1) 1685 in Hingham, REV. JEREMIAH CUSHING; (2) JOHN BARKER, Esq.
- iii. Thomas, b. 15 Mar. 1667/8; m. in Boston 19 Apr. 1699, Deborah Cushing, dau. of Hon. John and Sarah (Hawke) Cushing of Scituate. She m. (2) 18 Feb. 1727/8, at Duxbury, Col. Sylvester Richmond of Little Compton, R. I. Thomas Loring resided at Island Creek, Duxbury.
- iv. Deborah, b. 15 Mar. 1667/8 (a twin of Thomas); m. 20 May 1687 John Cushing, Jr. (Judge John, 1st), of Scituate. (See John Cushing line.)
- v. David, b. 15 Sept. 1671; m. at Barnstable 20 Jan. 1698/9 Mrs. Elizabeth (Otis) Alleyn, dau. of John and Mary (Jacob) Otis of Scituate, and widow of Thomas Alleyn. Resided at Barnstable.

- vi. Caleb, b. 9 June 1674; m. 7 Aug. 1696 Lydia Gray, dau. of Edward and Dorothy (Lettice) Gray of Plymouth. He resided in Plympton and was the first physician to settle there.
- vii. Abigail, b. 16 Feb. 1676; d. 1 Feb. 1678.

4. EZEKIEL⁴ CUSHING (3. *Rev. Jeremiah*³, *Daniel*², *Matthew*¹) was born 27 Apr. 1698 in Scituate. About 1719 he went to Provincetown with his brother Jeremiah, where they engaged in the fishing and whaling industry. Ezekiel Cushing lived there until 1738, when he moved to Falmouth, Cape Elizabeth. His residence at Falmouth was at Cushing's Point, now in South Portland, Me., and his large mercantile establishment was near by, east of the breakwater, at the end of the cove west of Fort Preble. He carried on an extensive trade with the West Indies and owned many vessels, — schooners and sloops, — which were engaged in that trade and in a large fishing industry. Ezekiel Cushing owned many islands in Portland Harbor, among them Cushing's, the greater part of Long Island, and Marsh and Over-set islands. He became prominent in public affairs of the settlement, was one of the most respected and distinguished men of Portland, and filled important public offices; was selectman for nine years, a Justice of the Peace after 1756, and *Justice of the Court of Common Pleas* from 1760 to 1763.

Ezekiel Cushing was COMMANDER of the COUNTY REGIMENT, at that time, the *highest office in Maine*, and in 1757 was able to furnish fifty men from his regiment to defend the inhabitants against the Indians, and one hundred to protect the Commissioners while they were arranging the terms of peace.

EZEKIEL⁴ CUSHING married, first, 1 Apr. 1720, HANNAH DOANE of Provincetown, born 1 Dec. 1703, daughter of HEZEKIAH DOANE. She died 7 June 1742 in Falmouth (South Portland) and was buried in the Cape Elizabeth burying ground. Ezekiel Cushing married, second, 1 Apr. 1746, Mary (Jordan) Parker, daughter of Dominicus Jordan of Cape Elizabeth, and widow of Jacob Parker of Boston.

DOANE ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY

1. JOHN DOANE, the founder of the Doane family in America, came from England to Plymouth with his wife, Abigail —, in 1629 or 1630. Mitchell, author of the "History of Bridgewater," says in a letter dated 26 Jan. 1849, "Mr. John Doane came over to New England about 1629, when history informs us that 35 of

the Leyden Company, with their families arrived at Plymouth. He was, no doubt, one of these, and a member of Mr. Robinson's church." Of his early life, his parentage, and place of residence before coming to New England, nothing has yet been discovered, but there are strong suggestions that he was in partnership with Mr. John Atwood, who was of London until 1635. He was known as "*Mr. John Doane*," being one of the few who bore that title. A tradition says he was from "Wales west of England."

Under the various spellings of Done, Doan, Downe and Doane, this ancient English family has been found residing at Utkinton, one mile north of Tarporley, Cheshire, England, during the reign of King John, 1199-1216. The Dones have been known as the Earl of Chester's Foresters, and "they possessed a power little short of the Earl's Barons themselves; exercising through their sergeants a jurisdiction over fifty parishes." (Doane Genealogy.)

Among the names of the freemen, incorporators of the town of Plymouth in 1633 (Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. 1, p. 3), *John Done* appears as one of the "Cowncell," and the same year he was Deacon of the Plymouth Church. His name is found on many early records, and in 1636, with Elder Brewster, Pastor Smith, Deacon Jenney of Plymouth, Jonathan Brewster and Christopher Wadsworth of Duxbury, James Cudworth and ANTHONY ANNABLE of Scituate, JOHN DOANE was joined to Governor and Council for preparation of a regular system of laws. This system began with the MAYFLOWER COMPACT, and this was the first revision since that time.

Feb. 14, 1633-34, John Doane purchased from John Coomb, a dwelling house and "merestead" with enclosure and outhousing adjoining the "late dwelling howse of Godbert Godbertson on the west side thereof & the herring wire on the est. for & in consideration of nine pownds, ten shillings." (Plym. Co. Rec., Vol. 1, p. 25.)

On Jan. 2, 1633/4, "being formally chosen a deacon in the church, at the request of the Church, and himself was freed from the office of Assistant." Of this action, Goodwin in the "Pilgrim Republic," p. 378, says: "The Plymouth policy of separating Church and State was this year illustrated in the case of John Doane, who, having been elected and ordained deacon, was for that reason voluntarily discharged as one of the Governor's Council."

Dec. 30, 1636 Whereas the now dwellinghowse with all & singular the outhousing lands & enclosures in the use & occupacon of John Done of Plymouth, neere Playne Dealing, were in p'tnership between the said John Done & John Atwood, late of London, Gent.: Now know ye that upon accounts between the said Joh. & John, the said John Atwood for & in consideracon of three score pownds, hath bought out the said John

Done, his heires & assignes so that it remayneth wholly to the said John Atwood & his heirs forever. (Plym. Col. Rec., Vol. 1, p. 47.)

John Atwood, sometimes called John Wood, was a prominent and wealthy man. He came over from London in 1635, and at once took prominent part in Plymouth affairs: Assistant to the Governor in 1638; Deputy from Plymouth 1641 to his death, about 1644; Treasurer of the Colony in 1641, and the agent of James Shirley, the Merchant Adventurer, the same year. He resided near the "Rock," in a house which he purchased of Governor Prence, which estate was later sold to Benjamin Vermayes, who married Mercy Bradford, daughter of the Governor.

"Playne Dealing" was at "Seaside," and "Doane's Field," mentioned in many records, is now largely embraced in the tract of the Plymouth Cemetery Association.

Deacon John Doane was frequently granted land by the Colony Court in recognition of his services in behalf of the Colony. The transfer of the Warwick Patent to the colonists in 1641 gave the lands at *Nauset or Eastham*, among others, to the Colony, and the new charter had reserved three of these for the "Old Comers," many of whom were on the lookout for more fertile lands for cultivation. In 1644 a movement was begun toward a new settlement at Nauset, and the following year the final removal was made. Among the leaders in this new settlement were Ex-Governor Thomas Prence and *Deacon John Doane*, who on 19 Feb. 1645, for the sum of £10 sterling, sold to Mr. William Hanbury of Plymouth "all that his dwelling house and garden places, barne and buildings in and upon the same wth all the fruit trees now growing thereon." "The corne now growing in the garden is excepted wth some half a dossen smale fruits trees w^{ch} the said William Hanbury shall give the said John Done at the fall or spring."

Deacon John Doane settled at Nauset on the north of Town Cove, where he took possession of about 200 acres of land. His house stood near the water, and there in 1869 the Doane Family Association held a meeting and erected a granite post to mark the site of his house. The site is thus described:

This site is on the eastern side of the town, perhaps three hundred yards from the waters of Nauset Bay, extending to the south about one half mile from the Atlantic shore, and two and one-half miles from Barnstable Bay on the west.

The old cellar is still visible. L. Vernon Briggs, a descendant of Deacon John Doane, owns in 1936 many acres of land on Nauset Bay.

Deacon John Doane was born in England about 1590, and died in Eastham 21 Feb. 1685, aged about 95 years. His wife was Abigail —, her family name unknown. His will, dated 18 May 1678, gave to wife ABIGAIL the "house with upland and meadow round about it, and all household goods and cattle, for her comfortable subsistence during her life," and after her decease to daughter Abigail, then unmarried. His daughter Abigail was born in Plymouth in 1631, came with the family to Eastham in 1645, and lived at Nauset for forty-five years. From the records it is inferred that Abigail was to some extent engaged in business, for her name appears several times as the owner of horses, and for their sale. In 1690 she became the second wife of Samuel Lothrop, second son of Rev. John Lothrop of the Barnstable Church, who had been the first pastor of the church at Scituate. Samuel Lothrop removed first to New London. He was a carpenter and builder, and built the Second Church at New London. In 1668 he removed to Norwich, where he died in 1700. His widow, Abigail (Doane), survived him for many years, and in 1731, on the 100th anniversary of her birth, her neighbors and church people assembled in her rooms, where her pastor, Rev. Benjamin Lord, preached a sermon. It was claimed that she had retained to a remarkable degree the intelligence and vivacity of her earlier years. She died 23 Jan. 1734, in the *104th year of her age*.

2. EPHRAIM² DOANE (*John*¹) (in line of Briggs ancestry), youngest of the five children of DEACON JOHN and ABIGAIL DOANE, born in 1645, probably in Plymouth, before removal of his parents to Eastham. He settled within the limits of Eastham, took the oath of fidelity in 1670, and was admitted a freeman 5 June 1684. In 1690 his name appears in Truro, and in the list of the legal inhabitants of Eastham in 1695. He was a surveyor of highways in Eastham in 1691 and 1692. The public records tell little of his life and activities.

Ephraim Doane died between Dec. 1699 and Apr. 1700. His will, dated 17 Dec. 1699, was probated 19 Apr. 1700. By this will he desired that his second wife's children by her first husband, nine in number, share equally with his own, after the death of his wife. Inventory of his estate 5 Mar. 1699/1700 amounted to "£127, 19s."

EPHRAIM DOANE married, first, 15 Feb. 1667, MERCY KNOWLES, daughter of RICHARD and RUTH (BOWER) KNOWLES.

He married, second, after 1692, Widow Mary (Smalley) Snow, a daughter of John and Ann (Walden) Smalley, and widow of John Snow. She was born at Barnstable 11 Dec. 1647, and died in Eastham in 1703.

His first wife, MERCY KNOWLES, was the mother of his eight children, of whom —

3. HEZEKIAH³ DOANE (2. *Ephraim*², *John*¹), born Aug. 1672 in Eastham, was a surveyor of highways in Eastham in 1691 and 1692. He resided very early in Provincetown, a part of Truro, until 1727, where he engaged in the whale fishery. It is recorded that he was admitted an inhabitant of Pamet (Truro) 15 May 1705, which is probably the date of his going to Provincetown. A church was organized in Truro, with the Rev. John Avery as Pastor, 1 Nov. 1711, with Hezekiah Doane as Deacon and Ruling Elder. He was appointed Justice of the Peace in 1710, and was a Justice as late as 1736, when residing in Provincetown. He died early in 1752 in Wellfleet, then a part of Eastham.

HEZEKIAH DOANE married, first, HANNAH —, of whom there is no further information; married, second, about 1717, Mary (Smith) Freeman, widow of Thomas Freeman of Harwich; married, third, 1744, Mrs. Sarah Knowles of Eastham. He had a family of ten children by his first and second wives, of whom —

4. HANNAH⁴ DOANE (3. *Hezekiah*³, *Ephraim*², *John*¹) born about 1704, daughter by Hezekiah Doane's first wife, HANNAH —, married 15 Nov. 1719, EZEKIEL CUSHING, and died 7 June 1742 at Falmouth, Cape Elizabeth. (See Ezekiel Cushing.)

Children of EZEKIEL⁴ CUSHING and HANNAH DOANE:

- i. Loring, b. 10 Aug. 1721 in Provincetown; m. Mary Jordan.
- ii. Ezekiel⁵, b. 3 June 1724 in Provincetown; m. Elizabeth Grey of Biddeford, Me.
- iii. Jeremiah, b. 7. Oct. 1729 in Provincetown; m. Mary Robinson of Kittery, Me.
- iv. Hannah, b. 9 Feb. 1732 in Provincetown; m. Charles Robinson of Falmouth, Me.
- v. Lucy, b. 13 July 1734 in Provincetown; d. in infancy.
5. vi. LUCY, b. 27 Dec. 1735 in Provincetown; m. JAMES OTIS, M.D.
- vii. Phoebe, b. 15 Apr. 1738 in Provincetown; m. Noah Otis of Scituate, son of Ensign and Hannah (Barker) Otis. Their dau., Phoebe Otis, was the second wife of Capt. Elijah Curtis, who resided at "The May Elms," Norwell, the residence in 1936 of Mr. and Mrs. Arthur L. Power. Another daughter, Desire Otis,

married Col. James Curtis, brother of Elijah, and resided in the King house, now (1936) in ruins. Captain Elijah and Colonel James were sons of Elijah, who in his later years lived in the Dr. Cushing Otis house.

viii. Nieholas, b. 1740 in Falmouth; d. 15 Sept. 1745.

Children of Ezekiel Cushing and Mary (Jordan) Parker:

- ix. Nathaniel, b. in Falmouth abt. 1748 or 1749.
- x. John, b. 1751 in Falmouth; m. Phoebe Parker.
- xi. Thomas Niehols, b. in Falmouth; was a sailor in the Revolution, and was lost on the ship *Cumberland*, probably in May 1778.

5. LUCY¹² CUSHING (4. *Ezekiel*¹¹, *Jeremiah*¹⁰, *Daniel*⁹, *Matthew*⁸) was born 27 Dec. 1735 in Provincetown, Mass.; married 3 Oct. 1761 DR. JAMES OTIS of Scituate; died 25 Dec. 1832, aged 70 years.

Dr. James Otis was born in Scituate 3 Sept. 1734 (a son of Dr. Isaac and Deborah (Jacobs) Otis), in the old Isaac Otis house standing on Main Street, South Scituate (Norwell), just west of Stony Brook (Miss Antoinette Pray's, 1936). He succeeded his father in his medical practice and in his residence, where he died 24 May 1817.

Children of JAMES⁶ OTIS, M.D., and LUCY CUSHING:

- 9. i. LUCY⁷, b. 15 June 1763; m. THOMAS BARKER⁵ BRIGGS. (See Briggs.)
- 10. ii. James⁷, b. 21 Apr. 1765; m. Joanna Gardner.
- 11. iii. Hannah, b. 24 Feb. 1767; m. Rev. Nehemiah Thomas. (See Thomas.)
- 12. iv. Cushing⁷ (M.D.), b. 7 Mar. 1769; m. Abigail Cushing. (See Judge Nathan Cushing.)
- v. Elizabeth (Betsey), b. 25 Apr. 1771; d. unm. 4 Apr. 1846, ae. 75.
- 13. vi. Abigail (Nabby), b. 11 Oct. 1773; m. Capt. Seth Foster.
- 14. vii. Thomas⁷, b. 15 July 1776; m. *Charlotte Downes* (Downs). (See Otis.)

9. LUCY⁷ OTIS (8. *James*⁶, M.D., *Isaac*⁵, M.D., *Stephen*⁴, *John*³, *John*², *Richard*¹) was born 15 June 1763 at Stony Cove Brook, Scituate, the eldest child of Dr. James⁶ and Lucy (Cushing) Otis. She married 10 Oct. 1784, THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS, and died 25 Dec. 1832, aged 70 years. (For further account of this family, see Thomas Barker Briggs.)

10. JAMES⁷ OTIS (8. *James*⁶, M.D., *Isaac*⁵, M.D., *Stephen*⁴, *John*³, *John*², *Richard*¹), oldest son of Dr. James and Lucy (Cush-

ing) Otis, was born 21 Apr. 1765, and settled in Boston. His first Boston residence was near Otis Wharf — his property — now (1936) the Appraisers Stores on Atlantic Avenue. Otis Wharf was not sold by his descendants until after 1920. After 1810 he moved to Lyme, N. H., and in his later years returned to Boston and lived on Pinckney Street, Beacon Hill, where he died in 1836. Portraits of James and Joanna (Gardner) Otis are now (1936) in the possession of their great-grandson, James H. Barnard, who resides in the Dr. Cushing Otis house on Main Street, Norwell.

James Otis was married 28 Oct. 179—, by Rev. Thomas Baldwin in Boston, to Joanna Gardner, born in 1766, and died in Boston 3 Mar. 1846, aged 80. (Mount Auburn Cemetery Rec.)

Children of James⁷ Otis and Joanna Gardner:

- i. James Alleyne Gardner⁸ Otis, b. 1800, was named James Otis at birth. There being several James Otises, he assumed the names Alleyne and Gardner, becoming known as James Alleyne Gardner Otis. He was unmarried. His grandnephew, James H. Barnard, has a miniature painted of him in his early life.
- ii. William Gardner⁸ Otis, b. 1802, resided in Lyme, N. H. He married (1) 1834 Joanna S. Kent of Lyme, dau. of Abel and Joanna (Shaw) Kent. Abel Kent, b. 24 Sept. 1779, was a son of Abel Kent, a Revolutionary soldier, who removed from Newburyport to Lyme. Abel, Sr.'s wife was S—— Laneaster. (Kent Genealogy, p. 304.)

Children of William Gardner and Joanna (Kent) Otis:

Sons James and Cushing Otis d. in India, unm.; daughters: Helen Joanna, unm. d. in Lenoir, N. C., 1919; Harriet, d. unm.; Annie married, but left no family, and d. in Missouri; Luella Almira m. (1) James B. Read of Cambridge; (2) Rev. James Johnson Twiss, b. 1820, d. 1890. No children by either marriage. She d. 13 Dec. 1919.

William Gardner Otis m. (2) 1844 Aehsah P. Wood of Lyme, by whom he had a family of six children. A son and dau. d. in infancy; a dau. Abby Otis d. in Maryland; a second son d. unm.; dau. Graee Otis m. — Proctor, and had a family of two sons and a dau., who m. a son of Henry F. Miller, piano manufacturer; a fourth dau. Emma F. m. — Lambert, and had two daughters. William Gardner Otis d. abt. 1848 or 1849.

- iii. Isaac Otis, b. 1805; d. Lyme, N. H., 1826.
- iv. Theodore⁸, b. 15 Dec. 1810 in Boston; grad. from Union College, Schenectady; read law in the office of Rufus Choate. He was admitted to the bar in 1839, in 1846 took up residence in Roxbury, Mass., was mayor of Roxbury 1859 and 1860, and a member of the Legislature in 1864 and 1865. He d. in Roxbury 11 July 1873. Theodore Otis m. at Roxbury 1 Dec. 1841 Harriet Blanchard, daughter of William and Harriet (Lambert) Blanchard.



WILLIAM H. BRIGGS

1855-1897

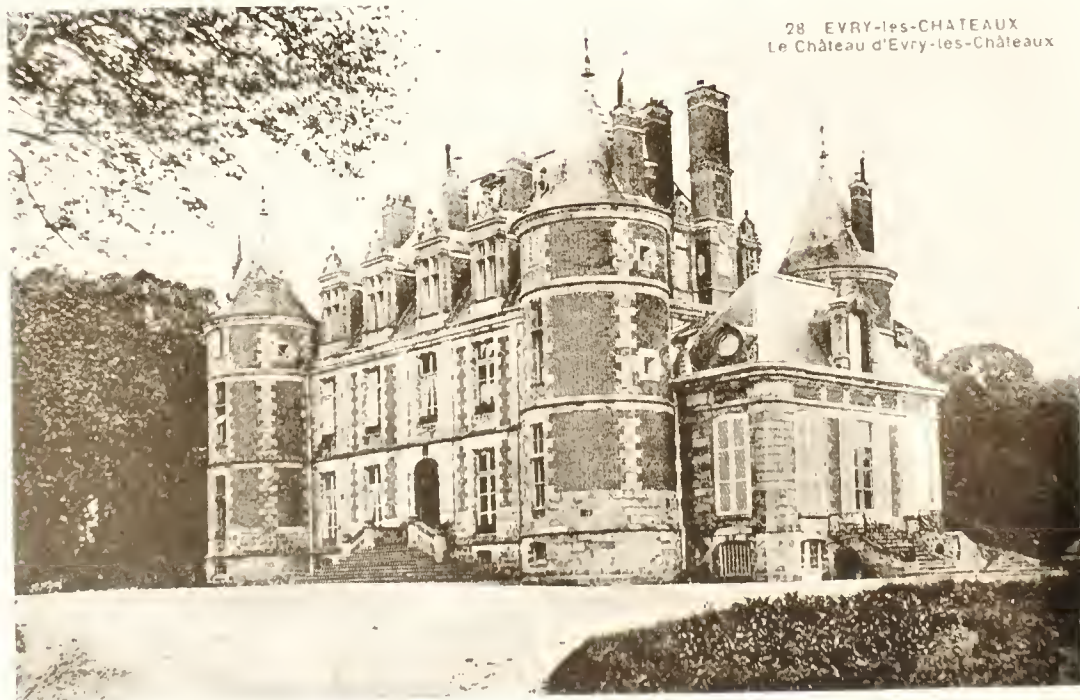
SON OF REV. WILLIAM T. BRIGGS

(See page 756)



REV. NEHEMIAH THOMAS

(See page 477)



28 EVRY-les-CHATEAUX
Le Château d'Evry-les-Châteaux

CHATEAU OF MARQUIS D'EVRY, FRANCE, VISITED BY DR. AND
MRS. L. V. BRIGGS IN 1936

Children of Theodore⁸ Otis and Harriet Blanchard:

1. Theodore Cushing, b. 9 Apr. 1843; m. in Paris, France, 1872, Elizabeth Whitman Morton, dau. of Dr. Morton of Boston, who first used ether as an anæsthetic. Theodore Otis d. in Washington, D. C., 1892.
2. Harriet Lambert, b. 11 Nov. 1844; m. James M. Barnard, Jr., 1866, son of Rev. Charles F. Barnard. Lived in Savannah, Ga. She d. 1892. Their six children were: i. Theodore Otis Barnard, m. Marian Yerxa, by whom he had two sons, — Theodore Otis, who d. young, and James M., who m. Emily Hall 1930. ii. Grace Barnard, m. 1898, Benjamin Emmions Brewster; res. Dedham, Mass.; children, Harriet, Benjamin E. and Theodore Otis Brewster. iii. Arthur Barnard, who d. young. iv. William Lambert Barnard, b. 1877; m. Lucy Pierson of Brookline, and has no family. v. James Holmes Barnard, b. 1879; m. 1 Apr. 1903, Emeline Burrage, dau. of Edward and Emeline (Severance) Burrage of West Newton, and they have had children: (1) Elsie, b. 31 Aug. 1905; m. 14 Mar. 1931 George F. Hodder of Woonsocket, R. I. (2) Margery, b. Dec. 1906; m. 7 June 1930 George Carpenter Koss of Des Moines, Iowa. (3) Carolyn, b. 11 Dec. 1908; d. 28 Feb. 1910. (4) Sally, b. 12 Jan. 1918. vi. Elsie Barnard, b. 1881; m. Dr. Frank H. Chisholm of Savannah.
- 3, 4, 5. Daughters Mary Joanna, Grace Cunningham and Blanehe.
6. James⁹, b. 5 Nov. 1858; grad. from Harvard, class of 1881; resides in Hyannis. His wife was Jennie Washburn of Boston. They have no family.
7. William Lambert, b. 1865; d. 1869.

11. HANNAH⁷ OTIS (8. *James*⁶, *M.D.*, *Isaac*⁵, *M.D.*, *Stephen*⁴, *John*³, *John*², *Richard*¹) was born at Stony Cove Brook, Scituate, 24 Feb. 1767; married (int.) 11 Sept. 1795, Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, pastor of the First Church of Scituate, 1792–1831, born in Marshfield 1768, a son of Nehemiah Thomas. (See Thomas.) Nehemiah Thomas graduated from *Harvard College* in 1789, was educated for the ministry at the University, and ordained at Scituate in Nov. 1792. He lived first in the old parsonage on Brook Street near the Harbor, and afterward built the house on Brushy Hill, on the Country Way, later known as the farm of Enoch Cole, now (1936) owned by his heirs. Mrs. Hannah (Otis) Thomas died 28 Mar. 1831. Rev. Nehemiah Thomas died “sudden” 9 Aug. 1831.

A portrait of the Rev. Nehemiah Thomas hangs in the Cudworth house (now Scituate Historical Society house) at Scituate Centre. This portrait hung for many years after Mr. Thomas' death in the dining room of the Dr. Cushing Otis house, and was presented to Chief Justice Cushing Chapter, D. A. R., by James H. Barnard. The back of the canvas bears this inscription:

Nehemiah Thomas, aged 28, June 10th 1794. Ordained Nov. 14, 1792. This likeness was taken by Dr. Ruphus Hathaway of Duxbury June 2, 1794.

Dr. Hathaway's granddaughter, Mrs. Judith Smith of East Boston, wife of Sylvanus Smith, the shipbuilder who built at East Boston the bark *Amy Turner* on which Dr. L. Vernon Briggs went around Cape Horn in 1880, related many interesting facts concerning her grandfather who, when his medical studies were nearly completed, began to seek a location to establish his practice. He traveled from town to town for this purpose, and paid his way by painting portraits.

Two Chippendale chairs that belonged to the Rev. Nehemiah Thomas are preserved in the Kent Memorial house in Norwell Village, a loan from Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, who gave this house to the church in memory of his mother, Sarah E. E. Kent, who was born in it.

Children of Hannah⁷ Otis and Rev. Nehemiah Thomas:

- i. Henry Thomas, b. 14 Dec. 1796; entered *Harvard College* 1813, and d. in Cambridge 1 Nov. 1814. His classmates erected a monument to his memory in the churehyard at Cambridge. He is said to have been "a youth of uncommon aequirements and of great promise," and his college friend, the Rev. Ira Henry Thomas Blanchard, procured legal permission to assume his name in respect for his memory. (Deane's "History of Seituete.")
- ii. Harriet Thomas, b. 1 Sept. 1798; d. unm.
- iii. Luey Otis Thomas, b. 30 Aug. 1800; d. unm.
- iv. Francis Thomas, M.D., b. 13 Apr. 1804; grad. from *Harvard University* 1829, and in 1831 was a student and assistant attendant with Dr. Wyman at the McLean Hospital for the insane.

The following is taken from "The Institutional Care of the Insane in the United States and Canada," Vol. IV, p. 542:

Dr. Rufus Wyman, father of two famous sons, both physieians, was born in Woburn, Mass., July 16, 1778; was graduated from Harvard College in 1799, and studied medicine under Dr. John Jeffries of Boston. He praetieed medicine in Chelmsford, Mass., and from 1818 to 1835 was superintendent of McLean Asylum, resigning on account of ill health. He died in Roxbury, June 22, 1842.

He was president of the Massachusetts Medical Society, and was a man universally beloved and respected. Dr. Luther V. Bell, one of the most renowned of his successors at McLean Asylum, says of him:

"Entering on his duties with no similar undertaking to guide him in interior arrangements or general management, the weight of difficulty and responsibility which necessarily fell upon him must have been great. What is due to his memory as a public benefactor in this way can never be realized or appreciated except by a small number whose opportunities and duties enabled them to judge of the difficulties he encountered and the means he projected to meet them."

Dr. Francis Thomas m. 14 Apr. 1834 Sally Delano Dunbar, b. 24 Jan. 1801, dau. of Jesse, Esq., and Sally (Witherell) Dunbar of Scitu-

ate, and resided in the "Dunbar Mansion" on Front Street, Scituate Harbor, facing the old Will James Dock, and commanding a beautiful view of the harbor, Cedar Point with its light house, and the First Cliff. Sally (Dunbar) Thomas d. 11 Feb. 1835 in Curacoa, W. I., a few months after the birth of a daughter, Sarah Helen Thomas. Dr. Francis Thomas practiced medicine in Scituate for many years, and was succeeded in his practice by Dr. Frank Thomas Vinal.

Mrs. Hannah (Otis) Thomas died from "a most malignant kind of inflammatory sore throat (probably diphtheria) 28 March 1831." A lengthy obituary of her was published in a paper after her death, from which we quote at some length. It says:

She possessed from nature and culture a strong mind, unaffected, rational and efficient piety, social, domestic and Christian virtues of the most useful and estimable nature. . . . Her advantages of education were not such as are found in modern schools for fine ladies, but those which wealthy, professional parents in the country furnished a half century ago for their daughters. The improvement of her mind and manners were aided by intercourse with a number of families of high literary distinction and polite accomplishments, who then resided in her native place.

Possessed of quick sensibility, she doubtless had strong passions; but she early achieved the command of herself, and was thus qualified to secure the obedience and love of her children. Her spirit was tranquil. If the feeling temperament of her husband, usually indeed benevolent and pleasant, was at any time ruffled, she had power to sooth and compose it; and when deeply afflicted by the death of a son of much promise, although she felt her full share of grief, she was able not only to possess her soul in patience, but to minister solace to her partner, when his spirit was most disquieted within him. She was a lover and maker of peace. She would sometimes sport with works of fancy, but she most relished, especially as her years increased, the Book of God, and works on theology and ethics.

12. HON. CUSHING⁷ OTIS, M.D. (8. *James*⁶, *M.D.*, *Isaac*⁵, *M.D.*, *Stephen*⁴, *John*³, *John*², *Richard*¹) was born in Scituate 7 Mar. 1769 near Stony Cove Brook, and prepared for *Harvard* under Rev. David Barnes, and graduated in the *class of 1789*. Among his classmates of that year were Foster Waterman of Scituate, Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, who married his sister, Hannah Otis, Dr. Benjamin Haskell, John Thornton Kirkland, Levi Lincoln, afterward Governor of Massachusetts, Jacob Hervey Pierpont, William Pepperell Sparhawk, Nathaniel Thayer, Cotton Tufts, Lodovicus Weld, Edward S. Wigglesworth, John Lothrop, Charles Adams, William Emerson, Thomas F. Hooper, Ebenezer Coffin and Charles Cutts, of a total of forty-six who were in his class.

After graduation from Harvard he took up the study of medicine, and received his degree of M.D. In 1793 he began to practice in Scituate, succeeding his father, Dr. James Otis. He was a Fellow of the Massachusetts Medical Society.

Governor Samuel Adams appointed Dr. Cushing Otis *Surgeon of 2d Regiment, 1st Brigade, 5th Division of Militia* of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts 6 Nov. 1793. He resigned 21 Apr. 1823 (according to Governor's Autograph Book).

Dr. Otis was a shrewd business man, and was called upon to act as trustee for various people and as guardian for others. He was a strong supporter of the Church of the Second Parish (First Parish, Norwell), acting for a time as its treasurer, and when the present edifice was erected, in 1830, gave a handsome clock which is still in place on the front of the gallery, and after more than one hundred years of service is keeping excellent time.

Dr. Otis' high desk, the scales by which he weighed his medicines, and the saddlebag in which he carried them, are preserved in the Kent Memorial House in Norwell Village as a loan from L. Cabot Briggs.

Dr. Cushing Otis was a Representative to the General Court, 1809, 1812, 1813 and 1814, and in 1823 was a State Senator. In 1834 he was one of the promoters of the South Scituate Savings Bank, which began to function in 1835, and he served as its first president until his death in 1837. The following, which was found among his papers refers probably to business of the bank. It was from the Globe Bank, written to Cushing Otis, Esq., at Scituate, on Monday evening 29 Oct. —, at ten o'clock:

DEAR SIR: — Yours per Mr. Jones covering a note of Daniel Websters' for \$500 is at hand and the note placed on file for collection.

On 11 July 1834 Cushing Otis bought from John Simonds of Boston "1 dark coloured Boston built chaise, for one hundred and fifty dollars without harness," and on 1 Aug. 1834 he paid this same John Simonds "Three dollars in full for four nights' horsekeeping."

On 4 July 1800 Dr. Cushing Otis delivered an oration at Scituate. This oration was published in pamphlet form in Boston by Manning and Loring, entitled "An Oration, Pronounced at Scituate, July 4, 1800, At the Request of the Inhabitants, In Commemoration of American Independence. By Cushing Otis." The oration opens with a spirited but very liberal presentation of the cause of the colonists in the Revolutionary War; continuing,



THE "DELANO MANSION," SOUTH SCITUATE, NOW NORWELL

(See page 502)

From "Old Scituate"



DR. CUSHING OTIS HOUSE, OPPOSITE ROAD TO UNION BRIDGE, SCITUATE

it praises the loyalty of the Colonists to the English spirit of liberty, and says:

Long had an intercourse of friendship subsisted between these colonies and their parent State. Americans, viewing Great Britain as the land of their fathers, felt for it all that partial affection which filial reverence could inspire. They saw their commerce loaded with restrictions, and saw it without complaint. They beheld with a degree of satisfaction their riches poured into the lap of their parent. They exulted in the fame of her wide-spreading glory. They had often fought by the side of Englishmen as brothers in the same cause, and had mingled their best blood with theirs. But when they, boasting of Liberty, which to preserve to themselves they had often encountered the horrors of civil war, could be so unmindful of what they owed to us as fellow citizens, as to become the willing tools of an infatuated ministry to wrest from us our dearest privileges, the ties which bound us to them became as flax that is burnt. America, friendless and alone, destitute of resources, but collected within herself, bid defiance to the English nation in the zenith of her power and elated with a recent triumph over the arms of France. . . .

The feelings and pride of the mother country had been severely wounded by what she termed the refractory spirit of her colonies. She had from time to time abandoned the darling object of her wishes, but still insisted on her right. For our laudable resistance to unprovoked usurpation she stigmatized us as rebellious subjects and ungrateful children. . . .

The history of those times presents our country in a dignified and interesting attitude. In one hand extending the olive branch as ready to accommodate on honorable terms, with the other putting on her buckler, determined to repel every aggression. In the inequality of the contest she resembles the stripling in the Jewish annals, challenging the haughty giant to combat. . . . But, like the young hero, relying on the justice of our cause and the smiles of approving heaven, we resisted, we fought, we conquered.

Dr. Otis' account of the days following the Revolution depicts the same disillusionment that invariably follows war:

Great had been our anticipations from the attainment of peace. We looked forward with eager expectation to that happy moment when our country should no longer be frightened with the din of arms, and the alarm of war should cease. The treaty, which secured us the object, exceeded the hopes of the most sanguine calculators. Relieved from the pressure of a common danger, we found ourselves without a bond of union. The old system of Confederation became of as little consequence as the parchment on which it was inscribed, and soon crumbled to pieces. The moral sense of the people had become relaxed by those licentious practices inseparable from a state of revolution. A fluctuating paper medium had given birth to fraud and imposition. The States, no longer linked by the menaces

of an external foe, commenced commercial rivals of each other; set up and advocated opposite and clashing interests. The memorable tender laws passed at that time are a sufficient evidence of the wretched state of things. Confidence, public and private, was nearly at an end, and credit just breathing her last. At this alarming crisis the wise policy of our country dictated the only alternative that could have snatched us from destruction. A number of our wisest sages met and formed our present Constitution. . . . It was the result of mature deliberation, candid inquiry, mutual concession and patient investigation. Its formation is a glorious epoch in the annals of our history. Its adoption was our political salvation.

But Dr. Otis saw clearly the weaknesses of the American people, and it is surprising to find how closely the conditions immediately following the formation of the Union resemble those of today. He says:

Our continent, particularly the southern part of it, is infested with hordes of profligate foreigners; who, having fled from justice in their own country and found an asylum in ours, ungratefully repay her the shelter afforded them by plotting against her peace and welfare. With unwearied effort they are disseminating the seeds of civil discord, endeavoring to sever the people from their government, and industriously inculcating the doctrine of "holy insurrection." . . . And, strange to tell there is found on the part of the people a listening ear and a disposition to believe defamation, however virulent and outrageous. . . .

Unheard of commotions have for ten years past convulsed Europe. The groans of oppression have been wafted to our ears on every eastern gale. France, in whom this overwhelming calamity began, was our national friend. May the phantom, national friendship, which deluded the youthful fancy of our country, and which she thought possible to exist, be henceforward forever expunged from her catalogue of virtues. It is a principle too pure and exalted to influence the gross interests of bodies politic. . . . [Mr. Otis was very bitter against France.] All we wish her is to repent her follies and be healed of her madness. We are now making another attempt to negotiate; and it will exist as a lasting monument of the pacific policy and enlightened views of our illustrious President. May France no longer abuse the liberal spirit of our government. May the present Envoys not find themselves, like the former, under the disagreeable necessity of unfolding scenes of corruption, which have fixed an indelible stigma on the French counsels. May Buonaparte prove less rapacious than his predecessors, and Ex-Bishop Talleyrand, laying aside his duplicity and finesse, meet them on the ground of fair and honorable discussion. May the sanguinary deeds, which have marked the progress of their unparalleled revolution, perpetrated in the sacred *name of liberty*, and associating horror with the sword, be no more repeated

to disgust her sincere votaries and pierce with anguish even the most obdurate heart.

Since the last celebration of this festive day we have to deplore a great national calamity. The sun, which illumined with his beams our political horizon, has set. The best cement of our union is dissolved. The noblest pillar in the fair fabric of freedom has crumbled into dust. Washington is no more. . . .

Let us felicitate ourselves on the wise and forbearing policy of our Executive, which has hitherto preserved us from being entangled in the mad career of European politics, that we are now sitting under our own vines and fig trees, partaking of the bounties of peace. . . .

Dr. Otis, in the ten years following the beginning of his extensive practice, accumulated considerable property. On 13 Oct. 1803 he loaned his younger brother, Thomas Otis, the sum of \$1,223.81 for the latter to move to New York City and there establish the importing house of Otis & Sloan. (See Thomas Otis.) He had purchased before his marriage, in 1806, from Capt. William Brooks, a property on the main road nearly opposite Bridge Street, Scituate. It was an old house that had been built, soon after the Indian raid of 1676, by Joseph Turner, son of John Turner, Sr., and Mary (Brewster) on the northeast quarter of the 80-acre lot granted to Joseph's grandfather, Humphrey Turner, in 1636. Joseph Foster, a grandson of Joseph Turner, had inherited it from his father, Deacon Hatherley Foster, and in 1768, after his removal to Maine, he sold the property to Elijah Curtis, Sr., who died in 1794. Thateher Tilden, whose wife was a Turner, bought it from Curtis' estate in 1795, and in 1803 sold it to Capt. William Brooks. After selling the house to Dr. Otis, Captain Brooks built upon the Brooks farm the house in the valley on the northeast side of Delano Hill (in 1936 the residence of Mrs. E. R. Hastings), known for many years as the "Riverdale Farm" of Abiel Turner. This property was that of Captain Brooks' ancestor, William Brooks, who settled there in 1640, and whose wife was the Widow Susanna Dunham, a niece of Timothy Hatherley. After purchasing the Captain Brooks place, Dr. Otis improved the house by building an addition of 10 feet on its western side, which enlarged the parlor and gave him a small room on the ground floor for a dispensary. Since 1903 this house has been the residence of James Holmes Barnard, who has made several additions and alterations.

Dr. Cushing Otis married 27 Nov. 1806 Abigail Cushing, born in Scituate, South Parish (Norwell) 4 June 1775, daughter of

Judge Nathan and Abigail (Tilden) Cushing. He died suddenly 16 Oct. 1837, aged 68. In Nov. 1837 Mrs. Abigail Otis was appointed administratrix of her husband's estate. This marriage united the two lines of descendants of Matthew Cushing.

JOHN CUSHING LINE OF BRIGGS ANCESTRY

JUDGE NATHAN CUSHING, father of Abigail, was a distinguished man during the days of the Revolution and the period of adjustment that followed. He was born 24 Sept. 1742, one of the fifteen children of Deacon Joseph and Lydia (King) Cushing of Henchman's Corner, Scituate, South Parish. He graduated from *Harvard College* in 1763, was first a preacher, but accepted no settlement, and soon turned his attention to the law. He became very active as a patriot when a *Representative* in 1774 to the General Court, and served on many town committees, whose reports on conditions and necessary acts were largely drafted by him. He was a *delegate* to the *Plymouth County Congress* at Plympton on 26 Sept., and one of the signers of the Manifesto issued to the Congress at Plymouth on 4 Oct. 1774; a Representative to the Congress at Watertown 31 May 1775, and to that in Cambridge in November of the same year; again a *Representative* in 1776. He was appointed Judge of Admiralty, and he became well known as a patriot by the firmness with which he condemned the captured British vessels. He was a *Counsellor of State* from 1779 to 1789. When action was taken on the subject of a State Seal, 13 Dec. 1780, the following record is found:

Ordered that Nathan Cushing be a committee to prepare a seal for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

When his report was made, it was accepted, and the device he recommended adopted. This device is still in use as the Arms of Massachusetts.

In 1789 Nathan Cushing was appointed a *Judge of the Supreme Court* which office he held until 1801, when he resigned. He was again appointed *State Counsellor* in 1802 and served until 1807. He died in Scituate 4 Nov. 1812.

No portrait of the Judge is known to exist, although extensive inquiry has been made. Rev. Samuel Deane, who knew him, tells us, in his "History of Scituate," that "he was a gentleman of noble form, commanding countenance and courteous manners, distinguished more for solid judgment and discretion than for eloquence."

Nathan Cushing married in Pembroke, 11 July 1772, Abigail Tilden, born 1745, probably in Boston, a daughter of Capt. Christopher Tilden of Pembroke, later of Boston. Captain Christopher was a son of Joseph Tilden of Marshfield, and married Sarah Parrot of Boston. His father, Joseph, was a son of Stephen, the youngest son of Elder *Nathaniel and Lydia (Huckstep) Tilden*, who married Hannah Little, daughter of Thomas of Plymouth, later of "Littletown," Marshfield, and his wife, Ann Warren.

Nathaniel Tilden, of Tenterden, England, arrived in New England in 1634, in the ship *Hercules*, of Dover (or Sandwich), with his wife and children, — Joseph, Mary, Sarah, Judith, Lydia, Stephen and Thomas, — and the following, who came under the designation of "servants:" Thomas Lapham, George Sutton, Edward Ford, Edward Jenkins, James Bennett, Sarah Couchman, Mary Perien. The Rev. William Witherell came on this same boat.

Mrs. Abigail (Tilden) Cushing was known as a woman of high accomplishments. She died 4 Nov. 1810.

When he was about to marry, Nathan Cushing purchased land for his residence in Scituate of John Jordan and the Proutys, and built his home on or near the site of Jordan's house, a little above Henchman's Corner, on the east side of Little Hoop Pole Hill, nearly opposite his father's house. The house faced east, overlooking the corner and the main street of the village. This fine old mansion was burned about 1850, and only the cellar hole, the well, and an old ash tree that stood between the house and the road remained to mark its site, until in 1927 Chief Justice Cushing Chapter D. A. R. placed thereon a boulder bearing a bronze tablet to perpetuate the memory and service of this noted man. Lilac bushes that once bloomed in the front yard of the original house are still blooming there, and for many years lilies of the valley carpeted the terraces that led from the front door to the lower level of the field.

The Rev. William Phillips Tilden said, in reminiscences of his boyhood:

Our nearest neighbor was Judge Nathan Cushing. He lived in a fine old mansion, close to our house. He was a distinguished man, a graduate of Harvard, a brave patriot in the Revolution. He married Miss Abigail Tilden, a relative of father's, and this may have added somewhat to the neighborhood ties, for he was a good friend. He died when I was very young; but his fine old house, with its pleasant surroundings, was one of the attractions of my early childhood. Aunt Lizzie, especially, a domestic in the household, a sort of general see-to-everything, was

my special favorite. Perhaps it was her seed cakes and other dainties which lent a charm to our intimacy that lodged her pleasant face in my memory.

Judge Nathan Cushing was a descendant of Matthew¹ Cushing of Hingham, founder of the American family of Cushing, through his son, John² Cushing, Esq., known as "the Father of Judges," who had purchased the property at Belle House Neck in 1661 from the heirs of William Vassall. John Cushing, Esq., married 20 Jan. 1658 Sarah Hawke, daughter of Matthew and Margaret Hawke of Hingham, whose sister Deborah Hawke was the wife of Capt. John Briggs of Scituate. (See Hawke, under Lieut. Isaac Thomas.) They lived at Belle House Neck, and had a family of twelve children. (See this line of John Cushing under Lieut. Isaac Thomas.) The eleventh child of John and Sarah (Hawke) Cushing was Joseph³, born 23 Sept. 1677, who in 1707 purchased from Philip Turner a tract of land at Henchman's Corner in the South Parish of Scituate, upon which the house of the late Dr. Heyward Warren Cushing stands (1936). Joseph built a house upon this tract when he married, and a corner stone of this first house is imbedded in the lawn on Dr. Cushing's estate. The original house was enlarged by his son, Deacon Joseph⁴, Jr., and later it formed the ell of a large house built by the latter's son George.

Joseph³ Cushing was a Deacon of the Second Church, a Justice of the Peace, active in the community, and greatly respected. He married 1 Jan. 1710/11 Mersey Pickles, born in Scituate in 1688, daughter of Nathan Pickles, whose wife, Miriam Turner, was a daughter of "young son John" Turner and Ann James. She died after a married life of only eleven months, five days after the birth of her son, Joseph⁴, Jr., born 25 Nov. 1711. Deacon Joseph³ Cushing did not remarry, and his wife's sister, Alice Pickles, was the foster-mother of young Joseph.⁴ Deacon Joseph³ died 12 Dec. 1760, and lies buried in the South Parish Cemetery, near son, grandson and other members of the family.

Joseph Cushing⁴, Jr., *graduated from Harvard College*, for which he was prepared by his neighbor, the Rev. Nathaniel Eells, in 1731, and was for many years a grammar school master, preparing many boys for college, among them his sons Joseph, (Judge) Nathan and (Dr.) Lemuel.

Deacon Joseph⁴, Jr., married 29 Mar. 1732 Lydia King, daughter of Deacon George and Deborah (Briggs) King. (See Capt. John

Briggs.) He died 2 Jan. 1767, aged 56. Deacon Joseph⁴ and Lydia (King) Cushing had a family of fifteen children, seven of whom married, and left descendants in Scituate and Pembroke: (1) Joseph⁵, born in 1733, *graduated Harvard College in 1752*, died in 1767, unmarried. (2) George⁵, born in 1736, married a cousin, Lydia Cushing, daughter of James Cushing, and was the first of the "four Georges," all of whom lived on the property near Henchman's Corner, to which his father had added by purchase from heirs of Edward Prouty, upland and swamp land on the road to Mount Blue. George King Cushing, the third George, bore the name of his grandfather, Deacon George King. His son George (4th), after a fire that destroyed the large house built by George (1st), built a new one on the same site, and later sold the property to his cousin, Dr. H. W. Cushing. The new house was afterward removed, and the present one built a short distance back of the site of the other houses. Mary Cushing, daughter of George and Lydia (Cushing) married Deacon James Loring of Boston, a printer and bookseller, and publisher in 1831 of Deane's "History of Scituate." (3) Mercy⁵, born in 1739, married in 1760 Capt. Israel Vinal, and lived on Booth Hill, North Scituate, in a house now (1936) standing, the home of the late Mr. Poland. Captain Vinal was very active during the days of the Revolution, serving on many important committees, a delegate to the State Convention at Cambridge to prepare a State Constitution in 1779, and *Representative to General Court 1783-84, 1886-91*. (4) Nathan⁵, born in 1742, married Abigail Tilden. (5) Pickles⁵, born in 1744, married in 1766 Abigail Hatch, daughter of Ebenezer and Sarah (Turner) Hatch of Pembroke. At the time of his marriage, Pickles Cushing built the house upon the main street, in which his son, Pickles⁶, Jr., resided. After the death of the latter's daughter Mary, known as "Mary Pickles," this property was sold by a grandson, Albert Cushing Litchfield, to Nathan Cushing and Miss Abigail T. Otis, and after material alterations it became the parsonage of the Rev. William H. Fish. A life tenancy was arranged for Mr. and Mrs. Fish, and after the death of Mrs. Fish and Mr. Fish's retirement as pastor of the church, by agreement between the Parish and Mr. Fish the house became the property of the parish for a parsonage, according to an agreement between Miss Otis and Mr. Cushing, made when the house had been purchased.

Pickles Cushing was a Soldier in the *Revolution*. (6) Hawke⁵, born in 1745, married in 1769 Ruth Cushing, a second cousin, daughter of Josiah and Ruth (Thomas) Cushing of Pembroke.

(See Lieut. Isaac Thomas.) He served as a private in the *Revolution*. He was a carpenter and builder, and owner, with his brother Pickles, of the old Bryant Saw Mill on the Second Herring Brook, which they operated. He purchased from the heirs of the Rev. Lemuel Bryant, Pastor of the Quincy Church, Deacon Thomas Bryant's house on the main road, built by him in 1698, with lands and mill privilege of the Bryants. He was succeeded by his son, Deacon Thomas Cushing, who married Ruth Turner, and after the death of the last of his family, Miss Clarissa Cushing, the house was sold to Dr. H. W. Cushing, who did not occupy it. It was eventually sold to Prof. Arthur Dewing of the Harvard School of Business Administration, whose property it now is (1936). (7) Lemuel, born in 1746, graduated from *Harvard College* in 1767, and taught in Weymouth, Mass., 1769-70. He was educated for a physician and settled in Hanover; was on the *Committee of Correspondence and Safety for Hanover in 1775*; and in the Revolution was a *Surgeon in Gen. John Thomas' Regiment*. He died in service at Tappan, N. Y., 28 Oct. 1776, in his thirtieth year. He was unmarried. (8) Deborah, born in 1752, married Josiah Cushing of Pembroke, son of Josiah and Ruth (Thomas), and brother of the wife of Deborah's brother Hawke. (9) Caleb⁵, born in 1754, died in middle life, unmarried. (10) Alice⁵, born in 1756, married her second cousin, Nathaniel Cushing, from Hingham, 1773, son of Hezekiah and Lydia (Jones). On their marriage, Nathaniel purchased from Philip Turner the estate known as the "Cushing Homestead" of the late Nathan Cushing, a grandson of Nathaniel. A house was included in the purchase, the nucleus of the present structure. This first house has been added to from time to time, and certain parts removed, but the corner stone is still in place, and a part of the original structure is in use as a shed. Nathaniel Cushing was a *Revolutionary soldier*; Drummer in Capt. William Turner's (3d Scituate) Company, Col. Anthony Thomas' Regt. 1775; private in Capt. Nathaniel Winslow's Company, Brig. Gen. John Thomas' Regt. 1775; sergeant in Capt. Freedom Chamberlain's Company, Col. Simeon Cary's Regt. 1776. Nathaniel Cushing died suddenly on the road to Hanover in 1794. No record of his death has been found, other than this statement made by his descendants. Hayward Peirce Cushing and Nathan Cushing of the firm of Silas Peirce & Co., wholesale grocers of Boston, were sons of Nathaniel, Jr., and his oldest daughter, Deborah Cushing, married John Nash, whose sons Nathaniel C. and Israel Nash were old-time Boston merchants.

(See Briggs chapter.) The late Miss Florence M. Cushing, daughter of Hayward P. Cushing, left by her will substantial bequests to the First Parish of Norwell in honor of her grandparents, Nathaniel and Jane (Peirce) Cushing, and to the James Library, in honor of the Rev. William H. Fish, to whose efforts the library owes its foundation; and the sum of \$100,000 to the town of Norwell for the erection of a memorial building in memory of her father, Hayward P., and her uncle, Nathan Cushing, the character of which is to be decided by trustees named by her.

Children of Judge Nathan⁵ Cushing and Abigail Tilden:

- i. Christopher, b. 30 May 1773; *grad. from Harvard College* 1794. He resided in his father's house near Henchman's Corner, and did not marry until several years after the death of his parents. On 30 Nov. 1817 he m. Luey Nichols of Seitate, dau. of Noah Nichols. He d. 15 Dec. 1819. By his will he left the homestead of his father to his wife Luey during her lifetime. At her death it was to revert to his niece, Abigail Tilden Otis. The estate was charged with the support of Elizabeth Studley, singlewoman, who had been the housekeeper for many years, to the sum of \$1,000. In 1853 Elizabeth desired this support to be in the form of an allowance paid annually or semi-annually, and Miss Otis, to whom the estate had at that time descended, was agreeable to this arrangement, and on the fifteenth day of Sept. 1853 signed an agreement to pay Elizabeth \$100 a year, payable half yearly. Miss Studley d. in 1856.

In 1827 Widow Luey (Nichols) Cushing m. (2) Hon. Wilkes Wood of Middleborough, Judge of Probate for Bristol County. She was his third wife. They resided for a short time in the Cushing house, which for many years was known as "the Judge Wood place." Before or about 1830 they removed to Middleborough, and Luey's sister, Betsey Nichols, who had m. Charles Jones, was living there with her family. Later, the house was occupied by Dr. Milton Fuller, afterward of Medford, who is said to have been one of the earliest homeopathic practitioners in the state. The house was burned to the ground about 1850. Mrs. Luey Cushing Wood d. in Middleborough 26 Sept. 1848. By her will a sum of money was left to *Cushing Otis Briggs, as trustee*, for the care and comfort of her maiden sister, Nabby Nichols, who lived near the home of C. O. Briggs, in a house now (1936) owned by James Spellman.

The land inherited by Miss *Abigail Tilden* Otis from her uncle, Christopher Cushing, was the real estate given by her in her will to the sons of her Cousin, George King Cushing. They are now owned by Mrs. Elizabeth (Cushing) Carleton, dau. of Dr. H. W. Cushing (1936).

- ii. ABIGAIL, b. 4 June 1775; m. CUSHING OTIS, M.D.

- iii. Francess, b. 26 June 1783; m. 6 Aug. 1812, her cousin, Capt. Lemuel Cushing of Roxbury, a son of Hawke and Ruth (Cushing) Cushing of Scituate. They resided in Roxbury, and left no descendants.

The position that Dr. Otis held in the community is shown by correspondence including a letter written to Mrs. Otis at the time of his sudden death, by Mr. and Mrs. William Hammatt, then living in Bangor, Me. Mrs. Hammatt was Esther Parsons, a niece of Madam Hannah Cushing, wife of Judge William Cushing, and as a child had spent much time with her aunt, particularly after the death of the Judge. Her mother, Esther (Phillips) Parsons, had, after the death of her first husband, married, second, William Jackson of Plymouth, a brother of Mrs. Ralph Waldo Emerson. Some years before her second marriage Mrs. Parsons lived in Scituate near her sister, in a house then owned by Madam Cushing. This house at the top of the hill on the road to Greenbush is now (1936) owned by Edward L. Merritt. After the marriage of Esther Parsons to William Hammatt of Plymouth the young couple lived in Scituate until the death of her aunt in 1834, after which they moved to Bangor.

Mrs. Hammatt writes:

BANGOR, Oct. 29th, 1837.

MY DEAR MRS. OTIS:—I cannot in this hour of your affliction, refrain from expressing the tender sympathy I feel in your recent & great bereavement, & my own share in that grief consequent upon the sundering of early long tried friendship. . . .

The recollections of my earliest childhood are associated with his memory. I now retrace with intense feeling, the beginning & progress of that friendship which was to me a source of delight & pride. From the time when, a little child I rode before him on the saddle-bow, to the period when I could enjoy his intelligent & cultivated mind, I ever found his presence adding to my pleasure. But it requires *time* to show the strength of early predilection, & to prove that friendship is something more than a name. It has borne the test. In sickness & in sorrow my heart has drunk in words of comfort & consolation from his mouth, & my faith & hope have been cheered by his pious animated remarks.

Believe me my dear Mrs. Otis now & ever, most truly your friend

ESTHER P. HAMMATT.

Per A. Robbins, Esq.

Mr. Hammatt adds:

. . . I cannot forbear . . . to offer to our dear friend Mrs. Otis sympathy & condolence under her great bereavement. The fact was very

touching, & affected us exceedingly that, the very kind & friendly letter deliver'd by Mr. Robbins* was the last act of the kind which his hand was permitted to execute; & that the excellent sentiments therein expressed were the last emanations of his brilliant & versatile mind. I have known Dr. Otis well, & for a long time, I have loved & esteemed him as all must have done, who knew him as I did, . . . but I will not presume to offer any other consolation than such as our religion will never fail to furnish & such as your departed husband himself wou'd decree all sufficient.

. . . my dear Madam with all respect,

Your friend & obt. sv.

WILL^m HAMMATT.

Rev. Samuel Deane, pastor of the South Scituate Church (Second Church, Scituate) cared little for ostentation or display in any form, and seldom if ever continued the custom of his predecessor in the pulpit, Dr. David Barnes, of wearing a clerical gown. This was a matter of regret to some of his parishioners, so much so that the ladies of his church purchased a new silk gown for his use, and presented it to him, hoping in this way that he would continue the custom of Dr. Barnes. His letter of acknowledgment, addressed to Mrs. Abigail Otis, wife of Cushing Otis, follows:

SCITUATE, January 13th, 1821.

Mrs. Abigail Otis, Scituate.

DEAR MADAM:—I desire to present my grateful acknowledgments to you, and the other ladies, who have so kindly contributed to my comfort by enabling me to purchase a cloak. I accept your bounty, not only as an expression of your regard to the comfort of your Pastor, but also to his external appearance — a matter not to be wholly disregarded. And still more do I value your bounty, because it is another happy token of those benevolent affections, which have always been most lively in the female heart.

While you are thus careful for my external comfort and appearance, you will give a new impulse to my endeavors to acquire those mental qualifications, by which alone I can repay your kindness by becoming more useful to you in my profession. I have no wish so dear, as that of being able to devote myself more fully to your service, and that of my people.

Your obliged and affectionate pastor,

SAMUEL DEANE.

* Anson Robbins, Esq., was an associate in South Scituate Savings Bank, and Dr. Cushing Otis' successor as its President.

Dr. Otis was one of the Trustees of Derby Academy, Hingham, and the following resolutions were sent to Mrs. Otis after his death:

At the semiannual meeting of the Trustees of
Derby Academy, Nov. 8, 1837.

Voted unanimously —

That in the sudden death of the Honorable Cushing Otis M.D. this institution has occasion, in common with the community of which he was a highly esteemed member, to lament the loss of one whose influence was long & faithfully given to the best interests of religion, learning, & humanity.

True copy from Records,

Attest

CHARLES BROOKS

Secy

This personal letter accompanied the resolutions:

HINGHAM, November 8th. 1837

Mrs. Otis

DEAR MADAM: — In performing the official duty of sending you the vote of the Trustees of Derby Academy as their estimate of the great excellence of character of your deceased husband and of their sense of the value of the service he rendered to the Institution, over whose interests he watched for nineteen years, will you allow me whose heart is aching under a dispensation like that you suffer, to express his deep and entire sympathy in this bereavement . . . Please express to your daughter my ready sympathy in her great affliction, and believe me, Madam,

Your friend most truly,

CHARLES BROOKS.

The only child of Dr. Cushing Otis and Abigail Cushing was —

ABIGAIL TILDEN OTIS, born 25 Jan. 1811, named for her maternal grandmother, the wife of Judge Nathan Cushing. An only child of devoted parents and of delicate constitution in her early years, Abby Otis was carefully reared and educated in accordance with the opportunities open to young ladies of her generation. She attended the local school near her home, and was evidently a diligent student, for she was given several "rewards of merit" during a period from 1822 to 1824 for "good behavior," "amiable temper" and "approbation of her friends and Instructress." One of these reads:

Miss Abigail T. Otis
has excellent in spelling
and has the honor to be
at the head of the Class.

H. JAMES, Instructress.

In 1826, at the age of 15, she was sent to the private boarding school kept by Miss Lydia Lincoln, sister of the Rev. Calvin Lincoln, in her father's house in West Hingham, which was attended by other young ladies belonging to the prosperous families of Scituate. When she grew older Abigail T. Otis often visited her Cushing relatives in Boston, and when she was on one of these visits her father wrote her at 32 Hancock Street, Boston:

SCITUATE, August 9, 1835

MY DEAR ABBEY: — . . . You appear to enjoy your visit very much. That is as it should be; young folks have seldom anything to vex them. . . . I recollect you are a great lover of news. Mr. and Mrs. Ford have left us and gone to live with Mrs. Aylwyn. I do not pine upon it. Nancy Cushing is sick of a fever. The Misses Thomas are with us and are as industrious as usual. Deborah is making a long visit with her brothers. Lydia Fitton and Elizabeth Boynton are at Mrs. C ——. Her sister and Ellen Stetson are expected soon. You will perhaps ask about the preachers. Mr. Phipps was pretty well liked — was rather stiff and had some tremors, but those will wear off. To-day we have had Mr. Lunt from Quincy — he is quite perfection — a fine voice beautifully toned and modulated — action about right and at intervals very forcible — we think very highly of him. . . . Next Sunday comes our little Mr. Brooks; we are half in love with him now by anticipation — expect to fall desperately so at the first onset. . . . I will subscribe myself,

Your affectionate father

CUSHING OTIS

Mrs. Otis, with her daughter Abigail and her husband's niece, Miss Deborah C. Briggs, daughter of Thomas Barker and Lucy Otis Briggs, lived in her later years at 12 Joy Street, Beacon Hill, Boston, during the winter, returning to the home at South Scituate in summer. Mrs. Otis died in 1852. Abigail Tilden Otis died in South Scituate 15 Oct. 1884, aged 79 years, unmarried. Having no relatives nearer than second cousins, she distributed her estate, which had been inherited in part from Otises, Cushings and Briggses, among these cousins. To the Cushings she willed the real estate bequeathed to her by her uncle, Christopher Cushing. This real estate included the site of the home of her grandfather, Judge Nathan Cushing. The late Nathan Cushing purchased this property from the George Cushing heirs, and it is still in possession of his heirs (1936).

Her residence in South Scituate (Norwell), with furnishings, was bequeathed to the children of her cousins, Theodore and William Gardner Otis, while the Joy Street house and furnishings

were given to her Briggs cousins. James Holmes Barnard, who resides in the Norwell residence, is a grandson of Theodore Otis.

She also made generous bequests to the town of Norwell (then South Scituate) for special purposes; to the First Parish of South Scituate, and to the James Library.

Some years before her death she had given to the Parish Church a new and larger bell, in order that the clock that was placed in the belfry of the church by the children of William Sparrell, the architect of the building, might be more plainly heard by her at her home.

Abigail T. Otis' most interesting will follows:

THE WILL OF THE LATE ABIGAIL T. OTIS, SOUTH SCITUATE

Be it remembered that I, Abigail T. Otis, of So. Scituate, in the County of Plymouth and Commonwealth of Massachusetts, being of sound and disposing mind and memory do make and publish this my last will and testament in manner as follows: hereby revoking all former wills made by me.

First — I give and devise in equal shares to George K. Cushing, Jr., Roswell D. Cushing, and Otis Cushing, sons of George K. Cushing and to their respective heirs and assigns, the real estate in South Scituate which was devised to me by my uncle the late Christopher Cushing.

Second — I give and devise in equal shares to the children and the issue of any deceased child, if any, the issue of one such deceased child if any to take one share, of William and Theodore Otis, both deceased, the house and land where I now reside in said South Scituate, together with the furniture therein; also my pew in the Unitarian Church in said South Scituate, the issue of William Otis to have one half part thereof and the issue of Theodore Otis to have the other half part.

Third — I give and devise my house and land No. 12 on Joy street in city of Boston, in equal shares to the children living at my death and the issue of any deceased child, if any, of Cushing O. Briggs, Charles Briggs, Henry Briggs, George H. Briggs, and to Luey C. Clark, daughter of Sarah and Andrew Clark, if said Luey be living at my death, if not, then to Henry Barstow, son of Elijah Barstow, of South Scituate, the issue of any deceased child, if any, of the said Briggses to take one of said shares.

Fourth — I give the sum of one thousand dollars to the Unitarian Parish of South Scituate, in trust, for the following purposes, viz.: to expend the net income thereof annually for the benefit of the parish library lately formed and called the James Library, I likewise give said parish one thousand dollars to expend as it deems best.

Fifth — I give the sum of two thousand dollars to the town of South Scituate, in trust, for the following purposes, viz.: to expend the net income thereof annually for the benefit of the poor, in the almshouse of said town, and for the other poor of said town, one half for each.

Sixth — I give the sum of five hundred dollars to the present superintendent of the Unitarian Sunday School in South Scituate and to his successor and successors in said office, in trust, for the following purposes, viz.: to expend the income only of said sum for the benefit of the poor children belonging to said school.

Seventh — I give the sum of five hundred dollars to the Unitarian Church of South Scituate, but in trust, for the following purposes, viz.: to expend the net income thereof annually for Communion Services.

Eighth — I give one thousand dollars to my cousin, Mrs. Jane Delano: in event of her decease before my own, I give the same to her issue, said issue to take by right of representation.

Ninth — I give the sum of two thousand dollars to Roswell D. Cushing, but, in event of his decease before my own, I give the same to his issue.

Tenth — I give the sum of one thousand dollars to my clergyman, the Rev. William H. Fish, but in event of his death before my own, I give the same to his issue.

Eleventh — I give the sum of two thousand dollars to Catherine Field, but in the event of her death before my own, I give the said sum to such person or persons as she by her last will shall appoint.

Twelfth — I give the sum of one thousand dollars to the Young Men's Christian Union of Boston.

Thirteenth — I give my carriage and harness to George H., son of George H. and Nancy Briggs.

Fourteenth — My silver porringer marked "A. T. O." I give to Luey C., wife of Frank Baldwin.

Fifteenth — Such articles of silver ware belonging to me and marked A. C., I will, to be divided between George K. Cushing, Jr., Roswell D. Cushing, Otis Cushing, Fanny, daughter of Christopher Cushing, deceased, and Chastine, daughter of Andrew Cushing.

Sixteenth — The remainder of my silver marked "A. T. O." and "O," I will to be divided among the children and issue of deceased children, if any, of William Otis and Theodore Otis, both deceased.

Seventeenth — My watch, formerly the property of Deborah C. Briggs, I give to Deborah C. Nash.

Eighteenth — My father's gold watch with ease, I give to Theodore Cushing Otis.

Nineteenth — My gold watch marked Ilberry, formerly the property of my grand mother Cushing, I give to Franklin Nash of South Scituate.

Twentieth — My red camel's hair shawl, I give to Helen, daughter of Roswell D. Cushing.

Twenty-first — I give my sable furs to Mrs. Jeremiah Bradlee.

Twenty-second — I give my black lace shawl to Helen LeRoy, daughter of William T. Briggs.

Twenty-third — My black Indian shawl I give to Nancy M. Turner.

Twenty-fourth — All the rest and residue of my wearing apparel I give to Lucy C. Clark, if living at my death, if not I give the same to Nancy M., wife of Joseph Turner.

Twenty-fifth — I give the sum of one thousand dollars to the town of South Scituate, but in trust, for the following purposes, viz.: to expend the net income thereof from time to time in keeping the Otis burial lot in the cemetery near the Unitarian Church in South Scituate, fences, monuments, slabs and grounds in good and substantial repair and condition. In the event of the refusal of said town to accept and execute this trust I authorize the executors of this will or whoever may execute the same to make contracts with any persons or parties as they deem best to execute the provisions of this section of my will in keeping said Otis lot in perpetual repair and good condition and to appropriate said one thousand dollars to that end.

Twenty-sixth — I give five hundred dollars to said town of South Scituate, but in trust, for the following purposes, viz.: to expend the net income thereof in keeping in perpetual repair and good condition the Cushing lot and the Cushing tomb, erected by Nathan and Hawkes Cushing, in said cemetery in South Scituate, but in event that said town refuses to accept and execute this trust, I authorize the executors or whosoever may execute this will, to make contract with any person or parties as they deem best for the execution of this trust as to keeping said Cushing lot and monument in perpetual good repair and condition, and to that end to expend said five hundred dollars.

Twenty-seventh — I give all the articles of personal property named in a memorandum marked A., to be attested by the witnesses to this will to Hannah B., wife of Francis James, to be given by her in manner and to the persons named in said memorandum.

Twenty-eighth — All the rest, residue and remainder of my estate, real and personal, I give, bequeath, and devise in equal shares as follows:

1st — One share to the children living at my death and to the issue of any deceased child, if any, of my cousin, William Otis now deceased. The issue of one deceased child, if any, of said William, to take its parent's share.

2d — One share to the children living at my death and the issue of any deceased child, if any, of Theodore Otis, such issue, if any, to take its parent's share.

3d — One share to the children living at my death and the issue of any deceased child, if any, of Cushing O. Briggs, such issue to take its parent's share.

4th — One share to the children living at my death and the issue of any deceased child, if any, of Charles Briggs such issue to take its parent's share.

5th — One share to the children living at my death and the issue of any deceased child, if any, of Henry Briggs, each issue to take its parent's share with the exception of Lucy C. Clark whom I will to have her mother's share in the representation and if she should not be living at my death, I will her share to Henry Barstow.

I nominate William E. Parmenter of Arlington, and Lloyd Briggs of Hanover, executors of this will and I exempt them from giving sureties

on their official bonds, and if either of them dies or declines the trust, or resigns the same before my death or before the complete execution of my will, I appoint George White of Wellesley in the County of Norfolk, executor in his place, as it is my will that there shall be always two executors of my will until the same is executed, and I exempt said White from giving sureties on his official bond as executor. I likewise exempt every trustee appointed under this will from giving sureties on her or its official bond. I authorize the executors of this will to sell any part of my estate, real or personal, except such as I have specifically given and devised to persons, at their discretion at private sale or public auction without applying to any court for a license therefor.

In witness where I hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty-sixth day of April, A. D., 1884.

(Signed) ABIGAIL T. OTIS.

Signed, sealed, published, and declared, by the said Abigail T. Otis as her last will in our presence, who in her presence, and at her request and in the presence of each other set our names as witnesses.

Signed, THOMAS J. COSTELLO
PENELOPE R. WALBACH
GEORGE WHITE.

Be it remembered that I, Abigail T. Otis, of South Scituate, in the County of Plymouth, being of sound and disposing mind and memory, do make and publish this codicil to my will which will is dated April 26, 1884.

I hereby revoke the nomination of William E. Parmenter as one of the executors of my will and in his place I nominate George White of Wellesley in the County of Norfolk as executor, and I request the judge of Probate Court to exempt him from giving sureties on his official bond as executor.

It is further my will that in the event of a vacancy in the office of executor of my will from death or any other cause, I nominate George G. Walbach of Boston, executor and I exempt him from giving sureties on his bond as executor.

In witness whereof I hereto set my hand and seal this eighteenth day of September, A.D., 1884.

(Signed) ABIGAIL T. OTIS.

Signed, sealed, published, and declared, as a codicil to her will by the said Abigail T. Otis in our presence who in her presence and at her request and in the presence of each other hereto set our names as witnesses.

Signed, PENELOPE R. WALBACH
MARY E. FIELD
THOMAS J. COSTELLO.

Memorandum A

My mother's miniature in a gold case I give to Abby, daughter of William Otis; also my gold chain, a gold ring marked "A. Otis" and a pair of gold sleeve buttons marked "A. T. O." Should she not be living at the time of my decease, I will that these and all other articles left by me to her should become the property of Mrs. Harriet Barnard.

My oval pearl pin marked "Deborah C. Briggs" I give to Mary T. Tolman, wife of James Tolman, of Hanover.

A ring marked "R. Dall" containing her grandmother's hair I give to the daughter of Rev. Charles Dall.

My mourning pin, enclosing my mother's and father's hair, I give to Helen, daughter of William Otis.

My pearl and hair pin, marked "C. O. to A. C.," I give to Harriet Barnard, daughter of Theodore Otis.

My topaz and pearl ring and topaz earrings, I give to Mrs. James B. Read.

To the children of Rev. James G. Vose, I give my Aunt Frances' jewelry, consisting of an amber necklace, a pearl locket, pin and red stone pin.

My round jet pin, I give to Hannah B., wife of Francis James, of Boston.

My square cameo pin, I give to Naney M., wife of Joseph Turner.

My pearl leaf pin, I give to Fannie, daughter of Christopher Cushing, deceased.

My jet ring and small jet hair pin marked "A. C." and "N. C.," the ring marked "Nathan Cushing," I give to Mr. Gardner Vose.

My small gold and hair pin marked "Nathan Cushing," and "A. C." I give to Chastine, daughter of Andrew Cushing.

My opera glass I give to Mrs. Emma Lambert of Malden, daughter of William Otis.

My travelling cloak I give to her sister, Grace Otis.

I give my music box to Mrs. Emma Towne.

My picture of Night and Morning I give to Mrs. Millet.

I give my picture of a little girl, to Caroline O., daughter of Henry Barstow.

I give a framed basket of flowers to Lucy C. Clark.

Two small companion pictures framed, I give to Mrs. Mary Jane Palmer, daughter of Mrs. Mary Jane Spear.

My square pearl pin marked "F. Cushing," I give to Mary Jane, daughter of George K. Cushing, Jr.

I give two pictures, the Lake of Killarney and a Swiss picture of the same size to Mary J. Spear.

I give a picture of Faith to Mrs. Prentiss.

To Emeline LeGros, I give my large oil landscape painting.

My two pictures "Crossing the Stream," and "Far from Home," I give to George H. Briggs.

Two chromos I give to Nancy M. Turner.

I give two small pictures (monochromatic) to Mrs. George Turner and Sarah Briggs.

I give to Katie Field a small wooden alarm clock and two pictures "Remember the Grotto" and "The Rabbits."

A picture of a girl and bird and two small cork pictures, I give to Emma F. Spear.

I give to L. Vernon Briggs a book called "The Museum of Antiquity."

A picture of the Catskill Mountains I give to Lloyd Briggs.

My Dean's History of Scituate, I give to Theodore C. Otis.

I give to James Otis, the Otis Genealogy.

A picture of the Whortleberry bush, painted by her mother, I give to Helen Briggs.

Poems of the Three Centuries, I give to Marion S. Cushing and also The Golden Floral.

I give to James Otis, son of Theodore Otis, the bronze model of the National Monument.

To Emma F. Spear, I give an embroidered tidy, her own work.

My engraving of Florence Nightingale, I give to Harriet, daughter of William Otis.

A picture of Mr. Samuel J. May, I give to the Rev. Joseph May, of Philadelphia.

A smaller picture of the Rev. Sam'l J. May, I give to his daughter, Charlotte Wilkinson, of Syracuse.

I give my pictures of the Rev. William Mosely to his wife and sister.

Four mahogany chairs with embroidered seats, two shield back with brocatelle seats and one arm chair, also shield back, I give to George K. Cushing, Roswell D. Cushing, Otis Cushing, Fannie, daughter of Christopher Cushing, deceased, and Chastine, daughter of Andrew Cushing.

I give to Arthur Nash, my magnifying glass and marble watch case.

To Herbert Nash, I give my marble ornament, representing a horse.

My cross of preserved flowers, I give to Deborah C. Nash.

A small picture painted by her mother, upon porcelain, to Blossom, daughter of Rev. Albert Palmer.

I give to Alfred Delano, my large picture of the Hudson river.

My picture of Niagara Falls, I give to William T. Briggs.

A picture of the Summit House, I give to John R. Briggs and a picture of Saco River, to his wife.

Two small pictures, The Smile and Frown, I give to Helen Otis.

A picture representing Burns taking the brier out of Mary's hand, I give to Mrs. James B. Read.

A picture called the "Angel Sister," I give to Velma, daughter of Lloyd Briggs.

A pocket-book marked "Abigail T. Otis," I leave to Abby Otis, daughter of William Otis.

My largest clock with painting of girl on the door, I give to John R. Briggs.

I give to Elizabeth Briggs, daughter of John R. Briggs, my statuettes, Paul and Virginia.

I give my mother's photograph to Mrs. James Tolman.

My mother's daguerreotype, I give to Hannah B., wife of Francis James.

My mosaie shawl pin, I give to Caroline E., wife of George Turner.

My tea-pot, basket, sugar bowl and largest castor (all plated) I give to Nancy M. Turner.

To her sister, Sarah Briggs, I give a eake basket, small castor and bowl (all plated).

To Caroline E. Turner, I give one dozen silver plated knives, a ladle, spoonholder and any other plated ware in my possession.

My grandfather Cushing's snuff box and my Cushing Bible, I give to Frank, son of Israel Nash.

The remainder of my books not otherwise mentioned, I give to the heirs of William and Theodore Otis, both deceased, and the issue of Cushing O. Briggs, Charles Briggs and Henry Briggs, also deceased.

My wreath of preserved flowers enelosing a photograph of her aunt, Lucy Nash, I leave to Luey C., wife of Frank Baldwin.

Three guard rings one twisted, and two stone pins formerly seals, I give to Sarah Briggs and Caroline E. Turner, also any other jewelry in my possession.

Signed, ABIGAIL T. OTIS.

Signed, published and declared to be the memorandum referred to by Miss Abigail T. Otis in her will in our presence, said memorandum is marked "A."

Signed THOMAS J. COSTELLO,
PENELOPE R. WALBACH,
GEORGE WHITE.

13. ABIGAIL⁷ OTIS (8. James⁶, M.D., Isaac⁵, M.D., Stephen⁴, John,³ John², Richard¹), sister of Dr. Cushing Otis, was born 11 Oct. 1773 at the homestead near Stony Cove Brook, and married 15 Dec. 1800 Capt. Seth Foster, born in Scituate 21 June 1770, the eldest of the seven sons of Elisha Foster the shipbuilder, and his wife, Grace Barstow. With his brothers, Major Samuel and Walter, he succeeded his father in building vessels at the Wanton Ship Yard. In 1815 Elisha Foster had taken these three sons in company with him, and after that date the firm of Elisha Foster & Sons built several vessels that became somewhat famous. Among them was the ship *Globe*, 235 tons, a whaler, which was the first vessel to bring two thousand barrels of sperm oil into the United States. In 1824 a horrible mutiny occurred on her off Fanning's Island, which brought the name of this vessel further to public notice. In 1817 six vessels were built at the Foster yard.

In 1825 they built the *Smyrna*, the first American vessel to carry the Stars and Stripes into the Black Sea (in 1830), and in 1826 the ship *Lagoda*, owned by Seth and Samuel Foster and Thomas Otis. In 1841 the *Lagoda* was purchased by Thomas Bourne of New Bedford for a whaler, and in 1890 she was still whaling in the Arctic in her sixty-fourth year. A model of this whaler, one fourth her size, the largest ship model in the world, is in the ship museum of the Dartmouth Historical Society, in New Bedford. (See "History of Shipbuilding on North River.")

Capt. Seth Foster lived on River Street, Norwell, where Richard Dwelley, a soldier in King Philip's War, settled as early as 1665. The house is now the residence of Mrs. William P. Bullard. The older portion of it was built by a Dwelley, thought to have been Richard, a grandson, who married in 1712 Grace Turner. Captain Foster died 1 Apr. 1827. His wife, "Nabby" Otis, survived him for twenty-one years, and died 6 Sept. 1848, aged 76.

Children of Abigail Otis and Capt. Seth Foster:

- i. Caroline Foster, b. 18 Sept. 1801; d. 28 Jan. 1822.
- ii. Alfred Brunson Foster, b. 23 July 1803; d. 1832.
- iii. Charlotte Otis Foster, b. 4 Apr. 1806; d. 29 June 1831.
- iv. Harriet Foster, b. 17 Jan. 1808; d. 3 June 1830.
- v. Jane Foster, b. 1 Oct. 1810; m. 3 Nov. 1835, Benjamin Franklin Delano, Naval Constructor, b. Scituate 17 Sept. 1809, son of William Delano, the shipbuilder, and his wife, Sarah Hartt, whose father, Edmund Hartt, was the *builder of the frigate "Constitution,"* at his shipyard in Boston, on the site of Constitution Wharf. Benjamin Delano was educated by the Rev. Samuel Deane, and, displaying a decided talent for shipbuilding, was placed in the drafting office of the Brooklyn Navy Yard, where his uncle, Samuel Hartt, was Naval Constructor, and there served his time.

In 1833, then 24 years of age, he went to Grand Island on the Niagara River, N. Y., which had been purchased by Stephen White and others. Taking with him his older brother William, brother Edward (later a noted Naval Constructor) and twenty picked men from Scituate, they felled the timber on the island, and built seven vessels. Before 1845 he was stationed at Portsmouth, and in 1847 was appointed Naval Constructor at that yard. Two years later he was transferred to the Brooklyn Navy Yard, to succeed his uncle, Samuel Hartt (who was retired), as Chief Naval Constructor. At Brooklyn, during the Civil War, he constructed twenty-one war vessels, besides converting numbers of merchantmen, purchased by the government, into war vessels, working day and night on plans for their reconstruction. As Chief Naval Constructor, he was retired in 1873. He d. Brooklyn 30 Apr. 1882, at his home in that city. Mr. and Mrs. Delano spent a part of nearly every summer until 1882 in the Foster house on River

Street. *Jane (Foster) Delano* d. Brooklyn in 1903, leaving bequests in her will to the First Parish of South Scituate (Norwell), and to the James Library. They were the parents of two children: (1) Alfred Otis Delano, b. 1839 South Scituate, d. mm. 1891 Norwell; (2) Charlotte Delano, b. 1845 Portsmouth, N. H., d. 1872 Nyack, N. Y., umm.

vi. James Otis Foster, b. 17 May 1813; d. young.

A list of the relatives of Jane Delano living at the time of her death is given in the following document:

IN THE MATTER OF THE PROBATE OF THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT
OF JANE DELANO, DECEASED

Kings County Surrogate's Court.

A Citation having been duly issued in the above entitled matter and the Petitioners having produced proof to my satisfaction, that Seth Foster, Benjamin P. Foster, Helen M. Merritt, Eveline Torrey, Julia A. J. Bowker, David W. Bowker, Margaret T. Frothingham, Helen L. Fogg, Frank Smith, Mary Sheldon, Lucy D. Wilde, Freeman F. Tilden, John G. Tilden, Charlotte M. W. Tilden, E. Laura Tilden, Samuel Tilden, Allie Brierly, Georgia T. Black, Mehitable H. Morey, William T. Foster, Laura Parker, Edward Haskins, Esther Barnard, Richmond Talbot, William Talbot, Frank Talbot, George Albert Foster, Frank E. Foster, George H. Foster, Grace T. Foster Adams, Charles T. Foster, Jennie Foster Stricker, Mary Louisa Foster, Helen J. Otis, Ella A. Twiss, Grace L. Proctor, Emma F. Lambert, James Otis, Hannah James, Mary T. Tolman, *Lloyd Briggs*, Mary J. Spear, Horace Cushing Briggs, Almira Millett, Alfred Briggs, Henry Thomas Briggs, Louisa LeRoy, Mary C. L. Goodridge, Samuel Lapham, Luther Lapham, Lillie C. Smith, Arthur I. Foster, Ethel F. Foster, Mary L. F. Power, Charles A. Foster, Marion Barff, Frank H. Bowker, Theodore Otis Barnard, Grace E. Brewster, William L. Barnard, Elsie Barnard, James H. Barnard, Morton Otis, Sidney Otis, Ella Stetson Thayer, Lizzie Florence Webster, Frank Harrison Briggs, Henry B. Barstow, Nancy Maria Turner, George Herman Briggs, Caroline E. Turner, Sarah Francis Briggs, Franklin Nash, Emma I. Towne, Herbert Nash, Arthur I. Nash, Nathaniel Cushing Nash, Lucy Ells, Catherine E. Spencer, Frank O. Legro, Grace G. Cleaveland, Elizabeth R. McLane, George H. Lincoln, Emma S. Phelps, Jacob Rutgers LeRoy, Herman LeRoy Lewis, Jacob LeRoy, Lucy C. Baldwin, Lillian F. Chadbourne, Margaret Mills, Dorothy Mills, of the heirs and next of kin of said Jane Delano, deceased, and to be cited upon the probate of said last will and testament of said deceased, are non-residents of this State, but reside as follows, to wit:

Seth Foster, Norwell, Massachusetts. Benjamin P. Foster, Norwell, Massachusetts. Helen M. Merritt, Norwell, Massachusetts. Eveline Torrey, Norwell, Massachusetts. Julia A. J. Bowker, Norwell, Massa-

chusetts. David W. Bowker, Kingston, Massachusetts. Margaret T. Frothingham, 180 High Street, Medford, Massachusetts. Helen L. Fogg, Norwell, Massachusetts. Frank Smith, East Bridgewater, Massachusetts. Mary Sheldon, East Bridgewater, Massachusetts. Lucy D. Wilde, Medford, Massachusetts. Freeman F. Tilden, 30 Albion Place, Charlestown, Massachusetts. John G. Tilden, 22 Albion place, Charlestown, Massachusetts. Charlotte M. W. Tilden, 22 Albion place, Charlestown, Massachusetts. E. Laura Tilden, 22 Albion place, Charlestown, Massachusetts. Samuel Tilden, 391 Salem street, Malden, Massachusetts. Allie Brierly, 110 Austin street, Worcester, Massachusetts. Georgia T. Black, Box 663, Knoxville, Iowa. Mehitabel H. Morey, Box 27, Greenville, Rhode Island. William T. Foster, 135 Pleasant street, Arlington, Massachusetts. Laura Parker, 235 Lafayette street, Salem, Massachusetts. Edward Haskins, Waverly, Massachusetts. Esther Barnard, 14 St. Germain street, Boston, Massachusetts. Richmond Talbot, Plymouth, Massachusetts. William Talbot, Holliston, Massachusetts. Frank Talbot, Holliston, Massachusetts. George Albert Foster, 71 Pearl street, Charlestown, Massachusetts. Frank E. Foster, Avon, California. George H. Foster, 1409 Walnut street, Berkeley, California. Grace T. Foster Adams, Hornitos, Mariposa County, California. Charles T. Foster, 105 Webster street, San Francisco, California. Jennie Foster Stricker, 1409 Walnut street, Berkeley, California. Mary Louisa Foster, Lincolnville, Maine. Helen J. Otis, Lyme, New Hampshire. Ella A. Twiss, 61 Gray street, Arlington, Massachusetts. Grace L. Proctor, Wakefield, Massachusetts. Emma F. Lambert, Wakefield, Massachusetts. James Otis, C/o Baring Bros., Paris, France. Hannah James, 495 E. Broadway, So. Boston, Massachusetts. Mary T. Tolman, Hanover, Massachusetts. *Lloyd Briggs, 82 Devonshire street, Boston, Massachusetts.* Mary J. Spear, Chestnut street, Lynn, Massachusetts. Horace Cushing Briggs, Chestnut street, Lynn, Massachusetts. Almira Millett, Danvers, Massachusetts. Alfred Briggs, Briggs street, Salem, Massachusetts. Henry Thomas Briggs, 8 Prince place, Danvers, Massachusetts. Louisa LeRoy, 17 Bedford street, Stamford, Connecticut. Mary C. L. Goodridge, 17 Bedford street, Stamford, Connecticut. Samuel Lapham, Charleston, South Carolina. Luther Lapham, Charleston, South Carolina. Lillie C. Smith, 163 Huntington avenue, Boston, Massachusetts. Arthur I. Foster, Lyons, Iowa. Ethel F. Foster, Lyons, Iowa. Mary L. F. Power, Norwell, Massachusetts. Charles A. Foster, Scituate, Massachusetts. Marion Barff, Shanghai, China. Frank H. Bowker, Malden, Massachusetts. Theodore Otis Barnard, 10 Post Office Square, Boston, Massachusetts. Grace E. Brewster, 942 High street, Dedham, Massachusetts. William L. Barnard, 10 Tremont street, Boston, Massachusetts. Elsie Barnard, C/o J. M. Barnard, Jr., Savannah, Georgia. James H. Barnard, Norwell, Massachusetts. Morton Otis, 95 Milk street, Boston, Massachusetts. Sidney Otis, The Pacific Northwest Demurrage Association, Seattle, Washington. Ella Stetson Thayer, Brookline, Massachusetts. Lizzie Florence

Webster, 334 Beacon street, Boston, Massachusetts. Frank Harrison Briggs, 23 Blagden street, Boston, Massachusetts. Henry B. Barstow, Hanover, Massachusetts. Nancy Maria Turner, Box 210, South Braintree, Massachusetts. George Herman Briggs, Route 3, Pittsfield, New Hampshire. Caroline E. Turner, Norwell, Massachusetts. Sarah Frances Briggs, Norwell, Massachusetts. Franklin Nash, Reading, Massachusetts. Emma I. Towne, Wellesley Hills, Massachusetts. Herbert Nash, 32 Broad street, Boston, Massachusetts. Arthur I. Nash, 52 Fulton street, Boston, Massachusetts. Nathaniel Cushing Nash, 54 Mason Building, Boston, Massachusetts. Lucy Ells, Hanover, Massachusetts. Catherine E. Spencer, 1061 Pine street, San Francisco, California. Frank O. Legro, corner Porter and Berry streets, Danvers, Massachusetts. Grace G. Cleaveland, Danvers, Massachusetts. Elizabeth R. McLane, Danvers, Massachusetts. George H. Lincoln, Rochester, New Hampshire. Emma S. Phelps, Rochester, New Hampshire. Jacob Rutgers LeRoy, 14 Clement Marot Rue, Paris, France. Herman LeRoy Lewis, London, England. Jacob LeRoy, Wissahiekon Heights, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. Lucy C. Baldwin, Wellesley Hills, Massachusetts. Lillian F. Chadbourne, Intervale avenue, Medford, Massachusetts. Margaret Mills, Wollaston, Massachusetts. Dorothy Mills, Wollaston, Massachusetts, and that personal service of the citation herein cannot with due diligence be made upon them within this State.

And it further appearing to the satisfaction of the Surrogate that the names and places of residence of the heirs and next of kin of said Jane Delano, deceased, other than those named in said citation and to whom said citation is directed cannot after diligent inquiry be ascertained.

As above set forth, one additional set to Alfred Hutchinson, guardian of Almira Millett, 101 Centre street, Danvers, Massachusetts, and one additional set to Frank O. Legro, corner Porter and Berry streets, Danvers, Massachusetts.

And the said Surrogate being satisfied by said petition that the said petitioners cannot with reasonable diligence ascertain a place or places where Charles R. S. de Coven and the heirs and next of kin of said decedent other than those named in the citation herein would probably receive matter transmitted through the Post Office, hereby dispenses with the deposit of any papers therein.

Dated December 24th, 1903.

JAMES C. CHURCH,
Surrogate.

14. THOMAS⁷ OTIS (*James⁶, M.D., Isaac⁵, M.D., Stephen⁴, John³, John², Richard¹*) born 17 July 1776 in the family homestead near Stony Cove Brook, Scituate, was the youngest child of Dr. James and Lucy (Cushing) Otis. Not long after reaching his majority he went to Boston and entered the dry goods business. Before 1800 he was an importer of dry goods under the firm name of Otis & Holborn. This firm was dissolved, and about



HELEN, CHARLOTTE AND CAROLINE OTIS

Painted by Thomas Sully

From collection of Dr. and Mrs. George N. Miller

1803 Thomas Otis went to New York, where he established the house of Otis & Swan. In 1821 it became Otis & Sloan. Thomas Otis represented this firm in England for some years, as will be seen by the family letters which follow. He acquired a fortune within a short time, and, soon after the death of his wife in 1820, he retired from business. He died 29 Oct. 1841, aged 65 years, leaving a substantial property to his two daughters.

In 1830, when the present meeting house of the First Parish of Norwell (Second Church, Scituate) was near completion, Thomas Otis presented the parish with a new organ. This gift was characterized by the pastor, the Rev. Mr. Deane, as "an act of the greatest individual munificence since the days of Mr. Hatherly."

Thomas Otis and Charlotte Downs were married in Boston 12 May 1799 by the Rev. John Lothrop. She was born 26 Nov. 1779 and died in Paris, France, 27 July 1820, and was buried in Père la Chaise Cemetery, near Paris.

Portraits of Thomas Otis and his wife were painted by Gilbert Stuart, and she was also painted by Sir Thomas Lawrence. A descendant has a portrait of their three daughters, Charlotte, Helen and Caroline, which authorities attribute to Sully.

From notes signed by Thomas⁷ Otis in 1802 and 1803, in favor of his father Dr. James⁶ and his brother Dr. Cushing⁷ Otis, it appears that they furnished money to start him in business in New York. Two notes given by him read as follows:

SCITUATE July 20: 1802

For Value Rec:d I promise to pay my Father Dr. James Otis Six Hundred & Forty three Dollars on demand with Interest, till paid.

THOMAS OTIS.

SCITUATE October 13th 1803

For value received I promise to pay Cushing Otis, or order twelve hundred dollars twenty-three dollars & eighty one cents on demand with interest.

\$1223.81

THOMAS OTIS.

Attest

JAMES OTIS

Children of Thomas Otis⁷ and Charlotte Downs:

- i. CHARLOTTE⁸ DOWNS OTIS, b. 15 Oct. 1800 in Boston; m. 20 May 1822 Jacob LeRoy, b. 27 May 1794, son of Herman and Hannah (Cornell) LeRoy of New York. She d. 26 Nov. 1851, and her husband m. (2) 1853 Charlotte Otis Downs, a first cousin of Charlotte Downs Otis,

his first wife. There were no children by his second marriage. Jacob LeRoy contributed a very large sum towards the building of Dr. Tyng's church fronting Stuyvesant Park, New York City. He d. 4 Feb. 1868 at Fairfield, Conn.

Children of Jacob LeRoy and Charlotte Downs Otis:

1. Thomas Otis LeRoy, b. 9 July 1823; m. 1855 Caroline Clark, dau. of Richard Smith Clark, hardware merchant, of firm of Wolf, Clark & Gillispie on Pearl Street, New York. The firm of Thomas Otis LeRoy & Co. was one of the largest dealers in shot, sheet lead and pipe in the United States. This firm finally failed, and Mr. LeRoy gave up all he possessed to his creditors. His financial troubles and the loss of all of their property resulted in the death of his wife, who committed suicide by drowning in one of the lakes in Central Park. He d. in 1893.
 2. Augustus Newbold LeRoy, b. 1824; m. Sarah Jane Gray. He d. 1855. A son, the Rev. Jacob LeRoy, was living in 1903 at Wissahickon Heights, Philadelphia, Pa.
 3. Charlotte Downs LeRoy, m. Francis Brown, a grandson of Lord Gordon of Earlston, Scotland. A dau., Isabel LeRoy Brown, was mentioned in connection with probate of will of Jane Delano in 1903.
 4. Caroline Louisa LeRoy, b. 1827; d. 1831.
 5. Helen Otis LeRoy, b. 1828; m. John H. Glover 1852. She d. 1916. A dau., Martha LeRoy Glover, m. George Norton Miller.
 6. Catherine Augusta Newbold LeRoy, b. 1830; m. Gideon Pott. She d. 1909.
 7. Edward Augustus LeRoy, b. 1833; m. Clementina Barnwell Pell. He d. 1913.
 8. Julia Edgar LeRoy, b. 1835; d. 1836.
 9. Louisa LeRoy, b. 1837; d. 1920.
 10. Mary Caroline LeRoy, b. 1841; m. Ezra Read Goodridge. She d. 1905.
- ii. THOMAS, b. 1801, bpt. 19 Dec. 1802 (First Church, Boston); d. 1802.
- iii. HELEN^s OTIS was born 14 Nov. 1802 in Boston; married about 1823, Jacob Rutgers LeRoy of New York, son of Jacob LeRoy (brother of Herman) and cousin of Jacob LeRoy who married her sister, Charlotte Downs Otis. His mother was Catherine Rutgers.

Jacob LeRoy and his son Jacob Rutgers LeRoy of the firm of Jacob LeRoy & Son, one of the largest shipping houses of New York in their day, had a store on the corner of Rector and Washington streets, New York City. A partner was Roswell L. Colt. Jacob Rutgers LeRoy was known as "Black Jake," to distinguish him from his cousin Jacob, who was of light complexion.

The residence of Jacob Rutgers and Helen (Otis) LeRoy, in 1823, was at 144 Greenwich Street.

They had several sons and one daughter. One son, the eldest, was Robert LeRoy. In a letter written by Helen LeRoy to her cousin Deborah C. Briggs at Seitate, dated New York, July 9, about 1826, she speaks of Robert as then being 18 months old, and a fine, healthy child.

Among the descendants of Helen (Otis) LeRoy, mentioned in citation of Surrogate Court, Re: Jane Delano will, 1903 as then living (apparents), were —

Jacob Rutgers LeRoy, Paris, France.

Herman LeRoy Lewis, London, England.

Henry L. R. de Coven,

Henry L. B. W. de Coven,

Charles R. S. de Coven,

Elca LeRoy,

Kate N. A. Lawrence,

} no addresses given, if known.

iv. EDWARD DOWNS, b. 1803; d. 1805.

v. CAROLINE LOUISA, b. 19 May 1807 in London, England; bpt. 14 Oct. 1810 in First Church, Boston (there recorded as Caroline Eliza); d. 2 Apr. 1813, ac. 6 years. (Central Burying Ground.)

LEROY ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY

The brothers, HERMAN² and JACOB² LEROY, whose sons Jacob³ and Jacob Rutgers³ LeRoy married daughters of Thomas Otis, were sons of Jacob¹ LeRoy and Cornelia Rutgers. They lived on Broadway, near the Tabernacle. Their son, Jacob² LeRoy, Jr., married Catherine Rutgers, and was the founder of the firm of Jacob LeRoy & Son of New York City. They lived on Broadway between Anthony and Leonard streets.

Herman LeRoy, born 16 Jan. 1758, was Dutch Consul at New York. The firm of LeRoy, Bayard & Co., of which he was founder and senior partner, was one of the most remarkable mercantile houses in America. It started in 1790 at 3 Hanover Square, where Herman LeRoy was then living. During the War of 1812 they owned and sent out fast-sailing vessels to Europe and the East Indies, and if they escaped capture the profits were immense. They gave to the war fund in 1812 the sum of \$20,000. This firm traded in all parts of the world, and all dealers bought cargoes of such great shipping houses as LeRoy, Bayard & Co. and Jacob LeRoy & Son. LeRoy, Bayard & Co.'s store was later on Washington Street, two doors from Rector's. Herman LeRoy lived at 66 Broadway. Later he built the house at 7 Broadway in which he lived until his death. His partner, William Bayard, lived at 43 Wall Street.

A book published in 1863 says:

Almost in the rear of 7 Broadway, once the residence of Herman and his daughter, Mrs. Newbold, is a duplicate marble building at 7 Greenwich Street which Herman LeRoy built for his daughter, Mrs. William Edgar. It was, in 1863, not much better off than the once famous and

beautiful residence of Mrs. Newbold, being then mostly occupied by offices, where sleepy looking clerks occupy the room where the great Webster, upon a gorgeously canopied bed, passed his bridal night.

Herman² LeRoy married 19 Oct. 1786 Hannah Cornell, born 176—, daughter of Hon. Samuel Cornell. She died 1818.

Children of Herman² and Hannah (Cornell) LeRoy were —

- i. Cornelia, b. 1787; m. 1809 William Edgar, a lawyer, son of William Edgar, who was a distinguished merchant of his day. A dau. of William, Sr., was the first wife of Gardner D. Howland. Cornelia d. 1869.
- ii. Samuel Cornell, b. 1788; d. 1799.
- iii. Catherine Augusta, b. 1790; d. 1835; m. 1812 Thomas Newbold of Philadelphia, son of a very rich Calcutta merchant. He d. 1818, and Mrs. Newbold lived with her children in her father's house at 7 Broadway.
- iv. Herman, b. 1791; m. 1813 Juliet Edgar; d. 1869.
- v. Susan, b. 1793; m. 1827 David S. Jones; d. 1832.
- vi. Jacob³, b. 1794; m. (1) Charlotte Downs Otis; m. (2) Charlotte Otis Downs; d. 1868.
- vii. William Henry, b. 1795; m. 1819 Elizabeth Emmet, dau. of Thomas Addis Emmet; d. 1888.
- viii. Caroline, b. 1797; m. 1829 Hon. Daniel Webster (second wife); d. 1882.
- ix. Daniel, b. 1799; m. 1826 Susan Elizabeth Fish, dau. of Col. Nicholas and Elizabeth (Stuyvesant) Fish; d. 1885.
- x. Mary, b. 1800; d. young.
- xi. Robert, b. —; d. 1802.
- xii. Edward August, b. 1804; m. Sarah Louisa Morris, dau. of James Morris of Morrisania, N. Y.; d. 1853.

The Edgars, LeRois, Newbolds, McEvers, Bayards and Howlands all intermarried.

The following letters are selected from a great many ancestral letters I found in my father's (Lloyd Briggs) trunks after his decease:

CHARLOTTE (DOWNES) OTIS, WIFE OF THOMAS OTIS, TO MRS. LUCY OTIS BRIGGS, WIFE OF THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS. CARE OF DR. CUSHING OTIS, SCITUATE

LONDON, August 30, 1809.

MY DEAR SISTER: — . . . I hope you will see your brother in the spring and have an opportunity of lecturing him, for he really deserves it, with respect to his long stay in this country. However, I imagine it will have

no effect while business can be transacted here to the advantage he has pursued it. Necessity will oblige him to leave in the Spring, as his term of partnership with Mr. Dwight will have expired. Charlotte and Helen are at school in the country and the Babe, who has the use of her tongue, almost amazes me with her prattle. We leave London in a few days for Margate, a watering place, where we passed a part of last summer. . . . I have had great delight in a little excursion of late. We first took stage for Oxford, accompanied by Mr. King, where we arrived (through a delightful country) the same day, and passed the two succeeding — which was far less than necessary, to view the beauties and antiquities of the place. We scarcely suffered ourselves to sit but while at meals, till necessity from our fatigue obliged us to rest. Seven miles from Oxford is a castle belonging to the Duke of Marlborough, celebrated for its beauty, the extent of its grounds, the elegant paintings it contains and more especially by the circumstance of its gift to the late owner by Queen Anne in recompense of his many illustrious victories gained over the French. The interior far exceeds anything of the kind I have seen, though we have visited several Palaces. The Park is eleven miles in circumference, and affords many delightful scenes. The grounds enclose the spot on which the old Palace of Woodstock formerly stood, rendered interesting from the circumstance of a Labyrinth built by Henry II. of England for the habitation of his concubine Fair Rosamond. You no doubt have heard of Fair Rosamond's Bower — every trace but the earth on which it stood is gone, and as a memorial two sycamores are planted on its site. A few years since there were remains of the Palace. Best love and good wishes to Mrs. Thomas and family, Mrs. Cushing Otis, Nabby and Betsy. Your brother sends his respects and love. Say to the little girl her Aunt Otis will bring her a book from London as a reward for her diligence. Accept of the good wishes of your friend and Sister,

CHARLOTTE OTIS.

CHARLOTTE (DOWNS) OTIS (MRS. THOMAS OTIS) TO HER SISTER-IN-LAW,
MRS. THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS

LIVERPOOL, July 15, 1815.

MY DEAR FRIEND: — I am quite ashamed of my neglect in not writing you a line before to inform you of our safe arrival — tomorrow will be three weeks since we set foot in Liverpool — a happy day it was for us all. Our passage, though a safe one, was quite rough and boisterous. We had many severe gales of wind, which obliged us to lay our ship too — but our passengers were so agreeable they compensated for many inconveniences and deprivations — There was but one female beside ourselves, an agreeable woman of our acquaintance. We had six British Officers, One of the Navy next in command to Sir James Yeo; the others of the Army, one a Colonel who is hon^d with a title and who was constantly addressed as Sir William — They were all remarkably affable pleasant men — and not a word of difference was heard on the passage.

We are all well, pleasantly situated in Liverpool, with as many acquaintances as is necessary to make it pleasant — Mr. Otis is now with us. He passes part of his time in Manchester where the chief of his business lies — the remainder with us — We shall remain here but a few weeks then visit London from whence you shall hear from us. I hope some one of the family will write us of the welfare of all. Your brother is so much engaged with the business you must not expect a line from him. He desires his love to all the family. Are you not astonished at the revolutions which have taken place in France since we saw you? Louis is now on the throne of his Ancestors, and Bonaparte seeking refuge in flight. It is not ascertained where he is at present, but thought by many to have taken his departure for America where it is presumed he will meet with an asylum. Should peace be firmly established in France, we shall probably visit it. I hope to not be disappointed, having a great desire to see that country. . . . Will you give my best love to Mrs. Francis Cushing. . . . I will write again soon.

Yours, etc.,

CHARLOTTE OTIS.

MRS. THOMAS OTIS TO MISS ELIZABETH OTIS

LIVERPOOL, May 15, 1816.

MY DEAR BETSY: — . . . I have been in Liverpool nearly three months. Your brother's business would not permit him, as we both hoped, to pass the winter in Bath — therefore he wrote me to join him here — He has gone to Manchester today on business — he has met with heavy losses from making too large shipments — but bears his reverses bravely — and I am in hopes from frequent disappointment will be content to do business on a smaller scale and thereby avoid much anxiety. My dear girls are at Bath at an excellent School, where I flatter myself they are improving. I long ardently to see them, having never been so long separated before. We hope to be with them in June when their holidays commence and continue for six weeks. . . . I am happy to hear that Mrs. Francis Cushing has so pleasing prospects. . . . I did not think when I left home your Mother would continue thus long. . . . My girls would send much love if they knew of my writing — I am anxious and expect to hear from them this week, as their last letter informed me they had both been afflicted with a sore throat which required the application of leeches to Charlotte's. Will you for the future direct your letters to Lodges & Tooth, Liverpool, where our letters are all left. . . . Bath is one of the most delightful cities in the Kingdom, the surrounding country beyond comparison beautiful. The town is situated in a basin or hollow; the houses built of fine stone from their own quarries, generally in circles or crescents that rise in an amphitheatre one above the other. You can not imagine anything more lovely than the view from the surrounding hills which we visit often for air and exercise. My situation here is remarkably pleasant, in a genteel family with a respectable old



CHARLOTTE DOWNES, WIFE OF THOMAS OTIS
BORN 26 NOV. 1779, AT WALPOLE, MASS.; DIED 27 JULY
1820, IN PARIS, FRANCE, WHERE SHE IS BURIED IN
PÈRE LA CHAISE CEMETERY



CHARLOTTE DOWNES OTIS
BORN 15 OCT. 1800; DIED 26 NOV. 1851; MARRIED 20 MAY
1822, JACOB LEROY
(See page 505)

lady who has a limited number and very select. We meet at dinner and not before, as each make their own breakfast when they please.

The Bath season is not yet commenced. It is generally Christmas when at the gayest — then the streets are so thronged with fashionable people that it is like a fair or holiday. The people of pleasure dissipate their time and money and many come to procure husbands and wives. The invalids come for the benefit of the waters. I will give you some little idea of the manner of the fashionable visitors spending their time. They lie in bed till ten or eleven, breakfast at twelve, then to the library to read the papers &c, after that to the Pump Room, invalids go for the water, and those in health to see and be seen. There is a band of excellent music that plays during the morning. Lounging through the principal streets or making calls occupies the remainder of the morning, which here continues till five, the dinner hour, after which they repair to the Theatre or Assembly Rooms, where balls or concerts are held four or five nights in the week, with cards, &c. You will naturally suppose one can have little time for reflection, my dear sister, which indeed is not what people come to Bath for. . . .

Yours,

CHARLOTTE OTIS.

MRS. THOMAS OTIS TO MISS ELIZABETH OTIS, CARE OF DR. CUSHING
OTIS, HER BROTHER, SCITUATE, MASS.

WEYMOUTH (ENGLAND), Sep^r 9, 1816.

MY DEAR BETSY: — . . . We left Liverpool soon after I wrote you for Bath. Found the children's complaint an enlargement of the glands of the throat, for which they were recommended sea bathing as the only remedy. — This being the nearest place convenient for the purpose we came directly and have remained since. The physician recommends their not returning to Bath, as the complaint originated there — We have placed them at school here for the present and should it be approved of they will probably remain while we are in the country. I regret the necessity of their being here on many accounts. We are a great distance from Liverpool, three days' journey, and it cuts off the communication from my friends; besides it is a cold, barren place, as is usual on the sea-coast, and nothing but the vast ocean to delight the eye. My children are much better than when they came here and no doubt that bathing will entirely restore them. Your brother is with us and in excellent health. I can not say as much for his spirits, as he has not business enough to keep them buoyant. I will leave a space for him to fill in my letter to your brother. Believe me, dear Betsy,

Ever affectionately yours,

C. OTIS.

Below, on the same sheet, is added a letter from her husband to his brother, Dr. Cushing Otis, written some two weeks later:

LIVERPOOL, September 25, 1816.

DEAR BROTHER: — I arrived here a few days since from Bath and Weymouth where I have spent the summer very pleasantly. Weymouth is a delightful retreat for those who are fond of Fishing and the Gun. It is the first Bay in the Kingdom, and we have only to go one mile when we hook the silver mackerel in fine style. This has been the favorite retreat of the Royal Family, the Princess Charlotte has spent her summers here except the last, the reason is she probably wishes to be in London in consequence of the threat of the P. Regent to apply to Parliament for a Divoree from the Princess of Wales who report says has not only conducted with great levity of manners but criminally in her tour on the Continent; I have learnt not to believe every report I hear of the R. Family (of the females), until I see substantial proof. Princess Charlotte has and does lean to the mother very naturally and unless the P. of Wales has conducted with great impropriety, the voice of the People (for John is a stubborn heavy-molded fellow and occasionally asserts his Will when he must be attended to — as in the late Income Tax) will defeat the P. R. and his wishes — his object is to marry for the hope of a male heir — to exclude Charlotte from the Crown, as she has a Will of her own and is a girl of Spirit (for which the people are proud of her and she is a great favorite) and leans to those who support her mother against the Regent and the Prime Minister, though she is prudent and takes no part — She trusts her cause with the Nation — the Ministers are jealous of her — and want to get clear of her. There is a general stagnation in trade from the extension of business. We all have been peculiarly fortunate as we were the largest shippers to N. Y. We shall make a handsome profit since the Peace. I am waiting for the glut of goods to wear off before I make further shipments, not but that I could get a profit now on shipments, as goods have fallen 30 p. cent here. I shall lose by Dwight; that can't be helped. I can't say at present when I shall return. It depends on business; it may be one or two years. Charlotte is anxious to complete her education here, where are the first Masters — My thoughts are often with my friends at Scituate, where I have spent so many happy days. God grant that I may spend many more equally Happy with my dear Brother and Sister. Believe me,

Ever affectionately your brother,

T. OTIS.

CHARLOTTE DOWNS OTIS (DAUGHTER OF THOMAS OTIS) TO MISS D. C. BRIGGS, CARE OF DR. CUSHING OTIS, SCITUATE, MASS. (VIA BOSTON SHIP)

BRIGHTON, February 18th, 1820.

MY DEAR COUSIN: — . . . You see by my date we are still in Brighton, but I hope ere long to leave for France; if the wind prove fair we shall embark from hence in the evening and reach Dieppe the following morning. If one could sleep uninterruptedly during the night it would be

pleasant, but if deprived of that blessing I should prefer having daylight for our voyage. Several melancholy events have lately taken place in this kingdom; the Duke of Kent was seized very suddenly with inflammation on the lungs which soon consigned him to the grave. He has left a widow to mourn his loss and also an infant who stands considerable chance of one day ascending the British throne. The King likewise has been taken from his people, who sincerely mourn him, although he was, on account of his loss of reason, dead to the nation. The Prince Regent was immediately proclaimed King, under the title of George the Fourth. His poor wife is in Italy. She obtained the appellation of Queen consort, but I know not whether she will be crowned with His Majesty; he is so inveterate against her, it is thought he will endeavor to obtain a divorce. At the Coronation of George the Fourth the procession was extremely magnificent; the crowd that attended was so great that persons, who wished to be spectators, were obliged to secure a place to view it the night before, and remain in it until the morning; after the ceremony was ended a dinner was given in Westminster Hall, London — ladies who occupied the galleries joined their handkerchiefs and even their garters together in order to help themselves to a chicken or some refreshment from the table below. The Palace in this town is a beautiful building, the exterior as well as the interior of which is built and furnished in the Chinese style. You have no idea of the magnificence of this residence from the short description I shall endeavor to give you. There are five apartments besides a long hall of entrance all splendidly fitted up, but two rooms in particular surpass the others in beauty, the music and banquetting rooms; the former has its wainscots japanned in red from top to bottom, in which figures as large as life are drawn in gold, the doors are made in the same manner; the organ is a beautiful piece of furniture; the sofa and chairs are covered with rich yellow damask; the ceiling is painted to represent the leaves of the palm tree, which from their execution you would suppose were suspended from the top; from the center an elegant chandelier is hung which glitters as if it were composed of diamonds; these apartments were illuminated the evening we visited them. The banquetting or dining room is the finest of the suite; here the wainscot is covered with paintings executed on the walls in most rich and beautiful colors, the backgrounds have an appearance of being inlaid with mother-of-pearl carved in various devices. The ceiling represents the scales of fish raised one above another; in the middle is an immense dragon of brass which supports a large chandelier of seven lamps of painted glass in form of tulips, each tulip hung from the mouth of a dragon of smaller size, also of brass. In the four corners of the room are peacocks (which have all the colours of a natural bird) supporting glass lustres; which appear to be hung by strings of large-sized pearls ornamented with precious stones. The grate is of brass guarded by dragons of the same metal; the fireirons are supported by two serpents; there are very beautiful ornaments around this room such as pagodas and figures as large as life of beautiful china. The draperies are tastefully arranged, they are crimson, striped alternately with velvet and satin.

Not long ago we attended a concert, which was crowded with all the nobility and fashion of the place. The music was delightful, especially the King's band; one of the singers, Signor Ambrogetti, gave us a song, in which all the instructions necessary to the performers in an orchestra are given with great drollery and exactness, but unfortunately in the Italian tongue. We promise ourselves much pleasure from a visit to Scituate. I wish it may be in the Whortleberry season, as I have not lost my relish for such simple amusement as gathering them, and I think even a gambol in the hay would not be unwelcome. You were probably informed of my long illness last summer. I have again been threatened in the same manner from a violent pain in my head and bad circulation; however I have already recovered from bleeding and the application of ten leeches. Mama and Papa are quite well and desire to be kindly remembered to all our friends. Helen unites with me in best love to our Aunts, Uncles and Cousins.

Believe me,

Yours affectionately,

CHARLOTTE DOWNS OTIS.

FROM CHARLOTTE OTIS TO MISS D. C. BRIGGS, CARE OF CUSHING OTIS,
SCITUATE

NEW YORK, December 5, 1821.

MY DEAR COUSIN: — I thank you kindly for your epistle, which I received by Helen Paine. . . . Abby Phillips called to see us yesterday and told us she had received a letter from you containing a mournful account of our cousin Caroline Foster's illness. . . . Poor Aunt Foster will deeply feel the loss of so fine a girl as Caroline is, if she should be called to bear it, which I hope and pray she may not. . . . When you can find leisure to write to us, do; and if you know of no opportunity by which to send a letter, direct it to "The Care of Otis & Sloan", and we shall receive it without any difficulty. We had a delightful jaunt this summer to Niagara, which Helen I think described in the letter she wrote to Aunt Otis. We were scarcely a day stationary at any place except at Niagara and at the Springs. . . . We received great amusement while there from the society we met; we had an opportunity of forming our opinion relative to the characteristics of the various states of the Union, for inhabitants of each resort to the Springs, some for health, others for amusement. I must own that I give the preference to Southern manners as being more elegant than those of the Northern States. We pass our time here very pleasantly; we are obliged to visit rather oftener than suits our sober habits in such a large city as New York, parties are continually going forward, several in the same night, and we as strangers have received great attention from many families in the City. Mr. Dawes has not yet made his pretty bow to us; Abby said he had lost his heart *again* — I fear it is a very susceptible one. Helen Paine is passing the winter with Mrs. Gerard; we have seen her often; she was at a party

with Helen last night. My head did not give me leave to go, it ached so violently. Miss Paine is very much admired here as a fine intelligent girl, and extremely pleasing in her manners. We anticipate considerable pleasure from a visit to the theatre tomorrow evening; Cooper, a great favorite as an actor, has his benefit before his departure for New Orleans, which will attract a crowded audience. He performs in "Virginius," a tragedy in which a good actor may shine; it is his best character. Papa and Helen desire their love to you and all our relations, in which dear Cousin, your humble servant joins.

Your affectionate Cousin,

CHARLOTTE OTIS.

FROM G. W. OTIS, JR. (GRANDSON OF DR. EPHRAIM OTIS) TO DR.
CUSHING OTIS, SCITUATE, MASS.

AT LONDON, April 17th, 1822.

MY DEAR SIR: — . . . Still flattering myself that you are not altogether indifferent to the concerns of one in whose previous welfare there has at least been some reason for believing that you have manifested a slight degree of interest; for this kind anxiety then, my dear Sir, on your part, allow me to tender my most sincere and unfeigned thanks, and permit me to occupy a few moments of your attention in informing you of my present professional situation, as well as my future intentions while on this side of the Atlantic. . . . It is now about three months since I have been in London. . . . Immediately upon my arrival I entered upon the practice of one of the large hospitals and commenced attendance on the lectures of the most important branches of the profession. The opportunities for deriving surgical knowledge and experience here are very great; but on the contrary the practice of medicine is at its lowest ebb, it finds but very few cultivators and I manage to employ all my time at the hospitals. I have not as yet visited any of the many exhibitions of which this great city boasts; I shall, when the courses of lectures are finished, devote some time to this object. I have been treated in the kindest manner, especially by the surgeons of the hospital in which I am particularly engaged; they are men of great eminence. By their politeness I am admitted to the meetings of the learned societies, both philosophical and medical, as well as free access to the libraries. From the people to whom I brought letters I have received much attention and by their politeness have frequently had opportunity of enjoying the company of English ladies. . . . I don't know how it is, whether from nature or education, or from the circumstance of their living in so great a place and consequently becoming more familiar with people generally; but there is something in them which essentially distinguishes them from those of my own country; there is a kind of gracefulness and negligent affability in everything they say and act, that one almost immediately loses that awkward restraint which is so common in our country when in unacquainted female society. For myself, I could talk and think in

sympathy with them in the first hour of acquaintance, with all the familiarity of a long subsisting friendship. . . . As to us Americans, we are regarded in a very favorable light by the well-informed part of the people, but with the generality we are considered natives of the country, and it is the greatest wonder to them that we can walk and talk like Englishmen. . . . One thing I should much like to dispense with, that is the pomp and parade of royalty and nobility which is repugnant to republican feelings. . . . I shall probably remain in London about two months longer and then shall visit the celebrated towns as far north as Edinburgh, arriving in Paris in the fall. I must get there sometime before the beginning of the lectures, in order to render myself familiar with the language, altho' I have devoted much time to it since I have been here. It is possible that I may be obliged to return home the following summer; if that is not the case I shall go to Leyden or return to Edinburgh. I don't feel at home (to me a homely expression). My thoughts, even in my waking moments frequently recur to my native country, the many happy days I have spent in Scituate are often recalled in my imagination, and with truth I affirm that the happiest moments of my life have passed there, although it has been the scene of my youth and consequently of my follies. . . . Accept, Sir, my sincere acknowledgements for the interest you have ever evinced in my well being, and offer to Mrs. Otis in my behalf the best remembrances of esteem which her kind treatment has ever caused me to cherish.

I remain, my dear Sir,

Yours, etc.,

G. W. OTIS, JR.

HELEN (OTIS) LEROY TO HER COUSIN, MISS D. C. BRIGGS, CARE OF DR. CUSHING OTIS, SCITUATE, MASS.

NEW YORK, April 28, 1823.

MY DEAR COUSIN: — I thank you and all my Scituate friends for your many kind wishes for my happiness. No doubt they will be fully realized. I have entered on the married state with as great a chance of happiness as anyone who ever trod the same path before me. . . . We are in a great bustle getting out of town. They say that the spring is backward, but we have had a great deal of warm weather and the trees begin to show their blossoms; I very much fear that we shall have the Yellow Fever in the City this year. The streets begin to be offensive already. I hope that the Board of Health will be active in their exertions. Charlotte intends remaining in the City until after her confinement, which will take place in July; she is very well, is now in mourning which she put on last week for one of her husband's cousins by the mother's side; this lady had been a mother about ten days but she had been in so melancholy a state that she had not taken the least notice of her child; her sister was sleeping with her and the nurse was in the room, but she eluded their vigilance and got up early in the morning, dressed herself and went to the top of the house,

where she opened a heavy scuttel, got out and slid from the roof to the pavement beneath; her death accompanied by such afflicting circumstances has been deeply felt by a large circle of relations. . . . Captain N. has abandoned the chase after Miss Astor, who will sail this spring for Liverpool, and it is not likely that she will return to this City; my husband told the Captain the other day that to redeem his credit he ought to court some girl who is poor. I know not how he relished this advice. I have not seen as much of the Welles this winter as I would have wished. We are as intimate as ever, but circumstances have prevented our meeting every day as we did last year; these gentlemen will take up your time; they gave me an evening party last Tuesday which finished by a handsome supper. Sarah Moore has quite recovered. I wish I could say so much for Mary Swan, who is still very ill; directly the spring is more advanced her husband will take her to France; this is a last resort, I earnestly hope that it may be effectual. James is as yet with Papa. The poor old horses have gone into the Western country with Brother's waggon. Papa gave them to him and the earriage to me, which we shall sell and turn into a light pleasure carriage. Husband and myself are going to Canada this fall. . . . Next time that you write to me tell me if the peach stones that I planted in Uncle Otis' yard have come to anything. I am sorry to hear that Abby is not going to the school at Mrs. McKegg's (no disparagement to the village schoolmistress). . . . I am happy dear Debby, as it is possible for me to be; it does not often happen that all a girl's romantic notions are realized when she becomes a wife, but I say with truth that mine are; you and I have talked over this subject often. I was sorry to hear that Caroline Cushing had been unwell. Give my best love to Uneles, Aunts, Cousins and second cousins, and believe me,

Your sincere friend,

HELEN LEROY.

Mrs. Jacob R. LeRoy, No. 144 Greenwich Street, New York.

HELEN LEROY TO MISS D. C. BRIGGS, SCITUATE, MASS.

WEST CHESTER, September 6th [1823]

MY DEAR COUSIN: — My Papa, who I have been waiting for to be my postman, has been absent some time, but he will deliver this to you and can give a good account of himself. I received your last letter a day or two before I left home for Canada. I wished to tell you that Charlotte has a fine little boy; he is nearly two months old, he was born on the 9th of July; he is called Thomas Otis, but the first name is to be dropped. I think that Otis LeRoy will sound very well. I was glad to hear that you had had such a pleasant excursion to Roxbury. It is a beautiful country around there. We had a very delightful Jaunt to Canada; we were absent from home three weeks and passed two days in Montreal and the same time in Quebec. You will think this expeditious travelling, as Quebec is 500 miles distance from New York. The conveyance from Whitehall to St. John's (which is within 30 miles of Montreal) is by Steam

Boat and you reach Quebec by the same mode of travelling, therefore we performed the journey without much fatigue. I saw Miss Cushing at the Springs, as we passed through. Papa, who was there at the time, says that she is very sleepy after dinner; you know what he means. Quebec is a strongly fortified place. There are two Regiments stationed there at present. I assure you that I could fancy myself in Old England when I heard "God Save the King" played on a fine band of music. . . . Since we returned Mr. Edgar, the husband of one of my sister's husband's sisters, has died. (Pray understand the connection!) Therefore she is left a young widow with six children; it is rather singular that the two sisters (Mrs. Newbold) should be left widows so young. . . . Papa will give your Mother the black shawl, and if he should forget it you must remind him of it. My mother desires to be remembered to you all. Abby gave Charlotte a pressing invitation to come and see her when she passes through Cayuga. I must bid adieu.

Yours affectionately,

HELEN M. LEROY.

HELEN LEROY TO MISS D. C. BRIGGS, CARE OF CUSHING OTIS, ESQ.,
SCITUATE

NEW YORK, November 22, 1823

MY DEAR COUSIN: — . . . I suppose ere this Papa has left you; I thought he would remain at Scituate until after Thanksgiving, and now that has passed I shall be expecting him here next week. . . . I was much obliged to you for your long description of the Misses Paines' wedding. . . . We moved into town about a fortnight since, but now that the Indian Summer has commenced I trust we shall have some fine days. Charlotte left early in October and long before this she is settled for the winter. She writes that the house they have until they build is so large and convenient that she does not use the rooms upstairs, but has furnished them for their summer company; their furniture and glass was sent to them by the Canal, and has arrived in very good order considering that the distance is four hundred miles. She was taken sick on the road, which detained them some days, and since she has been there, Small Pox has been raging within ten miles of them, but her child has escaped it thus far. It was vaccinated before it left the city, but without effect. The cold weather has closed the Canal, therefore we shall not be able to hear from LeRoy as soon as we have been in the habit of doing. . . . It is not yet time for balls to commence, but a wedding will soon take place which will give the City a little gaiety. I shall be very domestic this winter. The ladies here are introducing the custom of giving candle after a confinement, which I think is very foolish; they receive all their friends and acquaintances in their bed chamber which must of course be handsomely furnished; the child as well as the mother must be dressed in their best, and be stared at by a parcel of people who come to see them for the sake of a Cup of Candle and a piece of Cake. I hear there is to be a grand



Dorchester Sept 25 1899 2400 11 years 11796

THE ORIGINAL OF THIS PICTURE IS DONE IN COLORED SILKS

Owned by L. Cabot Briggs

wedding in Boston soon, I mean Miss Otis and Mr. Richie. She will have a splendid house by her marriage, if nothing else. Where do the Paine girls live? I must call them so; it seems more natural. Papa writes that Caroline Cushing is quite a belle, that she has two beaux after her; it would be very amusing if she was to marry a Methodist. I think Ruth had better think of him. You must give a great deal of love from me to all my friends. Tell Aunt Otis that I am happy she is going to send Abby away from home to school. This is a curious message to send by you, but you know my opinion. I wish you could see a bunch of artificial flowers that I have had made lately for the middle of the dinner table; it is not entirely composed of flowers, but has a great deal of fruit mixed with them. I am as happy as I possibly can be; if Charlotte was nearer it would be pleasanter, but we must not expect everything in this world. I am happy that your mother is pleased with the shawl. I must close my letter as it is time for me to dress for a ride. I remain, my dear Debby,

Your affectionately attached Cousin,

HELEN LEROY.

HELEN LEROY TO MISS D. C. BRIGGS, SCITUATE, MASS.

NEW YORK, July 9, [about 1826]

MY DEAR DEBBY: — . . . Charlotte has been in town the last six weeks. She never looked better than at present; she had her children with her, two fine boys, she was anxious to return home as they moved this summer into another house; she is just as lively as she ever was and can make as pretty faces as ever. She amused us with them.

Papa left us last week for the Branch, after being in town during the hottest weather we shall probably have this season; he is going to visit the Springs and then he will travel eastward. He says he shall visit Scituate about the same time that he did last year. He is remarkably well. We do not move into the country this year, but on Monday we go to Long Branch to meet Papa and shall pass a fortnight there; after our return we shall very probably take lodgings in Jersey until after the warm weather. Uncle Munroe has been in town twice this Spring. I was very glad to see him. It reminded one of old times to see his face again. I was very sorry to hear so distressing an account of Mr. Deane; indeed your last letter was full of bad news. Aunt Foster you say is not well, ours is such a nervous family that we are apt to ascribe all indisposition to that cause. The cause of Thaxter's death surprised me. I had no idea that he was an intemperate man; how came his wife ever to marry him, knowing the circumstances which Papa told me she did? . . . Your two letters were left at Mrs. Edgar's, Charlotte's sister, and I will not get them in some days. I should have been very happy to have seen Mr. Fogg. I have not seen Ann Phillips since I last wrote you. Papa has seen her occasionally at the public places and says she has always a bean about her, but I do not hear of her being engaged. The Marquis is now here, but has become an old story. We were asked to meet

him at tea last night, but did not go; he dines out a great deal. It is said we are to have a brother of the Prince of Orange out here shortly. I suppose he will astonish the natives for the space of nine days. I think we Americans run after *great* people quite as much as they do abroad and perhaps a little more. I would like to see you all in Scituate this summer. Next summer I hope to visit Charlotte. Robert is very well and grows finely. He is now eighteen months old and as large as many children of three years; he is now cutting his double teeth; they fret him a little. It is as much as I can do to write, he is very anxious to get at the desk. There is nothing going on in town that would interest you; all the belles you have heard me speak of are either married or have died a natural death in the way of reputation. The Misses Wiles have returned from the South. I am so glad that Abby has gone to school; how do Uncle and Aunt Otis bear her absence. I see by the papers that young Dr. Otis has arrived. I believe he is a doctor. I have been taking lessons in riding, and after I have returned to town Papa gives me a horse which I hope to keep in pretty constant exercise. . . . I remain, dear Debby,

Your sincerely attached friend,

HELEN.

HELEN LEROY TO MISS D. C. BRIGGS, CARE OF CUSHING OTIS, ESQ.,
SCITUATE

NEW YORK, February 16th, 1826

DEAR COUSIN: — . . . Charlotte has a daughter, and I can assure you that it is very gratifying to all parties, as we think there are boys enough in the family. I hope that you have not been visited by the influenza in Scituate. I see by the papers that no State has been exempt from it; it has raged with great violence here, going through families and taking down every member of them, and in many cases it has proved mortal; fortunately our family have had it lightly in comparison with others, and Robert has missed it altogether. Papa has been with us ever since he left you, but he begins to get tired of the City, he goes to very few parties. The town is very gay, notwithstanding there have been a great many failures and probably there will be more, but it is the motto here to "drown dull care." I never heard anything respecting Ann Phillips being married, but I always fancied that William Bowers and she would get together. . . . Cooper the author of "The Spy," has lately published a new work entitled "Mowhegan." It is an interesting work and it gives you an excellent and interesting account of the Indians, but it grows tedious before the end of the second volume. Do you find the Aylwin's society a great addition? I fancy you all in Scituate just as I left you four years ago. How does Abby Otis come on at Hingham? I hope Aunt does not send for her to come home too often. . . . Charlotte and family are well. . . . Papa desires his love to you all. . . . I remain,

Sincerely yours,

HELEN LEROY.

CHAPTER XII

DESCENDANTS OF WALTER¹ BRIGGS

GENERATION VI

74. JOANNA⁶ BRIGGS (41. *John*⁵, *John*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 29 Oct. 1784, and baptized in the First Church 8 Oct. 1786. On 2 Dec. 1810 she married Abiel Cudworth, who was born in Scituate 19 Oct. 1786, son of John⁵ Cudworth (John⁴, John³, Capt. James², Gen. James¹) whose wife was Elizabeth Clap. John⁵ Cudworth's mother was Mary Briggs. (See Generation IV, 28. Mary Briggs; also Walter Briggs' Friends — Gen. James Cudworth.)

Children of Joanna⁶ Briggs and Abiel Cudworth:

- i. ABIEL CUDWORTH, b. 18 Aug. (worn); d. 1814.
- ii. SAMUEL STILMAN CUDWORTH, b. 9 May 1816; m. Almira —.
- iii. POLLY BRIGGS CUDWORTH, b. 8 Aug. 1819.
- iv. JOANNA CUDWORTH, b. 20 Nov. 1821; d. 17 Mar. 1841, ae. 19 years.
- v. JANE CUDWORTH, b. 18 Nov. 1825.

75. SOPHIA⁶ BRIGGS (41. *John*⁵, *John*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 24 Apr. 1791, and baptized 26 May 1793 in the First Church. She married 2 Dec. 1831, as his third wife, Nathaniel⁵ Peirce, born 7 Feb. 1773 (Seth⁴, Thomas³, Benjamin², Capt. Michael¹), who married for his first wife, Winnet Otis, daughter of John of the "Two Stacks," and for a second wife, Abigail (Nabby) Bailey. (See Otis.)

Michael Peirce came to Scituate from Hingham (Second Precinct) about 1647, when he purchased the lands upon the "Country Way" which remained in possession of his descendants for approximately 280 years, nine generations of the family having dwelt upon them. In 1666 he was a Lieutenant under Captain Cudworth, and when the latter was deprived of his commission in

1659, Lieutenant Peirce succeeded him. He commanded the Scituate forces in the Narragansett Fight of 1675, and returned unharmed. In the spring of 1676, Captain Peirce, with a Company of 50 Englishmen, many of them from Scituate, and 20 friendly Cape Cod Indians, was ordered to pursue the marauding Narragansetts toward Rhode Island. At Attleboro' Gore, near Pawtucket, his small force was surrounded by Canonchet with a large body of Indians, and after having slain three times their number of the Indians, Captain Peirce's Company was practically annihilated, only two or three survivors escaping the frightful slaughter, after the death of their gallant Captain.

Captain Peirce's first wife was Percis Eames, daughter of Lieut. Anthony Eames of Marshfield, a sister of Elizabeth Eames, wife of Edward Wilder of Hingham. Captain Peirce's second wife was Widow Anna James of Marshfield, whose daughter, Abigail James, married Charles Stockbridge of the Stockbridge mill and mansion house at Greenbush.

Captain Michael's son, Benjamin Peirce, married Martha Adams, 1678, daughter of James and Frances (Vassall) Adams. He inherited his father's residence at Scituate, and his descendants of the seventh generation have lived upon the property.

The only child of Nathaniel Peirce and his third wife, Sophia Briggs, was —

John Briggs Peirce, b. 22 July 1832; m. Martha W. Litchfield, dau. of William and Martha (Brown) Litchfield. He lived on the "Country Way," North Scituate, in a house which he built, occupied later by his grandson, Charles Peirce.

76. ABNER⁶ BRIGGS (42. *Ichabod*⁵, *John*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 14 Nov. 1795 in Cohasset, and probably lived in his father's house on South Main Street in that town. He married, about 1818, Betsey — and died 9 Sept. 1833.

Children of Abner⁶ Briggs and Betsey — :

- i. ABNER, b. —.
- ii. SARAH, b. 8 Aug. 1821.
- iii. ANNA
- iv. BETSEY } twins, b. 4 Sept. 1822.
- v. CYNTHIA, b. 10 Jan. 1825.
- vi. JAMES, b. 9 Mar. 1827.
- vii. SOPHIA, b. 19 July 1833.

His family may have moved after his death in 1833, as no further record is found in Cohasset.

77. SABRA⁶ BRIGGS (45. *Joseph⁵, Joseph⁴, Joseph³, James², Walter¹*) was born 6 Aug. 1785 in Cohasset, where she was recorded as "Seabury" Briggs. She married, about 1811, Martin Bassett of Hingham, born in Hingham 30 Sept. 1783, son of Joseph and Mary (Pittee) Bassett. Martin Bassett was a shipwright, and died by an accident at the Charlestown Navy Yard 11 Feb. 1836, aged 52 years. At the time of his death he lived on Green Street, Charlestown, but he had formerly lived at Hingham, where his children were born.

Children of Sabra⁶ Briggs and Martin Bassett:

- i. MARY BASSETT, b. 25 Aug. 1812; m. (1) James R. Kelsey; (2) Edward C. Blossom; (3) Capt. Kimball Easterbrook.
- ii. DAUGHTER, b. 8 June 1814; m. (1) Demerick Stoddard; (2) Earl S. Kelsey.
- iii. JOSEPH BASSETT, b. 20 Dec. 1816; lost at sea 1840.
- iv. SABRA BASSETT, b. 3 Nov. 1819; m. Warren A. Hersey (second wife).
- v. LOTS BASSETT, b. 7 June 1822; d. 29 Aug. 1838.

78. CAPT. JOSEPH⁶ BRIGGS (45. *Joseph⁵, Joseph⁴, Joseph³, James², Walter¹*) was born in Cohasset 14 Mar. 1796. He was a Master Mariner, and lived in his father's house on Elm Street (Ship Cove Lane), Cohasset. He served in the War of 1812.

Capt. Joseph Briggs married 2 May 1829 the widow of his brother, Capt. George Briggs, who was Catherine Higgins of Chatham, Mass. She died in Chatham, 9 June 1864.

Children of Capt. Joseph⁶ Briggs and Catherine Higgins:

- i. JOSEPH, b. 22 Dec. 1831 in Cohasset; d. in California 13 Dec. 1849 in the first "gold rush."
119. ii. SARAH C., b. 30 Sept. 1833 in Cohasset; m. Israel Vinal.
- iii. GEORGE, b. 25 Mar. 1836 in Cohasset; d. 18 May 1862 in the Civil War.
120. iv. CLARA BATES, b. 5 Oct. 1840 in Cohasset; m. Henry C. Mapes.

79. CAPT. GEORGE⁶ BRIGGS (45. *Joseph*⁵, *Joseph*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 28 Oct. 1798 in Cohasset. He was a Master Mariner, as was his brother, Capt. Joseph Briggs, and resided in his father's house on Elm Street, Cohasset.

He married 1 Mar. 1823 Catherine Higgins of Chatham, who, as his widow, married his brother, Capt. Joseph. He died 5 July 1826, "coming from the West Indies."

Children of Capt. George⁶ and Catherine (Higgins) Briggs:

- i. CHILD, b. 23 Sept. 1824; d. 23 Sept. 1824.
- ii. BETSEY CATHERINE, b. 29 Oct. 1826; bpt. as "Betsey Stodder;" m. 18 July 1855 Henry H. Barrett of Boston.

80. EZRA⁶ BRIGGS, 3d (46. *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 16 May 1791. His wife was Elizabeth Fickett of Braintree, where Ezra, 3d, was living in 1853. (Barry.)

Children of Ezra⁶ Briggs, 3d, and Elizabeth Fickett:

- i. ABIGAIL JURDEN, b. 18 May 1813 in Portland, Me. She is said to have resided in Waltham, Mass.
- ii. LYDIA, b. 22 May 1815 in Portland.
- iii. EZRA, b. 14 June 1817; removed to Randolph, Vt.
121. iv. NATHANIEL, b. 6 May 1820; m. Caroline Clark.
- v. CHARLES, b. Sept. 1822; m. 18 Oct. 1846 Martha P. Nash, dau. of Timothy and Betsey (Cushing) Nash of Weymouth. He lived in Weymouth, where his occupation was given as "manufacturer."
- vi. MARY ELIZABETH, b. 28 Mar. 1827.

81. JOSEPH⁶ BRIGGS (46. *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 22 Dec. 1793 in Hanover; was a farmer, and lived at first on Main Street after his marriage. In 1836 he built a house on Washington Street, Hanover, in which his son Elbridge lived later, and which on the marriage of his son was made into a two-family residence. Owned now (1936) by Charles E. Dexter.

He married 23 Apr. 1817 Jane Paine of Newburyport. She died in Hanover 25 Sept. 1882.

Children of Joseph⁶ Briggs and Jane Paine:

- i. JANE, b. 11 Nov. 1818; m. (1) Silas G. Bates; (2) Samuel Church.
- 122. ii. JOSEPH, b. 18 Apr. 1821; m. Mary T. Dwelley.
- 123. iii. JOHN GILMAN, b. 11 Oct. 1823; m. Ella G. Clapp.
- 124. iv. WILLIAM S., b. 21 Feb. 1826; m. Charlotte S. Gardner.
- 125. v. RICHARD P., b. 21 Oct. 1828; m. Catherine M. Clapp.
- vi. MARIA A., b. 4 July 1831; d. 24 Sept. 1858.
- 126. vii. MARGARET H., b. 29 Sept. 1833; m. Joseph W. Ramsdell.
- 127. viii. CHARLES B., b. 29 Jan. 1838; m. Annie L. Jacobs.
- 128. ix. ELBRIDGE B., b. 13 June 1840; m. Lucy B. Barker.

82. LYDIA⁶ BRIGGS (46. *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 6 Sept. 1795. She married 28 Feb. 1818 Stephen Estes, born in Hanover 10 Apr. 1798, son of Zaccheus and Elizabeth (Dillingham) Estes. Zaccheus Estes was a Quaker, and lived on Plain Street, Hanover, where his son Zaccheus, Jr., resided later. Stephen Estes lived in Hanover until about 1822 or 1823, and then removed to Batavia, N. Y., where he was living at his death, 24 Feb. 1856.

Children of Lydia Briggs and Stephen Estes:

- i. STEPHEN ESTES, b. 3 May 1819 in Hanover.
- ii. LYDIA ESTES, b. 16 Oct. 1820 in Hanover.
- iii. BETSEY ESTES, b. 17 Sept. 1822 in Hanover.
- iv. } TWINS, b. in Batavia, N. Y.
- v. }
- vi. LUCINDA S. ESTES, b. 28 July 1826 in Batavia; m. and lived in Michigan.
- vii. ZACCHEUS ESTES, b. 15 Oct. 1828 in Batavia; m. and lived in Michigan; d. 5 Sept. 1861.
- viii. PHEBE M. ESTES, b. 17 Oct. 1830 in Batavia; m. and lived in Michigan.
- ix. EZRA M. ESTES, b. 15 Sept. 1832 in Batavia; lived in Batavia.
- x. BEULAH ESTES, b. 13 Sept. 1834 in Batavia; m. and lived in New York State.
- xi. GEORGE W. ESTES, b. 12 Aug. 1836 in Batavia; m. and lived in Kansas.

83. HANNAH⁶ BRIGGS (46. *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 5 Mar. 1799. She married 20 Feb. 1823 Deacon Ara Brooks, born in Hanover 17 Mar. 1796, son of Curtis Brooks of Hanover and Anne Southworth of Duxbury. They lived in Bowdoinham, Me. Ara Brooks was Deacon of the Baptist Church in the adjoining town of Richmond. He died in Bowdoinham 4 Mar. 1872. His widow, Hannah (Briggs) Brooks, died in Bowdoinham 14 Mar. 1884.

Children of Hannah Briggs and Deacon Ara Brooks:

- i. LYDIA BROOKS, b. 5 July 1825 in Bowdoinham; m. Joseph S. Elliott of Bowdoinham; d. in Bowdoinham 5 Feb. 1865.
- ii. ELIZABETH L. BROOKS, b. 15 Feb. 1827; m. (1) Hartley Hunter of Bowdoinham; (2) James Haynes of Bowdoinham; d. 19 Aug. 1880.
- iii. HANNAH S. BROOKS, b. 15 Nov. 1828; m. Willis Stinson of Bowdoinham.
- iv. MARY R. BROOKS, b. 7 June 1830; d. 23 Dec. 1838.
- v. ALMIRA L. BROOKS, b. 22 Aug. 1832; d. 26 May 1835.
- vi. MALINDA J. BROOKS, b. 23 Oct. 1834; m. James Haynes, who m. for a second wife her sister, Widow Elizabeth (Brooks) Hunter.
- vii. JONATHAN K. BROOKS, b. 8 Apr. 1837; m. Louisa J. Tarr and lived in Chelsea, Mass.
- viii. ARA C. BROOKS, b. 15 Jan. 1839; d. 24 Sept. 1862.
- ix. LUTHER S. BROOKS, b. 18 Sept. 1841; m. Harriet M. Libby of Litchfield, Me.

84. SARAH⁶ W. BRIGGS (46. *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 5 Sept. 1803 in Hanover. She married 26 Apr. 1825 Judson Vining, born in Abington 15 Mar. 1805, son of Ebed Vining of Abington. He died 3 Nov. 1867. His widow, Sarah (Briggs) Vining, died 28 Dec. 1878. They lived in a house built before 1735 by Jesse (or Richard) Curtis on Main Street, North Hanover. From 1810 to 1824 the house was the parsonage of Rev. John Butler of the Baptist Church at North Hanover.

Children of Sarah W. Briggs and Judson Vining:

- i. WILLIAM J. VINING, b. 2 Apr. 1826; m. Mercy T. Bates 1849.
- ii. THOMAS J. VINING, b. 18 June 1828; d. unm. 1864.
- iii. SALLY B. VINING, b. 5 Oct. 1831; m. Lucius C. Whiting 1859.
- iv. LYDIA S. VINING, b. 22 Oct. 1834; unm.

85. MARTHA⁶ BRIGGS (46. *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 22 Dec. 1806. She married 8 Nov. 1821 David Vining, son of Ebed Vining of Abington, and a brother of Judson Vining. She was David Vining's second wife. They lived on Main Street, Hanover, in a house later owned and occupied by Henry E. Spear. Martha (Briggs) Vining died 2 June 1881.

Children of Martha Briggs and David Vining:

- i. MARTHA A. VINING, b. 23 Feb. 1829; d. 13 Apr. 1896.
- ii. ISRAEL L. VINING, b. 8 Oct. 1830; m. Nancy J. Matthews of Abington.
- iii. HANNAH B. VINING, b. 5 Sept. 1835; m. Timothy B. Chapman.
- iv. CHARLES C. VINING, b. 7 Dec. 1838; m. Rose T. Hatch.
- v. ASAPH D. VINING, b. 1 Aug. 1842; m. Mary A. Studley.

86. BILLINGS⁶ BRIGGS (47. *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Cohasset 1 Jan. 1792 and baptized 22 Sept. 1793 in Cohasset. He learned the trade of housewright, which he later followed in Boston, becoming a prominent builder of his time. He was a member of the *Board of Aldermen of the city of Boston* 1847-51, inclusive, and for two years was a member of the *House of Representatives* in the State Legislature. He was a life member of the Massachusetts Charitable Mechanic Association from 1834, and was its Vice-President in 1848, 1849 and 1850. In his later years he had charge of several large estates. He lived in Boston, where he died 10 Mar. 1869.

Billings Briggs married 19 Oct. 1818 Olive Rice of Holden, Mass., who died in Boston 26 Nov. 1869.

Daughter of Billings Briggs and Olive Rice:

129. i. MARY CURTIS BRIGGS, b. 5 June 1820; m. John Reed.

87. SOPHIA⁶ BRIGGS (47. *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), recorded as "Soffa" and familiarly so called, was born 7 Apr. 1795. She married 26 Nov. 1829 Thomas Ellms, born 6 Feb. 1789, son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Wade) Ellms of Scituate, of the Jonathan² Elmes line. (See Elmes.)

Thomas Ellms lived on Summer Street, Norwell, in the last house before coming to the Scituate town line. It is now (1936) the residence of Frederick A. Fenger, the author. In their later years the five unmarried children of Thomas and Sophia sold this residence and built a house on Gannett Street, the road leading from the North Scituate railroad station to North Scituate Beach, where they died.

Children of Sophia⁶ Briggs and Thomas Ellms:

- i. BENJAMIN ELLMS, b. 24 Oct. 1830.
- ii. SARAH PRATT ELLMS, b. 13 Oct. 1831.
- iii. OLIVE SOPHIA ELLMS, b. 21 Dec. 1832.
- iv. MARY BRIGGS ELLMS, b. 17 Apr. 1836.
- v. HARRIET REBECCA ELLMS, b. 15 Oct. 1840.

88. PAUL⁶ BRIGGS (47. *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 22 Mar. 1797 in Scituate, was a "forty-niner," and died in California in the "gold rush." He lived in South Scituate on the corner of Summer and Cedar streets, opposite the residence of his father, Captain Benjamin⁵. He married 25 Apr. 1822 Siba Litchfield, born 14 Nov. 1802, daughter of Lawrence Litchfield and Rachael (Nichols) Clap, widow of Charles Clap. She died in South Scituate 5 Oct. 1852, aged 80.

Son of Paul⁶ Briggs and Siba Litchfield:

130. i. PAUL DEAN, b. 7 May 1823; m. Almira Damon.

89. JAMES PRATT⁶ BRIGGS (47. *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 23 Aug. 1799 in Scituate, and baptized 10 Oct. 1813 in the First Church of Scituate. Albert Billings Briggs writes of his grandfather, James P. Briggs:

My grandfather, James Pratt Briggs, learned the trade of wheelwright in Newton, and afterwards established himself in

Watertown where he was in business. In 1836 he bought out the heirs to the old place (in Scituate) and retired. After he returned to Scituate he devoted himself to his farm.

He served the town of South Scituate as selectman, and was a trustee of the South Scituate Savings Bank, and was intrusted with the care of property of others.

James P. Briggs was a member of the South Parish of Scituate, now the First Parish of Norwell, and was the owner of one of the "wing pews" on the north side of the pulpit, in the present meeting-house, built in 1830.

His wife was Adeline Bridges of Holliston, Mass. She died in Norwell 6 Jan. and James P. Briggs died 21 Jan. 1891.

Children of James P. Briggs and Adeline Bridges:

131. i. ELLEN, b. 19 Nov. 1829 in Watertown; m. Nathaniel Ellms.
132. ii. ADELINE, b. 15 Jan. 1832 in Watertown; m. Henry Brown.
- iii. ANDREW J., b. 3 Oct. 1834 in Watertown; m. (1) — Mahoney; (2) — Matherson; lived in Boston and Medford. By his first wife had sons James and Andrew Bridges Briggs; by his second wife he had two daughters.
- iv. FRANCES, b. 1838; d. in Scituate Feb. 1849.
- v. WALTER E., b. 3 Mar. 1840; m. Ellen Evanson. Now (1936) living in Roxbury. Children: Mary, Gladys and Walter.
133. vi. ALBERT HIRAM, b. 14 Sept. 1841 in Scituate; m. Mary L. Richards.
- vii. ALFRED B., b. 4 May 1844 in Scituate; d. unm. 4 Sept. 1920.
- viii. CHARLES, b. 1847 in Scituate; m. Mary A. McFetridge, b. 1855. Lived in Boston and d. 1917. They had no family.

90. OTIS⁶ BRIGGS (51. *Bartlett*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), born 2 Feb. 1806 at Greenbush, was a shipwright. He worked at the *Hobart Landing yard* on North River for *Cushing O. and Henry Briggs*, and later for *Charles C. and William T. Briggs*. In 1831 he built on his own ac-

count at the old Kent yard at the mouth of Satuit Brook, at the Harbor, the fishing schooner *Pyretus*, 57 tons, for Scituate parties. He lived on Old Oaken Bucket Road, Greenbush, in the house built by his father, Bartlett⁵ Briggs, in 1804, after purchasing the rights of the other heirs. He made alterations in the house at a later period. It is now (1936) owned and occupied by his granddaughter, Mrs. Samuel Wilson.

Otis⁶ Briggs married 27 Mar. 1834 Caroline Wade, born 14 Oct. 1814, daughter of Shadrach and Mabel (Merritt) Wade.

Daughter of Otis⁶ Briggs and Caroline Wade:

134. i. CAROLINE FORESTER, b. 18 Oct. 1837; m. George H. Sables.

91. DAVID⁶ BRIGGS (51. Bartlett⁵, James⁴, Benjamin³, James², Walter¹) was born 8 Mar. 1811 in Scituate. He learned the trade of shipwright, and was employed at the *Hobart's Landing shipyard* as long as shipbuilding was carried on there. He then went to Medford, and worked in the shipyards until he purchased the old Cushing estate at Belle House Neck from Mrs. William Haskins of Medford, after the death of her mother Hannah (Jacobs) Cushing, widow of Nathaniel, a nephew of Judge William Cushing. David Briggs then removed to Scituate, and conducted the farm until his death.

He married in Medford 10 Apr. 1836 Charlotte Bradford, born 23 May 1818 in Medford, daughter of Seth and Betsy Bradford of Medford. The Bradfords removed from Medford to Scituate, where they lived near their daughter in the house now (1936) the summer residence of George Copp Warren, about opposite the east end of Neal Gate Road and the "Country Way" (Route 3A).

Children of David Briggs and Charlotte Bradford:

135. i. ALBERT K., b. 23 Apr. 1837 in Medford; m. Mercy T. Colman.
 ii. SARAH, b. 1842; d. 10 Sept. 1861, ae. 10 years.
 By adoption, Amy Damon, who m. Charles Webb of Scituate.

92. RHODA⁶ BRIGGS (51. *Bartlett*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 20 Jan. 1814. She married 23 Jan. 1837 Rufus Curtis, born in 1805, son of Rufus and Diana (Keen) Curtis. Diana Keen is recorded as "of Duxbury." They lived at Greenbush, on the Norwell Road, known as "Cornet Stetson Road," in the house where their son, the late William F. Curtis, lived, now (1936) owned by the widow of his son, Arthur Curtis.

Children of Rhoda Briggs and Rufus Curtis:

- i. HARRIET ATWOOD BRIGGS CURTIS, b. 22 July 1838; m. Francis Turner, son of Francis and Temperance (Foster) Turner, who were both b. in South Scituate. They had no children.
- ii. WILLIAM F. CURTIS, b. 1 Jan. 1845; m. Henrietta Malloy. They lived for many years in Charlestown, but returned to the Rufus Curtis house at Greenbush, where both Mr. and Mrs. Curtis died. A son, Arthur Curtis, m. Elinor — and died a few years ago, but left no family.
- iii. GEORGE H. CURTIS, b. Mar. 1851; m. Ella Vinal, dau. of John T. and Susan (Litchfield) Vinal. Susan Huntington Litchfield was a dau. of Justin and Mary (Colman) Litchfield. She m. (2) Roland Turner, son of Benjamin and Hannah C. Turner, who was for many years town treasurer of Scituate. John Thomas Vinal was a son of John Spurr and Polly (Hammond) Vinal. Elsie Vinal Curtis, dau. of George H. and Ella (Vinal), m. 18 June 1912 Howard Stone Power, son of Arthur L. and Mary (Nash) Power. They have a son, Tileston Curtis Power, b. 12 Aug. 1915.

93. WILLIAM⁶ BRIGGS (51. *Bartlett*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), born in Scituate Nov. 1816, a ship carpenter, was recorded in 1841 as "of Medford." He lived in Scituate in 1845, and in 1848-49 was foreman of a company of ship carpenters, who built on their own account at Scituate Harbor the schooner *Sarah Brooks*, 76 tons, which was launched in 1849. The owners were Robert Cook, Israel Nichols, Asa R. Lewis, Joseph and Franklin Damon, Charles Ellms, 2d, David and William Briggs, John L. Whitaker, Joseph Drew, Asa L. Hatch and Luther A. Tilden,

all of Scituate, and Elbridge Wyman of Boston. Israel Nichols was the first master of this ill-fated vessel. He was succeeded by Capt. Ichabod Cook, who sailed from Scituate in Mar. 1852, bound for a southern port. The members of the crew of the *Sarah Brooks* were all related, and it is supposed that she was lost the first night out, as she was never heard from.

William Briggs married 10 Nov. 1841 Fanny Cook, born in Scituate 16 Feb. 1822, daughter of Henry Cook, a son of Robert and Judith (Damon) Cook, whose wife was Fanny Studley, daughter of Lewis and Lucy (Dunbar) Studley. William Briggs died 8 Aug. 1856.

Children of William Briggs and Fanny Cook:

- i. ANNIE OTIS (probably a dau. of William), date of birth not found on Medford or Scituate Records. She d. in Scituate 30 Jan. 1854.
- ii. ESTELLE MARION, b. 11 Feb. 1845 in Scituate; d. 11 Nov. 1846.
- iii. AMY ESTELLE, b. 24 May 1848 in Scituate.
- iv. ELLEN MARIA (probably a dau. of William, but not so recorded), b. 11 Jan. 1856.

94. JAMES SYLVESTER⁶ BRIGGS (53. *Joseph*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), born 14 Apr. in Scituate, was a shipbuilder, and with his brother, Barnabas W. Briggs, built many vessels, mostly fishing schooners, at Scituate Harbor, first, in 1834, at the old Kent yard at the mouth of Satuit Brook. After building three vessels they removed from the old yard to the lower yard at Will James' Dock, where they remained until 1859, and where they built larger vessels, the last one being the bark *Eveline*, 650 tons. James S. Briggs was the master carpenter of most of the vessels built by them.

The schooner *Cohannet*, built in 1839 for a fisherman, was whaling in the Pacific in 1877. In 1845 they built the bark *J. A. Jesuroon*, so named for a foreigner who owned one third of her. She was sold for \$10,000 and fitted out for California in 1849. Most of the vessels built by James and Barnabas W. Briggs were commanded by Scituate men, Captains Joel Manson, Henry Vinal, Alexander Anderson

and others. (For a more complete account of the vessels see, "Shipbuilding on North River," pp. 382-387.)

James S. Briggs lived in the house that had been his father's, at Scituate Centre, on the corner of the "Country Way" and First Parish Road. It is now (1936) owned and occupied by Charles C. Withem.

Sylvester Briggs, by which name he was generally known, married 15 Nov. 1825 Selina Curtis, born in Scituate 7 June 1797, daughter of Gamaliel and Patience (Wade) Curtis.

Children of James S. Briggs and Selina Curtis:

136. i. SELINA CURTIS, b. 26 Oct. 1824; m. Capt. Perry L. Parker.
- ii. CYNTHIA MIRIAM, b. 6 Oct. 1829; m. Anthony Gray 1868, who built the house on the corner of the "Country Way" and First Parish Road, opposite the James S. Briggs' house. It was later occupied by Dr. Charles H. Davie, whose daughter is now the wife of Dr. Harry T. Handy, who resides in it (1936).
137. iii. HANNAH WADE, b. 29 Oct. 1833; m. George W. Bailey.

95. BETSEY⁶ BRIGGS (53. *Joseph*,⁵ *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), born in Scituate 10 Feb. 1802, married 24 Nov. 1825 Zeba Cushing, then called "of Boston." They resided in the house on First Parish Road now (1936) owned and occupied by Hamilton W. Welch. Zeba Cushing was probably from Weymouth. In the War of 1812 a Zeba Cushing was "musician" in Capt. J. Cleverly's Company, Lieut.-Col. S. Webb's Regt., Massachusetts Militia, of Weymouth. Betsey Briggs was his second wife. His first wife, Emily —, died 10 May 1825. By her he had a son, Frederick Cushing, born in Boston 22 July 1820, who married in Scituate 30 Nov. 1843 Cynthia Curtis. Frederick Cushing was a carpenter and a shipwright, and lived in his father's house on First Parish Road. Mrs. Betsey (Briggs) Cushing died 4 Dec. 1861, aged 59 years.

Children of Betsey Briggs and Zeba Cushing:

- i. HANNAH BRIGGS CUSHING, b. 18 Jan. 1827; m. Rev. Franklin Damon 1848.
- ii. EMILY SEAGRAVE CUSHING, b. 2 May 1833.

96. BARNABAS WEBB⁶ BRIGGS (53. *Joseph*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), born 25 May 1805 in Scituate, lived on the "Country Way" between Scituate Centre and Greenbush, nearly opposite the western end of Elm Street, in the house in which his daughter, Mrs. Hunt, (1936) now lives. Barnabas W. Briggs was associated with his brother, James Sylvester Briggs, in shipbuilding at Scituate Harbor. (See 94. James S. Briggs.)

He married 17 Jan. 1831 Deborah Otis, born 12 Sept. 1808, daughter of Abijah and Mary (Turner) Otis. (See Job Otis chapter.) Deborah Otis was a sister of Job Prince Otis, who married Hannah Briggs, daughter of Joseph and Miriam (Sylvester) Briggs, and sister of Barnabas W.

Children of Barnabas W. Briggs and Deborah Otis:

- i. EMELINE A., b. 9 Nov. 1832; d. 7 June 1886; unm.
- 138. ii. ELLEN DEBORAH, b. 16 Feb. 1835; m. Luther Paul.
- 139. iii. JOSEPH OTIS, b. 9 Nov. 1836; m. Elsie Orcutt.
- iv. ELIZABETH, b. 15 Jan. 1845; d. 1845.
- 140. v. JULIETTA F., b. 27 Sept. 1846; m. W. Webster Hunt.

97. ANNA⁶ BRIGGS (55. *Elisha*⁵, *John*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹), born in the James Briggs house near Stony Cove Brook, Scituate, 4 June 1793, married 27 Nov. 1814 Nathaniel⁶ Clapp, born 1 Mar. 1785, son of Sylvanus⁵ and Elizabeth (Brooks) Clapp of the Deacon Stephen³ Clapp, Samuel², Thomas¹, line of White Oak Plain. Sylvanus⁵ was a son of Nathaniel⁴ Clap (son of Deacon Stephen³) and a brother of *President Thomas*⁴ *Clap of Yale College 1740 to 1765*. Nathaniel⁶ Clap's father, Sylvanus⁵, lived in the old Clap mansion facing White Oak Plain, built before 1686, and noted on a survey of the road leading to Assinippi, made that year, as "*Samuel*² *Clap's new house*." This old house was demolished about 1842 by Nathaniel Briggs⁷ Clap, when he built his new house on the same site, the house now (1936) owned and occupied by Charles A. Berry. Nathaniel⁶ and Anna (Briggs) Clapp lived in the house a little west of that of his father, beside Margaret's, or Wild Cat Brook, now (1936) standing there facing Cirenit Street. Its construction indicates that it was probably built in the first half of the eighteenth century

by Nathaniel⁴ Clap at the time of his marriage to Desire Bourne of Barnstable in 1736.

Children of Anna⁶ Briggs and Nathaniel⁶ Clapp:

- i. NATHANIEL BRIGGS⁷ CLAPP, b. 28 Aug. 1815; married three daughters of Allen and Charlotte (Bowker) Clapp. By his first wife, Anna B. Clapp, he had a son, Frank Allen Clapp, who with his cousin, Eugene H. Clapp, founded in 1873 the Clapp Rubber Company of Hanover, at the old Bardin Forge site on Indian Head River, later known as Curtis Forge. After the death of his wife Anna, Nathaniel B. Clapp married her sister, Mary B. Clapp, and for a third wife, another sister, Julia Clapp.
- ii. DEBORAH ANN CLAPP, b. 13 Aug. 1819; m. Allen Clapp, 2d, a son of Allen and Charlotte (Bowker) Clapp. Allen, 2d, was baptized William for his grandfather, William Clapp, but after the death of a brother, Allen Clap, Jr., his name was legally changed to Allen, and he became known as Allen Clapp, 2d. Eugene H. Clapp was a son of Allen, 2d, and Deborah A. Clapp.
- iii. ANTOINETTE CLAPP, b. 27 Feb. 1822; d. 5 Oct. 1847; unm.
- iv. SYLVANUS CLAPP, b. 18 Oct. 1831; m. Temperance Clapp, dau. of Elijah and Temperance Clapp.

98. MARY FOSTER⁶ BRIGGS (55. *Elisha*⁵, *John*⁴, *James*,³ *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 5 Mar. 1797 in the homestead near Stony Cove Brook (now (1936) Henry C. Ford's). She married 13 Apr. 1815 Elijah Whitten Lewis of Hingham, born in Hingham 8 May 1791, son of Elijah and Sarah (Stockbridge) Lewis. His mother, Sarah Stockbridge, was a granddaughter of Samuel Stockbridge (son of Charles, Sr.) who married Lydia Barrell in 1703, and settled at *Mount Blue* in a house long since demolished. It stood behind that of Carleton W. Litchfield, on the summit of the hill and at the edge of the pasture. Elijah W. Lewis lived on Pleasant Street, South Hingham.

Children of Mary F.⁶ Briggs and Elijah Lewis:

- i. JACOB LEWIS, b. 26 Apr. 1815/16; d. 1879; unm.
- ii. LYDIA TURNER LEWIS, b. 9 Aug. 1818; m. Abraham Somerby; d. 1887.

- iii. MARY FOSTER LEWIS, b. 29 Sept. 1820; m. Josiah S. Harris 1847.
- iv. CAROLINE ATWOOD LEWIS, b. 23 Sept. 1822; m. Isaac Easterbrook 1845.
- v. MARTHA ANN LEWIS, b. 27 Sept. 1824; m. (1) Josiah S. Harris, widower; (2) Jacob Foster of Dorchester.
- vi. ELIJAH WARREN LEWIS, b. 4 Dec. 1826; m. and lived in California.
- vii. WILLIAM GILL LEWIS, b. 11 Feb. 1830; m. and lived in Chicago.
- viii. THOMAS LEWIS, b. 14 Aug. 1832; d. 1836.
- ix. MARIA ELLEN LEWIS, b. 20 Oct. 1834; d. 1836.
- x. AN INFANT, b. and d. 19 Sept. 1837.
- xi. JOSEPH BRIGGS LEWIS, b. 31 Mar. 1839; m. Mary Foster, dau. of Jacob Foster of Dorchester. Removed to Chicago.

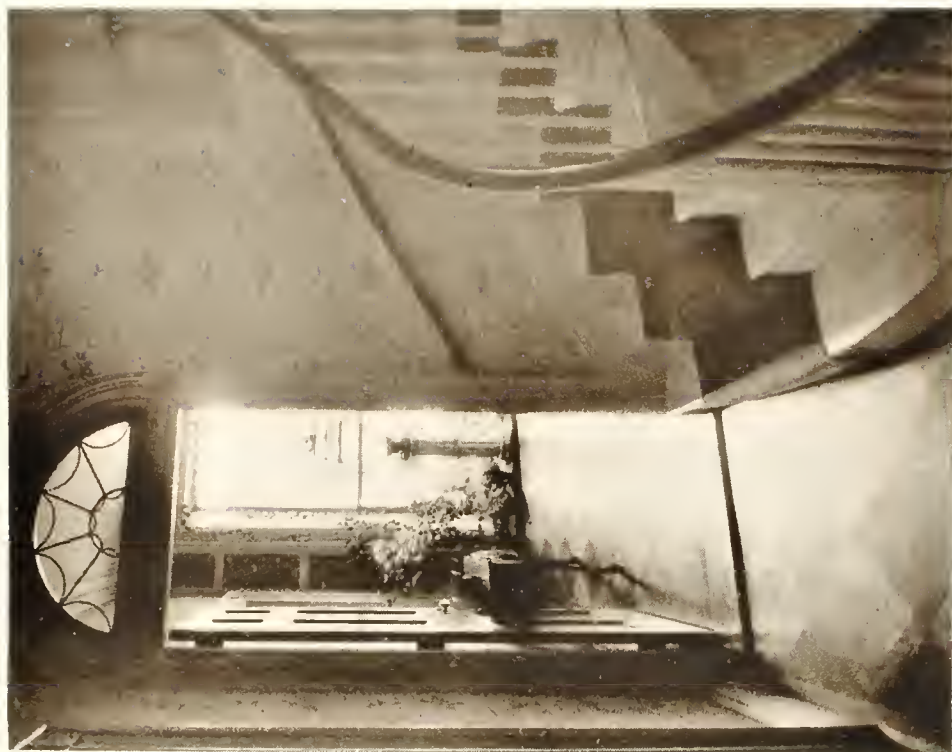
99. ABIGAIL SMITH⁶ BRIGGS (55. *Elisha*⁵, *John*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹), born in Scituate South Parish 4 Mar. 1801, married 18 Nov. 1821 James Stockbridge Lewis of Hingham, son of Elijah Lewis and his second wife, Sarah Stockbridge of Scituate (daughter of James and Martha (Dunbar) Stockbridge). He was a brother of Elijah Whiton Lewis, who married Abigail's sister, Mary Foster Briggs. James S. Lewis was a teacher in the schools of Hingham for many years; town clerk 1828 to 1840; a *trial justice*; representative to General Court 1842 and 1843; selectman for eight years between 1850 and 1861; member of school and various other town committees. Abigail (Briggs) Lewis died in Hingham 16 Aug. 1852, and James S. Lewis married, second, in 1855, Sarah Augusta Loring. There were no children by his second marriage.

Children of Abigail⁶ S. Briggs and James S. Lewis:

- i. JAMES STOCKBRIDGE LEWIS, b. 19 Sept. 1822; m. (1) Sarah Ricker of Dover; (2) Lucy M. Bragdon of Lynn. He lived in Lynn, where he d. 17 Nov. 1886.
- ii. GEORGE LEWIS, b. 29 Dec. 1824; m. Lucy M. Hunt of Newburyport, and lived in Hingham.
- iii. JOHN BRIGGS LEWIS, b. 12 Nov. 1830; m. Emma Thaxter Cushing, and lived in Hingham.



PARLOR AT 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON
(See Chapter XXVI)



LOOKING INTO THE CONSERVATORY AT 64 BEACON
STREET, BOSTON

- iv. WESTON LEWIS, b. 14 Apr. 1834; m. and lived in Boston. He was a merchant.
- v. ABBIE BRIGGS LEWIS, b. 26 Oct. 1838; m. Albert T. Hutchings.

100. JOSEPH WARREN⁶ BRIGGS (55. *Elisha*⁵, *John*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹), born 27 Jan. 1808 near Stony Cove Brook, on the old John Winter farm, was a shipwright, and worked at the Chittenden yard on North River in 1823 for Laban Souther and Elijah Cudworth. He later went to Medford, where he worked for Sprague & James in their yard upon the Mystic River.

He married 16 Nov. 1834, in Medford, Susanna Ewell, born in Scituate 2 Oct. 1814, daughter of John and Relief (Sylvester) Ewell, who built and lived in the house on Central Street, Norwell, in 1936 the residence of Rep. Ernest H. Sparrell. John Ewell sold this house in 1820 to James Barrell, and removed to Medford.

In 1837 J. Warren⁶ Briggs returned to South Scituate, and purchased the homestead of Elisha Foster, Sr., and continued working at his trade in the Chittenden yard until shipbuilding was discontinued. About 1850 he took down the Foster house and built on its site the house in which he died 6 Nov. 1893, aged 85 (now (1936) owned by John A. Cox). His widow died there, 24 Aug. 1897.

Children of J. Warren⁶ Briggs and Susanna Ewell:

- i. CHILD, b. 1848 in South Scituate; d. at birth.
- 141. ii. ANTOINETTE FOSTER BRIGGS, b. 13 Jan. 1850; m. Nathaniel Cushing.
- iii. WALTER HENRY BRIGGS, b. 28 June 1852; d. unm.
- 142. iv. SUSAN FRANCES BRIGGS, b. 19 Feb. 1856; m. J. Warren Foster.

QUITCLAIM DEED, DATED 4 MAY 1844

Nath'l Clapp and others quitclaim to Joseph Warren Briggs five undivided seventh parts of about an acre and three quarters of Meadow in Scituate, the other two sevenths owned by Joseph W., and James Briggs now absent from the State if living, and said one and three quarters acres is owned in common and un-

divided with Jacob Foster & Josiah Foster of said Dorchester and Luther A. Tilden of said Scituate. Bounded easterly by the North River, westerly by the meadow of Mrs. Caroline Cushman of Kingston, and northerly by Timothy Fosters Meadow. *Also* five undivided seventh parts of about two acres of Cedar & Maple Swamp land in said Scituate, situated between the house of Robert Lincoln and the *Bowker Road* * (so called), the other two sevenths are owned by said Joseph W. Briggs and James Briggs now absent from this State if living, being all our right in the above described premises that we have as heirs at law of our late Mother Abigail Briggs deceased, etc.

	Signed,	NATHANIEL CLAPP
ANSON ROBBINS witness to sig.		ANNA CLAPP
of Nath'l & Anna Clapp		SARAH S. BRIGGS
DAVID FEARING witness to sig.		JOHN BRIGGS
of Elijah W., Mary S. & Abigail		ELIJAH W. LEWIS
S. Lewis of Hingham.		MARY F. LEWIS
SAM'L T. LOUD witness to sig.		JAMES S. LEWIS
of Sarah S. Briggs of Dorches-		ABIGAIL S. LEWIS
ter.		SALOME BRIGGS
HENRY CUSHING witness to sig.		
of James S. Lewis of Hingham.		
H. MONTGOMERY witness to sig.		
of John Briggs & Salome		
Briggs.		

The above deed not recorded.

27 April 1837. Ebenezer T. Fogg, Nathaniel Clapp & Nathaniel Brooks deed to Joseph Warren Briggs 12 acres 1 quarter & 37 rods of land with buildings, boundaries given. (The former Elisha Foster property on River Street, Norwell.) (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 191, p. 235.)

* Bowker Road, now Grove Street, Norwell, where the *Bowker-Kent house* stood before its removal to Norwell Village by L. Vernon Briggs who made a gift of it to the First Parish of Norwell in memory of his mother, Sarah Elizabeth Kent Briggs, who was born there in 1834.

CHAPTER XIII

CUSHING OTIS⁶ BRIGGS

HIS WIFE, MERCY LITTLE THOMAS

CONTINUATION OF GENERATION VI

INCLUDING HENRY⁶ BRIGGS

101. CUSHING OTIS⁶ BRIGGS (58. *Thomas B.*⁵, *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 25 Feb. 1787. He was a shipbuilder, and his ancestors had been shipbuilders for generations; his grandfather, JAMES BRIGGS, built the famous ship *Columbia* (see chapter on James Briggs), and his father, THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS, was also a well-known shipbuilder who succeeded James and John Briggs at the yard at Hobart's Landing in Scituate. Thomas Barker Briggs married Lucy Otis, daughter of Dr. James Otis of Scituate, who was a second cousin of the famous patriot, James Otis. Lucy Otis' brothers were Dr. Cushing⁶ Otis and Thomas⁶ Otis. (See Otis chapter.)

Cushing Otis Briggs' sons followed in the father's footsteps as shipbuilders; generally they were trained in the family yard, but my grandfather, Cushing Otis Briggs, was apprenticed to Elisha Briggs, a cousin, at the Brick Kiln Yard at Pembroke. He boarded while in Pembroke in the home of Elisha Briggs, once the residence of Recompense Magoun and in 1888 of Nathaniel Smith (1936, Byron Leonard's).

Elisha was the son of Seth Briggs, who moved from Scituate to Pembroke early in the eighteenth century; he had a large family, several of whom followed the occupation of their father. My grandfather was about the age of Luther Briggs, the son of Elisha, with whom he shared a room. The two boys were apprenticed at the same time, and learned the art of shipbuilding together. Elisha always had a num-

ber of apprentices, and usually took two or three into his home. The relation between Cushing and Luther was a remarkably congenial one, and resulted in a lifelong friendship.

Opposite Elisha Briggs' house, and across the road on a rise of ground in the center of a large field, stood the house of Ichabod Thomas, who previously had built ships at the Brick Kiln Yard, as did also his father. Here Cushing Otis met Ichabod's daughter, Mercy Little Thomas, whom he later married. After coming of age he continued to apply his art in Pembroke for several years, probably attracted by Miss Thomas. When he was 26 years old, or in Jan. 1813, he married her at her father's house in Pembroke.

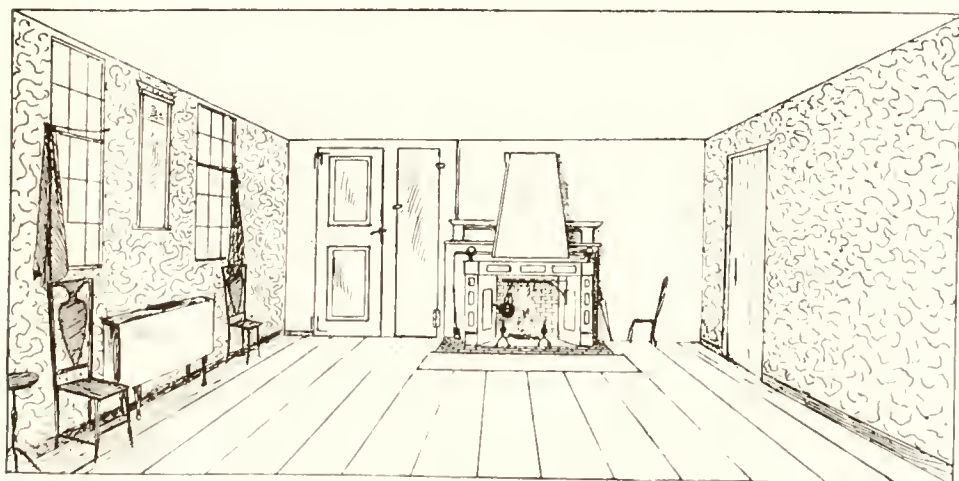
Cushing's father, Thomas Barker Briggs, died in 1806. When Cushing returned to Scituate with his wife he took up his residence in the old Briggs homestead, a house built by Robert Thompson about 1712, on what was then a lane leading northwest from Hobart's Landing gate. (See "History of Shipbuilding", p. 312.) This house had been the home of his grandfather, James Briggs. It was occupied by his maiden aunts, Lucy and Sally, twin daughters of James Briggs. Cushing O. purchased it from them some time before his marriage, and probably the two ladies continued to live there for the rest of their lives. The original building was a low story and a half house, much too small for the two families, and already a hundred years old. Cushing built a large and substantial addition on the south side, making the old homestead into an ell, which later served as a kitchen, and at one time a schoolroom for his own and his neighbors' children. The house is still standing (1936), as are two large black-heart cherry trees, which were planted in front of the house by his son, Lloyd Briggs, the year he left home, 1846. Although 90 years old, they still bear profusely most delicious fruit.

AGENCE CONSULAIRE DE FRANCE
19 CONGRESS STREET
BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS, April 9, 1908.

MY DEAR SIR: — In answer to your note of the seventh instant, I am pleased to say that I bought the estate Cor. Cross and Main



BIRTHPLACE OF LLOYD BRIGGS AND HIS BROTHERS AND SISTERS.
CHERRY TREES IN FRONT, PLANTED BY HIM IN 1846, STILL BEARING
BLACK HEART CHERRIES IN 1936



SCHOOLROOM OR KITCHEN ON REAR OF ABOVE HOUSE, BUILT
IN 1712 AND OCCUPIED BY JAMES BRIGGS, GRANDFATHER OF
C. O. BRIGGS

(See page 778)

From a drawing made by Lloyd Briggs in 1845

Streets in Norwell but did not know that it was the Cushing Otis Briggs place.

I have had the house repaired, a new stable built and little by little will improve the land.

Now knowing who planted the cherry trees, at the front of the house, I would be happy next summer, to send to your father through you, some of their fruit, if I thought it would be pleasing to him.

Very truly yours

J. C. J. FLAMAND.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, 208 Beacon Street, Boston.

In July 1908 I received from Monsieur Flamand a basket of blackheart cherries picked from the trees that my father planted in front of the house before 1846.

The new part of the house was built in preparation for his bride, before Cushing completed the purchase of the old house and before he returned to Scituate, as the following extracts and documents show:

SARAH AND LUCY BRIGGS, sisters of THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS and daughters of JAMES AND HANNAH BARKER BRIGGS, were appointed at a Court of Probate holden at Scituate, 3d December 1804, executrixes of the will of their father JAMES BRIGGS of Scituate.

On 19 April 1808, Lucy and Sarah Briggs deeded to Cushing O. Briggs for \$300, 2½ acres of land in Scituate called the Neal Orchard, bounded Southerly by the Highway leading from Dr. Barnes's Meeting House to Scituate Harbor; Westerly and Northerly by Elisha Briggs's land.

AGREEMENT

23, 1811, between Cushing Otis Briggs of Pembroke, Shipwright and Isaac Totman of Scituate, Housewright. Isaac agrees to procure and deliver on the spot: viz. at the dwelling of Sarah and Lucy Briggs in Scituate, all Boards, Planks, Shingles, Clapboards, Brick, Lime, Nails, Glass and Putty, and every article and material necessary to build and finish the outside of an exactly like the front part of the house in which George Little Esq., now lives in Scituate, and for finishing one room and chamber over it and the entry and staircase above and below, except the timber and joist and the stones

for underpinning the House and the foundation of the Chimneys, as the room and chambers in said George Little's house are made and finished. All the materials to be found and furnished by the said Isaac shall be sound and of a good quality, the Glass clear and shall be delivered in season for the Carpenter to build and complete the said House, so far as it is to be finished, by the first day of March next. . . . To the faithful performance of their agreement they severally bind themselves each to the other in the penal sum of \$500. . . . Cushing Otis is to pay \$300; \$150 at the signing and sealing of the agreement and the other \$150 on or before the first day of November following.

This was the addition or front part of the house where
LLOYD BRIGGS was born.

DEED, 25 MAY 1812

Sarah and Lucy Briggs, Singlewomen, to Henry and Cushing O. Briggs, Shipwrights, all of Scituate: In consideration of \$2000 and the agreement on the part of Henry and Cushing to perform certain matters and things for the said Sarah and Lucy, which are fully specified in a certain bond of even date, certain lots and tracts of land, all lying in Scituate, are conveyed: viz., 14 acres of land with buildings, where Sarah and Lucy now live, bounded northeasterly and southeasterly by the road, other ways wholly by land of James Curtis Jr.; also a lot of land containing 30 acres, known as the Collamore Farm, bounded and described in a deed from James Briggs Jr., David Little and Marcy Waterman, to James Briggs the 3d, 17 June A.D. 1789, recorded in Book 71, Folio 190-191; also one lot of 30 acres known as the Thomas Farm, bounded on the north by land of Jenkins Curtis, east by heirs of Dea. John James and of Dr. Cushing Otis, southerly by land of Simeon Pincon, westerly on Charles Turner's land; also lot of 8 acres of woodland, bounded easterly by the road, southerly by Elisha Haydon's houselot, westerly by Dr. Cushing Otis's land, northerly by William Studley's land; also lot 6½ acres woodland near Black Pond (so-called), being the whole of that lot of land at that place which fell to the wife of James Briggs 3d, deceased, as heir to the estate of Increase Clapp, deceased; also lot 3 acres salt meadow land adjoining the Collamore Farm.

The property known as the Collamore Place or Collamore Farm was the property upon which Peter and Capt. Anthony

Collamore had lived, northeast of Belle House Neck. For some years past it has been owned by Roger S. Dix, but is still spoken of as the "Collamore Place" (1936).

DEED

Henry Briggs deeds to Cushing O. Briggs, Shipwright, May 25, 1812, for \$400, Dwelling house, barn and well, on lot of land which Henry Briggs and Cushing Otis Briggs have this day purchased of Sarah and Lucy Briggs, being the same lot of land and buildings where said Sarah and Lucy now live in Scituate.

DEED, 27TH FEBRUARY, 1815

Division of Property mentioned Above

. . . Henry Briggs and Cushing Otis Briggs, both of Scituate in the County of Plymouth, Shipwrights, stand seized in fee and possession in equal proportion, in common and undivided, of the three several lots and tracts of land, with all buildings thereon, all lying in Scituate aforesaid, — Viz. The first lot, containing about fourteen acres more or less, with the buildings thereon, where the said Cushing Otis Briggs now lives, — also the Second Lot, containing about twenty-two acres, more or less, being the whole of the upland in the Collimore place or farm — also the Third Lot containing about thirty acres known by the name of the Thomas Farm — for a more particular bounds and description of the aforesaid three lots reference may be had to the Deed of the same land from Sarah Briggs and Lucy Briggs to the said Henry Briggs and Cushing Otis Briggs bearing the date of the 25th day of May 1812 now on record with the Registry of Deeds for said County, Book 112, folio 61 — Therefore that each of the aforesaid parties may forever hereafter have, hold and enjoy their respective half or proportion of the above mentioned three lots of Land in severalty, we do hereby mutually agree to make a Division or partition of the same in the following manner — Viz — I the said Cushing Otis Briggs do hereby covenant for myself and my heirs, Executors and administrators, That the said Henry Briggs his Heirs, and assigns shall forever hereafter have, hold and enjoy as his half part or portion of the aforesaid lots of land, &c. now to be divided. The Several Lots or tracts of land hereafter mentioncd, (Viz) first, Lot of about two acres of field and pasture in front of the House as the same is now inclosed with walls and fence, the northwesterly wall and fence at the end next

the House is about eight rods from the House this being part of the said first or fourteen-acre Lot, it is agreed by Henry that he nor his heirs or assigns shall not have liberty to set out or place any tree on the same so as to hinder or take off the prospect to the road in front of the said Cushing Otis Briggs' now Dwelling house — Second Lot, about one and three quarters acres of land called the Neal orchard as the same is now enclosed with fence this also is a part of the aforesaid fourteen acres or First Lot — Third Lot — also containing about twenty-two acres of land out of the Collimore place aforesaid, being the whole of the upland belonging to said Collimore place exclusive of the meadow, with all the privileges and appurtenances belonging to the several Lots of Land set off to the said Henry aforesaid; excepting as it respects the trees aforesaid — and I, the said Henry Briggs do hereby covenant for myself and my heirs Executors and administrators, That the said Cushing Otis Briggs, his heirs and assigns shall forever hereafter have, hold and enjoy as his half part or portion of the aforesaid Land, &c, now to be divided — The several Lots of Land hereafter mentioned, Viz. first, all the residue of the land and buildings thereon contained which is included in the First or fourteen-acre Lot, being about ten acres and one quarter, the other part thereof being set to said Henry as aforesaid — also about thirty acres of Land being the Third Lot of land now to be Divided, as mentioned on the other side known by the name of the Thomas Farm with all the privileges and appurtenances belonging to the Several Lots of Land and buildings set to the said Cushing Otis Briggs as aforesaid. . . .

Soon after this, C. O. Briggs began building vessels on his own account, at first at the Brick Kiln Yard, but probably making his home in Scituate, as his first child was born there on 8 Oct. 1813. In 1815 he built, at the Brick Kiln Yard, the brig *Perseverance*, 184 tons, two decks, two masts, 78 feet long, 23 wide, 11 deep, which he sold to Elijah Loring, Joshua Ellis and Robert Thompson of Boston, and Capt. Thomas Snow became master of her. The following year, 1816, he built the brig *Ann*, a double-decker of 204 tons, with a billet figurehead and two masts; she was 86 feet long, 23 wide and 11 deep, and was also sold to Boston owners.

My grandfather seems to have been a very busy man. He was called from home to build in other yards, and from

a letter which he wrote from Salem to his wife it appears that he and his brother Henry were building a vessel in Salem in the summer of 1816. He must have gone there immediately on finishing his last boat in the Brick Kiln Yards. In spite of his formal expression, his tenderness for his wife is clearly to be read. The strongest characteristic of the Briggs family, as will be seen, is family affection.

CUSHING O. BRIGGS TO HIS WIFE AT SCITUATE

SALEM, 8 AUG. 1816

DEAREST AND MOST BELOVED FRIEND:—I had the pleasure of reading the letter that you sent me day before yesterday and, though short, I had the satisfaction to learn that you and the children were in good health, for which my heart feels warm'd. . . . So amiable a wife has made me more sensible of God's goodness to me than all others. . . . I arrived here the same day that I came from home at twelve o'clock, and went to work in the Yard that afternoon. I walked from Quiney to Lynn, about 16 miles, but it was quite cool and I did not feel tired in the least the next day. I cut my leg and expected to be laid up, but it has healed entirely causing me to lose only one half day. . . . One thing I wish you to take my word for, that is that if other folks do write to their wives when I don't they have not more affection for them than I have for mine. There is not a moment in the day but I think of my coming home. It seems as if the time would never arrive. We have concluded for Captain Tilden and Henry to go first, as they came from home first. . . . I am in hopes that we shall have the society of each other this winter. If you don't make haste you will not get to the Harbor or to Pembroke until I go with you. I mean to take time to go on visits with you this winter; if there is nothing to prevent more than I know of at present. I work hard enough to take some comfort this fall. Do be careful of yourself in this hot weather; and I tell you again, if you have any work put it out; I shall be glad to pay for it. Enjoy life while you have your youth and health, and do not make yourself old while you are young. . . . Henry requested me to let Isaac come as far as Minot's in Dorehester, if you can spare him conveniently. . . . I shall conclude by telling you that I always pray that Heaven's choicest blessings may be showered on your head.

Your truly affectionate husband,

CUSHING O. BRIGGS.

From time to time, as his means permitted, my grandfather continued to add to his property in Scituate. The following abstracts from the records show his interest in enlarging and perfecting his estate:

25 Jan. 1820. Lemuel Jacobs Jr. of Scituate Yeoman deeds to Cushing Otis Briggs, Shipwright, one and a quarter acres adjoining Cushing Otis Briggs's Land and Henry Briggs's Land.

22 Dec. 1821. Lemuel Jacobs Jr. of Scituate, Yeoman, sells Cushing Otis Briggs, Shipwright, half an acre of Land adjoining Northwesterly and Northeasterly on the said Cushing Otis Briggs's Homestead.

25 April 1822. Rec. 13 May 1823. Samuel A. Turner deeds $\frac{3}{4}$ acre & 3 rods of Pasture land in Scituate to Cushing O. Briggs, lying on the Southwesterly side of the Highway leading from John Turner's to John Sampson's, boundaries beginning at N. E. corner of George Washington Stetson's land which he purchased of Jonathan Hatch, and running Easterly with sd Highway, — South to C. O. Briggs' land, — Northerly to Geo. W. Stetson's land. Signed Samuel A. Turner, and wife Lydia Turner.

25 Jan. 1823. Lemuel Jacobs Jr. deeds Cushing O. Briggs in consideration of \$19.40, 1a $\frac{1}{4}$ & 7 rds of Land adjoining C. O. Briggs' field back of his house, adjoining Henry Briggs' land on the south. Witnesses, — Wm. Hammatt, — Edward Cushing.

6 April 1827. Henry Briggs to Cushing O. Briggs. Henry Briggs in consideration of \$100 remitted, released and forever quitclaimed a certain piece of land in front of Cushing Otis Briggs's now dwelling House. . . .

16 Nov. 1829. Thomas Perkins of Scituate, Yeoman, sells to Cushing O. Briggs of Scituate, Shipwright, 24 acres of pasture and brush land in Scituate, bounded on the northwest corner by land of Lemuel Jacobs Jr., land near the house where Charles Mann now lives, southerly by Major Curtis's land, westerly by Cushing O. Briggs's land, northerly by the road leading from Elisha Hayden's to Cushing O. Briggs's. Signed by Thomas Perkins and his wife, Phebe C. Perkins.

[Thomas Perkins lived in the "Sheafe house" on Wilson Hill. Elisha Hayden on the corner of Winter and Cross streets, where his grandson, Amos H. Tilden, now (1936) lives.]

17 July 1830. Samuel Hatch of Scituate, Yeoman, and his wife Mercy, and Sarah Jacobs, Singlewoman, of Scituate, in consideration of \$40 convey to Cushing O. Briggs one half acre of pasture land on northerly side of the road leading from the said

Cushing O. Briggs's Dwelling House to John Sampson's, bounded on the southwest by a field lately owned by the late Hon. William Cushing.

19 October 1830. Cushing Otis, as treasurer of the South Parish in Scituate, deeds to Cushing Otis Briggs of Scituate, Shipwright, for a consideration of \$65.28, *one pew in the said Parish Meeting House*, No. 33.

Soon after selling the brig *Ann*, Cushing Otis Briggs entered into a partnership with his brother Henry, two years his junior, who had served his apprenticeship with the Fosters at the Wanton Shipyard, South Scituate. (See "History of Shipbuilding.") James Briggs had been succeeded at the Briggs yard at Hobart's Landing by his son, Thomas Barker Briggs, father of Cushing Otis Briggs. When Cushing returned to Scituate with his bride in 1813, his mother, Lucy Otis Briggs, was living in Scituate with her brother, Dr. Cushing Otis. She died in 1832, at the age of 70.

Henry and C. O. Briggs were noted shipbuilders, enjoying to a high degree the confidence of Boston merchants. Messrs. T. B. Wales & Co. were among those who employed them as long as they continued building. Cushing Otis survived for many years his brother Henry, who died in 1837.

When the two brothers formed their partnership they took possession of the family yard at Hobart's Landing, where they built until 1830. The first vessel that they built together was in 1817, the schooner *Catherine*, 61 tons, for Capt. Moses Rich of Scituate, for whose wife she was named. "When she was launched," says the "History of Shipbuilding on the North River," "Tom Briggs, brother of Cushing and Henry, sat on the cap of the bowsprit and christened her by breaking a bottle of wine over her bow." "Uncle Tom" Briggs was known to several generations of children who listened to the tales of his exploits told at the fireside in the winter evenings. His most famous adventure on the privateer *Julian Smith* in the War of 1812 has previously been related. Cushing Otis Briggs retained an interest in the *Catherine*, as did John Bates, her first mate. The rigging for this vessel was fitted in the yard in front of the

Stockbridge house at Greenbush, later the residence of the late Pelham Williams, that part of the yard near the Old Oaken Bucket Pond, that is now (1936) a grove. Cushing O. Briggs was master carpenter in 1818 of the schooner *Mary Ann*, 76 tons, of Boston, and was one of her owners, as were Thomas B. Wales, Nathaniel H. Emmons of Boston, and others. Between 1820 and 1824 Henry Briggs was master carpenter of several vessels built by the brothers, accounts of them being given under 102. Henry Briggs. C. O. and H. Briggs built in 1823 the brig *Ocean*, 173 tons, of Boston, in which they were part owners with Nathaniel Emmons and Thomas B. Wales of Boston. After a voyage or two between American and European ports as a merchantman, she was later used as a Boston and Baltimore packet, and in 1852 was in the north Atlantic, whaling. She was lost in the south Atlantic in 1867. In 1824 the brothers built the brig *Billow*, 160 tons, of Boston, for Nathaniel H. Emmons and Thomas B. Wales. She proved to be very successful for her owners, and made some remarkably quick passages. In 1825 they built two vessels, the schooner *Adams*, 111 tons, for Emmons and Wales, and the schooner *Ontario* for Capt. Henry Vinal of Scituate. In 1826 the Briggs brothers built the brig *Oregon*, 200 tons, of Boston; owners, Henry Hovey of Boston and Jesse Dunbar, senior and junior, of Scituate. In 1827 they built for T. B. Wales & Co. the brig *Boston*, 242 tons, of Boston. In 1828 they built the *Ivanhoe*, 192 tons, of Boston, for another firm, but they continued to build almost every year for T. B. Wales. In 1829 they built for T. B. Wales and others the brig *Cronstadt*, copper and iron fastened, 273 tons register, a famous vessel engaged chiefly in the Russian trade, finally sold in South America in 1865. A water color of this vessel hung for many years in the office of Thomas B. Wales & Co., 40 Water Street, Boston, representing her ashore on Falsterbo Reef, off Sweden, 12 Aug. 1840. In 1829 they built the schooner *Billow*, 83 tons, of Scituate, in which members of the Briggs family continued to have interest for many years.

Besides having shares in many of the boats which they

District of Plymouth - Port of Setauate

I Cushing O. Briggs, Master Carpenter of Setauate, do certify, that the Schooner Mary Ann was built by me, at Setauate, and under my inspection, during the last & present year, for Thomas Brooks & Co. of Boston, & that said Schooner, is an American built vessel, with one Deck, Two Masts, is sixty feet in length, Seven feet in depth, and eighteen feet nine & half inches in breadth, and Seventy Six Tons burthen.

Witness my hand in Setauate, this 26th day of September, Eighteen hundred & one.

Cushing O Briggs

CERTIFICATE OF VESSEL BUILT AT BRIGGS YARD, NORTH RIVER

(See page 548)



LIBRARY, 61 BEACON STREET, BOSTON

(See Chapter XXVI)

built themselves, the Briggs Brothers had interests in other ships, as shown by the following bill of sale:

May 10, 1828, John Beal of Scituate, Cooper, for \$126, sells to Henry Briggs and Cushing O. Briggs of Scituate, Ships Carpenters, "one sixteenth part of the Hull or body of the good sloop *Liberator*, together with one sixteenth part of all and singular her appurtenances, now lying at Scituate and enrolled at the port of New London. . . ." The *Liberator* was built at Lyme, Conn., in 1826; was a square-sterned sloop of 43 tons; length, 53 feet 7 inches; breadth, 18 feet 4 inches; one deck and one mast.

Among Cushing Otis Briggs' papers I found this memorandum of timber used at his yard:

Mr. Allen of Marsfield is to have 3 dollars 75 Cts. per ton & Mr. Dean is to get it for 7^s 6^d per ton by my finding a foreman & cart to Samuel Dickerman's for 3 dollars per ton — about 12 tons. Capt. James Skinner timber at 3½ dollars per ton — 94 feet. Abraham Crowleys timber at 4 dollars per ton — 229½ feet. Knight Days timber at 3½ dollars per ton 51½ feet the stern post was in this lot. Obadiah Brintons timber about 15 tons not got yet to be 4 dollars per ton. Mr. Deans timber at the rate of the other as it is for goodness his 3 inch plank to be 118 dollars per thousand delivered in the yard he is to have them to be very good full 3 inches thick he has agreed to take out the carting from Samuel Dickerman's. Hiram Coplands 3 inch plank to be 118 dollars per thousand. Kingmans tronels to be \$5.75 Cts per thousand. Eliphalet Kingmans 2½ oak plank at 70 dollars per thousand about 8 hundred feet & one load of nees at 20 dollars per ton. Manleys keel to be 28 dollars if sound & his timber at 12 dollars per ton. Hiram Coplands 2½ plank about one hundred feet at 65 dollars per thousand. Benyⁿ Rogers timber at 8 dollars per ton. Mr. Leonards timber at 5½ per ton in the woods. Doct. Otis' timber at 9½ per ton & he to cart it if it should prove very good it is to be 10 dollars. Kingmans keel pieces to be 52 dollars. Lieut. Reeds 3 inch pine plank to be 55 dollars per thousand if very good — his 2½ pine to be 40 dollars per thousand. Mister Howard, keel to be 26 dollars if sound if not no bargain. Mr. Greens keel is to be 10 dollars if sound at Marsfield. Theron Aimes timber to be 10 dollars pr. ton to be got out in a handsome manner. Browns timber at Abington one stick at 10 dollars per ton. Mr. Deans 3 inch plank to me to be as good as Copelands, & at the same price. Timothy Foster timber at 7 dollars per ton.

MARSHFIELD, November 1st. 1829.

Then Received of C. O. & H. Briggs twenty one dollars & seventy five Cts in full for labour done for them.

ALLEN LAPHAM.

About 1830, or a little later, my grandfather and his brother Henry dissolved partnership, but continued to build on adjoining yards at Hobart's Landing. Cushing O. occupied the old, or upper, yard, and Henry the one farther down the river. The following is a copy of an old letter:

SCITUATE, November 5, 1830.

MESS. BENJAMIN RICH & SON.

GENT.:— We have got our *own brig down river* & have been waiting five days for a wind, to go out. The season is so far advanced we think it more prudent for us to get her insured, if we can get it done for 20 dollars if you could get five thousand insured on the vessel for sixteen or twenty dollars should like to have it done if not should like to know the lowest it could be done for you may send us an answer by the bearer of this the vessel has two masts three sails, chain cable and anchor.

CUSHING O. BRIGGS.

This letter probably referred to the brig *Hamilton*, 164 tons, of which Cushing Otis Briggs was master carpenter in 1830. John Foster, one of the assistants in the yard, wrote from South Scituate on 15 Jan. 1831, to the "Hon. Cushing Otis M.D." at Boston, a letter describing an exciting meeting of the Franklin Association, adding in a post-script:

One thing I have omitted which is of more consequence than anything I have stated. Mr. Cushing O. Briggs met with a painful accident a few days since in the yard; falling on a plank, he stuck a large nail in his knee, or rather just below it, and he has not been able to move it since. I think, Dr., he needs your advice and help. Dr. James attends him. He is well otherwise, but I understand it pains him very much. Yr. J. F. Jr.

Mr. Briggs was ill for some time, but was finally able to resume his work at the yard. The next vessel he built seems

to have been the schooner *Columbia*, 75 tons, of Scituate, in 1834, in which he retained a share; in 1836 she was under Capt. Peleg H. Collier, coasting and mackerel fishing. In 1835 he built the brig *Columbia*, 131 tons, of Boston; and in the same year he was master carpenter of the brig *Angel*, 157 tons, for Jeremiah B. Thompson, Charles B. Fessenden and Benjamin Hurd Skinner of Boston. The building of this vessel was an unfortunate undertaking for Cushing O. Briggs, who had paid his workmen for their labor before delivering the vessel to her owners. The firm of Thompson & Fessenden failed before paying for the vessel, and the loss fell heavily on Mr. Briggs, who became greatly discouraged. His son, William T. Briggs, wrote at this time (about 1836) to Benjamin Rich & Son of Boston, one of his fathers' creditors, as follows:

MESSRS. BENJAMIN RICH & SON.

GENTLEMEN: — Under circumstances of the deepest affliction I now address you in behalf of my father and our afflicted family. He, who for forty years has labored hard and honestly to obtain the little he has, which is now to be taken from him, has bowed beneath the stroke. His worst fears are more than realized. The news of his loss was immediately spread throughout the whole region. . . . What to do we do not know. For the parent of a family of eight children to be brought suddenly from a comfortable state of prosperity to be dependent and not have a dollar he can call his own is indeed a misfortune. My father has requested me to see you and the unhappy concern that has caused him this misfortune, and beseech you to make some arrangement that would save him from utter ruin in his old age. His creditors will have strictest justice done them as far as it is possible to do it, which will nearly satisfy all, but leave him without a dollar. . . . You know the quickness of his feelings and that the prospect which awaits him is sufficient to drive him to distraction. I shall be up on Tuesday, and beseech you not to rest your head upon your pillow until you have obtained something that will again cause rejoicing in the bosom of our family. Entreat Mr. Skinner to do something to relieve us. And if your efforts are crowned with success you will have the reward of an approving conscience. . . .

Respectfully yours,

WM. T. BRIGGS.

Arrangements were made whereby Cushing Otis Briggs made over to Anson Robbins and to his sons, Charles C. and William T. Briggs, all the property that he possessed, including, as stated in the deed of 23 Apr. 1837 (recorded p. 251, No. 627, Plymouth County Records) "all my real estate lying and being in Scituate, consisting of my homestead farm and buildings thereon, and shipyard at Hobart's Landing, containing 8 acres, with the work house thereon" and other real estate described in the deed. This was probably in the form of a mortgage to raise sufficient money to pay his creditors in full and to carry on his work as a shipwright, which was successful, and he was able to redeem his home and the shipyard, as is shown by a deed from Anson Robbins, Charles C. Briggs and William T. Briggs to Cushing Otis Briggs, which included all the property which he had previously deeded to them, and which is recorded in Plymouth County Records, Book 196, p. 237, under date of 3 Nov. 1838.

On 6 May 1837 Mary Perry, at Hanson, wrote to her sister, Cushing O. Briggs' wife, Marcy L. Briggs, at Scituate:

DEAR SISTER: — I heard last week that Mr. Briggs had lost a lot of money in consequence of others failing who owed him. I have thought much of you since but could not go to Scituate, having been sick with a cold; Mr. P. has been sick likewise. Father and Mother are comfortable. . . . If you can not come soon do write and send it to William Copeland, and I can get it on the Sabbath. These distressing times many have the name of failing who pay their debts eventually. I hope this may be the case with those who owe Mr. Briggs. . . .

Give my love to your husband.

Your affectionate sister,

M. PERRY.

By Nov. 1838 his affairs were adjusted, and the firm of Cushing O. Briggs & Sons began building vessels once more at the family yard. Mr. Briggs retained for himself only a small interest in the firm, leaving its active management in the hands of his sons Charles and William. With William T. Briggs as master carpenter, they built that year the bark *Emma Isadora*, 231 tons, of Boston, Edward Fletcher,

master, owned by Henry T. Fletcher of Boston. She was originally employed in the Smyrna trade, and was noted for her fine sailing qualities, as well as for the number of missionaries and the quantity of New England rum that she carried into Smyrna. In 1840 they built the brig *Senator*, 193 tons, which they sold on 20 Mar. 1840 to Bangs Pepper of Brewster, master mariner, and Elkanah Bangs of Boston, merchant. On 4 Apr. 1840 Charles C. and William T. Briggs bought one half interest in her and built the same year (1840) the brig *Michigan*, 130 tons, in which they also retained an interest. She was built for Scituate owners, who engaged her in the foreign trade. In 1841 the bark *Susan Jane*, 274 tons, the largest vessel built by them, was built for Capt. Edward and Henry T. Fletcher of Boston, to be used in the Mediterranean trade. John H. B. Lang, who owned her at one time, described her as "a saucy little craft," and says "she would sail like the wind." This was the last vessel built by the Briggses at Hobart's Landing. In 1874 this vessel, which had various interesting adventures, was owned in St. John, N. B., sailing under the British flag. (See Briggs' "History of Shipbuilding.")

All of the sons of Cushing Otis Briggs served first in the family yard. The oldest, CHARLES CUSHING BRIGGS, seems to have distinguished himself early in school, as at the age of eleven he won the following testimonial from his teacher, which has been preserved for one hundred and eleven years. It is worth reading by those who wish to appreciate the tasks required of children in those days:

Reward

This certifies that Master Charles C. Briggs has committed to memory Cumming's Modern and Ancient Geography once, and given correct answers to 665 questions, relating to places, &c. on the maps. Woodbridge' Geography nearly once. 40 columns of Dictionary. 34 verses in the New Testament. 36 pages of definitions. Multiplication Tables, and 10 pieces on different subjects.

By obedience and good behaviour he has secured the esteem of his instructress.

T. F. FOSTER, 1824.

Temperance F. Foster was later Mrs. Francis Turner.

There were doubtless other such testimonials won by Charles C. and his brother, William T., who were apparently close friends, were educated together, and later apprenticed at the same time. Charles is described as "a noble young man, of great promise and exemplary character." He was an invalid for the greater part of his life, but bore his long illness with courage and resignation, as his letters will show. So long as he was able, he pursued his art of shipbuilding in partnership with his brother William and his father.

The letter which follows, being dated from Duxbury, shows that William T. Briggs, aged 20, was working for Samuel Cushing in Duxbury in the summer of 1835. My father, Lloyd Briggs, was only five years of age at that time.

DUXBURY Friday Eve. July 17th 1835

MR. CHARLES C. BRIGGS, Scituate, Mass.

DEAR SIR: — With all due reverence to a name worthy of so much respect, I would crave the privilege of addressing to you a few words by way of application. I want to let you know the state of affairs here in hopes that by so doing you or some of your household will be induced to return the compliment, and favor me with a short history of the remarkable events which have occurred in your neighborhood since my absence. Without longer preamble then I proceed to tell my story which of necessity must be short. The effects of *high living* have so wrought upon my animal feelings as to produce a high degree of mental alienation, and if I do not write quite so high-flown as common, the fault must be charged to a "*stomach full of beef and pork.*" Not to the pork only must the charge be laid; the cook comes in for more than an equal share. To have a person of such delicate proportions, so graceful in her movements, and of such majestic mien to stand at your elbow and serve up the wholesome diet; it next to impossible for one to abstain from eating to excess. Our landlady is indeed a beautiful creature, not less remarkable for symetry of form than for gigantic proportions. Her weight I am confident cannot be less than 240, of a billious temperament, and strong as Hercules. She can take a barrel of water on her knees and drink from the bung with all the ease imaginable; and I often tremble at seeing the floor settle when she walks across it, for fear that our next abode will be in the bottom



SCHOOLHOUSE, SOUTH SCITUATE, NEXT TO THE
DR. CUSHING OTIS HOUSE, WHERE THE CHILD-
REN OF CUSHING OTIS BRIGGS ATTENDED
SCHOOL

(See Chapter XIII)



SARAH ELIZABETH BRIGGS

1863-1937

DAUGHTER OF JOHN R. AND GRAND-
DAUGHTER OF HENRY BRIGGS

(See page 982)



CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, JR.

1761-1859

FATHER OF MRS. C. O. BRIGGS

(See page 719)

of the cellar. Tell mother that the cake she gave me proved a sweet morsel for it took me two or three days to get naturalized, and the different dishes were so inviting that I did not know which to begin upon first, and so I was kept between hawk and buzzard nibbling a little upon each and finally finishing on the cake. But glory to her old grey head Ant Brewster now provides well, and gives us the best she has got and enough of it. Her Turkish beard full $\frac{3}{4}$ of an inch long waves gracefully over a toothless mouth and furnishes an agreeable offset to her stately person. But my story is already too long, though I scarcely know where to stop when speaking on a subject so exciting. I have a fine yard to work in and fine fellows to work with. I do not wish to work with a better man than Sam¹ Cushing. Here I must stop short though I might keep writing nonsense half the night:

In great haste

Love to all from your brother

W^m. T. BRIGGS.

CHARLES CUSHING BRIGGS, SCITUATE, TO HIS AUNT, DEBORAH
CUSHING BRIGGS, BOSTON

SCITUATE, MASS., January 11, 1842.

DEAR AUNT: — . . . If you expect anything new I think you will be disappointed, for you hear so frequently from Scituate that I fear anything I may write will only be a repetition. I have gained some in strength and do not cough so much. I do not, however, go out without the weather is very pleasant. It is now about five months since I have done any labor, and it is something of a task to be confined so long. I ought to be very thankful that I have been so free from pain and that I have every comfort, which it is in the power of kindness to bestow. . . . Since you have been at Boston I believe we have had no lectures of any kind and everything else in the way of improvement is at a standstill. Your presence and assistance will be very much missed in this respect. I was very sorry you were not present at the meeting of the "Cold Water Army" on New Year's Day, as you feel so much interested in it. Dialogues and pieces were spoken by several of the children, all of whom performed very well. One piece, composed by Dr. Gale, was spoken by his daughter with remarkable effect. Several new banners were prepared by Mr. May, on one of which was inscribed. "To the Memory of Turner Litchfield, Jr." He belonged to the Army and requested before he died that his little effects might be given

to the "Cold Water Army" to purchase banners, &c. The temperance cause continues to prosper, although little has been done to advance it this winter. The burthen of the cause in this as in every other reform for the most part is borne by a few individuals. There are too many who are good temperance men, good abolitionists, but it costs them nothing. They will not make any sacrifices, but are willing to follow when the way is cleared if others will but lead. Such are but little help to any cause. There is to be a temperance meeting at the schoolhouse near Mr. Clapp's very soon. Edward James was chosen Secretary at the last meeting of the Society. He is quite active and will prove a valuable addition to our ranks. Do you attend any of the temperance meetings which are numerous in Boston this winter, or any of the lectures with which the city abounds? It is generally the case with a great many of the young people that they would use double the exertion to attend the ball than they would to improve the mind. . . . Give my respects to Mrs. Otis, Capt. Cushing's family and A.

I subscribe,

Your Nephew,

CHARLES C. BRIGGS.

CHARLES C. BRIGGS, TO HIS AUNT, MISS DEBORAH C. BRIGGS,
BOSTON, MASS.

SCITUATE, March 12, 1842.

DEAR FRIEND:—Accept my thanks for your very welcome letter. . . . By the account in the papers I should think you must have had a fine opportunity for attending temperance and anti-slavery meetings. Mr. Remond, a colored man, was here as you have probably heard, and delivered a temperance and an anti-slavery lecture. There was also a temperance meeting at the harbor, at which upwards of fifty persons signed the pledge. The evil is here to a considerable extent, and great sacrifices must be made before it is removed. My confinement has not been irksome, although it has been so long. Those persons who have all their life been in enjoyment of good health know not the blessings they enjoy. . . . Riches and prosperity will gain us many apparent friends in this world, but they seldom afford any true enjoyment.

There has been considerable interest manifested upon the subject of religion at Hanover Four Corners lately. Mr. Cutler, the minister who preaches there, is very much engaged. Samuel

Tolman, Jr., was baptized two weeks ago and intends to be taken into the Episcopal Church Sabbath after next, or to be confirmed, as they term it. . . . We have had considerable difficulty in this school district about a private school and choosing an agent. The district have had several meetings, but met not very pleasant. Great opposition was made to Mr. Luffkin teaching a private school. . . . William starts for Whitesboro on Monday, to be gone nine months or more from home. It is a long time to be gone.

Uncle Tom came home today from Boston. He was full of talk about Mr. Knapp and said that he had been to hear him most all the time. . . . Father wished me to say that he had breakfast soon enough, but the packet did not go, and he walked as far as Snappet, when the stage overtook him and he got home before night.

From your friend,

CHARLES C. BRIGGS.

Packets ran from Boston to Hingham and to North River. *Snappet* was Assinippi or North Hanover.

Charles Cushing Briggs died of pulmonary tuberculosis 11 Apr. 1843. His sister Hannah writes on that day: "This is a day long to be remembered on account of the sadness and sorrow that have taken the place of joy."

Cushing Otis Briggs wrote to his son, William T. Briggs, in May 1843, at Oneida Institute at Whitesboro, New York, addressing him as "my dear and much-loved son." He says:

The death of our beloved Charles has bowed us down with sorrow, although I had endeavored to prepare myself to meet it with resignation. . . . I found I knew nothing of myself when it came. How bitter is the cup to part with children so dearly loved as mine. . . . Charles and William — How those names have been associated together in my mind for five and twenty years! . . . I feel that owing to my over-anxious solicitude for your welfare if I have done and said anything to have given you a moments pain, I can only look back upon my past life and see my errors in regard to my conduct to my children although at the time I thought I must be pretty nearly right. I have erred sadly in prudence and judgment, but never have nor ever shall be wanting in parental affection. . . . I will conclude by requesting

you to let us hear from you as often as you can afford time to write. The news of your prosperity and happiness will always be a source of the greatest comfort to your affectionate Father.

MERCY LITTLE THOMAS, wife of Cushing Otis⁶ Briggs, was born in Pembroke 25 Sept. 1791, daughter of CAPT. ICHABOD THOMAS, JR., and his wife, POLLY THOMAS. Her father, Capt. Ichabod Thomas, was a descendant of John Thomas of Marshfield, who came to Plymouth under the protection of Governor Edward Winslow; while her mother, Polly Thomas, was descended from the Merchant Adventurer, William Thomas, who was one of the earliest settlers at Green Harbor. (See Thomas chapter.) The house in which Mercy Thomas was born stands on Washington Street, North Pembroke, a large colonial house on a green knoll, rising above a small stream tributary to Robinson's Creek and commanding a fine view of the brook, valley and surrounding hills. The site is very ancient, and was probably a part of an early grant from the town of Duxbury to Lieut. Francis Barker, son of ROBERT BARKER, my own ancestor. This site was later conveyed to Francis' son, Thomas Barker, born in 1686, who built a large house, where he lived with his numerous family. His wife was Bethia, daughter of Isaac Little of Marshfield, and sister of the Hon. Isaac Little of Pembroke. Thomas Barker ranked as a "gentleman," held many public offices, and in 1714 was called *Captain Barker*. In 1733 he sold his estate to Thomas Tracy of Pembroke, and removed with his eldest son Thomas to North Carolina, where he died the following year, aged 48. The son, Thomas, Jr., became a noted lawyer and wealthy man. He owned three plantations on the Roanoke, and more than three hundred negroes. His uncle was Chief Justice Little. This Col. Thomas Barker's daughter Elizabeth, born in 1745, was early left an orphan. She was his only surviving child, and was educated in Virginia by her kinsman, Governor Peyton Randolph of Williamsburg, Va. Henry Wheatland Litchfield, to whom I am indebted for much of this information, states, in his "Ancient Landmarks of Pembroke,"



THOMAS FAMILY COAT OF ARMS
From very old china inherited by L. V. Briggs

Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

Head-Quarters, March 1st 1807



THE GOVERNOR and Commander in Chief,
has accepted the Resignation of
Captain, Charles Thomas
of the *second Regiment* in the
first Brigade and *fifth* Division of the
MILITIA of this Commonwealth; and he is here-
by honorably discharged, at his own request, from
the Office of *Captain* in the
Regiment aforesaid.

By Order of the Captain General.

W. C. C. C.

Adjutant General.

that Elizabeth Barker refused offers of marriage from Thomas Jefferson and Patrick Henry, and finally married Col. William Tunstall of Carolina, where her descendants still live.

In 1737 Thomas Tracy, after four years, sold the estate in Pembroke that he had purchased from Thomas Barker to James Randall, who occupied it until 1761, when he sold it for £108 to Ichabod Thomas, Sr., shipwright, of Marshfield. The Thomas estate was sold in 1809 to Anthony Collamore, a physician practicing in Pembroke. His son, Henry H. Collamore, succeeded to the estate, and after his removal to Fall River it was sold to the Hon. James M. W. Hall of Newton (who was very much interested in the better care and treatment of the mentally ill and served with me for several years on the Massachusetts State Board of Insanity). My grandmother, Mercy Little Thomas, was undoubtedly named for some member of the Little family, one of whom, Bethia, married Thomas Barker, and came to live on this estate in 1711. (See Isaac Thomas chapter.)

My grandmother's life must have been a busy one, with housekeeping, the care of the maiden aunts, and a rapidly increasing family of her own, — a family of six sons and two daughters.

In spite of her busy life she continued to keep in touch with her parents and her sister Mary, Mrs. Joshua Perry. In 1818 the Perrys went to Brooks, Me., then a wilderness, and a little later Capt. Ichabod Thomas and his wife were living there with them. In 1818 Mary Perry writes her sister, Mrs. Cushing O. Briggs, and her parents, who, at the time, were probably living with their daughter in Scituate:

MARY PERRY, SISTER OF MRS. CUSHING O. BRIGGS

BROOKS, MAINE, October 12, 1818.

DEAR PARENTS AND SISTER: — . . . I thought I would postpone writing until we were settled in our new habitation. We passed the first night after leaving home in Boston, and after that I did not see anyone I had ever seen before until Saturday

when we called on Dr. Hickok's (possibly Hitehoek) son, Gad, where we dined. Rachel Rogers that was was there and urgent for us to spend Sunday with her, but we thought it best to pursue our journey. We stopped at Freeport over the Sabbath. We did not reach Brooks the weather being unfavorable until the next Thursday. I was much fatigued, but soon got over it. I was not sorry I came by land. I was amply repaid for all the fatigue by seeing the country. We passed through many towns with which I was much pleased, Newburyport I thought a pretty place, Brunswick likewise; its beauty is heightened by coming from a wood and finding a thickly settled place with a college, a handsome brick building and falls of water which add to the beauty of the town. We passed other falls at Kennebunk, Saco, etc. We stayed one night in Hallowell, next to Augusta. Our new abode is a small framed house with a chamber sufficiently large to hold two beds and all we wish to put in it. I am very well satisfied and do not feel homesick yet. The river is near the house, which is built on ascending ground from the water, and when the land is cleared up more I think it will be quite pleasant. Mr. Perry calculates to have several men to work with him and get his mill going as soon as he can, which will prevent our being lonesome and keep me from idleness. . . . Mother, you and my father must begin a letter and Mary you must finish it. We shall return home in June or before.

Your affectionate sister,

MARY PERRY.

POLLEY (MRS. ICHABOD THOMAS) TO HER DAUGHTER, MERCY
LITTLE (THOMAS) BRIGGS, SCITUATE

BROOKS (ME.) June 8th, 1822.

MY DEAR DAUGHTER: . . . It is seven months this day since your Pa was hurt; he steps about a little, has been as far as the garden, put in a few seeds, is now making a Cheese-press. He has his timber which he brought into the house. Mary thinks of making cheese. . . . If our lives are spared I hope you and your kind husband will be permitted to visit us this fall. My pen can't express how much we long to see you both and your dear children. . . . Mr. Briggs may be pleased to hear we had a road laid out to enter this woods. We hope it will be a good one for your chaise in the fall. Give my love to Miss Luey. . . .

I shall close my letter with the advice of a heathen philosopher:

Nor let soft slumber close your eyes
 Before you've recollected thrice
 The train of actions through the day
 Where have my feet chose out the way
 What have I learned where'er I've been
 From all I've heard, from all I've seen
 What know I more that's worth the knowing
 What have I done that's worth the doing
 What have I sought that I should shun
 What duty have I left undone
 Or into what new follies run
 These self inquiries are the road
 That leads to virtue and to God.

From your affectionate mother,
 POLLEY THOMAS.

The road above mentioned had been authorized in 1818. It must have been a great boon to these early settlers in the wilderness.

Feby. 13, 1816. In Senate — On petition of the inhabitants of Brownville and of *Ichabod Thomas* and others:

Resolved, That the Governor and Council be authorized to nominate and appoint a Committee who shall be authorized to survey and if the public good requires it to lay out a road beginning at the northern extremity of the road now made *through the Indian townships*, so called, on the west side of the Penobscot River, and thence running north a little westerly through the land belonging to the Commonwealth, to the township number two, in the seventh range north of the Waldo patent: thence in the nearest practicable and convenient direction through said township Number three in the same range, and to the mills in said Brownville: thence the nearest convenient direction to the township of Williamsburgh: thence to the land belonging to the Commonwealth in the south part of township number Six in the ninth range: thence through said township to the land of the Commonwealth lying north of said range; Consulting in the general direction of said road the advantage of the Commonwealth in selecting favourable ground for a proper avenue to the great body of its lands. (Vol. 60, page 450.)

Feby. 15, 1816. Among a List of Accounts examined and reported upon by Committee Joseph Sampson for the expense of

a Court Martial holden at Sandwich in May 1815, whercof John Thomas was President \$203.11. (Vol. 60, page 486.)

In a postscript added to one of her mother's letters, Mrs. Perry writes her sister on 22 Apr. 1824:

We have a minister engaged for one year, a man who received his education at Bangor, a good preacher. . . . I mean to come and see you in September.

TO MERCY LITTLE BRIGGS FROM HER MOTHER, POLLY THOMAS

MARCH 22, 1828.

MY DEAR DAUGHTER: — I have long contemplated writing, thinking you anxious to hear from your father, but as Isaiah Perry was soon going home — thought best to write by him.

Your father has mended faster than anyone expected and has walked to the mill . . . three weeks since his side is well. His arm is lame; it pains him at nights — We think the rheumatism has set in.

Isaiah will bring this letter and will inform you all about us. I was rejoiced at the reception of your letter — much gratified that our little grandsons have not forgot us. We think their letters well indited; find by William's that he is the farmer; hope they will write in all your letters and my dear Hannah likewise — think one summer sufficient for her to learn to write. Was much pleased with Charles's invitation to Christmas — Think it is an indication of his good behaviour. Grandpa says if you mean to give him learning send him to the Academy. He will learn much faster where there are many; it will please his ambition. He wished me to write you his mind.

I can't express how much pleasure it would give me to see you and all your family. Wish you to write concerning Mr. B's health and yours. We have had no passing — Mary has scarcely been out of the woods this winter. Adue my dear Mercy. May Heaven's blessings attend you is the wish of

Your affectionate mother,

POLLY THOMAS.

One can get some idea of the characters of the children of Cushing Otis Briggs from the family letters, especially those written by the older sons when they left home to serve their

apprenticeship in other shipyards, and the letters written to them by their mother. These letters show the deep family affection. There is no note of criticism or dissension in any of the letters which have come down; they breathe confidence, loyalty and understanding. Some of them show a generous humor, often held in check by piety. In quoting these letters I shall take the liberty of cutting out some of the pious dissertations with which most of them abound, as in our day these sound stilted, which was far from being the case. Some of these letters I give here, others in later chapters.

LUKE A. SPOFFORD, MINISTER OF CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH,
SCITUATE CENTRE, AND SCHOOL TEACHER in SOUTH SCITU-
ATE, TO MR. CUSHING O. BRIGGS, SOUTH SCITUATE

AMHERST, December 27, 1836

Mr. and Mrs. Briggs.

MY DEAR FRIENDS: — . . . It was pleasing to learn from a letter lately received by my son Henry that your family were all in comfortable health, but it was painful to learn that you had been favored with so little preaching in your society since my removal to Amherst. . . . I shall be much disappointed in my hopes should you long remain destitute of this peculiar blessing. . . . The difficulty in my throat, which rendered it so extremely fatiguing to preach at the time I left you, is much less . . . a complaint which I have little or no doubt would have soon ended my ministry, if not my life, had I remained on the seaboard. As Mary wishes to add a page for your daughter, I must close, requesting you to give my affectionate regards to all your children. . . .

Your affectionate friend and former pastor,

LUKE A. SPOFFORD.

HARRISON O. BRIGGS TO HIS MOTHER, MEDFORD, OCT. 31, 1838

I should like to have you make me a double-breasted velvet vest and get the velvet at Mr. Clapp's, and I will pay for it when I come home. . . . Edwin sends his love. My love to Hannah.

DEBORAH CUSHING BRIGGS, BOSTON, TO HER BROTHER,
CUSHING O. BRIGGS, SCITUATE

BOSTON, March 24.

DEAR CUSHING: — Henry James is going in a few hours and I can not help writing a line to let you know the result of Theodore's letter to Mr. LeRoy. He wishes Mr. Munroe to pay but if he can not be made to do it he, Mr. LeRoy, will pay interest semi-annually, until it is paid. . . . Of course you understand that Mr. LeRoy will see that it is paid some time or other, he being the responsible person.

Your affectionate sister,
DEBORAH.

CUSHING O. BRIGGS, SCITUATE, JUNE 7, 1840, TO HIS SON,
J. EDWIN BRIGGS, MEDFORD

DEAR SON: — Uncle Charles and W. Studley will inform you what is in agitation in regard to our schoolhouse. There will be a struggle on Saturday at 6 o'clock which will I think determine its location. I thought perhaps as some of you children might hereafter occupy our present habitation it might be for your benefit to have the schoolhouse as near as possible. There will be every exertion used on both sides. If you could come without much inconvenience, it may perhaps turn the vote, as I expect it will be close. I do not write to urge you, as you know how the case stands and know whether you had rather come or not.

Your affectionate Father,
CUSHING O. BRIGGS.

LETTER FROM MARY PERRY, HANSON, TO HER SISTER, MERCY
LITTLE BRIGGS, SCITUATE

July, 1837

DEAR SISTER: — Mother told me you requested me to write how we prospered with Mary; we find her very pleasant, & rather rude, Mirthfulness large, but hope the higher faculties will eventually be more in exercise. She is beloved by us all. Mr. P. talks with her considerable and is very kind to her. She says she is not homesick, but wishes to hear from home, says I must tell her Father and Mother to come up and bring Lloyd, & if he can not come, bring Franklin & she will not want to go home with them.

I would come down and bring her, but thought I had better not at present. I bought a little present for Mary before she came, and asked her if she had rather have it or give it to you, she said she had rather give it to her Mother, so she has made it for you, if your children all feel so you will never want, let us not borrow trouble, sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof. . . . John Thomas of Marshfield is buried today. . . .

It is now almost sundown and I have but few moments to write, being Saturday night. Tell your husband I hope he will improve under all God's dealings with him, acknowledge him in all his ways, and may his feet be directed into God's testimonies, may he find the ways of wisdom to be ways of pleasantness and all her paths peace. Give my love to all your family. Father and Mother send their love to all.

Your affectionate Sister,

MARY PERRY.

REV. PHINEAS SMITH, AND POSTSCRIPTED BY HIS WIFE, SOPHIA T.
SMITH, TO MERCY L. BRIGGS

LONSDALE, R. I., April 21, 1842

To Mrs. Briggs.

DEAR SISTER IN CHRIST: — I can not discern any impropriety in writing to a sister upon subjects that pertain to the interest of the church and of the soul. I confidently presume upon your pardon for now addressing you. I have chosen to address *you* for several reasons. I have had the pleasure of corresponding with your respected sons. Your uniform kindness and Christian forbearance toward me and my dear wife, your soundness of judgment and excellent Christian character and influence among your sex, — these are additional reasons why I have chosen to address you. By a letter from our highly-esteemed friend Mrs. Merritt, lately received by Mrs. Smith, we learn with much satisfaction that the Lord is now manifesting His mercy and grace in Scituate. . . . I am anxious to say something about my controversy with the church in Scituate. You can not wonder that this unhappy affair should at times press grievously upon my heart, when I reflect upon the confidence and kindly feeling which once appeared to exist between that church and myself, and the solemn nature of the pastoral relation — and then contemplate the manner in which those ties were rent asunder, my heart is sometimes moved with the deepest grief. I had the happiness of seeing Mr.

and Mrs. Merritt in Boston. . . . How painful to contemplate the relation they sustain to the Orthodox Church in Scituate. The Christian community in Boston can not fully know the reasons why their letter of dismission and recommendation is withheld by the church. We have this moment received a communication from our beloved friend, Mrs. Merritt, giving us the very pleasing intelligence that the church letter of dismission and recommendation before referred to was handed to her on Monday last.

EDWIN BRIGGS TO HIS MOTHER, MERCY L. BRIGGS, SCITUATE,
MASS.

SOUTH BOSTON, Nov. 13th, 1842

MY DEAR MOTHER: — You are probably anxious to know how Harrison and myself are pleased with our new situation. We arrived here without meeting with any accidents or trouble whatever on the passage. Our chests, which you know we thought we should have some difficulty in getting here, we put right on board the omnibus, and had landed on the spot for the small sum of twenty-five cents. We then took a walk down to the yard, where we saw Uncle Charles and Otis, and then proceeded in search of a suitable boarding house. Uncle Charles and Otis were both very anxious to have us board with them, but when they showed us their boarding houses we were not long in making up our minds, I assure you. We accordingly started for Captain Goodwin's, who formerly lived at the Harbor, and who we found very glad to take us. It is a first rate place without any exception. . . . I think I should enjoy myself well and be perfectly contented to stay here for some time; but when I go out in the yard and mix with company, as I am obliged to, who have no fear of God or man before their eyes, whose mouths are filled with the lowest and most degrading conversation and most profane oaths and curses against that Being Who has made and preserved them, my heart sickens within me and I long to be once more in my own quiet town among the pleasant faces and happy voices of those I love. I think I should rather be like Robinson Crusoe, cast upon some desert island, there to spend my days in solitude, rather than being always obliged to live in such wretched society. . . . But we manage to keep by ourselves as much as possible and on the whole pass our time quite pleasantly. Look out for Harrison and me at Thanksgiving. . . . I heard Mr. Kirk preach today and was not disappointed. He is

certainly a powerful preacher. Tell Father that Harrison and I have had the pleasure of riding over to the city with his beloved friend Captain Fletcher. . . . Believe me,

Your affectionate son,

EDWIN BRIGGS.

Nathan Rogers was one of the men employed by the Briggs' family at Hobart's Landing, and it was about the time that they gave up shipbuilding that the land on which the yards were located was sold to Mr. Rogers. On 1 May, 1847, Cushing Otis Briggs sold Nathan Rogers, for \$35, a building that had been improved as a workhouse, with a small attached building built by Mr. Briggs for a seine house. Mr. Rogers was permitted to allow these buildings to remain where they were then standing for two years or more from the date of sale. The house in which Nathan Rogers lived is still standing near the shipyard, and it has had several owners since the Rogers family died or moved from Scituate. Mr. Roger S. Dix, who lives on the Belle House Neck estate of the Cushings, owned it at one time. It was afterwards sold to Mrs. Mabel C. Soule of Everett, who sold it in 1935 to Mrs. Mary E. Place of Cohasset. "The Boston Transcript" of 4 May 1935 notes this sale and describes it as —

. . . one of the most historic places in Scituate, comprising a Cape Cod house, barn and four acres of land on North River. This place was the site of the Briggs shipyard of colonial times. The first ship was built in the yard in 1645 (by Thomas Nichols). The *Columbia*, in 1773, was the first ship to visit the northwest coast, discovering the Columbia River, which was named after her. The *Washington* was also built here, and, with the *Columbia*, was the first to round Cape Horn. The *Columbia* was the first ship to carry the American flag around the world.

In 1848, by the will of Mrs. Lucy C. Wood of Middleborough (whose first husband was Christopher Cushing, son of Judge Nathan, and a brother of Mrs. Cushing Otis), Cushing O. Briggs was named as trustee of certain property described in said will, for the use and benefit of her sister, Abigail Nichols.

On 5 Mar. 1850 Cushing O. Briggs was appointed administrator of the estate of Cynthia Nichols, and on 2 Apr. of the same year, of that of her sister Abigail. Abigail and Cynthia Nichols, Lucy Wood and Betsy Jones were daughters of Noah Nichols, whose home was southwest of Hobart's Landing, on the site of that of Elmer E. Carr (1936). This had been the property of their ancestor, Thomas Nichols, the first shipbuilder at Hobart's Landing. In their last years the sisters Cynthia and Abigail lived in the house now (1936) owned and occupied by James Spellman, which stands opposite the former residence of Henry Briggs.

In 1924 there was an Historical Pageant in Scituate. The characters were chosen from the early settlers of prominence dressed in the fashion of the period; and among the residents, correctly costumed to represent his period of 1800 to 1836, was Cushing Otis Briggs, portrayed by Frank H. Torrey.

Most of my grandfather's supplies for the yard came to Scituate via the packet line that ran from Boston up the North River as far as Hanover. Among other receipts I find with his papers is one from Shadrach B. Curtis for freight by sloop *Taglione*, the Boston and Scituate packet. Calvin Lewis, Jr., ran a packet from Marshfield to Boston, as we see by the following bill, which also shows that it was necessary to send to Boston for certain kinds of timber even at that early date.

HENERY & C. O. BRIGGS D^r. TO CALVIN LEWIS JR.

To Freighting from Boston.

1826	
April 27 th	16 bushels Corn & Rye 0 80
	2 barels flour 0 25
	wharfage 0 12
June 5	to 1 hhd Molasses 1 00
	to 1 barrel Sugar 0 25
	to 800 lb of Copper & Iron 0 80
June 18	1 barrel Rum 4 bushels Corn 0 55
July 10	to ½ barrel beef 0 13
August 7	to 500 lb Copper 0 50
Sept ^{br} 3 ^d	12 bushels Corn 1 barrel Rum 0 85

SHIPYARD AND HOUSEHOLD SUPPLIES

569

Sept. 15	2200 lb Iron	2 20
	700 lb Coper	0 70
	to 5 barels Navel Stores	1 25
	trucking 25c wharfage 40	0 65
Octbr. 9 th	½ ton Iron	1 00
	1½ barels	0 35
	to 6 sticks timber at 7/	7 00
Octbr 27 th	to 18 hhds Salt at 50¢	9 00
	3 Long Sticks timber at 8/	4 00
	1 barel Rum 25 6 bushels Rye	0 55
December 12	Windles Necks & Capson Spindle	0 17
Novenbr 21	to 5 thousand Lumber	10 00
	350 feet of Mahogany, do.	70
	1500 Iron	1 50
	1 Cask Nails	0 10
	Wharfage	0 97

\$46 49

Reed Payment Calvin Lewis Jr. 46 49

It is also interesting to note that Cushing O. Briggs bought many of the supplies for his shipyard and his house from local merchants:

CUSHING O. BRIGGS TO ISAAC M. HARRUB DR.

1833

December 19th	To ¾ Yd. Cassimere	88
20th	" Less on Wood	75
23d	" Cash pd. Col. Hatch	12
24th	" 1 pr. Shoes 1.08 1 lb. wrought nails 14	1 22
25th	" ½ lb. Pepper 15 ¾ lb. Wicking 25	40
"	" 1 oz. Camphire	08
28th.	" 2 Bushels Corn	2 00
31st	" 10 lb. Tobacco 14¢	1 40
"	" 2½ Gals. Wine 4/6	1 88

1834

January 1st	" 1 Bushel Corn	1 00
6th	" 1 Bushel Rye	1 00
8th	" 2 Bushels Corn 80¢	1 60
"	" 1 Bbl. Flour	6 50
"	" 1 Lot Files	76
15th	" 1 Lot Buttens	18
21st	" 1 Lot Timber by Agreement	25 10
24th	" 1 Galon Molasses	38
25th	" 13 lb. Fish 4¢	52

February	6th	To ½ peck Salt	12
	"	" 2 lb. Raisins 20 ¼ lb. Cassia 8	28
	"	" 4 lb. Rice 4½¢	18
	7th	" 1 pr. Bellows	28
	"	" 4 Tumblers 8¢	32
	10th.	" 2 Whip Saw Files	30
	"	" 2 Crosscut Saw do.	20
	"	" 1 Chest Lock 20 1½ pt. Sweet Wine 12	32
	13th	" 1½ pt. S. M. Wine	28
	14th	" 1 Galon Wine	75
	15th	" 2 Bushels Corn 2.00 1 Bushel Rye 1.00	3.00
	"	" 1 Broom	10
	17th.	" 2 qts. Wine 38 1 lb. 10 d. Nails 7	45
	20th	" 1 Handsaw File	10
	22d.	" 10 Bushels Corn 95¢	9 50
March	11th	" 1 Whiplash	06
	"	" 2 Gals. Molasses 34¢	68
	22d	" 1 Bushel Rye	1 00
	"	" 4 Gals. 1 qt. Wine 4/6 3.19 1 lb. Tea 33	3.52
	29th	" Cash pd. Amasa Sylvester	17
April	5th	" 1 Bushel Rye	1 00
	9th	" 2 yds. Broadcloth 4.00 1½ yd. Boeking 5/6 1.38	5 38
	"	" ½ peck H. G. Seed 35 5 lb. Clover 60	95
	"	" ½ peck Red Top Seed	14
	"	" ½ peck Lime 8 ½ lb. Saleratus 5	13
	"	" 14 lb. Fish 3½¢ 49 1 Almanack 6	55
	11th	" 1 Pit Saw File	15
	14th.	" 4 Gals. 1 qt. Wine 4/6	3 19
	15th	" 1 Rule 37 Cash Lent 5.00	5 37
	17th	" 1 pt. Peas	06
	18th.	" 1 pt. Peas 6 1 paper Onion Seed 6	12
	19th.	" 2 lb. 10d nails 7¢	14
	"	" 2 lb. 4d. do. 8¢	16
	21st	" ¼ yd. Boeking 23 ½ yd. Buckram 10	33
	"	" ½ yd. Padding 21 ½ yd. Canvass 17	38
	"	" ½ doz Buttens 8 4 doz Bitten Moles 12	20
	"	" 2 Skeins Silk 12 1 quire Paper 20	32
	"	" Goods del'd Charles Briggs pr. order	6 00
	22d.	" 1½ doz. Buttens 9 1 Stick Twist 6 ¼ yd. Buckram 5	20
	25th	" 1½ doz. Oranges	36
	29th	" 2 Gals. Molasses 68 1 lb. Tea 33	1 01
May	2d.	" 4 lb. Chalk 2¢	08
	7th	" 1 qt. Wine	19
	12th	" 2 qts. S. M. Wine 75 1 Bush Rye 1.00	1 75
	13th	" 1 Curry Comb	20

TRAVEL BETWEEN SCITUATE AND BOSTON 571

May	16th	To 2 Bush. Corn 1.70	1 paper Beet Seed 9	1 79
	"	" 1 Broom		20
	24th.	" 7 lb. Sugar 70	1 lb. Tea 33 ½ lb. Sale- ratus 5	1 08
June	27th	" 1½ doz: Buttens 9	1 pt. Wine 25	34
	28th.	" 2 qts. Wine		31
	5th.	" 1 Scythe 1.00	1 File 10	1 10
	9th.	" 1 Pitt Saw File 16	2 qts. Wine 50	66
	10th	" 4 lb. wrought nails 14¢		56
	14th	" 1 Hat		33
	17th	" 2 Gals. Molasses 58	1 Bottle Blacking 14	82
July	19th	" 2 Hats 58¢		1 16
	25th	" 5½ pts. S. M. Wine		69
	4th.	" 3 lb Shot 30	½ lb Powder 14	44
	5th.	" 1 Seythe Snath		38
	9th	" 2 Rakes 60	1 lb Tea 33 1½ doz Buttens 9	1 02
	10th.	" 2 Gals. Molasses 68	7 lb. Sugar 70	1 38
	12th.	" ½ doz. Buttens		03
	19th.	" 28 lb. Sugar 9½		2 66
	"	" 1 Scythe 83	1 Snath 33	1 16
	24th	" 1 Bushel Rye		1 00
				<u>\$112 95</u>
1834				
March	11th	Cr. By Plough Point Returned		50
April	7th.	" By Balance due for Cloth		1 10
	25th	" By Cash		5 00
	"	" By Bitten Moulds Returned		12
June	30th	" By Cash		10 00
				<u>\$16 72</u>
Balance Due				\$96 23

SCITUATE July 28th. 1834
Rec'd Pay^t

ISAAC M. HARRUB
pr. G^o CLARK.

To reach Boston from Scituate one could take the packet via North River and Massachusetts Bay, or travel by stage-coach, run by Parker Jones, from Duxbury to Boston soon after the new post offices at South and West Scituate were established in 1828, or later in 1854, by Seth Foster's stage from South Scituate to Hingham, connecting with the boat or railroad to Boston. The South Shore Railroad was built as far as Cohasset in 1849.

While he was living in Scituate Cushing Otis Briggs subscribed for "The Boston Weekly Journal" (office at 13

State Street, Boston) from 1846 to 1851, when he added the "Commonwealth and Emancipator" (offices at 16 State Street, Boston), and in 1845 he also took a local paper, "The Union," published in Hanover, Mass., by William Young. In 1858, after he had moved to Braintree, he subscribed for the "Boston Daily Traveller and Telegraph" (offices on State Street, corner of Congress Street, Boston).

About 1857 my grandparents moved to Braintree to be nearer their children, who were then living in South Boston.

From Braintree Marcy L. Briggs wrote her sister, Mary Perry, 20 Jan. 1857:

. . . Thinking of you and your kind husband. He is so willing to have my Father with you. . . . If weather permits I hope he may visit me in Braintree.

In another of her long letters from Braintree, 6 Mar. 1858, she says:

. . . Tell Father I shall try to come and see him as soon as possible. . . . I like your views on slavery. . . .

Your loving sister forever,

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

Mary Perry writes her sister, Mercy Little Briggs, from —

HANSON, May 3d, '60

DEAR SISTER: — . . . The woman we now have seems to be kindhearted, and the man, a Western man from Illinois of few words, formerly a schoolmaster there. Mr. Perry likes them very well; so do I. They have a stirring baby a year and a half old, only one object in view, to bring Father and Mother in subjection to her sovereign will and pleasure, which for the most part she succeeds in doing. Last week the man who made Father's and Mother's gravestones called to let us see them and take his pay on his way to put them up. They looked very well, I should think of good marble; on the footstones, "Thomas", and on the headstones their names, ages, &c. . . . Our peach trees show the red blossoms in great abundance, and the strawberries look finely. Mr. Perry thinks our peonies and snowballs are showing signs of life. . . . From

Your affectionate Sister,

MARY PERRY.

Capt. Ichabod Thomas and his wife Polly were buried on the Old Burial Hill in Hanson, on its southern knoll, with graves of other generations of Thomases, on land that was once that of the Thomas family. It was sold in 1804 by Nathaniel Thomas to the Second Parish of Pembroke for a burying ground for members of the parish. It was used after 1820 as a town burying ground until about 1847, after which date few burials were made on the "Old Hill." The new Fern Hill Cemetery, between the hill and the road, had been laid out with "convenient avenues and paths."

Miss Ruth Mead had been nurse in the Cushing Otis Briggs family when each of the children was born, and took an interest in them as long as she lived. My father, Lloyd Briggs, was her favorite. She wrote to Mrs. Cushing O. Briggs, Braintree, Mass., as follows:

SCITUATE, Dec. 30th. 1858.

DEAR FRIEND:—As my mind turns to the many pleasant hours spent in your society and that of your esteemed family and evidences of your long tried and oft shown friendship fills my heart, I feel that if I could see you a week would be too short to talk of the many things in which I feel we should take a mutual interest.

I was much disappointed when I heard that you had been in Scituate and I had not seen you, but knowing the circumstances that prevented I did not murmur. Last friday was my birth day. I was eighty years old — I feel deeply grateful for so good a degree of health, continued faculties, enjoyments of religion, and the numerous blessings of a long life.

Though I remember with interest all the members of your family, yet most frequently does my mind turn to Lloyd, for from his infancy he has been a child I love, and one whom in my petitions I have often carried to the throne of grace. And now not as a *compensation* for favors received from him, but as a slight tribute of gratitude and affection, I wish him to accept this piece of work which I performed during my eightieth year.

During the dark times of last winter the usual supply of shop work upon which so many depend in this town was cut off, and not knowing how to fold my hands and sit down unemployed, I thought I would sew together the small pieces of cloth that I had accumulated from leavings of my work into a bed quilt.

One cold night at twilight I sat musing whether it was right for me to light a lamp — my oil being nearly gone, and not knowing how I should get more — and work upon that quilt, not knowing that it would ever be of any use to any one, when a little boy entered with a letter from Lloyd, containing five dollars as a New Years present.

Both the letter and the money did me good. I lit my lamp and with gladness took my work and while thinking over and over what I could render to my friend for his goodness, I thought if my life was spared to complete the work, it should be his. And now if he will accept it as a N. Yrs. present from me he will confer upon me another favor.

I offer it not for its great beauty or as an elegant piece of work, but as I said before, as a memento of gratitude and love.

I suppose the recollection I have in my mind of a light hearted youth of sixteen looks but little like the man of twenty five, and as the present abounds in daguerreotypes affording us the likeness of our friends though absent, I would ask (if not too much) that L. would send me his that I may have it to look at for a while, as I hardly expect ever to see him again — I hear that he has recently married and a likeness of his wife accompanied with his own would afford me much pleasure. If he sees fit to send them I will return them by Mr. Lunt.

I know you will be pleased to hear that the Methodists, Orthodox and Baptists of the place are holding evening prayer meetings which have thus far been very interesting and hopes are cherished that there will be copious fruit from the work.

I hope you will write me a long letter soon.

Yrs. truly,

RUTH MEAD.

Cushing Otis Briggs died in Braintree 10 Mar. 1861, aged 74 years. After his death his widow moved to the home of her friends, the Haywards. William T. Briggs writes his mother as follows:

PRINCETON, March 4, '62

MY VERY DEAR MOTHER: — . . . I am glad you were so well pleased with the change at first and am quite sure you will enjoy it more and more. . . . We are very well, never better. Willie takes well to his books and Helen to the sugar bowl, when she can get her fingers into it. Tell Mary she was very kind to write us as she did, though we have learned through Ella that you were about

to make a change. It is a great comfort to us that you are relieved from all the little cares and annoyances of housekeeping and can be entirely at ease. . . . Remember us affectionately to Deacon and Mrs. Hayward, and believe that you have our warmest love as ever.

WILLIAM.

My grandmother died in Braintree a little over a year after my grandfather's death. The following is taken from an obituary in a newspaper published at that time:

In Braintree, 16th August 1862, Mercy L., widow of the late Cushing O. Briggs, 71.

Seldom does death remove one so universally beloved. It was literally true — none knew her but to love and praise her. With a character of singular energy and decision was blended a nature full of generous and quick sympathies, and overflowing with kindness. A deep and fervid piety wrought within her heart and threw its luster over her whole life.

Next to her God she lived in and for her family. The heart of her husband safely trusted in her; and her children "rose up to call her blessed." Few mothers were ever more beloved by their children, and few children have reason to bless God for such a mother.

In 1930 I received a letter from Miss Marian S. Arnold, 38 Wilmarth Road, Braintree, Mass., saying that while looking up the genealogy of another family she came across my "History of Shipbuilding on North River," and found "within it a familiar face. I knew I had seen that face in my grandmother's old brass-nailed trunk, but there was no name on it. I compared the picture with the book and found they were identical. It is Mr. Cushing Otis Briggs, your grandfather, and he once lived in my grandfather Nathaniel Hayward's house in East Braintree. He must have died there. I know my mother liked and felt great respect for him."

This house burned in the 1890's.

Miss Arnold found in her father's trunk not only the daguerreotype of my grandfather, but also daguerreotypes of my father and mother, which she kindly presented to me. In a letter dated 11 June 1931 she writes that she has at

last found the house where my grandparents lived in Braintree, and says that the house she spoke of in her previous letter belonged to her grandfather, Nathaniel Hayward, in the north side of which my grandmother, Mrs. Cushing Otis Briggs, spent the last years of her life, relieved from the responsibility of housekeeping, as she took her meals with the Haywards. The house where my grandfather lived and died is located on Elm Street and is now numbered 508 and is occupied by M. Nobile Lawrence (1936).

Children of Cushing Otis Briggs and Mercy Little Thomas:

- i. CHARLES CUSHING, b. 8 Oct. 1813; d. 11 Apr. 1843; unm.
- 143. ii. WILLIAM THOMAS, b. 1 Dec. 1815; m. (1) Harriet Swan Dana; (2) Abby Learned Davis.
- 144. iii. HANNAH BARKER, b. 13 June 1819; m. Francis James.
- 145. iv. JAMES EDWIN, b. 8 May 1821; m. Harriette Richmond Stetson.
- 146. v. HARRISON OTIS, b. 30 Jan. 1824; m. Hannah Elizabeth Stetson.
- 147. vi. MARY THOMAS, b. 11 Apr. 1828; m. James T. Tolman.
- 148. vii. LLOYD, b. 8 Apr. 1830; m. SARAH ELIZABETH ELLMS KENT.
- viii. FRANKLIN, b. 9 Jan. 1833; d. 23 Oct. 1892, aged 59 years, 9 months 14 days; unm.

102. HENRY⁶ BRIGGS (58. *Thomas B.*⁵, *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 11 Mar. 1789 in the family home on Cross Street. He followed the art of shipbuilding, at first with his father and brothers at Hobart's Landing, and completed his apprenticeship with the Fosters at the Wanton Ship Yard, where he was working in 1810 when he reached his majority. In the *War of 1812* he was enrolled in Capt. Luther Tilden's Company of Militia, which was in service at Scituate. In 1813 he began building vessels with his brother, Cushing O. Briggs, at Hobart's Landing. (See Cushing Otis Briggs.)

The brothers dissolved partnership about 1830, and built separately at Hobart's Landing. Henry Briggs built in 1831 the bark *Aron*, 299 tons, of Boston, for Nathaniel Emmons, Thomas B. Wales and others; in 1833 he was



VELMA BRIGGS, 1882

BORN 20 OCT. 1861 AND DIED 8 JUNE 1937

(See page 813)



LLOYD VERNON BRIGGS, 1882

SON OF LLOYD AND BROTHER OF VELMA BRIGGS

(See page 813)

master carpenter of the brig *Oak*, 208 tons, for the same owners; and in 1836 the bark *Verona*, 238 tons, also for Emmons and Wales. The last vessel built by Henry Briggs was the brig *Star* in 1837, which was begun by him but was not completed when he died in December of that year. It was launched in the spring of 1838 by his son, George Henry Briggs, and his son-in-law, Elijah Barstow, who, although he was building a vessel at his Hanover yard at the same time, went to the Briggs yard nearly every day and supervised her completion, as he had promised his father-in-law, on his death bed, that he would do.

When Henry Briggs married in 1813 he built his residence on the main road, upon a part of the Briggs property that was set off to him by the division deed between Henry and his brother, Cushing O. (See Chapter XIII.) It appears to have been built on that piece of land known as the "Neal Orchard," and it is yet standing a little west of Neal Gate Road, on the north side of the highway. It was sold a few years after Henry Briggs' death to Francis Dana, or his father Henry Dana, who had purchased the Walnut Tree Hill estate of Judge William Cushing. (See Chapter XIV, Thomas.) Tilon Williams purchased the property after the death of Francis Dana, and his widow and daughters still reside there (1936).

Henry Briggs married, first, 4 Apr. 1813, Betsey Ruggles, born in Seituete 9 May 1794, daughter of Thomas and Eunice (Oakman) Ruggles, who lived upon the Ruggles Farm, so called, which later became a part of the "Riverdale Farm" of Abiel and Henry A. Turner. She died 20 Dec. 1833, leaving a family of nine children. (See letter under Cushing O. Briggs.)

Her father, Thomas Ruggles, was a descendant of Thomas Ruggles of Roxbury, freeman 1632, whose great-grandson, John Ruggles, came to Seituete in 1719, and purchased land of John Barstow's heirs on the south side of Main Street in Norwell Village, midway between the "Common" and Jordan Lane. His house was about 20 rods south of the present road. John Ruggles married Joanna, daughter of Thomas Brooks, in 1720. Their son, Deacon John Ruggles,

inherited the farm of his maternal uncle, Thomas Brooks, who left no children. This was the so-called "Ruggles Farm." He was a Deacon of the Second Church, and is said to have been "a man of remarkable purity of character." (Deane.) Deacon Ruggles died 12 May 1812. His wife was Lusanna Barstow of Hanover, whom he married in 1754. Their son, Thomas Ruggles, born 22 Mar. 1757, married (int.) 10 May 1781, in Marshfield, Eunice Oakman, daughter of Samuel and Deborah (Turner) Oakman, who lived in the house razed on the famous "dark day" of 1780 (so recorded in John Foster's diary). This house, the second house beyond Union Bridge, was long known as the William B. Cushing house. It is now (1936) owned by Mrs. Irving G. Hall.

Henry Briggs married, second, 14 July 1836, Rachel (Clapp) Gardner, widow of Capt. Seth Gardner, who was shipwrecked and lost off Cape Cod in the *Cyrus* in Aug. 1830. Rachel Clapp was born 17 Feb. 1807, daughter of Perkins and Rachel (Kent) Clapp (see Kent), who lived on Pleasant Street, Norwell, in the old Clapp house now (1936) standing, next west of the home of the late Joseph Clapp Otis, a great-grandson of Perkins and Rachel Clapp. A few years after the death of Henry Briggs, which occurred on 4 Dec. 1837, widow Rachel Briggs returned to this old home in "Wildcat," where she died 8 July 1870.

Children of Henry⁶ Briggs and Betsey Ruggles:

149. i. CAROLINE OTIS, b. 23 Aug. 1813; m. Elijah Barstow.
150. ii. GEORGE HENRY, b. 10 Sept. 1815; m. Nancy Stockbridge.
- iii. MARY, b. 25 Oct. 1817; d. 30 May 1880; unmm.
- iv. ELIZABETH RUGGLES, b. 25 Apr. 1820; d. 11 Mar. 1863; unmm.
151. v. DEBORAH CLAPP, b. 6 Apr. 1823; m. Israel Nash.
- vi. THOMAS WALES, b. 23 Mar. 1825; d. 20 Mar. 1891; unmm.
152. vii. JOHN RUGGLES, b. 14 Oct. 1827; m. Sarah C. Shattuck.
153. viii. LUCY TURNER, b. 23 Jan. 1830; m. Nathaniel C. Nash.
154. ix. SARAH, b. 5 Jan. 1832; m. Andrew Clark.

103. CHARLES⁶ BRIGGS (58. *Thomas B.*⁵, *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 15 Oct.

1791. He was a ship carpenter, and learned his trade in his father's yard at Hobart's Landing, working there with his father and brothers as long as they built vessels. Later he worked in Medford shipyards, and in 1842, with his son, Charles Otis Briggs, in South Boston. As a young man he went to sea on fishing or coasting vessels, and in the *War of 1812* was upon the ocean in a *privateer*. In 1813 his mother, Lucy Otis Briggs, wrote to her son Thomas, then in Halifax prison, having been captured on board the privateer *Julian Smith* by the British fleet (see Chapter X): "Charles is here, waiting for more favorable times for the Sailor; he has been taken, and carried into St. Christopher, came home in a vessel from New London."

Charles Briggs married (int.) 4 Apr. 1821, Rhoda Reed, born 12 Feb. 1801 in Hanson, daughter of Zadoc and Lucy (Garnet) Reed of that place, which was at that time the West Parish of Pembroke. Charles and Rhoda (Reed) Briggs lived in the Dr. James Otis house on Main Street, Norwell, now (1936), Miss Antoinette Pray's, which had been that of Dr. Isaac Otis, his great-grandfather. Charles Briggs died in South Scituate (Norwell) 13 Feb. 1853, aged 62 years. His widow, Rhoda (Reed) Briggs, died in Danvers, where several of her children were then living, 3 June 1881.

Children of Charles⁶ Briggs and Rhoda Reed:

155. i. MARY JANE, b. 1821; m. William Spear.
156. ii. CHARLES OTIS, b. 20 Mar. 1823; m. Sarah Elizabeth Harford.
- iii. HORACE CUSHING, b. 29 Dec. 1824; d. young.
157. iv. LUCY ANN, b. 7 Aug. 1827; m. Nichols Lincoln.
158. v. EMELINE, b. 17 Sept. 1828; m. Samuel Otis LeGro.
159. vi. HORACE CUSHING, b. 23 July 1830; m. Mary Hill Beckford.
160. vii. CHARLOTTE, b. 10 May 1832; m. Henry Prentiss.
- viii. ALFRED, b. 15 May 1834; d. young.
161. ix. ALMIRA, b. 10 Aug. 1836; m. Benjamin Millett.
162. x. ALFRED, b. 18 July 1838; m. Martha A. Blake.
163. xi. HENRY THOMAS, b. 26 Oct. 1840; m. Eudora Decoster.

104. ENOS⁶ BRIGGS (59. *Enos*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 25 Mar. 1781, lived

in Salem, and married about 1805 Lucy A. Morse. He died in Salem 9 Oct. 1837.

Children of Enos⁶ Briggs, Jr., and Lucy A. Morse:

- i. HENRY, b. 1806; d. 1836.
 - ii. LUCY ANNA, b. 1808; m. — Sargent.
 - iii. SUSAN MARIA, b. 1810; m. — Merriam; d. 1887.
 - iv. ENOS, 3d, b. 1812; m. Widow Mary Burgess Ellis.
 - v. CHARLES OZIAS, b. 1815; lived in New Orleans; d. 1849.
 - vi. EDWARD THOMAS, b. 1818; d. 1866.
 - vii. NATHANIEL, b. 1820.
 - viii. FRANCIS DEAN, b. 1824.
 - ix. JOHN BOTT
 - x. NATHAN COOK
- } twins; b. 1827; d. 1827.

105. SAMUEL⁶ BRIGGS (59. *Enos*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 10 Dec. 1783 in Pembroke. When he was six years of age his father moved to South Salem, and Samuel learned the art of shipbuilding in his father's yard at that place, and continued that vocation until his father's death in 1819, when shipbuilding began to decline; he then became the proprietor of a wood wharf.

Samuel Briggs married, first, 1808, Susan Whittemore, who died in 1810. In 1818 he married, second, Mary S. Bowles, who died in 1853. Samuel Briggs died in Salem 10 Nov. 1859.

Child of Samuel⁶ Briggs and Susan Whittemore:

- i. EDWARD THOMAS, b. 1809; drowned 1815.

Children of Samuel⁶ Briggs and Mary S. Bowles:

- ii. SUSAN, b. 1820; d. 1822.
- iii. EDWARD THOMAS, b. 1822; d. before 1824.
- iv. EDWARD THOMAS, b. 1824; m., but had no children; d. 1882.
- v. SUSAN, b. 1830; m. (1) William H. Clarke; (2) George F. Farrington. She was the owner of the historic "Witch House" in Salem.
- vi. MARY EUNICE, b. 1832; d. 1832.

106. SETH⁶ BRIGGS, 3d (60. *Seth*⁵ *Jr.*, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 24 May 1778. He lived in

Milton in 1804, Malden in 1810, and later in Dorchester. He married 26 Sept. 1802 Sarah Caldwell Peterson, born at Duxbury 20 Mar. 1785, daughter of David Peterson of Duxbury and his wife Catherine Caldwell of Hartford, Conn.

Seth Briggs died at New Orleans, La., 29 May 1824. His widow, Sarah (Peterson) Briggs, died 27 Sept. 1864.

Children of Seth Briggs, 3d, and Sarah Caldwell Peterson:

- i. HARRIOT CALDWELL, b. 14 Nov. 1804 at Milton; d. 16 Oct. 1805.
- ii. THOMAS, b. 9 Dec. 1805; was lost at sea on 30 Nov. 1832.
- 164. iii. GEORGE CALDWELL, b. 1 Jan. 1808; m. Anne Maguire Loring.
- 165. iv. CATHERINE ELIZABETH, b. 14 Mar. 1810 at Malden; m. George A. Woods.
- v. SETH, b. 13 July 1812 at Dorchester; d. 31 July 1824.
- vi. HENRY CALDWELL, b. 3 July 1814 in Dorchester; d. 22 Apr. 1846 at Calcutta.
- vii. DANIEL, b. 4 Jan. 1817 at Dorchester; d. 28 Oct. 1839.
- 166. viii. SARAH PETERSON, b. 21 Jan. 1819 at Dorchester; m. Frederick A. Shuck.
- ix. JAMES CLEMENT, b. 9 May 1822 at Dorchester; d. 12 Oct. 1861 at San Francisco, Cal.
- 167. x. SETH, b. 14 June 1824 at Dorchester; m. Annie Gallagher.

107. DEBORAH⁶ BRIGGS (60. *Seth*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Milton, Mass., about 1780. She married, in 1800, Nehemiah Cushing, son of Theophilus and Patience (Dunbar) Cushing of Hingham. They lived in Hingham, where Nehemiah Cushing died 29 June 1829, aged 52 years. Deborah (Briggs) Cushing died 16 May 1832.

Children of Deborah Briggs and Nehemiah Cushing:

- i. DEBORAH BARKER CUSHING, b. 31 Jan. 1801; m. Joshua Hersey 1822.
- ii. THEOPHILUS CUSHING, b. 28 June 1802; m. 1827 Lucinda Lapham, dau. of Charles Lapham of Scituate.
- iii. NEHEMIAH CUSHING, b. 18 Apr. 1804; m. Betsey Jacobs 1827.
- iv. PETER CUSHING, b. 10 May 1806; m. Eunice Colby Dorr 1842.

- v. BENJAMIN BARKER CUSHING, b. 29 Sept. 1808; m. Adcline Pierce, a cousin of President Franklin Pierce.
- vi. WILLIAM CUSHING, b. 21 Sept. 1810; d. 1835.
- vii. SETH BRIGGS CUSHING, b. 18 Sept. 1812; m. Sarah Jacobs 1833.
- viii. REBECCA PARTRIDGE CUSHING, b. 14 Feb. 1815; m. 29 Aug. 1841 Nathaniel Brooks (5) of South Scituate, b. 7 Apr. 1796, son of Nathaniel (4) and Deborah (Brooks) Brooks, both of them descendants of William and Susanna (Dunham) Brooks. Rebecca Cushing was Nathaniel Brooks' second wife. They had a family of five children, of whom Martha W. and Rebecca Cushing Brooks were educated at Bridgewater State Normal School, and taught for many years in the schools of South Scituate and Stoughton. A son, William Penn Brooks, graduated from Amherst Agricultural College in 1875; was professor of agriculture, Imperial College of Agriculture, Sapporo, Japan, 1877-78; professor of botany, 1881-88; acting president, Imperial College, 1880-83, and again 1886-87. He was professor of agriculture at Massachusetts Agricultural College at Amherst, and agriculturist for the Hatch Experiment Station; Ph.D. Halle 1897; appointed president, *ad interim*, Massachusetts Agricultural College Jan. 1905. Professor Brooks was born in the old Nathaniel Brooks house on Main Street, Norwell, built by his great-great-grandfather, Nathaniel Brooks (2) in 1717, on land purchased from the Quaker, Michael Wanton. It is now (1936) owned by Mrs. John F. Osborne.
- ix. ABIGAIL CUSHING, b. 1817; d. 1845; unm.
- x. ANDRÉ CUSHING, b. 3 Feb. 1820; m. Delia Rich 1846.
- xi. HARRIET BRIGGS CUSHING, b. 1822; d. 1876; unm.
- xii. VOLNEY CUSHING, b. 5 Oct. 1826; m. Harriet Chick 1856.

108. ELISHA⁶ BRIGGS (61. *Elisha*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 20 May 1781, learned his trade as shipbuilder at the family yard at the Brick Kilns, and later removed to Belleville (Newburyport) where he built vessels for many years. He resided at Belleville, where he died 4 May 1857 and was buried in the Briggs Cemetery at North Pembroke. (Cemetery Records.)

Elisha Briggs married, first, 9 Oct. 1804, Sally Webb, born 29 July 1787 in Pembroke, d. 26 Aug. 1850 (Cemetery Records), daughter of Samuel and Betsey (Baker) Webb, who then lived in the Deacon Whitman place. Sally was a sister of Mercy Otis Webb, second wife of Elisha's brother, Luther Briggs. Elisha Briggs married, second, Margaret Doyle. There were no children by either marriage.

109. LUTHER⁶ BRIGGS (61. *Elisha*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 20 Oct. 1783 and served his apprenticeship with his father and brothers at the Brick Kilns, but ill health in early life prevented him from engaging in active business for himself, until several years after reaching his majority. His first venture was with Barker Turner, Jeduthan Palmer and Enoch Magoun, about 1820, at the Brick Kiln yard, where his father and grandfather had previously built with Barker Turner. In 1823 he was building there on his own account, and a year later with Barker Turner. He continued at the Brick Kilns in company with Melzar Turner and Silvanus Smith, at different times, until 1850. He was the last member of the Briggs family to build at the Brick Kiln yard.

Melzar Turner built vessels at Scituate Harbor near the old Mill opposite the residence of Capt. Henry Vinal in 1837. He was not very successful financially, and in 1845 Luther Briggs was obliged to go to his assistance, and help him complete the two vessels that he was building there that year. From that time Luther Briggs continued with Melzar Turner at the Harbor, and after 1850 gave all his time and energy to the Harbor yard. They carried on a very successful business for several years. The last vessel they built was in 1856, the bark *Almatia*, 475 tons. Luther Briggs was then 73 years of age, and retired from active business. He lived on Brick Kiln Lane, Pembroke, in the house now (1936) of Dr. Harry C. Low. He died 18 Apr. 1864, aged 80. Before his death he resided for a time in Waverley, probably with his daughter Mrs. Chandler.

Luther Briggs, married, first, 22 Mar. 1812, Susanna Stetson, born 29 Nov. 1784 (Cemetery Records) daughter

of Capt. Isaiah Stetson, who commanded vessels in the Federal service during the Revolution and in the War of 1812. Susanna (Stetson) Briggs died in Pembroke 19 Oct. 1832, and Luther Briggs, married, second, 3 Aug. 1834, in Newbury, Mass., Mrs. Mercy Otis (Webb) Magoun, widow of Capt. Aaron S. Magoun, and a sister of Sally Webb, the first wife of Luther's brother, Elisha Briggs.

Children of Luther Briggs and Susanna Stetson:

168. i. SUSAN STETSON, b. 26 July 1813; m. Nathaniel Smith.
- ii. LUTHER, b. 27 Mar. 1814; d. 15 Nov. 1819.
- iii. SYLVINA PARRIS, b. 6 Jan. 1816; m. B. F. Chandler, U. S. N. They resided in Portsmouth, N. H., and later in Waverley, Mass. Her uncle, Alexander Parris, was architect of St. Paul's Cathedral, Boston.
- iv. LUTHER,⁷ b. 24 July 1822, was an architect; m. 7 July 1847, Adeline, dau. of Hon. Horace and Laurentia (Briggs) Collamore. She was b. 1820, d. 14 Mar. 1900. They had no family. They lived in Boston and he d. 15 Oct. 1905.
- v. ALEXANDER PARRIS, b. 13 July 1825; d. 27 Jan. 1826.
- vi. AUGUSTA, b. 7 Aug. 1827; m. Royal Cheney and lived in Worcester. She d. in Kingston, Mass., 7 Aug. 1915 (11 Dec. 19—, Cemetery Records). Their dau., Susan Cheney, b. June 1851, d. 26 Sept. 1851, ae. 4 months 1 day.

In 1841, when Luther⁷ Briggs, the architect, was 19 years of age, he had with great pride drawn plans for cutting through the bar at the mouth of the North River in Marshfield, or through the beach between the Third and Fourth Cliffs to make a new channel that would enable the shipbuilders to get their vessels out of the river without waiting for tides high enough to get them over the bar without "lightering." By invitation of the shipbuilders, Hon. John Quincy Adams, formerly President of the United States, and at that time a Member of Congress, came to the locality to view the sites of the proposed channels, the better to enable him to induce Congress to appropriate funds for carrying out the project. An account of this visit was recorded in Luther Briggs diary, as follows:

Thursday, October 28th, 1841. Fair. To-day was the day appointed for the Hon. John Quincy Adams, and others interested, to go down to the Scituate shore and examine the place where it is proposed to open a new channel for the North River, between the third and fourth cliffs (so called). Accordingly, father and Capt. Parris (who used to live where Mr. Nathaniel Smith now resides in Pembroke) started for Marshfield in our chaise at half-past seven, A.M., and at eight o'clock I got into a carriage with Mr. A. Briggs, Jr., and we proceeded to the house of Mr. Luther Rogers (father of Clift Rogers, in Marshfield), having overtaken father and the captain, and rode in company for the last few hours. We waited at Mr. Rogers' for a few minutes, when Mr. Adams and the committee came along, moving from the house of Daniel Phillips, Esq. After some little delay we proceeded to Little's bridge, where the company embarked for the beach. I, however, drove father's chaise to the ferry, and put up the horse in Capt. Luke Hall's barn, then went to the river and walked up to the Cliff, arriving at the same time the company did who sailed from the bridge. We walked about the beach for an hour or two, and then recrossed to the ferry. Soon after, started for home with Cousin Alden. Got home at 2 P.M. . . .

P.S. — When I came away from the ferry, Mr. Adams and the others had gone down in a boat to view the present mouth of the river. I understood the arrangement was for them to return to Mr. Rogers' to dinner, and at three to enter the Episcopal Church (Marshfield), where Mr. Adams will be introduced to the citizens generally, and make some remarks.

Luther Briggs adds that the nearest they ever came to having a channel cut through the bar at the river's mouth was when Luther Rogers, in explaining the plan to Mr. Adams and the company at his house in Marshfield, kept drawing his thumb-nail back and forth where the channel was to be cut, until finally it went through the paper. This was a sad sight for young Luther Briggs. He also adds that Mr. Adams did not speak upon the question of cutting through the bar, as it was anticipated he would do when he went to the church, but branched right off into politics, much to the disappointment of those present. Nature, in the great storm of 1898, in which the steamer *Portland* was lost, accomplished what had long been expected that she would do, but which

man did not succeed in getting funds from the government to perform in 1841.

110. LUCINDA⁶ BRIGGS (61. *Elisha*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 15 Dec. 1789, and married 15 Sept. 1808 Alden Loring, born in Duxbury 15 Nov. 1780, son of William Loring. Alden Loring lived in Duxbury until after 1815; later, in Pembroke, where seven of their family of eleven children were baptized.

Children of Lucinda⁶ Briggs and Alden Loring:

- i. LUCINDA ALDEN LORING, b. 5 Aug. 1809 in Duxbury; m. 1833 Otis Bailey of Andover. Their son, Hollis R. Bailey, b. 1852; *Harvard College, A.B., 1877; LL.B., 1878; A.M., 1879*; was author of *Bailey Genealogy* 1899; lived in Cambridge.
- ii. LAURA H. LORING, b. 4 June 1811 in Duxbury; m. Thomas B. Patten of West Amesbury.
- iii. ELISHA BRIGGS LORING, b. 19 July 1813 in Duxbury; m. 24 Feb. 1839, in Canton, Mass., Lucy Fisher Smith of Canton.
- iv. WILLIAM LORING, b. 1815 in Duxbury; m. Laura A. —.
- v. HANNAH DREW LORING, b. 11 May 1819; bpt. 15 Aug. 1819 in Pembroke; m. (1) Joshua Corlew; (2) 1841, in Newburyport, Mass., Martin White of Marshfield.
- vi. JOHN ALDEN LORING, b. 11 Apr. 1821; bpt. 27 June 1821 in Pembroke First Church. "Lost at sea."
- vii. ELIZABETH BAILEY LORING, b. 16 July 1823; m. 29 Oct. 1843 Thomas A. Poyen of West Amesbury.
- viii. SOPHIA LORING, b. 18 July 1825; bpt. 4 Sept. 1825 in Pembroke First Church; m. 25 Apr. 1845, in Malden, John Shepherd of Pembroke.
- ix. GUSTAVUS LORING, b. 11 Apr. 1828; bpt. 6 July 1828 in Pembroke First Church; m. at Malden Mary Ellen Stephens.
- x. BERNARD LORING, b. 31 Oct. 1831; m. Celia Allen Goodrich of North Hanover. He was a shoemaker.
- xi. EMILY BRADFORD LORING, b. 30 Oct. 1833; d. 1834.

111. LAURENTIA⁶ BRIGGS (61. *Elisha*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 20 Sept.

1792, and married 20 Sept. 1814 Horace Collamore, who was born at Gillman Plain, Scituate, in Nov. 1791, a son of Capt. Enoch and Hannah (Cushing) Collamore. Horace Collamore was educated at *Hanover Academy*, with an intention of entering a professional life, but at the age of twenty entered the china and glassware business on Marlboro, now Washington, Street, Boston, under the firm name of Hastings & Collamore. He afterward carried on the business alone, but later took a partner, the firm then being Collamore & Churchill. The close confinement in a store caused failing health, and in 1821 induced him to remove from the city to a farm. He purchased that year the estate in North Pembroke, formerly that of Dr. Jeremiah Hall, his wife's grandfather, on Washington Street (near that of his brother, Dr. Anthony Collamore), where, in addition to his farm, he conducted a country store. He was *Brigade Major* and *Inspector of the First Brigade, 5th Division, Massachusetts Militia*; Representative to General Court 1841 and 1842; Senator from the Plymouth District in 1853; Postmaster for many years, and a *Trustee of Hanover Academy*.

Hon. Horace Collamore was President of the Plymouth County Agricultural Society for several years, and was the author of articles on agriculture in agricultural journals. The Boston and Plymouth line of stage coaches changed horses at his stables for many years, and brought further activity and wider interest to the community with the incoming of the mail, and contact with the passengers.

Hon. Horace Collamore's emigrant ancestor was Peter Collamore, from Northam, Devonshire, England, who was in Scituate before 1643. In "Visitation of Devonshire," published by Vivian, there is record of Sir John Collimer of Luscotte, who died in Branton in 1605. His son Peter resided at Northam, across the bay from Branton. Two sons of Peter of Northam were John, born 1608, and Peter, born 1613, the latter being, it is said, Peter of Scituate, as early as 1639. John, born 1608, was the father of Captain Anthony of Scituate. A daughter, Jone, born 1616, married William Blackmore. Her son, William Blackmore, came to Scituate from England in 1665, hoping, tradition says, to inherit the property of his childless uncle, Peter Collamore. But Peter

Collamore desired an heir bearing the family name, and sent for his nephew Anthony to inherit his estate. William Blakmore settled on lands a little north and west of John Turner, Sr., — lands now (1936) included in the May Elms estate, Norwell. He was killed in the Indian Raid of Apr. 1676. Peter Collamore settled first on Wills Island in the New Harbour Marshes, where he had a house in common with John Harker, a soldier in the Pequot War in 1637. Collamore sold his interest in this house to William Wills in 1642, and probably removed to the Marshfield side of North River, as in 1647 he was sworn in as a Constable of the town of Marshfield. In 1650 he purchased, from Samuel fuller of Seitate, his farm, known as Brook Hall Farm, on Belle House Neck, adjoining the property of William Vassall on the east. The deed bears the signature of Timothy Hatherly, Isaae Stedman, henery Averd and James Torrey. This is the property known as the "Collamore Plaece" at the present day. Capt. Anthony Collamore inherited the property of his unele Peter on his death in 1684, but did not live long to enjoy his inheritanee, as he lost his life on a eoasting voyage from Scituate to Boston in Dee. 1693, when his vessel was wrecked on the reef off North Seituate Beach, known from that time as "Collamore's Ledge." He was then the eommander of the Seituate Militia, and was buried "under arms." In 1672 Peter Collamore acquired land on Gillman Plain, where John Collamore, a grandson of Captain Anthony, settled in 1732. His house, built about 1732, was a tavern for many years. It stood on the site for 200 years, and in 1932, after falling into alien hands, was burned to the ground. A gasoline station is now beside its site. John Collamore's wife was Margaret Whitten from Hingham. He was sueceeded at Gillman Plain by his only surviving son, Enoeh Collamore, the father of Dr. Anthony and Hon. Horae of Pembroke.

Children of Laurentia Briggs and Horace Collamore:

- i. HORACE COLLAMORE, b. 1 Oct. 1815 in Boston; d. 1815, and bur. in Hoffman tomb, Christ Church, Boston.
- ii. HORACE LORENZO COLLAMORE, b. 8 Dee. 1816 in Boston; d. 10 June 1897; and bur. in Briggs burying ground, Pembroke; m. 1843 Lydia Beal of Kingston, b. 2 Feb. 1823, d. 29 Dec. 1889.
- iii. LAURA ANN COLLAMORE, b. 21 Nov. 1818 in Boston; d. 17 Feb. 1892; m. 1842, at Plymouth, William Young, b. 1817, d. 2 Sept. 1884, bur. at Mobile, Ala.



CASTLE IN BELGIUM VISITED BY L. VERNON AND MARY CABOT BRIGGS IN 1936



DR. PIERRE JANET AND MRS. JANET OF PARIS, MRS. L. V. BRIGGS OF HANCOCK,
COMTESSE DE BEAUFORT OF CZECHOSLOVAKIA, AT SKATUTAHKEE HOUSE,
HANCOCK, N. H., 1936

Photograph by L. V. Briggs

- iv. ADELINE COLLAMORE, b. 5 Sept. 1820; m. 1847 Luther Briggs. (See 109. Luther Briggs.)
- v. AUGUSTUS COLLAMORE, b. 21 June 1822 in Pembroke; d. 24 Aug. 1880; m. 1850, Harriet K. Blackman, b. 23 Aug. 1828, d. 2 Feb. 1912.
- vi. JULIA COLLAMORE, b. 20 Jan. 1824; d. 20 June 1851; m. 1849 John W. T. Stodder (Stoddard).
- vii. FRANCES COLLAMORE, M.D., b. 7 Dec. 1825; d. 18 Aug. 1910; m. 1849, at Pembroke, Priscilla J. Mann, b. 9 Apr. 1830, d. 5 Jan. 1903.
- viii. MARCIA COLLAMORE, b. 12 Feb. 1828; m. 20 Sept. 1849 George F. Hatch.
- ix. FREDERICK COLLAMORE, b. 21 Sept. 1830; m. 7 June 1860 Sarah E. Savil; d. 21 Oct. 1878 and bur. in Codman Cemetery, Dorchester.
- x. LEANDER COLLAMORE, b. 18 Nov. 1831; d. 9 Sept. 1858 at Lawrence, Kans.
- xi. MARY COLLAMORE, b. 25 Sept. 1834; d. Feb. 1885; m. 29 Apr. 1863, at Abington, Darias C. Ford, b. 2 Dec. 1835, d. 5 May 1909 at Bridgewater, son of James and Lueinda (Cook) Ford of Fall River and Pembroke. Resided at Bridgewater.

112. ROBERT⁶ BRIGGS (61. *Elisha*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 30 July 1795, was a merchant in Boston, and lived in Roxbury, where he died 31 Jan. 1859. He is buried in the Briggs Cemetery at North Pembroke. He married 11 Mar. 1821 Caroline Morton, born 1796, died in Dedham 15 May 1890, a daughter of Capt. Silas Morton, who served in the Revolutionary Army. Captain Morton was a close friend of General Washington and Lafayette, and at the end of the war the latter presented him with a sword, which is in the possession of his descendants. Captain Morton was from Plymouth. He lived for a time in South Scituate, in a house built by Capt. Benjamin Lane, on the site of the present Norwell Infirmary in Norwell Village (1936), a house that was purchased by the town of Scituate in 1818 for an almshouse, and was burned by an incendiary in 1820. He lived later in Hanover and then in Pembroke, where he was the keeper of the Morton Tavern.

The following obituary was published in the Dedham Historical Register of July 1890:

CAROLINE (MORTON) BRIGGS, widow of the late Robert Briggs of Boston, was born in Hanover, Massachusetts, on May 30, 1796, and died in Dedham on the 15th of May last, at the residence of her son-in-law, Erastus Worthington, Esq., having nearly completed her ninety-fourth year.

She was the daughter of Capt. Silas and Elizabeth (Foster) Morton of Plymouth, later of Scituate, Hanover and Pembroke. Captain Morton was an officer of the Revolution in Col. Bailey's Second Massachusetts regiment, and adjutant of the American Light Infantry at the evacuation of New York.

Through her father Caroline Morton Briggs was *triplely descended from George Morton (1624)*, and through her mother, *from Elder William Brewster, Richard Warren and Robert Bartlett*. She was the great-granddaughter of Dorothy Wadsworth, having through her a *descent from John and Priscilla Alden*. She was married to Robert Briggs in Pembroke, March 11, 1821. He soon became established in the crockery business in Boston, where he lived until his death, Jan. 31, 1859. Of their family of seven children, born in Boston, five now (1890) survive her.

Caroline Morton Briggs possessed her father's record as adjutant, containing Washington's farewell address to the army, as it was read to his detachment of troops, and Major Job Sumner's address upon relinquishing his command. She also preserved memoranda belonging to her mother concerning the Loyalist, Robert Foster of Kingston.

By her personal reminiscences and her strong interest in national politics, which she retained to the end of her life, she was to her children a stimulus to patriotism and the performance of public duty.

Children of Robert Briggs and Caroline Morton:

- i. ROBERT, JR., b. 18 May 1822; m. (1) Julia Kidder; (2) Louise Wagner; d. 24 July 1882. He lived in Philadelphia and had no children.
- ii. SILAS MORTON, b. 29 Nov. 1823; d. 2 Nov. 1824.
169. iii. GEORGE HENRY, b. 1825 in Boston; m. Elsie Hollenbeck.
- iv. CAROLINE MORTON, b. 3 Mar. 1828; d. 2 Jan. 1917;
 mmm.
170. v. ELIZABETH FOSTER, b. 1830 in Boston; m. Erastus Worthington.

171. vi. CHARLES EDWARD, M.D., b. 1833 in Boston; m. Rebecca Whittaker.
 172. vii. EMMA FRANCES, b. 31 Aug. 1836; m. Henry C. Allen.

113. LUCRETIA⁶ BRIGGS (61. *Elisha*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 13 Dec. 1789 in Pembroke, married 13 May 1821 Dion Bryant of Bridgewater, and lived in Bridgewater.

Children of Lueretia Briggs and Dion Bryant:

- i. MERTOUN CASSIUS BRYANT, b. 17 Aug. 1823; m. Caroline Bassett.
- ii. LUCRETIA HALL BRYANT, b. 10 Nov. 1826; m. Samuel E. Raymond of New Bedford.

114. ALDEN⁶ BRIGGS, JR. (62. *Alden*⁵, *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 20 Feb. 1797, lived in a house at the end of Briek Kiln Lane, overlooking the shipyard, and died there 30 Apr. 1861. His wife was Elizabeth Crosby Robinson, whom he married 25 July 1827. She was born 19 Mar. 1807, a daughter of William and Martha (Crosby) Robinson, and died 10 June 1874.

Children of Alden, Jr.⁶, and Elizabeth C. Robinson:

- i. ALDEN, 3d, b. 25 Jan. 1829; d. 24 Feb. 1831 (Family Bible Record).
- ii. ALDEN, 4th, b. 27 Dec. 1830 (Family Bible Record); d. 7 Jan. 1853.
- iii. WILLIAM THATCHER, b. 18 Sept. 1832; m. 13 Jan. 1862 Caroline Judson Baker of Providence, b. 19 Aug. 1828, d. 13 Aug. 1864. He d. 4 July 1873. No children.
- iv. MARTHA ELIZABETH, b. 15 Nov. 1834; d. 15 Mar. 1851.
- 173. v. GEORGE CROSBY, b. 29 Mar. 1837; m. Anne Loring Briggs.
- vi. SOPHIA, b. 21 Nov. 1838; d. 14 Nov. 1857.
- 174. vii. HENRY PAYSON, b. 23 Aug. 1840; m. Katherine Elizabeth Briggs.
- viii. MERCY ALDEN, b. 11 Dec. 1842; d. 20 Aug. 1854.
- ix. SUSAN ALLEN, b. 29 Dec. 1845; d. 26 Oct. 1846.
- x. JEROME KIDDER, b. 4 May 1846; d. 2 May 1895.
- xi. WALTER (infant son), b. 2 Jan. 1850; d. young.

115. HARRIET⁶ BRIGGS (65. Alden⁵, Seth⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹) was born in Pembroke 3 Oct. 1801, and married in 1830 William Thacher of Boston, born 1799, died Jan. 1931. In 1836 Harriet (Briggs) Thacher married, second, James Hawley Whitman, born 12 Apr. 1801, son of Hon. Kilborn and Elizabeth (Winslow) Whitman of Pembroke. They lived in the Judge Whitman house, still standing (1936) on Centre Street, Pembroke. Mrs. Harriet Whitman died 23 Aug. 1886, aged 85 years.

Judge Kilborn Whitman, father of James Hawley, was born in Bridgewater, son of Zachariah and Abigail (Kilborn) Whitman; *graduated from Harvard College in 1785*, and fitted for the ministry under Rev. William Shaw of Marshfield. He was pastor of the First Church of Pembroke 1789-96, then took up the study of law, and was admitted to the Bar in 1798. He became an Associate Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, when Hon. Naham Mitchell was *its Chief Justice*. Judge Whitman's wife, Elizabeth Winslow, was a daughter of Dr. Isaac Winslow of the old Winslow house in Marshfield, still standing on the Careswell estate of Governor Edward Winslow. Her mother was Ruth, a daughter of Dr. Charles and Eleanor (Stetson) Stockbridge, of the Stockbridge mansion house at Greenbush.

Children of Harriet Briggs and James H. Whitman:

- i. HELEN MARIA WHITMAN, bpt. 26 Sept. 1841.
- ii. KILBORN WHITMAN, bpt. 17 Sept. 1843.
- iii. EDWARD WINSLOW WHITMAN, bpt. 1 Apr. 1846.

116. THOMAS⁶ BRIGGS (65. Alden⁵, Seth⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹) was born in Pembroke 24 Nov. 1803. He was a ship carpenter. He was a great lover of music, and was a skillful bugler. The bugle that he formerly played has been carefully preserved by his family. His wife was Eliza Ann Sturtevant, born in Pembroke in 1821. They were married (int.) 14 May 1843. Thomas Briggs died in 1876. His widow, Eliza (Sturtevant) Briggs, lived in Dorchester in 1861; she died Nov. 1897.

Children of Thomas Briggs and Eliza Ann Sturtevant:

- i. ALICE, b. 1851; d. 1910; m. Charles Cushing, son of Nehemiah Williams and Rachel (Thomas) Cushing of Hanson, b. 1845, d. 1916. Had dau., Annie T. Cushing, b. 1879, d. 1911.

175. ii. ALDEN, b. 1855 North Pembroke; m. Elva O. Sampson.

117. GEORGE⁶ BRIGGS (71. *William, Jr.*⁵, *William*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Milton in 1794, married 15 June 1820, in Kingston, Mass., Hannah Perkins, and died in Kingston 28 Nov. 1825, in his 32d year.

Daughter of George Briggs and Hannah Perkins:

- i. MARY PERKINS BRIGGS, b. 1 Oct. 1823 in Kingston.

118. RUTH⁶ BRIGGS (70. *Charles*⁵, *William*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 14 July 1797, and married 23 Oct. 1822 (int. 22 Sept.) Maj. Elias Whiting Pratt, then called "of Hanover." He was born in Easton, and his father, Philip Whiting Pratt, was related to the Whitings of Hanover. Elias Whiting Pratt was known as "Major Pratt." He was a shipbuilder, a member of the firm of Copeland, Ford & Pratt, who built vessels at the Fox Hill Yard on North River, beginning in 1819. Major Pratt purchased the property of his wife's grandfather, William Briggs, on Stetson Road, Church Hill, and demolished the old William Briggs house standing upon it a little north and behind the house which he built, the one now (1936) standing on the property. His wife, Ruth Briggs Pratt, died 24 Oct. 1835, aged 38 years. Major Pratt married, second, 14 Nov. 1837 in Taunton, Rachel Copeland of Pembroke. His third wife was Huldah Church, daughter of Cornelius Briggs Church. Intentions of marriage recorded 4 Aug. 1849. Maj. Elias W. Pratt died 13 Aug. 1880, aged 81 years, 7 months.

Children of Ruth Briggs and Elias W. Pratt:

- i. ELIZABETH BRIGGS PRATT, b. 22 Nov. 1824; m. George W. Stetson, 2d, of Medford 1848.
ii. ABIGAIL WILDER PRATT, b. 2 Aug. 1826; m. 1851 Minot T. Gardner, and lived on Whiting Street, Hanover.

- iii. ELIAS EDWARDS PRATT, b. 16 Apr. 1829; m. (1) Melinda Hatch of Marshfield, by whom he had a family; (2) Sarah (Vinal) Pratt, widow of his brother, William B. Pratt. He lived in New Haven, Conn.
- iv. EMELINE AUGUSTA PRATT, b. 9 Jan. 1831; m. (1) 1 Nov. 1850, Seth E. Bartlett of Duxbury, son of Seth and Nancy Bartlett. Seth Bartlett d. 18 Mar. 185-, and his widow m. (2) 16 June 1858, Loammi B. Sylvester, son of Robert and Sarah (Burgess) Sylvester of Hanover, who d. in 1862 in the Civil War. Emeline Pratt m. (3) Jan. 1888 Henry S. Bates of Hanover. She d. in 1899.
- v. CHARLES BRIGGS PRATT, b. 13 Apr. 1833; drowned 6 Oct. 1840.
- vi. WILLIAM BRIGGS PRATT, b. 3 Dec. 1834; m. Sarah Vinal, dau. of Seth of Scituate. William B. Pratt d. May 1884, and his widow, Sarah (Vinal) Pratt, m. (2) his brother, Elias E. Pratt. (See above.)

Children of Maj. Elias W. Pratt and Rachel Copeland:

- vii. RUTH CUSHING PRATT, b. 1 Apr. 1839; d. 18 Dec. 1878; unm.
- viii. CHARLES COPELAND PRATT, b. 6 Jan. 1842; m. Hannah B. Hart (b. in Marshfield), dau. of Peter Hart, then of South Scituate. He was b. in Worcester, Mass., and d. in South Scituate 4 Sept. 1881, ae. 72 years. Their dau., Hannah Elizabeth Pratt, b. in South Scituate 5 Oct. 1864, m. 3 Nov. 1884 George E. Ramsdell of Pembroke. Mrs. Elizabeth (Pratt) Ramsdell lives in the Major Pratt house on Stetson Road (1936).

CHAPTER XIV

BRIGGS ANCESTRY

WILLIAM THOMAS LINE

HON. WILLIAM¹, CAPT. NATHANIEL², HON. NATHANIEL³,
LIEUT. ISAAC⁴, ISAAC⁵, POLLY⁶, MERCY LITTLE⁷, WHO
MARRIED CUSHING OTIS BRIGGS

AND

MATTHEW¹ AND JOHN² CUSHING LINE

MATTHEW¹, JOHN², JOSHUA³, ABIGAIL⁴, WHO MARRIED
LIEUT. ISAAC THOMAS, FATHER OF ISAAC⁵, WHO WAS
FATHER OF POLLY⁶ THOMAS, WHO MARRIED ICHABOD
THOMAS

WILLIAM THOMAS LINE

1. HON. WILLIAM¹ THOMAS, the direct ancestor of Mercy Little Thomas, who married Cushing Otis Briggs, was a gentleman of Welsh descent possessed with ample means, and of an adventurous spirit, who shared the passion of the age for colonization. He is said to have been *one of the Merchant Adventurers* who *financed the Mayflower Company*. He was born about 1573, and came to New England on the *Marye & Ann* from Yarmouth, England, in 1637,* with his son Nathaniel, and went first to Barnstable, where he remained until 1641-42. He is first named in the proceedings of the Court of Assistants 6 Oct. 1636. This was before there was any record that he had come to New England. In 1641 William Thomas was *Deputy to the Colony Court from Barnstable*. In 1642 he was elected *Assistant Deputy*

* Davis of Plymouth and Freeman and Otis, in their histories of Barnstable families, state that William Thomas, the Merchant Adventurer, was born in 1573, arrived in New England with his son Nathaniel and probably the latter's wife, in the *Mary & Ann*, in 1637. He first went to Barnstable, and in 1642 moved to Marshfield, Mass. Banks gives only one William Thomas of Great Comberton, Worcester, England, aged 26, sailing in the *Mary Anne* of Yarmouth from Ipswich in May and arriving in Boston, 20 June 1637. (Winthrop's Journal, Vol. I, p. 222; Wyman's "Charlestown," Vol. I, p. 563; and original list in Public Records.)

Governor, and moved from Barnstable to Green Harbor (Marshfield), where a large tract of about 1,200 acres was granted to him by the Colony Court 7 Jan. 1640/41. "Freeman's History of Cape Cod," Vol. I, says:

1642, He had ceased to be a resident of the Cape, having moved to Marshfield.

It is said that on *invitation of Governor Edward Winslow*, several substantial Welshmen settled at Green Harbor. Among them were William and Nathaniel Thomas and Richard Blinman, who served as pastor of the church which had been built a year before his arrival. Mr. Blinman was a scholar, and his teachings "may have been in advance of his times, for he was in disfavor," and he with some others of his countrymen removed to Cape Ann. Plymouth Church Records say:

This church of Marshfield (above called Green Harbor) was begun and afterwards Carried on by the help and Assistance (under God) of Mr. Edward Winslow, who att first proeured severall Weleh Gentlemen of Good note thither with Mr. Blinman a Godly able Minister whoe unanimously joined together in holy ffellowshipp or att least were in a likely way therunto; but some disentions fell amongst them which Caused a p^rteing; Not longe after and soe the hopes of a Godly soeietie, as to them was frustrated; Not long after those that went from Plymouth *with that Godly Gentleman mr. William Thomas* keeping up a Communion; It pleased the Lord to send unto them a faithful and able preaeher

On "Register of Persons about to Pass into Foreign Parts," 10 May 1637, is found name of "William Thomas of Great Comberton in Woreestershire, husbandman, Singleman, aged 26 years is desirous to passe to Exerden in New England to inhabitt." Sailed from Ipswich, Eng. arr. Boston, N. E. 20 June 1637 in the *Mary Anne* of Yarmouth. (This is possibly not William Thomas of Marshfield. See age, etc.)

William Thomas was a *member of the Council of War in 1643*, and the alarm beaeon was placed upon his estate, which adjoined that of Governor Winslow on the north. (Later, the Daniel Webster estate.)

After settling at Green Harbor he gave "minister's lands" to the town, also a site for the meeting house, near his residence. The so-called "Winslow burying-ground," on an elevation not far from the main highway, occupied this site. In this plot of ground rest the remains of Peregrine White, the first child of the Pilgrims to be born in New England; of his mother, Susanna (White) Winslow, the first mother and the first bride; the first

native Governor, Josiah Winslow; Daniel Webster and members of his family are also buried here.

William Thomas was annually re-elected *Assistant Governor for eight years* until his death in 1651, and though ill with consumption, of which he finally died, he presided at his post of duty until the May preceeding his death in August. He died in Marshfield Aug. 1651, aged about 78 years and was buried in the plot near his residence, before mentioned.

Secretary Morton, in writing of him in 1651, says:

This year Mr. William Thomas expired his natural life, in much peace and comfort. He served in the place of magistraey divers years; he was well approved and well grounded Christian; well versed in the Holy Scriptures and other approved authors; a good lover and approver of godly ministers and good christians, and one that had a sincere desire to promote the common good both of church and state. He died of consumption, and was honorably buried at Marshfield.

A deposition taken in 1735 shows that Hon. William Thomas brought cattle, probably the earliest to be brought to the town of Marshfield, as shown by Plymouth Records, Deeds, Vol. 32, page 137. It reads as follows:

Plymouth Octobr the 30, 1735. Thomas Fish aged about 64 years testifieth & saith that some time before Mr. William Thomas's death, (William, s of Nath'l) "we were discoursing about ye settlement of New England concerning their bringing of Cattel & he told me that his grandfather brought about nineteen or twenty head of Cattel & landed 'em at Nantasket & brought them from there to Marshfield and they did not know that Salt hay wo^d keep them alive and I ask^d him what they did for Fodder & he told me that they mow^d that meadow that has since been flowed by a dam for a Saw Mill which is by Capt. Arnold's house all which seemed strange to me then by reason of its being since grown up with wood & brush, but according to the best of my remembrance He told me that ye Beavers had made a dam & they mowed it all over & that it was very good Fodder."

The Thomas family is of ancient Welsh origin, elaiming descent from the ancient kings of Britain. A Prince of the North Britains, Cynvarch Oer ap Mierchion Gul, was expelled from his principality by the Saxons, and took refuge in Wales. He entered the clergy, and founded the Church of Llangynvarch, or S. Kinemark's, Maelor in Flintshire. His wife was Nevin, daughter of Brychan. She was the founder of the church of S. Nevin, Caernarvonshire. Uryan, or Urien Rheged, was his eldest son. In the Arthurian legends, the gallant knight Owaine, called by the Triads one of

the "three blessed princes of Britain," is named as a son of Urien, and Urien is there called Sir Urience.

The name Thomas first appears in the family history, in the person of Thomas⁵ ap Gruffyd (ap Nicholas⁴, ap Philip³, ap Pasgen², ap Urience¹). In the War of the Roses the two eldest sons of Thomas ap Gruffyd⁵ espoused the opposing houses of York and Lancaster, and both were slain. A younger son, Rhys⁶ ap Thomas, joined the forces of Henry of Lancaster, and it was he who, in a hand-to-hand fight, slew Richard III (of York) and placed Henry of Lancaster upon the throne as Henry VII of England.

The Thomas families of Plymouth County trace their descent from both William and John Thomas. The two were not nearly, if at all, related, apart from their probable common descent from the Welsh chieftains, but intermarriage of their descendants makes many of the later families of the name trace back to both William and John, as does the Briggs family.

WILL OF HONORABLE WILLIAM THOMAS, 9 JULY 1651

Plymouth Colony Wills, Vol. I, Page 96

I William¹ Thomas of Marshfield in the jurisdiction of New Plymouth being weak in body but of sound mind & memory do make this my last will & testament in manner & form following. First I committ & commend my soul into the hands of Almighty god trusting in the . . . of his . . . and in Jesus Christ that he will pardon to himself when ever he shall please to end my days here and my body to be decently buried in the place appointed for that. I believing the ressurection thereof the last day to be united again to the soul and with it to enjoy eternal joy. And for the disposal of my outward estate, I do hereby give & bequeath to my *son Nathaniel* & to the heirs of his body lawfully begotten the farm which I now live upon with all the appurtances thereof only first I do hereby give unto my daughter his now wife the third part thereof to be enjoyed by her if she shall survive him during the term of her natural life. And also I do hereby give and bequeath unto my *grand-child Nathaniel Thomas* the house commonly called the old house with the out yard thereto adjoining and the land formed into the house and allso all the meddow lying next to it which is within a brook which runneth to the lane near the *Eagles Nest* and also where the tree stands, and further I give him all the upland from the said house lying on the left hand of the way as we go to Duxborough as far as my land all which is bequeathed by him after the decease of his father. And for the goods & chattels I do hereby give and bequeath two thirds part of a trunk of fine linen unto my *son Nathaniel* & my *daughter his wife*. And the other third my will is shall be devided between their three daughters Mary,

Elizabeth, and Dorothy and reserved for them only before it be thus divided into three parts the three table cloths hereafter expressed shall be taken out further I give unto my daughter a silk taffeta gown and also a chanelett gown and a red petticoat further I give unto my grandson Nathaniel a horse foal now sucking on the mare also to my grand child Mary Thomas a feather bed a bolster and two pillows with two pillow covers. I give unto the church at Marshfield a table cloth nine feet long. Also I give unto James Flottney two bushels of wheat also I bequeath unto Mr. William Collyamore a heifer and to his wife a table cloth of nine feet in length also I bequeath unto Edward Berkley a silver bowl and to his wife a table cloth nine feet long, further I give unto Edward Bumpus a bushel of wheat the ballance of my goods & chattels I give and bequeath unto my son Nathaniel whom I do hereby acknowledge the heir of my body lawfully born. Also make, & constitute him the sole executor of this my last will and testament further I do hereby appoint above named Mr. William Collymore and Edward Berkley the overseers of this my last will and testament.

The last will & testament of William Thomas was presented to the court Oct. 4, 1651 by John Russell.

Following this will was an inventory in the same volume, page 97, amounting to £375.7.0.

2. CAPT. NATHANIEL² THOMAS (1. *William*) was born in England about 1606/7, married, in England, about 1636 MARY ———, and came to New England with his father in 1637 (Davis, "Landmarks," p. 261). He lived on the estate in Marshfield. In 1643, as Lieutenant, he *commanded one of the watches maintained at Green Harbor for protection against the Indians*. The same year he was one of the volunteers for the *Pequot Expedition*, and was commissioned *Ensign* of the Marshfield Company of *Colonial troops commanded by Captain Myles Standish*, made *Lieutenant* of the same Company 29 Aug. 1648, and *Captain* 5 Mar. 1654, *succeeding Captain Standish*. Besides serving in the *expedition against the Pequots in 1645*, he was *in the expedition that prepared against the Dutch of New Amsterdam in 1653*.

In 1652 he confirmed the gift of his father of 100 aeres of land for a parsonage. On 5 Mar. 1659 liberty was granted to Nathaniel Thomas and others to purchase lands at Saeonessett and adjacent territory. He died in Marshfield 13 Feb. 1674/5, aged about 68 years. His remains, with those of his father, lie in brick graves north of the center of the burial ground which they had given for the people of Green Harbor. The inventory of his estate, dated 1 Mar. 1674, amounted to £148.8.6.

John Winslow hath turned over the services of Edmund Weston for two years, beginning the last of May next ensuing, to *Nathaniel Thomas*, in behalf of his father Mr. *William Thomas*, in consideration of ten pounds sterling, the said William being further to give the said Edward 6 per annum & fourteen bushels of corn, at the end of the said two years, and what else the said John should make good by his covenant.

Davis, "Ancient Landmarks," says: "Edmund Weston, aged 30, came in the *Elizabeth and Ann* to Boston in 1635, and settled in Duxbury. This was two years before William and his son, Captain Nathaniel Thomas, came to New England, in 1637."

This first Edmund had a son, Edmund Weston, who married in 1688 Rebecca Soule and removed to Plympton, where he died in 1727. If he was an indentured servant, the indenture was entered into after his having arrived in New England. This seems unusual, but not impossible, if Weston had not been successful in finding employment after arrival and two years' search for a desirable chance.

Children of CAPT. NATHANIEL and MARY THOMAS:

- i. William, b. 1638; d. mm.
- ii. Mary, b. abt. 1640; m. Simon Ray of Bloek Island.
3. iii. NATHANIEL³ (HON.), b. 1643; m. DEBORAH JACOB.
- iv. Elizabeth b. 1646.
- v. Jeremiah (Davis, "Landmarks").
- vi. Dorothy (Davis, "Landmarks") and William Thomas' Will).

3. HON. NATHANIEL³ THOMAS (2. *Nath'l*², *William*¹) was born in 1643 in Marshfield, and served in *King Philip's War* as *Captain* of a company of Light Horse troops. He was *Representative* for nine years; ten years *Councillor*; sixteen years *Judge of the Probate Court*; twenty-three years *Judge of the County Court*, and six years *Judge of the Superior Court of Plymouth*.

The following is a copy of a letter he addressed to Governor Josiah Winslow when serving in King Philip's War:

SWANSEY, June 25, 1675.

RIGHT HONORED SIR: — A particular account of our arrival here, and the sad providence that, yesterday, fell out at Mattapoisett, of the loss of six men, without doubt you have from our General, (Cudworth) which may I desire be an inducement to you to strengthen our towns, that are weakened by our departure, since the Indians do their exploits on out-houses and straggled persons. It is reported, credibly, that Uncas sent Philip twenty men last Saturday. Sennight and Nanno sent him word that if he sent him six English heads, then all the Indians in the country

were engaged against the English. Sir, our men are all well and cheerful, through God's mercy. Send not your southward men to us, but secure yourselves with them. Send us help from the Massachusetts, which is our General's and Counsel's advice. The forces here are dispersed to several places of the town and some to Rehoboth, which this day we intend to draw into a narrower compass; in which, when we have done, we intend to lay ambushment in the Indians' walks, to cut off their men as they do cut off our men; for their present motion is to send forth scouts to lie in our walks, to make discovery and cut off our men. I pray, sir, remember me to my wife, and bid her be of good cheer; the Lord is our keeper. Our soldiers here desire to be remembered to their wives and friends. Will Ford is well of his ague. Thus desiring your honor's and all God's people's prayers for us,

I remain,

Your honor's servant,

NATHANIEL THOMAS.

To Gov. Josiah Winslow

MARSHFIELD, May 30th, 1709.

To Governor Dudley

SIR: — I Rec^d your Exelency's Letter yesterday at meeting. Sent my son with those to Barnstable Immediately. Cannot Possibly have my Souldiers at Coll. Taylors on teusday but on Wensday Intend to have them all there with their officers. Capt. Turner & others desire they may have a chaplin for the souldiers of these 3 Countys late Collony of Plimouth.

I am y^r Exelency's most humble servt.

NATHANIEL THOMAS.

S^r: — we had a muster on fryday last at Plimouth when the officers received all the souldiers & object against some whom I sent home & ordered their Respective Cpts. to send more efficient in their stead to Plimouth on tuesday next & others went to their Respective homes & are to meet again teusday ten a clock & then I Intend they shall march part of the way so as to be all at Dorchester on Wensday.

In 1694/95 Hon. Nathaniel Thomas purchased a large tract of land on the Indian Head River in Pembroke, now a part of Hanson. This territory was probably heavily wooded, and Colonel Thomas built a sawmill on the river which was called, in 1712, "the Colonel's mill," and again mentioned in 1716 as "Col. Thomases Saw Mill." In his will, dated 1718, Colonel Thomas gave all his Pembroke lands purchased from the Indians Jeremiah Mennentagus and Mathias in 1694/95, to his son *Isaac Thomas*, who was then living on them in a house 40 rods east of the mill. He also gave *Isaac* one fourth of the sawmill and its

appurtenances. The latter owned it in 1722, when it was mentioned as "Isaac Thomas' Saw Mill." In the inventory of the Isaac estate (1731) his home farm and sawmill were appraised at £3,580. In 1737 it was spoken of as "Edward Thomas' Saw Mill formerly owned by Col. Thomas," the above Edward having been the eldest son of Isaac Thomas. This old Thomas mill was burned in 1835. Aaron Hobart of Bridgewater had manufactured tacks in the old mill, and, rebuilding it after the fire, continued the manufacture of them until 1848, when the mill was purchased by Ezra Phillips and Nathaniel Cushing, Phillips buying one third of the property for the manufacture of tacks, and Cushing two thirds for a trunk and box factory. Phillips manufactured tacks at this mill until 1859, when it was burned. The site of this mill seems to have been a little above Teague's bridge on the south side of the river, where a considerable area of low-lying land was flowed by dams.

At Teague's bridge, built before 1740 and so called for Daniel Teague who lived near by on the Hanover side of the river about 1750-60, where his cellar hole could be seen in 1888, there had been built in 1716 another mill known as Hatch's Mill, and the bridge, later known as Teague's, was then called "Hatch's bridge" (one Bani Teague of Hanover married Joanna Darling in Middleborough 5 Mar. 1767).

July 1, 1716, John Rogers of Marshfield, John Cushing, Amos Turner, George King, Joseph Barstow, Michael Wanton & *James Hatch* all of Scituate, & Joseph Stockbridge of Pembroke, enter into an agreement in regard to a saw mill that they are building in *Scituate* upon Drinkwater River, near where the line between Scituate and Abington crosses the river. [Hanover was not set off and made a separate town until 1727.]

Dwelley believed that this site was never on Scituate territory, but in that part of Abington that was annexed to Pembroke when that town was incorporated in 1711. The lines were indefinitely drawn at that time.

Deacon James Hatch, son of Jeremiah, and grandson of Elder William Hatch of Scituate, is thought to have held the largest interest in this mill, generally spoken of as Hatch's Mill, and the bridge near by as Hatch's bridge. James Hatch had both grist and saw mills, which stood there until 1814, when they were torn down, and a cotton mill built on the site by a stock company having a capital of \$20,000. Among the owners of the cotton factory were Nathaniel Cushing of Cushing's Corner, Hanson, Abaisha Stetson of Pembroke, brother of Jonathan, who lived

in his last years at the Elijah Curtis place at Norwell (the "May Ellms"), and Charles Josselyn. The cotton factory was in operation until 1830, but was little used after that date. Later, Ezra Phillips made shoe pegs in it until 1852, when it was burned. In 1889 Mr. Phillips built a tack factory on the site, which he used in connection with his factory at South Hanover.

Plymouth County Records

23 Oct. 1691. Capt. Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield Ex^r against Dorothy Tubs, executrix of will of William Tubs of Dux^o for 6£, 11s, 2d. (Vol. 1, p. 161.)

17 Dec. 1700. Indenture between Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield Gent. & Thomas Tomson of Middle^o, yeoman, exchange of upland in Major's Purchase for upland in same. (Signed only by Thomas) (Vol. 4, p. 118.)

4 Mareh 1706. Exchange of land in "Major's Purehase" between Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield Gentⁿ & Josiah Holmes of Dux^o yeoman. Signed by Thomas only. (Vol. 7, p. 170.)

Plymouth Deeds

9 Sept. 1708. Nathaniel Thomas & Isaac Winslow Esq^r & Mr. Ephraim Little a committee chosen by the Town of Marshfield 2 Aug. 1708 to dispose of "y^e flatts belonging to the town lying in ye North South & Green Harbor rivers" for 6£, 10s from Joseph White of same two small sedge flatts in ye South River.

10 Mareh 1709/10. Nathaniel Thomas Esq. of Marshfield for 10£ from Haviland Torrey of Plymouth Currier, a house lott or garden spot in Plymouth that I bought of Mrs. Jennings. (Vol. 8, p. 10.)

4 June 1710. Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield Gent. for 9£ from Abigail Heyford widow of John Heyford late of ——— & inhabi- on y^e land called y^e Major's purchase dee^d land in y^e Maj^{rs} Purchase whereon she now dwelleth. (Vol. 8, p. 37.)

17 Dec. 1711. Nathaniel Thomas of Marsh^d Esq eonsid^s that William Sowden (?) of same hath lived with me from his ehildhood &c, half a sixty aere lot y^e Major's purchase. (Vol. 9, p. 166.)

Nathaniel Thomas of Plymouth Gent. for 17£, 10s, from father Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield Esq. ½ "the within bounded & mentioned land." (Vol. 10, p. 583.) [No lands are deseribed.]

Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield gent. for exchange with Ichabod Bartlett of same land in same "adjaecent to y^e Land of Robert Stetson. 28 Jan. 1711. (Vol. 11, p. 31.)

7 Mareh 1715. Nathaniel Thomas esq, Isaae Winslow Esq and Mr. Ephraim Little eommittee of town of Marshfield chosen 2 Aug. 1708 to dispose of town flatts for 4£ from Samuel Thomas of same Pine tree Island in South River. 9 May 170— acknowledged 7 March 1715. (Vol. 11, p. 208.)

10 Aug. 1715. Nathaniel Thomas of Marsh^d Esq & Nathaniel Thomas of Plymouth Esq. we the said N. T. Sen^r & N. T. jun^r for 320£ from John Besbee Marsh^d husbandman, lands in Pembroke with housing &c. (Vol. 12, p. 26.)

29 Sept. 1718. Nathaniel Thomas Sen^r of Marshfield Gent. for 200£ from Nathaniel Thomas Jun^r of Plymouth Gent. my moiety or half of the Gurnett in same with salt marsh. (Vol. 16, p. 164.)

HON. NATH'L³ THOMAS married, first, at Hingham, 11 Feb. 1663/4, Deborah Jacob, baptized in Hingham 26 Nov. 1643, daughter of *Nicholas Jacob*. Her sister, *Mary Jacob*, married *John Otis* and moved to Scituate, and another sister, *Sarah*, married *Matthew Cushing* of Hingham. (See this same line through *Dr. James Otis*.) DEBORAH (JACOB) THOMAS died in Marshfield. She was buried there 17 June 1696.

Nathaniel Thomas married, second, 3 Nov. 1696, widow Elizabeth Condry of Boston, by Rev. Cotton Mather, who recorded her as Mrs. Elizabeth Dolbery. Lincoln's "History of Hingham" says: "Nath'l Thomas mar. 2d, wid. Elizabeth Condry, widow of William Condry, whose maiden name was Dolbery." The Cushing Genealogy says: "Jeremiah Cushing mar. 1662, Elizabeth, wid. of John Wiltsie, and Elizabeth in her will mentions dau. Elizabeth Condry and grandson Jeremiah Condry." The Thomas Genealogy says: "Elizabeth Condry (wife of Nath'l Thomas) was a daughter of Jeremiah² Cushing of Boston" (Jeremiah², Matthew¹). These confusing statements can only be explained by the supposition that Elizabeth Wiltsie, wife of Jeremiah Cushing, was married three times, — first, to a Mr. Dolbery; second, to John Wiltsie; third, to Jeremiah Cushing, and her daughter, Elizabeth (Dolbery) Condry, was consequently a stepdaughter of Jeremiah Cushing.

Nathaniel Thomas married, third, Widow Elizabeth Wade, daughter of *Rev. Henry Dunster*, first President of *Harvard College*, and later a minister of the First Church of Scituate, succeeding the Rev. Charles Chamcey, who became Harvard's second President. Elizabeth (Dunster) Thomas survived her husband, Nathaniel Thomas, who died 22 Oct. 1718, age 75 years.

The residence of Hon. Nathaniel³ Thomas was on the estate at Green Harbor, inherited by his father, Captain Nathaniel², from William¹ Thomas and entailed by the latter, according to the English custom, to the eldest son.

THE LAST WILL & TESTAMENT OF NATHANIEL³ THOMAS OF MARSHFIELD
IN THE COUNTY OF PLYMOUTH GENT

Plymouth Records, Vol. 4, Page 148, 1718

I the said NATHANIEL THOMAS being at present of Sound mind and memory blessed to God for the same: Yet being aged & in dayly expectation of my Great Change by death do make this my Last Will & Testament in manner & form following. That is to say,

First, I commit my Soul into the hands of Almighty God and my body to decent Burial when it shall please God to take me hence in Sure & certain hope of a Joyfull Resurrection & Re-union of Soul & Body to Eternal Life through the preeious Blood and merits of Jesus Christ my Lord and only Saviour. And as for the Outward Estate which God hath Graeiously Given me my mind & Will is it shall be disposed in such manner as in this my Will is set down.

Imprimis. I give and bequeath unto my eldest son Nathaniel all the housing & Lands I bought of John Murdo and the Garden spot I bought of the General Court adjaent to it, and all the Lands I bought of the Widdow Genne with the Common Rights and Appurtenanees thereunto belonging to him and his heirs forever Together with what he hath already had of me in money. Also I give him my Seal Ring. And as for the *Intail'd farm my brother Lately dyed seized of* and is now by his death deended unto me my mind & Will is that the same farm shall after my deeease deend to my said son Nathaniel and the heirs of his Body Aeording to the Will of my Grandfather who first *made the Intaile and according to the Laws in Such Case Provided*. Item. I Give and bequeath to my son Nathaniel all my farm both housing and Lands whereon I now dwell in Marshfield with the Appurtenanees. To have & To hold to him the said Nathaniel Thomas his heirs forever he therefore paying to my Well beloved wife the Sum of One hundred Pounds of the Two hundred Pounds I stand Engaged to her in ease she happens to Survive me. And the other hundred Pounds shall be paid her Out of my estate by my exeutor in ease she survive me. Item. I give and bequeath to my son William the Sum of three hundred pounds & what I have or may give him before my deeease to be part of it. Item. I give and bequeath to my son Joshua the Sum of Three hundred Pounds and what I have or may give him before my deeease to be part of it. Item. I give and bequeath unto my son Caleb the Sum of three hundred pounds which he hath already had in Lands & moneys. Item. I give and bequeath to my son *Isaac* all my lands I bought of Jeremiah Mennentague & Abigail his wife and of Mathias with the Appurtenanees whereon he now dwelleth in Pembroke Excepting my Saw mill & the Saw mill Dam & Appurtenanees. Also I give & bequeath to my son *Isaac* a Corner of my Land Lying below my Saw Mill & adjacent to his other Lands Lying on the Westward Side of the Mill brook and bounded Eastward by the said Brook and Westward by the Land which formerly was Abraham Peiree's from the s^d Brook up to the great Swamp. Then bounded by the said

Swamp to the Ground that is Broken up by Samuel Staples, and then On a Line from s^d Swamp by the Land broken up by said Staples on the northward side of the house Staples Lives in down to the said Brook. Also I give him One Quarter part of my Saw Mill with the Appurtenanees. To have & To hold all the afores^d Lands and the fourth part of my Saw Mill afores^d to him the s^d *Isaac* his heirs and assigns forever. Item. My Will is that my daughter Deborah shall have an equal portion of my Estate with her other Sisters and what she hath already had or may have of me before my decease to be reeoned as part of it. And that the same be kept in the hands of my Exeeutor and by him distributed to her from time to time according as she shall need; and what shall remain thereof at her decease the Same shall be divided to and amongst her ehildren, to the eldest son Thomas a double portion. Item. I give & bequeath to my daughter Dorothy The Sum of Three Hundred pounds and what she hath had or may have of me before my decease to be part of it. Item. I give & Bequeath to my daughter Mary the Sum of Three hundred pounds and what she hath had or may have of me before my decease to be part of it. And here note that what each of my children hath had or may have of me before my decease they shall find in writing in my Will and this I will do to avoid all disputes & Contests about it. Item. I give to my Grandson Nathaniel Croade the Sum of Ten pounds to be Improved in keeping him at School at Plymouth. Item. my Will is that after my funeral expenses debts & Legaeyes are paid or deducted all the remainder of my estate whatsoever & wheresoever both Lands, moneys, Goods, & Chattells I give & bequeath to & amongst my younger Children in Equal Parts or Shares so as finally they be all made equal. Namely to William Joshua Isaac Deborah Dorothy & Mary, and the portion of my son Caleb to be improved in the payment of his debts which he Oweth to his Brothers and what remains after the payment thereof to be divided to & amongst his ehildren. And as for my Other Lands not particularly disposed of in this my Will, my mind & Will is they shall be set out to or divided amongst some of them as part of their portions which I have given them in this my Will and what part of the said Lands Shall be set Out or divided to any of my children the same shall be held to them & their heirs forever. Lastly I nominate and Appoint my son Nathaniel Thomas to be Sole Exeeutor of this my Last Will & Testament with full power to divide & Set Out any Such pareells of my Land as are not particularly disposed of in this my Will as he Shall Judge Convenient unto any of my ehildren for the payment of their Legaeyes and to make Sale of any Such pareell of my Land as he shall Se Convenient. And unto him I give the sum of Ten pounds for his Service in performing what in this my Will I have Ordered to be done and what else may be proper for Exeeutors to do. In Witness whereof I have hereminto set my hand & Seal the 29th day of September 1718.

NATHANIEL THOMAS

Signed sealed &c. John Weston — Richard Lowden — Elizabeth Wade — Margret Job.

Memoranda. — That on the 29th day of September 1718 I Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield in the County of Plymouth Gent. do add what is here under written to my Last Will and Testament hereunto annexed.

First I do hereby Confirm the Said Will & every Clause therein contained And I do further Will & Bequeath that my well-beloved wife Elizabeth Shall make use of any of the Provisions & Other Neccessarys in & belonging to my house for her Comfortable subsistance and her daughters & servants during the time she shall continue in my house after my decease. Item. I give & bequeath to my said wife my best white mare colt now about three years old. Item. I give and bequeath to my said wife my Colash & my Colash horse provided that my Executors receive the rents of her Lands at Medford for that Year I shall happen to decease in. Also my *Will is that my Wife shall have Hannah Warrows child called Daniel* [probably a slave child]. In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seal the day & Year above written. Item. before signing & sealing I give to Mary the wife of my son Nathaniel my best Silver Tankard & my Silver drinking Cup.

NATHANIEL THOMAS

Children of HON. NATHANIEL³ and DEBORAH JACOB THOMAS:

4. i. Nathaniel⁴, b. 18 Oct. 1664; m. Mary Appleton of Ipswich.
- ii. Joseph, b. 25 Aug. 1666.
- iii. Deborah, b. 28 Sept. 1668; m. 1 Dec. 1692 John Croade of Kingston, Mass. They had sons Nathaniel and Thomas Croade.
- iv. Dorothy, b. 6 Nov. 1670; m. her cousin, Judge Joseph Otis of Scituate. (See Otis.)
- v. William, b. 4 Dec. 1672; was living in 1716.
- vi. Elisha, b. 20 Feb. 1674; not mentioned in father's will 1718.
- vii. Joshua, b. 17 Aug. 1677; living in 1718.
- viii. Caleb, b. 11 Oct. 1680; m. and had dau. Deborah and others; died before 1718.
5. ix. ISAAC⁴ (Lieut.), b. 19 Oct. 1682; m. (1) Anna Thompson; (2) ABIGAIL CUSHING.
- x. Mary, b. Apr. 1686; living in 1718.

4. NATHANIEL⁴ THOMAS (3. *Nath'l*³, *Nath'l*², *William*¹) was born 18 Oct. 1664 in Marshfield, and lived in Plymouth, where he owned tan yards, and a wharf and warehouses. He also owned a furnace and iron works at Plympton, and in 1718, one half of the Gurnett. The following deeds show that he lived in Marshfield on the family estate as late as 1722.

30 Aug. 1722, Nathaniel Thomas Esq. of Marshfield for £33 from Benoni Shaw of Plympton land in Middleboro'. (Plymouth Co. Rec., Vol. 27, p. 30.)

Dec. 12 1724. A Petition of Nath'l Thomas Esq^r Praying that the Treasurer may be Directed to Pay him the Premium allowed by Law

for two pieces of Linen Cloth offered by him to the Court of General Sessions for the County of Plymouth for their approbation as the Best & finest made in that County & by them appraised & Cut in the Middle, but the said Court Refused to give him a Certificate to signify they were the two Best, because there was no others at Court.

In the House of Represent^s Read & In answer to this Petition

Voted that it is the opinion of this Court, That the Petitioner is entitled to the premium in the Law for the Encouraging the Linen Manufacture, and therefore that the Justices of the said County of Plymouth be Directed to give him a Certificate accordingly.

In Council Read & Concur'd, Consented to. WM. DUMMER.

(Court Rec., Vol. 12, p. 308.)

20 Jan. 1725. Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield Esq. My father Nath'l Thomas of same Esq. dec'd, did by will of 29 Dec. 1718, give me full power to make sale of land not particularly disposed of in his will, for £30 from Amos Snell of Bridgewater Yeoman I deed $\frac{1}{36}$ part of land in same, a portion of the eight mile purchase. (Plymouth Co. Rec., Vol. 39, p. 194.)

Nathaniel⁴ Thomas married, first, 20 June 1694, Mary Appleton, born in Ipswich 15 Apr. 1673, daughter of Capt. John Appleton and wife Elizabeth ——. He married, second, 8 Aug. 1730, Anna (Tisdale) Leonard, widow of George Leonard of Norton, by whom she had a family of seven children. She survived her second husband, Nathaniel Thomas, and on 17 Aug. 1733, made her will, giving to her children (by first marriage) the property that came to her by right of dower in their father's estate, according to a covenant made at the time of her second marriage.

Anna (Tisdale Leonard) Thomas' children by her first husband, George Leonard, were: i. George Leonard (Judge) of Norton, married Rachel Clap 19 Nov. 1721, daughter of Deacon Stephen Clap of Scituate, whose mansion house, built before 1686, facing White Oak Plain, stood on the site of the house of Charles A. Berry on Main Street, Norwell, 1936. Rachel Leonard, daughter of Judge George and Rachel (Clap), was the wife of Rev. David Barnes, pastor of Second Church of Scituate 1754-1809. ii. Nathaniel (Rev. Nathaniel Leonard of First Church, Plymouth, installed 1724), married 1724, Priscilla Rogers. Had family of 8 children, of whom Sarah Leonard married Joseph LeBaron, son of Dr. Lazarus, and grandson of Dr. Francis and Molly (Wilder) LeBaron. iii. Ephraim Leonard. iv. Abigail Leonard (Abiel or Abigail ?). v. Phoebe Leonard, married Joseph Reynolds of Bristol, R. I. vi. Abigail Leonard, married Warham Williams of Watertown, Mass. vii. Mary Leonard, married Rev. Thomas Clap, minister of First Church, Taunton. He was son of John and Hannah (Gill) Clap of Scituate, who resided at

Greenbush on the Country Way near the Tan Brook. Rev. Thomas Clap retired from the ministry after a few years, returned to Seituat and built the old Clap mansion house, near that of his father. He was a Judge of the Plymouth County Court, and a Colonel in the Militia. The old mansion built by Judge Clap was demolished in the latter part of the nineteenth century, after the death of Miss Mary Leonard Clapp.

Nathaniel⁴ Thomas, Esq., died in Plymouth 24 Feb. 1738. His epitaph on Burial Hill, Plymouth, reads: "*Nathaniel Thomas Esq. d. Feb. 24, 1738 in the 75th yr. of his age.*" The disposition of his property by will dated 1737 is interesting, telling in some detail of the entailed property at Green Harbor.

I Nathaniel Thomas of Plymouth being thro the Favor of Almighty God in Health of Body & of a Disposing minde & memory . . . do therefore make & ordain this Instrument to be my last Will & Testament In Manner & Form following. . . .

Imprimis, I having covented with my wife That she have whatever she Brought with her to me after my Decease which I will that it be paid her accordingly I also give & Bequeath her fifty Pounds a year in money at Twenty Shillings pound so long as she shall remain my widow & continue in my name & to be paid the one half by my son Nath^l & ye other half by my son Joseph Provided she never endeavor to make voyde ye s^d Covenant by any ways whatsoever.

Item. I Having by Deed under my hand & Seal given to my son John who is since Deceas^d that Parte of the Farme at Marshfield which my Great Grand Father gave to my Father in his will which Gift I Do by these Presence Ratify & Confirm unto the Heirs of my s^d son John according to ye Purporte of the s^d Deed and as to the *Favour which my Great Grandfather entailed to my Grandfather which since Descended to my uncle & then to my Father & since his Decease to me it is my minde that it should descend to the Heirs of my son John according to the Forme of the s^d Gift & ye Law in such Case provided.* . . .

Item. I give & Bequeath unto my son Nath^l & to his heirs forever all my Land Houses Tanyard & wharfe lying & being in the Township of Plymouth execept ye upper warehouse & forty foot square of Land which s^d warehouse stands Partly upon, which s^d Land & warehouse I give to my son Joseph I also give my son Joseph forever the Liberty of Shipping of any of his own Goods or Landing of any Goods upon ye warfe below ye s^d warehouse. I also give to my s^d son Nath^l all my Shares of Salt house Beach being a little more than one half the Beach with the Privileges and appurtenances Thereto Belonging to him his heirs & assigns forever & also all the Cattel I Let to Elisha Doty when he hiered ye Gurnet of me which s^d Doty is to make Good to me when he leaves ye Gurnett — also what he owes for rent of the Tanyard & upon Brook. . . .

I give & Bequeath to my Son Joseph & to his heirs & assigns forever all my Lands Houses Iron Workes that I have the Township of Plympton together with my Three Sixteenth Parts of the Furnace with all my Iron Ware & all my Part of the utensil belonging thereunto . . . also I give my Land & Meadow at Billingsgate which I bought of Stephen Barden & my Land at Rochester which I Bought of Joshua Morse my part being a Little more than one half & also my fourth part of the Island ealled Dam—— Cove which I Bought of John Turner of Scituate and it is my will that my son Joseph pay all my debts except what I have ordered my son Nath'l to pay & also fifty Pounds to Deborah Thomas ye Daughter of my Brother Caleb Thomas Deceased her Sisters having had of me all that their Grandfather Left in my hands for them with addition. . . .

Item. I give to the Reverend Mr. Nath'l Leonard ten Pounds to be paid by my son Nath'l as also the sum of *Forty Pounds which I give to the Church of Christ in Plymouth to be Laid out in a Tankard for ye Communion Table.* . . . In Witness thereof I have hereunto sett my hand & Seal this fifth day of October Anno Domini one Thousand seven Hundred and Thirty seven.

NATH'L THOMAS

Witnesses. Thomas Weathrel — John Clarke, Nath'l Foster, Rebeckah Weathrell.

(Plymouth Records, Vol. 8, pp. 6 and 7, 1738.)

Children of Nathaniel⁴ Thomas, Esq., and Mary Appleton:

- i. Nathaniel, b. 27 May 1695; d. 5 Apr. 1697.
6. ii. John, b. 21 Oct. 1696; m. Mary Ray.
- iii. Nathaniel, b. 24 June 1700; m. (1) (abt. 1722/3) Hope Warren, b. 1702, dau. of James and Sarah (Doty) Warren; (2) Hannah Robinson 16 Aug. 1729, dau. of Rev. John Robinson of Duxbury. Their dau., Hannah Thomas, b. 20 June 1730, m. *Brig. Gen. John Thomas*, a descendant of John Thomas of Marshfield. (See John Thomas line.) Nathaniel Thomas m. (3) 27 Oct. 1733 Elizabeth Gardner, dau. of Rev. James Gardner of Marshfield.
- iv. Joseph, b. 11 Nov. 1702, was given by his father's will, lands, houses and iron works in Plympton, a share in the furnaee, with lands at Billingsgate, Rochester and elsewhere. He m. Hannah Loring, who m. (2) 1750 Capt. Nehemiah Cushing (second wife).
- v. Mary, b. 15 July 1709; d. 30 Apr. 1714.

There are records of Nathaniel⁴ Thomas having had at least one slave:

Dolphin, a negro man belonging to Mr. Nathaniel Thomas, Junior, and Flora, a negro woman belonging to Mrs. Priscilla Watson, were married 29 Nov. 1731.

5. LIEUT. ISAAC⁴ THOMAS (3. *Nathaniel*³, *Nathaniel*², *William*¹) was born 19 Oct. 1682 in Marshfield, and lived in Pembroke on the lands purchased by his father from the *Indians Jeremiah and Matthias*. By his father's will in 1718 he was given these lands, together with one fourth of the sawmill that had been built at Teague's bridge. In 1722 this mill was known as Isaac Thomas' sawmill. He was a prosperous man, and at his death in Mar. 1731/2 left a large property.

The following deeds relate to Lieut. Isaac⁴ Thomas:

20 Jan. 1723/4. Isaac Thomas of Pembroke for 72£ 10s from Giles Leach & Robert Waterman of Plimpton Cedar swamp in Pembroke near land of W^m Churchell dec^d. (Vol. 17, p. 172.)

28 March 1726. Isaac Thomas of Pembroke yeoman for 51£ by Elisha Bisbee Jun^r labourer of same land in same next land John Bisbee Sen^r has disposed of to his sons. (Vol. 27, p. 118.)

31 Oct. 1728. Isaac Thomas of Pembroke for 352£ from Joseph Dunbar & David Dunbar of Hingham County Suffolk yeomans a tract of Cedar swamp in Pembroke next to lot I sold Robert Waterman. (Vol. 25, p. 177.)

Isaac Thomas Gent for £339 from John Leavitt of Hingham cooper land in Pembroke on Bridgewater line next to John Bisbees 23 Oct. 1728. (Vol. 33, p. 256.)

Isaac Thomas of Pembroke, gentleman, for £365 from John, Samuel & Jonathan Blancher & Edward Gross of Weymouth County Suffolk, yeomen, a tract of Cedar Swamp in Pembroke, near the lot I sold to Joseph & David Dunbar & near Samuel Dawes upland & near lot sold Robert Waterman. 20 Novr. 1728. (Vol. 39, p. 206.)

Isaac Thomas of Pembroke, gent. for £12, 10s from Thomas Croade of Kingston, ½ seat or pew in Meeting house at Kingston. 12 March 1730-31. (Vol. 36, p. 177.)

ISAAC⁴ THOMAS died 16 March 1731/2, intestate, and letters of administration were granted by appointment by the Judge of Probate, to John Thomas Jr. of Marshfield, and widow Abigail Thomas on 30 March 1731/2 who were ordered to render an inventory of goods, chattels etc. before 8 June 1732. [*It will be seen he had at least five slaves.*]

INVENTORY

Plymouth Records, Vol. 5, p. 837; Vol. 6, p. 30

	£	s	d
Apparel, linnen & woolen	38	10	0
Bills of Credit	18	10	0
Plate	4	10	0
Bills & Bonds	306	07	9
Ye bed & ye furniture in ye Hall	18	0	0

	£	s	d
One bed & bedding	12	0	0
“ “ “	10	0	0
“ “ “	7	0	0
Books	1	16	0
Linnen	10	16	6
One round table & chest with drawers	4	0	0
one desk, 10 black chairs, 1 great chair	4	05	0
2 trunks, paper enough for a room	3	06	0
1 table & chest, eight black chairs	3	0	0
2 tables more & 2 great chairs, & old chairs	3	08	0
earthen ware & drinking glasses	3	06	0
pewter brass & iron	16	06	4
woolen & linnen cloth	2	13	0
Flax, cotton wool & yarn	5	08	0
<i>servants bedding</i> (slaves)	1	10	0
<i>arms & amunition</i>	2	0	0
Husbandry tools, some old lumber	10	01	9
Looking glass		7	0
Boards & planks at the mill Jones river	45	10	0
Grain of all sorts, & Beans	9	11	0
Meat, butter & fruit	14	17	0
Cyder	2	0	0
<i>2 men & 3 women servants</i> (slaves)	350	0	0
1 horse bridle & saddle	29	0	0
Cart & tackling to an old horse	20	0	0
5 yoke of oxen, 15 yokes & chains & carts & wheels	116	02	0
eows, 5 young cattle, 15 sheep & goats	175	0	0
swine	7	12	0
Home farm & buildings & saw mill	3580	0	0
Farm at Jones River half a pew in meeting House	900	0	0
Part in the new Furnace	420	0	0
4 acres of old cedar swamp timber cut	4	0	0
1 plough, pair steel yards omitted	1	12	0
2 ox hides		6	4
1 acre old cedar swamp	1	0	0
Portmantle, bridle, bits & glass bottle		13	0
50 cedar rails at swamp		11	0
goat omitted, 2 cow bells, horse geers	2	2	0
His part of a horse stable	2	10	0
Tenament & land at Jones River	390	0	0
Item due on Mortgage from Joshua Cushing	65	0	11
Pew in meeting house at Pembroke	27	0	0

£6205 19s 4d

MAY 31, 1731.

JOSEPH FORD.
ELIJAH CUSHING.
SAMUEL JACOB.

Widow's Thirds set off to ABIGAIL THOMAS

Vol. 6, p. 158

Bed & furniture in hall	18£	0s	0d
another bed & bedding	10	0	0
Books	1	16	0
Half the linnen	9	8	3
one round table & chest with drawers	4	0	0
table, chest, & 8 black chairs	3	0	0
Earthen ware & glasses	3	6	0
Pewter Half the brass & iron	10	12	6
Woolen, & linnen cloth	2	13	0
Flax, cotton, wool & yarn	5	8	8
servants bedding (slaves)	2	10	0
Husbandry tools & some old lumber	20	2	9
looking glass	7	0	
	<hr/>		
	£76	3	2

DIVISION SET OFF TO CHILDREN

Vol. 6, p. 209

The land of the late Isac Thomas is divided into six equal parts by several administrators and it is then assigned the several heirs. The widow of course receiving her thirds.

To ISAAC⁵ THOMAS 145 acres lying in Pembroke, part of the homestead & barn, reserving one third part of the profits.

To Mary Thomas the second share. 206 acres of land lying in Pembroke, part of house, barn & saw mill.

The third share to Mary (or Ruth?) Thomas partly in Pembroke & partly in Kingston, with the same rights as the aforementioned.

To Edward Thomas the eldest son of the deceased the fourth share 220 acres in Pembroke, also in his right of being eldest he receives the fifth share about 240 acres of land lying in Pembroke aforesaid.

To Abigail Thomas one of the daughters of the deceased, about 97 acres lying in Kingston, she having the same privileges as the rest of the heirs.

GUARDIANSHIP

Edward Thomas son of Isaac Thomas late of Pembroke being a minor above fourteen years of age chooses Mr. Thomas Croade of Kingston to be his guardian. May 10, 1731. (Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. 6, p. 31.)

Mary Thomas daughter of Isaac Thomas late of Pembroke being a minor over fourteen years of age chooses Mr. John Thomas Jr. of Marshfield to be her guardian. July 4, 1732. (Vol. 6, p. 189.)

Ruth Thomas. The judge appoints Mr. John Thomas Jr. of Marsh-

field to be guardian to Ruth Thomas, daughter of Isaae Thomas late of Pembroke. July 4, 1732. (Vol. 6, p. 190.)

The judge appoints Mrs. Abigail Thomas widow of the late Isaae Thomas of Pembroke to be guardian to her children Isaac and Abigail Thomas they being minors under fourteen years of age. July 4, 1732. (Vol. 6, p. 190.)

DEEDS

6 June 1732. John Thomas Jr. of Marshfield & Abigail Thomas of Pembroke widow both administrators of estate of Mr. Isaae Thomas late of Pembroke by authority of his majesties justices of the Superior Court of Judicature held at Plymouth on the last Tuesday of April 1732 to sell five sixteenths of the New Furnace in Pembroke aforesaid which belonged to & was part of the estate of ye s^d deceased Isaae Thomas consideration five hundred & eighty two pounds . . . by Thomas Croade of Kingston . . . Gent. . . . the aforesaid Furnace standing within the Township of Pembroke afores^d on the North side of the Herring River which is the bounds between the towns of Pembroke & Plympton near a sawmill ealled Bosworths mill, &c. (Plymouth Records, Vol. 27, p. 93.)

31 July 1732. Abigail Thomas of Pembroke widow of Mr. Isaae Thomas late of Pembroke consideration forty five pounds to be paid every year at or before 15th day of November during my natural life . . . by Edward Thomas Mary Thomas Ruth Thomas Isaae Thomas & Abigail Thomas all children & heirs of ye estate of ye said Deceased Isaae Thomas viz one third part to be paid by the s^d Edward Thomas and one sixth . . . by each of the other children . . . sell Right of Dower or thirds. (Vol. 27, p. 118.)

Isaae Thomas of Pembroke, gentⁿ, for £30 from Samuel Ramsden of Seituate, labourer, land in Pembroke near *Colonⁱ Thomas' old saw mill* on *Indian Head River Brook*. 15 Aug. 1720. (Vol. 18, p. 209.)

Isaae Thomas of Pembroke, gent., for £19 from Solomon Beals, Junr., of same, labourer, land in Pembroke near Thomas Hayford's land & land of Samuel Ramsden. 17 Jan. 1728-9. (Vol. 24, p. 75.)

6 June 1732, the administrators, by authority of the Superior Court in April 1732, sell the interest of Isaac Thomas in the New Furnace in Pembroke, on north side of "Herring River," near Bosworth's saw mill, to Thomas Croade of Kingston. (Plymouth Deeds, Vol. 27, p. 93.)

31 July 1732, widow Abigail Thomas sells her Right of Dower in her husband's estate to his heirs, children of his two marriages, in consideration of a yearly sum of £45, to be paid her by them. (Plym. Deeds, Vol. 27, p. 118.) Records of the Provincial Court tell of the difficulty that she had 30 years later, with her stepchildren, to recover the amounts due her. (Provincial Records, sheet 20.)

29 Dec. 1763. A Petition of Abigail Little of Pembroke, widow Setting forth — That at the session of the General Court in January last, She presented a petition relating to the Estate of her former husband Isaae Thomas, that the Heirs interested therein were notified and agreed to

ERRATUM

Mr. Henry W. Litchfield kindly sent the following information which reached me on 8 July 1938, too late to be incorporated in the body of this book:

RE: ANNA THOMSON, FIRST WIFE OF LIEUT. ISAAC⁴ THOMAS

Anna Thomson was born in 1690 (probably in Newbury), daughter of the Rev. Edward Thomson, then minister of that place, and is buried in Pembroke Cemetery.

REV. EDWARD THOMSON, father of Anna, was born in Braintree, grandson of the Rev. William Thomson of that town, and nephew of Benjamin Thomson, Harvard College, 1662, head of the Boston Latin School. Edward graduated from Harvard College in 1684; established as pastor and school teacher at Newbury in 1690; removed to Marshfield, where he preached his ordination sermon in Oct. 1698. He died suddenly, 16 Mar. 1705, age 40 years, and lies buried in the Winslow Cemetery (so called) at Green Harbor. Mrs. Thomson and her family removed to Newbury in 1705. Her daughter Anna married in Newbury, 15 Oct. 1711, Lieut. Isaac Thomas of Marshfield. A second daughter married Stephen Longfellow, ancestor of the poet, and two sons graduated at Harvard College.

refer all the differences between them and the said Abigail, upon which the petition was dismissed, but that the heirs have since refused to refer or settle the said disputes. And Praying that the said Petition may be revived, the Proceedings thereon reversed and the Prayer thereof granted.

In the House of Representatives Read and Ordered, That the Petition referred to be revived and that the Petitioner serve Edward Thomas of Pembroke with a copy of this Petition, so that He and the other Heirs may shew cause, if any they have, on Wednesday the 11th January next, why the Prayer thereof should not be granted.

In Council Read and Concurred.

(Provincial Court Records, Vol. 25, p. 103.)

January 12, 1764. The following order passed on the Petition of Abigail Little as entered the 29th December last In Council Read again together with the answer of Edward Thomas and Others, and Ordered That Gamaliel Bradford Esq. with such as the honorable House shall join be a committee to take the Petition and answer, as also the former Petition of Abigail Little into Consideration and make Report. (Vol. 25, p. 124.)

June 14, 1764. An engrossed Bill entitled An Act to enable Abigail Little of Pembroke formerly the widow of Isaac Thomas late of said Pembroke Gentleman deceased to recover of the children and heirs of the same said Isaac, Certain Sums of money due from them to the said Abigail for right of dower in the Real Estate that was the said Isaac Thomas' having passed the House of Representatives to be enacted. (Vol. 25, p. 265.)

LIEUT. ISAAC⁴ THOMAS married, first, 15 Oct. 1711, Anna Thompson of Middleboro (now Halifax), born 1690, died 1 Mar. 1722/3, aged 33 years 3 months. He married, second, 14 Jan. 1723/4, *Abigail Cushing*, born in Marshfield 31 Jan. 1704, daughter of *Joshua* and *Mary (Bacon) Cushing*. (See John Cushing line.) He died 16 Mar. 1731/2, and 29 Nov. 1732, his widow, Abigail (Cushing) Thomas, married, second, Isaac Little, Esq., born in Marshfield in 1678, son of Isaac and Bethia Little, and grandson of Thomas Little from Devonshire, England (1630), who married 1633 Ann Warren, daughter of Richard Warren (*Mayflower*), and in 1650 removed to that part of Marshfield called "Littleton," now known as Sea View. The old homestead there of the Littles is now (1936) owned by a descendant, Luther Little, Esq., who lives during the winter at 62 Beacon Street, Boston.

As early as 1708, Isaac Little, Esq., had acquired a large interest in the furnace at Furnace Pond, Pembroke (then Duxbury), established in 1702 by Lambert Despard with funds contributed by

the Barkers and Michael Wanton of Scituate. He removed to Pembroke in the summer of 1726, and lived on the estate of his father-in-law, *Joshua Cushing*, purchased by the latter from *Robert Barker*. This property has been known as the "Little Estate," and remained in possession of Isaac's descendants for several generations. He died 2 Jan. 1758.

The children of Isaac Little, Esq., and Abigail (Cushing) Thomas were i. Lemuel Little, bpt. 25 Jan. 1736. ii. Isaac Little, bpt. 11 June 1738, d. 6 Apr. 1774, ae. 36. iii. Marcy Little, b. 1741, d. 7 May 1779, ae. 38. (My grandmother, Mercy Little Thomas, was named for her. (L. V. B.))

Miss Susan A. Smith, late of Pembroke and Kingston, wrote in 1907 for a meeting of the Stetson kindred that year, and published in 1908 in an account of that year's meeting, an interesting story of the establishment of the earliest iron foundry in Plymouth County, from which I quote the following:

Swank, in his "History of Iron in all Ages," claims that the first furnace for the smelting of native iron ore, known in Plymouth County, was erected by Lambert Despard, in that part of Duxbury now known as Pembroke, in the year 1702.

Lambert Despard, a founder, came from Braintree, Massachusetts, where many of the most important men in the Massachusetts Colony, headed by John Winthrop, Jr., had been wrestling with the iron problem for nearly seventy-five years. The General Court renewed their Charter from time to time . . . when for breach of contract in 1711 the "grant" reverted to Boston.

Lambert Despard, in 1702, bought of *Jeremiah Memontague and Abigail, his wife, sole heir of the great Sachem Josias, alias Chickatawbet, late of Mattakusett, in the township of Duxbury, and her only brother Charles, alias Josias late of Mattakusett aforesaid, son of the aforesaid Chickatawbet*, deceased, a certain tract of land, 20 acres at Mattakusett, Great Ponds, . . . where he was to erect iron works and mills from time to time, with all privileges, etc. . . . In a week or two he sells three fourths of this to the Barkers — Francis, *Robert*, Samuel, Joshua and Josiah, Robert, Jr. — and Michael Wanton of Scituate. On Nov. 1, 1702, there came an agreement with these for setting up a furnace for the founding and casting of iron-ware, the housings, dams, bellows, and all material suitable for the same, etc., paying Lambert Despard from time to time "£100," as he shall need it. Joshua Stetson (son of Thomas) and John Bryant were witnesses.

In 1708 and 1709, about the same time that Isaac Little acquired his large interest in the iron foundry, Despard sells land to the Stetsons and others, with liberty to set up mills.

Children of Lieut. Isaac⁴ Thomas and Anna Thompson:

- i. Capt. Edward, b. 14 Oct. 1713, 18 years old when his father died, chose for his guardian Mr. Thomas Croade of Kingston. As the eldest son of the living children, in the division of his father's estate he received two fifths of the estate, the second fifth part consisting of 240 acres of land in Pembroke West Preeinet, while the first part contained 220 acres, a holding of 460 acres. He m. 1735 Rachel Cushing, b. 1714, in Pembroke, dau. of Capt. Nehemiah Cushing, eldest son of Theophilus Cushing of Hingham. Captain Nehemiah's wife was Sarah Nichols, dau. of Nathaniel of Hingham, who in 1714 moved to Pembroke and bought the Samuel Barker estate (later Edwin P. Litchfield's). The same year his son-in-law, Capt. Nehemiah Cushing, purchased from John Pearse the Judge Whitman estate. Capt. Edward and Rachel (Cushing) Thomas had a family of nine children born between 1736 and 1755. A son, Isaac Thomas, b. 1747, m. Catherine Smith, 1781, and had a son Isaac, b. 1782, who died in the United States Army at Burlington, Vt., 25 Dec. 1812, ae. 30. Their dau. Sarah Thomas, b. 1755, m. 1777 Enos Briggs, builder of the United States Frigate *Essex*. (See Briggs.)
- ii. Anne, b. 22 May 1715; d. 28 Aug. 1715.
- iii. Mary, b. 27 July 1716; d. 13 Oct. 1716.
- iv. Mary, b. 25 Apr. 1718; m. 12 May 1737 Benjamin Jacob of Seituete, b. 1709, son of Deacon David and Sarah (Cushing) Jacob. (See John Cushing line.) (See Jacob.) Deacon David Jacob purchased in 1688, from *Capt. Cornelius Briggs*, the Russell estate at Greenbush. (See Cornelius Briggs.) The Russell house was burned in 1712, and Deacon Jacob built another on the same site. Benjamin Jacob inherited the place at his father's death, and succeeded to the property. Benjamin Jacob and Mary Thomas had a family of seven daughters, born between 1738 and 1756. Three died young. The next three youngest, Priscilla, Anne and Sarah, died unm., while Mary Jacob, b. 8 Sept. 1739, m. Samuel Hatch, grandson of Samuel (son of Walter) and Mary Doty (dau. of Edward of *Mayflower*). Samuel and Mary (Jacob) Hatch had a son, Samuel Hatch, b. Pembroke 3 Apr. 1772, who inherited the Jacob house at Greenbush. It was he who built the house now standing on the property (1936, Albert Garceau's). His first wife was Eunice Jacobs, dau. of Capt. James and Deborah (Richmond) Jacobs of Assinippi. Their only child was Mary Ann Hatch, who m. 1837 Peleg Ford. Their dau., Mary Ann Ford, was a teacher in the schools of Seituete and Boston for more than fifty years. Her portrait in oils, by Vesper George, a one-time pupil, hangs in the hall of the Emerson School in East Boston, where she taught from 1865 to

1909, a period of forty-four years. Samuel Hatch m. (2) Mercy, dau. of Israel Turner (of the Old Parsonage of Second Church, Scituate), by whom he had a family of several children, of whom but one a son, Samuel Hatch, married.

- v. Ruth, b. 12 Apr. 1721; m. 1738 Josiah Cushing. (See John Cushing line.)

Children of LIEUT. ISAAC THOMAS⁴ and ABIGAIL CUSHING:

- vi. Abigail, b. 28 Feb. 1724/5; d. 27 Mar. 1725.
- vii. Abigail, b. 29 May 1726; d. 26 June 1726.
- viii. Hannah, b. 27 July 1727; d. Dec. 1727.
- 7. ix. ISAAC⁵, b. 16 Feb. 1728/9; m. Mrs. MARY (WAITE) HATCH.
- x. Abigail, b. 25 Apr. 1732 (after death of father).

JOHN CUSHING LINE

THROUGH POLLY⁶ THOMAS (WHO MARRIED ICHABOD⁵ THOMAS)
DAUGHTER OF ISAAC⁵, SON OF ISAAC⁴ THOMAS AND ABIGAIL
CUSHING

Few families in this country have been more celebrated than the Cushings, and probably no other one has furnished more judges for our Probate, Municipal and Supreme Courts. It was especially this branch of the family that became known as the *Family of Judges*. The founder of the American family of Cushing was MATTHEW CUSHING, who came to New England with his family in the ship *Diligent* in 1638, and settled in Hingham, at Bare Cove. (See Cushing under Dr. James Otis.)

1. JOHN² CUSHING, ESQ. (*Matthew*¹) was born in Hingham, England, 1627, youngest son of MATTHEW¹ and NAZARETH (PITCHER) CUSHING, and came to Bare Cove with his parents when nine years of age. The name *Father of Judges* has been applied to this son of Matthew Cushing, to signify that it was the descendants of his line, in a large part, who became prominent as Judges of our Courts. In 1657 (also given 1661) JOHN² CUSHING and his brother-in-law, Matthias Briggs, purchased from the heirs of William Vassall the property at Belle House Neck, Scituate. The name was given this farm of 120 acres in consequence of a bell that hung there for a century to give an alarm to the neighboring country in case of the approach of Indians. This beautiful tract of land on North River, which was allotted to William Vassall in 1635, he named "West Newland." William Vassall was a man of considerable fortune, son of John Vassall, a man of great wealth, and an Alderman of

London, who in 1588 fitted out and commanded two vessels to help oppose the *Spanish Armada*. William Vassall was one of the original patentees of New England lands. He *was one of Craddock's Assistants at the time he was made acting Governor of the Massachusetts Company in London*. In 1630 Vassall came to New England with John Winthrop, but returned to London in 1631 in the ship *Lyon*, being chosen with his brother by the colonists to present their petitions of complaints against Endicott's government to Craddock in England. He returned in June 1635 in the ship *Blessing* with his wife and six children, whom he left in Roxbury while he built his house at Scituate on the beautiful location overlooking river, marshes and ocean. It was known as "Belle House." In 1646, finding himself out of sympathy with the colonial leaders, Vassall went to England, and in 1648, without returning to Scituate, he went to Barbados, where he died in the Parish of St. Michael in 1655.

The interesting thing about "West Newlands" to the Briggs descendants of JOHN² CUSHING is that on this property was located the Briggs shipyard, where several generations of Briggs built ships, and where James Briggs built the ship *Columbia*.

Two years after the death of his father MATTHEW (died 1660), John² Cushing moved to his new property at Scituate. He soon became active in town affairs. He was Surveyor of Highways 1663; Receiver of Excises 1667; Deputy to Colony Court from time to time after 1674; on a committee for dividing Scituate lands 1673; Selectman 1674 to 1686, inclusive; County Magistrate (Plymouth) 1685-92; Assistant of the Old Colony Government 1689-91; and when the Colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay were united in 1692 he was Representative to the General Court for several succeeding years; and member of the Council 1706-07, the two years preceding his death. He was Colonel of the Plymouth Regiment of Soldiers, and in 1676 was chosen to make report to the government of all services of the soldiers in King Philip's War from the town of Scituate. He was thus constantly employed in public affairs in the town until his death.

JOHN² CUSHING, ESQ., married in Hingham, New England, 20 Jan. 1658, SARAH HAWKE, baptized in Hingham, New England, 1 Aug. 1641, daughter of MATTHEW HAWKE* from Cambridge, England, born about 1610, who came to New

* Mary Cabot Briggs, wife of L. Vernon Briggs, is also descended from Matthew Hawke through his daughter Bethia, who married Capt. Benjamin Stetson.

England in the ship *Diligent*, of Ipswich, in which he embarked at London 26 Apr. 1638, with wife MARGARET and servant John Fearing, arriving 10 Aug. 1638, in the same company with MATTHEW CUSHING and family.

MATTHEW HAWKE lived on Main Street, Hingham Centre. He was a man of education, a schoolmaster 1679-83; Selectman 1663, and the third Town Clerk. His wife, Margaret (—), died 18 Mar. 1683/84, and he died the following 11 Dec. (1684) aged 74 years. James² Hawke, only son of Matthew, born 1648, married Mary Gill. Their daughter, Mary Hawke, married, first, Samuel Thaxter, Jr.; second, Rev. John Hancock of Braintree, and she was mother of Governor John Hancock, born 12 Jan. 1736/7. Bethia² Hawke (Matthew), born 1643/44, married Benjamin² Stetson of Scituate, son of CORNET ROBERT¹ STETSON. Mary Hawke (Matthew¹), born 1646, married Benjamin Loring of Hull. (See Loring, and Rev. Jeremiah Cushing, in Otis chapter.) Deborah² Hawke (Matthew¹), born 1651/52, married, first, Capt. John² Briggs (Walter¹); second, Deacon Thomas King. (See 2. Capt. John Briggs.)

JOHN² CUSHING, ESQ., died in Scituate 31 Mar. 1708; his wife, SARAH (HAWKE) CUSHING, d. 9 Mar. 1678/9.

Children of JOHN² and SARAH HAWKE CUSHING:

2. i. John³, b. 28 Apr. 1662 in Hingham, New England; m. (1) Deborah Loring; (2) Sarah Holmes.
- ii. Thomas³, b. 26 Dec. 1663 in Scituate; lived in Boston, where in 1687 he became a member of the First Church. He was *Ensign of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1709*; Selectman of Boston 1723; Representative to King's State Council 1724-35. In 1725 was one of the opponents of King George I. He m. (1) 17 Oct. 1687, Deborah Thaxter, dau. of Ensign John Thaxter of Hingham, who lived in the old Thaxter house on South Street, owned (1936) by the Wampatuck Club. She d. 1712, and he m. (2) 8 Dec. 1712 Widow Mercy (Wensley) Bridgham, who outlived him and d. 1740.

Thomas⁴ Cushing, Jr. (*Thomas³, John², Matthew¹*), b. 4 Feb. 1694 (or 30 Jan. 1693); grad. *Harvard College 1711 (1714?)*; was a prominent merchant distinguished for his wealth, ability and activity in public affairs. He was frequently chosen moderator of Boston town meetings, and was moderator of the meeting in 1742, when Boston voted thanks to Peter Faneuil for the gift of the Market House and Town Hall. He m. Mary, dau. of Hon. Edward Bromfield, b. 9 June 1689, d. 30 Oct. 1746. Thomas⁴ Cushing was Representative to General Court 1731, and Speaker 1742-46. He d. 11 Apr. 1746.

- Thomas⁵ Cushing (*Thomas⁴, Thomas³, John², Matthew¹*), b. 24 Mar. 1725; *grad. Harvard College 1744, LL.D. 1785*; was a co-worker in the Revolutionary cause with John Adams, James Otis and Joseph Warren. In 1765 was one of the committee to protest against shutting up the Courts of Law and other infringements against the liberty of the colony; Representative to General Court 1761-69, inclusive; elected Speaker 1764-74, when he was elected a member of the Provincial Congress, and of the Congress which met in Philadelphia. On his return from Philadelphia he was elected to the Council; was Commissary-General 1775-79; *Judge of Court of Common Pleas and of Probate in Suffolk County 1777*. He declined a seat in the Continental Congress 1779, and was *Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts under Hancock and Bowdoin from 1779 until his death*. He was *acting Governor in 1785*. His signature being affixed to all public papers, as Speaker of the House, he was regarded in Great Britain as the leader of the Whigs in this country. He m. 1 Oct. 1747 Deborah Fletcher. He d. 28 Feb. 1788, and was buried in the Granary burying-ground in Boston, where a mural tablet bearing the *Cushing Coat of Arms* was erected.
- iii. Matthew³, b. 23 Feb. 1665 in Seituete; m. Deborah Jacob and settled in Hingham. (See Matthew Cushing, Rev. Jeremiah Cushing, with Dr. James Otis.) A descendant of Matthew and Deborah (Jacob) Cushing was Frank⁸ Hamilton Cushing (*Thomas⁷, M.D., Enos⁶, Thomas⁵, Hezekiah⁴, Matthew³, John², Matthew¹*) of Zuñi Indian fame.
 - iv. Jeremiah³, b. 13 July 1666 in Seituete; lived in Seituete; m. 12 Apr. 1693 Judith Parmenter; d. 30 May 1710, leaving a family of four children. The family probably moved to Boston. No further record is found in Seituete.
 - v. James³, b. 27 Jan. 1668 in Seituete; lived in Seituete, and was for some years its town clerk; married, but name of wife not known. His son, James⁴ Cushing, b. abt. 1789/90, m. (1) 1710 Sarah House; (2) 1713 Lydia Barrell, dau. of William Barrell and Lydia (Turner) James (widow of John). James⁴, Jr., settled at Cushing Hill on the Assinippi road (Main Street, Norwell), where Louis Ogden lives (1936). His son James⁵ (James⁴, James³, John², Matthew¹) m. Mary Souther of Hingham (Cohasset) 1738/9. Their dau., Lydia⁶ Cushing (James⁵ and Mary Souther), m. George Cushing, Jr., 1771. (See Joseph Cushing line under Dr. Cushing Otis.) James⁶ Cushing (son of James⁵ and Mary Souther), b. 1739, bpt. 1743, d. 1821, ae. 73. He m. 1763, Sarah Tower of Cohasset. Their dau. Sarah⁷ m. 1793 Michael Lapham (son of Thomas of Studley Hill). Sarah Tower Lapham (dau. of Michael and Sarah⁷ Cushing) m. 1814 John Jones, Jr. (son of John of Marshfield), and succeeded to the house on Cushing

Hill, which afterward was called Joneses Hill, by which name it is still known.

3. vi. JOSHUA³, b. 27 Aug. 1670 in Scituate; m. MARY BACON.
- vii. SARAH³, b. 26 Aug. 1671 in Scituate; m. 1689 DEACON DAVID JACOB. (See Jacob with Dr. Isaac Otis.)
- viii. Caleb³, b. Jan. 1673 in Scituate; *grad. Harvard College 1692*; settled as minister at Salisbury, Mass., 1697. Pastor of Salisbury church for fifty-six years, until his death in 1752. He was an opponent of Whitefield and endorsed the proceedings of Harvard College in 1744 in relation to his career. Caleb³ Cushing m. 1698, Elizabeth Cotton, widow of Rev. James Alling, a dau. of Rev. Seaborn or of Rev. John Cotton, according to different authorities. A descendant, Hon. Caleb⁷ Cushing (John Newmarch⁶, Benjamin⁵, Caleb⁴) was *Judge of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts 1852; 1853-57, Attorney General of United States*. In 1866, with two other eminent lawyers, he was appointed to revise and codify the laws of the United States. He lived at Newburyport, where he practiced law until 1859. His wife, Caroline Elizabeth Wilde, dau. of Hon. Samuel S. Wilde, Judge of Supreme Court of Massachusetts, d. without issue 1832. In 1877 Caleb⁷ Cushing was United States Minister to Spain.
- ix. Deborah³, b. 14 Sept. 1674; bpt. 4 Oct. 1678; m. (1) 19 Apr. 1699 Thomas Loring (see Loring); (2) 18 Feb. 1727/8, at Roxbury, Col. Sylvester Richmond; she d. Little Compton, R. I., 18 Oct. 1770, ae. 96 years.
- x. Mary³, b. 30 Aug. 1676; d. 8 Mar. 1697/8; unm.
- xi. Joseph³ (Deacon Joseph, Sr.), b. 23 Sept. 1677; m. 1 Jan. 1710/11 Merey Pickles. (See Joseph Cushing line with Dr. Cushing Otis.)
- xii. Benjamin³, b. 4 Feb. 1678/9; settled in Boston and was member of *Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company* in 1700, and Lieutenant in another corps. He d. in Barbados 1702.

2. JOHN³ CUSHING (JUDGE JOHN the First) (1. John², Esq., Matthew¹), b. 28 Apr. 1662 in Hingham, New England, first entered public service as Deputy to General Court 1692. From 1702 to 1710 he was *Chief Justice of the Inferior Court of Plymouth*; Counsellor of Massachusetts 1710-28; *Judge of Superior Court of Judicature*, 1728-38. The Superior Court of Judicature, founded 1692, had a Bench consisting of five members. Three Cushings succeeded each other as Chief Justices of this Bench, — namely, Judge John³, 1st, his son, Judge John, 2d, and the latter's son, Judge William Cushing. Josiah Cotton of Plymouth, a contemporary journalist, said of Judge John, 1st:

"He was a gentleman well versed in the law, the life and soul of our Court while he continued in it, a man of justice and integrity." In 1723 John³ Cushing was *Lieutenant Colonel of the Plymouth Regiment*, a position previously held by his father, *John, Esq.*

John³ Cushing married, first, 20 May 1687, Deborah Loring, born 15 Mar. 1667, daughter of Thomas and Hannah (Jacob) Loring of Hingham, and sister of HANNAH LORING, baptized in Hingham 2 Apr. 1665, wife of REV. JEREMIAH CUSHING married 5 June 1685 (John's cousin); she married second, John Barker, Esq., of Scituate. Deborah (Loring) Cushing died 9 June 1713, leaving a family of eight children. John Cushing married, second, 18 Mar. 1714, Sarah Holmes (widow of Nathaniel Holmes), and daughter of John and Elizabeth (Jacob) Thaxter, and granddaughter of NICHOLAS JACOB. (See Jacob with Dr. Isaac Otis.) Nathaniel and Sarah (Thaxter) Holmes were parents of John Holmes, who married Susanna (Randall) Stetson (see 37. Hannah Briggs), and of Elizabeth Holmes, first wife of Judge John Cushing, 2d, Sarah's stepson. Judge John³ Cushing, 1st, died at Belle House Neck 19 Jan. 1738.

Children of Judge John³ Cushing, 1st, and Deborah Loring:

- i. Sarah⁴, b. 8 Jan. 1690; m. 21 May 1710 Rev. Nathaniel Pitcher, pastor of Scituate First Church 1707-23. Deane says that after his death in 1723 his family "probably removed to Dorechester," whence he came. A monument to his memory was erected in the Old Cemetery on Meeting-house Lane, Scituate.
- ii. A son⁴, b. 29 Feb. 1692; d. 5 Apr. 1692.
- iii. Deborah⁴, b. 4 Apr. 1693; m. 2 Dec. 1712 Capt. John Briggs. (See 2. Capt. John Briggs.)
4. iv. John⁴, b. 17 July 1695; m. (1) Elizabeth Holmes; (2) Mary Cotton.
- v. Elijah⁴, b. 7 Mar. 1698; m. 1724 Widow Elizabeth (Barstow) Barker and settled at Cushing's Corner, then Pembroke, now Hanson.

Their sons: 1. Capt. Elijah⁵, b. 1726, was a Delegate to Plymouth County Congress at Plympton 1774; d. 1807. 2. Nathaniel⁵, b. 1730; d. 1790. 3. Capt. Joseph⁵ (of Hanover); b. 1731; d. 1797; was Delegate from Hanover to Plymouth County Congress at Plympton 1774. With Nathan Cushing of Scituate (Judge Nathan), Capt. Joseph⁵ Cushing drafted the resolutions that were there adopted against the encroachment of Parliament and King. He was a member of the Committee of Correspondence and Safety of Hanover, 1776, 1777, 1779, and after peace had been declared and order restored was appointed *Judge of Pro-*

late for County of Plymouth; 1781-82 Joseph⁵ Cushing was Captain of 1st Massachusetts Regt. and Sub-Inspector of 1st Massachusetts Brigade, with *rank of Brigadier General*.

Horatio Cushing⁶, son of Judge Joseph⁵, was Selectman of Haver for several years between 1820-33, and Representative to General Court 1831-33. He m. Ruth, dau. of John Bailey. Ruth⁶ Cushing, eldest dau. of Judge Joseph⁵, and sister of Horatio⁶, m. 1779 David Stockbridge, Jr. Another dau., Elizabeth⁶ Cushing, m. Nathaniel Barstow 1786.

The daughters of Elijah⁴ and Elizabeth (Barker) Cushing were: 1. Mary⁵, wife of Gen. Benjamin Lincoln of Hingham, who received the sword of Lord Cornwallis at the surrender at Yorktown. Their interesting old homestead at Hingham on North Street, on the corner opposite the "New North" Church, has been carefully preserved by their descendants. The original dwelling was built by Thomas Lincoln, *cooper*, 1667, and is in part incorporated in the present house. The original house was added to in 1694, and again by General Lincoln in 1772. 2. Deborah⁵ Cushing m. Rev. Daniel Shute, pastor of the Second Parish Church (South Hingham) for fifty-six years. Their house lot on the corner of Main and South Pleasant streets was purchased 1754. Soon after that date Rev. Mr. Shute built a large house of twelve rooms, six on each floor, to which he later added an ell with seven more rooms (nineteen in all), many of them panelled to the ceiling. Into this large house Dr. Shute took many young men to prepare for college, in addition to his duties as pastor. One of them was John Hancock, who brought to the house a chair that is still among its ancient furnishings; many were also brought to the house by Deborah⁵ Cushing as a bride. 3. Elizabeth⁵ Cushing m. Maj. Isaiah Cushing of Hingham, a descendant of Daniel² and Lydia (Gilman) Cushing.

- vi. Mary⁴, b. 24 Nov. 1700; m. 29 June 1721 Capt. Eleazer Dorby of Boston. They lived for a short time in Scituate, and their first son, Eleazer, was b. there 1722. Their son, Rev. Jonathan Dorby, b. 1727 in Boston, received *degree at Harvard College* 1747, and came to Scituate early in 1751. In July of that year he was invited to settle as pastor of Second Church (First Church, Norwell), and was ordained 13 Nov. 1751. He d. in Hingham at the house of the father of Gen. Benjamin Lincoln, having gone there to exchange pulpits with Rev. Mr. Gay, 22 Apr. 1754, about one week after the banns had been published for his marriage to his cousin, Mary Cushing, dau. of Judge John⁴, 2d, his maternal uncle, in whose family he had made his home for the three years of his ministry in Scituate. He was buried in the Cushing burial lot at Belle House Neck. Capt. Eleazer Dorby was a mariner, son of Eleazer, and grandson of Edward Dorby of Boston.

- vii. Nazareth⁴, b. 11 Sept. 1703; m. 1726 Benjamin Balch of Boston. They lived at Scituate "where the ways meet," a few rods south of the meeting-house of the First Society. In early days this road leading to Cohasset was spoken of as "the road that goeth by Balch's." The Balch house is still standing (1936), was later known as the "Jackson house," and is now the residence of Walter C. Brooks. The Balch family moved to Boston.
- viii. Benjamin⁴, b. 17 Apr. 1706; settled in Providence, R. I., where he was established as a furrier and hatter as early as 1741. From 1750 to the Revolution he was sending furs to England. His first wife, Elizabeth Antrim (m. 1734), d. 1761; he m. (2) Abigail (Ford) Richmond.
- ix. Nathaniel⁴, b. 9 July 1709; *grad. Harvard College 1728*; m. Mary Pemberton of Boston 1729, and died one month later. His name is found on the list of subscribers to "Prince's Chronology," with those of his father, Judge John³, 1st, and brother Judge John⁴, 2d, of Scituate; Rev. Caleb Cushing of Salisbury; Hon. Thomas Cushing, Esq.; and Thomas, Jr., of Boston, the latter subscribing for twelve copies. It is said of the subscribers on this list: "They may justly be regarded as the principal literati of New England, who flourished about the beginning of the last century."

Children of Judge John³ Cushing, 1st, and Sarah Holmes:

- x. Josiah⁴, b. 29 Jan. 1715; settled in Pembroke. He m. 1738 Ruth Thomas, b. 12 Apr. 1721, dau. of *Lieut. Isaac* and Anna (Thompson) Thomas. (See *Lieut. Isaac Thomas*.) Their son, Josiah⁵ Cushing, Jr., raised a company of soldiers in Pembroke, Duxbury and Marshfield in 1778, which was employed as guard at Nantasket. Capt. Josiah⁵, Jr., m. Deborah Cushing of Scituate, b. 1752, dau. of Deacon Joseph⁴ and Lydia (King) Cushing of Henchman's Corner. Ruth⁵ Cushing, dau. of Josiah⁴ and Ruth (Thomas) m. Hawke⁶ Cushing, brother of Deborah and son of Deacon Joseph⁵. Another son of Josiah⁴ and Ruth (Thomas) was Capt. Isaac⁵ Cushing, b. 1749.
- xi. Mary⁴, b. 24 Oct. 1716; m. 18 Oct. 1733 Rev. Samuel Eells, Jr., b. 1710, son of Rev. Nathaniel Eells, pastor of Second Church, Scituate, 1704-50. Rev. Samuel, Jr., *grad. Harvard College 1728*; was ordained pastor at Stonington, Conn., 1733.

3. JOSHUA³ CUSHING (1. *John*², *Esq.*, *Matthew*¹), born at Belle House Neck 27 Aug.; baptized 16 Oct. 1670, was father of ABIGAIL⁴ CUSHING, second wife of LIEUT. ISAAC⁵ THOMAS. Joshua was twice a Representative; was *Captain of the Militia*, first Justice of the Peace in Pembroke 1711, and later was its second town clerk. He lived first in Marshfield, later in Pem-

broke, and before 1725 moved to Kingston. He died in Kingston and was buried in Pembroke, where his gravestone reads: "dyed 26 May 1750 in ye 80 years."

JOSHUA³ CUSHING married at Marshfield, 31 May 1699, MARY BACON, born in Hingham 7 Feb. 1679/80, daughter of SAMUEL BACON, born in Barnstable 25 Feb. 1650/1, died in Hingham 18 Feb. 1680/81. He lived in Hingham and married 17 Dec. 1675 MARY JACOB, born 30 Mar. 1656, daughter of CAPT. JOHN JACOB (of Hingham, Norfolk, England) of Watertown, Mass., who arrived on ship *Elizabeth Bonaventure* from Yarmouth, England, at Boston 15 June 1633 with his father, mother and sister Mary. He was *Captain of the Militia in King Philip's WAR*, and his son, John Jacob, was *slain near his father's home* at Glad Tiding Plain, Hingham, in the Indian Raid of 1676. Mary (Jacob) Bacon (widow of Samuel) married, second, 1685, Elisha Bisbee, widower, and died in Pembroke 15 Apr. 1737. (See this same line through Dr. James Otis.) SAMUEL BACON was a son of HON. NATHANIEL BACON of Barnstable, for seven years a Councillor, and thirteen years a Deputy from that place. He was born in Stratton, England; married 4 Dec. 1649 HANNAH MAYO, born in England about 1622, died after 1691, daughter of REV. JOHN MAYO of Boston, later of Barnstable. *Rev. John Mayo, a college graduate*, born in England about 1597, married in England about 1620. He lived in Eastham, Boston and Yarmouth, Mass., where he died May 1676. He arrived from London on the ship *William and Francis* 5 June 1632, with three other ministers and their families. (Winthrop's Journal.)

Farmer's Genealogical Register, page 102, says: "John Mayo, minister of Barnstable, and the first settled over the old North Church in Boston, was installed 9 Nov. 1656, dismissed 1672, and died in May 1676."

Children of JOSHUA³ CUSHING and MARY BACON:

- i. MARY⁴ CUSHING (*Joshua³, John², Matthew¹*) bpt. Marshfield, Mass., 18 Apr. 1702. She m. 1 Jan. 1723 John, son of Joseph and Lois (Stetson) Ford. He was a mason and glazier and d. in 1776. Children of Mary (Cushing) and John Ford: i. Abigail (Ford), b. 25 Apr. 1727; m. (1) Dr. Ichabod Richmond of Bristol, R. I.; (2) 11 Sept. 1765, 50. Benjamin Cushing. ii. John, b. —; m. Mary Baker. iii. Seth, b. —; m. Margery. iv. Adam, b. —; m. Rebecca. v. Waite, b. —. vi. Lot, b. 3 June 1746; m. 15 Mar. 1787 Naomi Lapham.
- ii. ABIGAIL⁴ CUSHING (*Joshua³, John², Matthew¹*), b. Marshfield 31 Jan. 1704; m. (1) 14 Jan. 1727 Isaac Thomas, widower; (2)



HOUSE OF LOUIS CABOT, CORNER OF HEATH AND WARREN STREETS, BROOKLINE, WHERE HIS DAUGHTER,
MARY T. CABOT, AND L. VERNON BRIGGS WERE MARRIED IN 1905

(See pages 1076-1090)

- CAPT. ISAAC, son of LIEUT. ISAAC and Bethia (Thomas) Little, and widower of Mary Otis of Hingham. He was b. 21 Feb. 1677 and d. 2 Feb. 1758. Children of Abigail (Cushing) and Capt. Isaac Little: i. Lemuel, b. 25 Jan. 1736. ii. Isaac, b. —; m. 10 July 1760 Lydia Hatch; d. 6 Apr. 1774, ae. 35. iii. Mary, b. —.
- iii. JOSHUA⁴ CUSHING (*Joshua*³, *John*², *Matthew*¹), b. Marshfield 10 Dec. 1706; m. Bethia —; lived in Kingston, Mass. Children of Joshua⁴ and Bethia (all b. in Kingston): i. Nathaniel, b. 13 May 1733. Said to have been wounded at Bunker Hill and to have lived to the age of 97. ii. Joshua, b. 24 Jan. 1735; [m. Mary Freeman]. iii. Mary, b. 1 Feb. 1737; d. 6 Apr. 1741. iv. Jairus, b. 19 Feb. 1739; d. at sea 1765. v. Bethia, b. 20 Oct. 1742; m. Benjamin Patterson in 1758. vi. Mary, b. 24 Nov. 1744; d. in Duxbury 24 July 1769. vii. Benjamin, b. 19 Oct. 1746; d. 18 Nov. 1746. viii. Sarah, b. 5 Oct. 1747.
- iv. LYDIA⁴, b. 1708 (prob. Pembroke); m. 24 Oct. 1732 Isaac Simmons.

4. JUDGE JOHN⁴ CUSHING (THE SECOND) (2. *Judge John*³, *John*², *Esq.*, *Matthew*¹) was born at Belle House Neck 17 July 1695; *graduated at Harvard College in 1711*; town clerk of Scituate 1719–44; Representative in 1721, and several years thereafter; *Judge of Probate 1738–46*; *Justice of Court of Common Pleas*, Plymouth, 1738–51, when he was transferred to *Superior Court*, from which he resigned in 1772. He had been one of the *Presiding Judges at the trial of the British soldiers after the Boston massacre in 1770*. From 1746 to 1763 Judge Cushing was a Councillor of the Province. The Rev. Josiah Cotton wrote that “his introduction into the office was attended with a more unanimous vote than any ever before had — having all the votes save one.” John Adams happened to dislike Judge John⁴ Cushing and lost no opportunity of showing his dislike or of expressing his small opinion of the Superior Court.

The sittings of the Court were conducted with great ceremony after the English custom, the lawyers wore gown and wig, the judges wore large Judicial wigs and gowns of black silk with white bands; when sitting on a capital case the robe was of scarlet with black velvet collar, cuffs, and facings. (Gen. Reg., Apr. 1864.)

John Cushing was one of the members of the Court which granted the writ of assistance for the seizure of uncustomed goods applied for by the Surveyor of the Port of Boston, and thereby incurred the enmity of Otis, Samuel Adams, and other leaders of the Revolutionary party. John Adams in a letter describes

the appearance of the Court before whom the case was argued in 1761:

The court sat in the council chamber in Boston. In this chamber, near the fireplace were seated Chief Justice Hutchinson, Judges Benjamin Lynde, John Cushing, Peter Oliver and Chambers Russell, all in their new fresh robes of scarlet English cloth and seated at a long table all the barristers of Boston and its neighboring county of Middlesex in their gowns, bands and tye wigs. (Washburn's Judicial History of Massachusetts.)

Adams describes overtaking Judge Cushing on the road to Ipswich in 1771:

Overtook Judge Cushing, in his old curricule, and with two lean horses, and Dick, his negro, at his right hand, driving the curricule. This is the way of travelling in 1771: a Judge of the Circuits, a Judge of the Superior Court, a Judge of the King's Bench, Common Pleas and Exchequer for the Province, travels with a pair of wretched old jades of horses, in a wretched old dung cart of a curricule, and a negro on the same seat with him driving Stopped at Martin's in Lynn, with Judge Cushing; oated, and drank a glass of wine, had heard him sigh and groan the sighs and groans of seventy-seven, though he kept active. He conversed in his usual, smiling, insinuating, scrupling strain.

But even Adams was obliged to commend his stand when he refused to trim, and declared he was ready to proceed with the business of the Court without stamp papers: "Cushing spoke out boldly and said he was ready to go on; he had no difficulty about going on."

Judge John⁴ the Second lived at Belle House Neck, in the house in which his father and grandfather had lived, originally that of William Vassall (a memorial tablet was unveiled at Greenbush, Scituate, in 1919, in memory of Chief Justice William Cushing). The Cushings had made some additions to the house, yet it was far from being commodious enough to accommodate the large family of the Judge in comfort. In 1642, when his eldest son John was about to marry, he built a new house on or very near the site of the old one, the house now standing on the property, and owned in 1936 by Roger Sherman Dix. This house has had some additions from time to time, but the house as built in 1742 can be identified. In 1743 Judge John⁴ built the Walnut Tree Hill Mansion, and moved into it, leaving the new house at Belle House Neck as a home for his son, John⁵ Cushing (4th). The new Walnut Tree Hill Mansion was large and imposing. It

stood on the site of the home of Stephen Webster (1936), whose house was originally the stable and carriage house of the Cushings, the only building now standing that belonged to them. The mansion house was burned in 1872, and a cottage house was built on a part of the large cellar, and it also was burned; then the old building left standing beside the ruins was moved to the site of the former houses.

Judge John⁴ the Second married, first, 1 Apr. 1718, Elizabeth Holmes, born in 1693, daughter of his stepmother, Sarah (Thaxter), by her first husband, Nathaniel Holmes. She died 13 Mar. 1726, aged 33 years; he married, second, 20 Nov. 1729, Mary Cotton, daughter of Josiah Cotton, Esq., of Plymouth, whose diary, begun soon after 1698, and continued to nearly 1756, has been a source of historical information not elsewhere recorded. Mrs. Mary (Cotton) Cushing died 29 Mar. 1767. Judge John⁴ Cushing died 19 Mar. 1788. Both are buried in the family lot on the hill at Belle House Neck.

Children of Judge John⁴ Cushing and Elizabeth Holmes:

- i. Deborah⁵, b. 16 Nov. 1718; m. 1737 David Stockbridge of Hanover, grandson of Joseph and Margaret (Turner) Stockbridge; lived in Hanover, on site of residence of Edmund Q. Sylvester, Washington Street, 1936.
- ii. Sarah⁵, b. 26 Mar. 1720; m. 16 Aug. 1750 Ebenezer Pierpont of Roxbury.
- iii. John⁵, b. 16 Aug. 1722; lived at Belle House Neck in house built in 1742; m. 12 July 1741 Deborah Barker, dau. of Barnabas and Sarah (Green) Barker of Halifax Hill, Seitate (see Barker), and sister of Gen. Joshua Barker of the Revolution. John⁵ Cushing (4th) d. 1 June 1798. They had eleven children: 1. John⁶, b. 23 Jan. 1743; m. Olive Wallingford, dau. of Col. Thomas Wallingford of Somersworth, N. H. He was chosen *Colonel of the Plymouth Regiment, 1776, and served throughout the Revolution*; lived in Boston until after 1786, and before 1792 moved to Berwick, Me. 2. Francis⁶, b. 1745; was a *soldier in the Revolution*; a ship carpenter, and *worked on the frigate Constitution* at Edmund Hart's shipyard in Boston; m. (1) Temperance Foster, dau. of Deacon Elisha and Temperance (Freeman) Foster, who d. 1781; m. (2) Luey Dyer, dau. of Charles and Luey (Cotton) Dyer. Deborah⁷ Cushing, dau. of Francis, m. Gen. John Turner of Turner, Me., where Francis Cushing moved, and where he died. 3. Barker⁶, b. 23 Mar. 1757; was *killed at Ticonderoga, N. Y., Sept. 15, 1776, a Revolutionary soldier*. 4. Robert⁶, b. 4 Feb. 1755(?); m. Ann Maynard Perkins, dau. of James and sister of Hon. Thomas Handasyde Perkins of Boston.

Ann⁷, dau. of Robert and Ann (Perkins) Cushing, m. Henry Higginson of Boston; and Robert⁶, son of John Perkins⁷ Cushing, was a distinguished Boston merchant, who lived many years in China, where he accumulated a very large fortune. After his return to his native land he was a liberal and unostentatious contributor to charitable and other worthy causes. At his home in Watertown he had conservatories, which were liberally opened to the public. It is said that thousands visited his beautiful gardens every season. He was active in many public enterprises. He m. Mary Louisa Gardner, dau. of Rev. John S. J. Gardner, Rector of Trinity Church, Boston. Their son, Robert Maynard⁸ Cushing, m. Olivia Donaldson Dulaney of Baltimore. Former Lieut.-Gov. Grafton Dulaney⁹ Cushing is their son. In "History and Genealogy of Cabot Family," Vol. I, page 422, is the following interesting letter from Col. Thomas Handasyde Perkins to John Perkins Cushing, dated 12 Apr. 1815:

By the will of our late hon^d mother, Mrs. Eliza Perkins, you are entitled to 1/16 part of her estate. There was due you for rents and interest up to Dec. 31/14 the sum of \$566 16/100. We have agreeably to your request, notified y'r sister, Mrs. H. Higginson, that this sum, in addition to whatever further amount she may require, shall be paid her, with an equal portion of the estate, to which she is entitled by the will. Be good eno' to send us an order to pay Mrs. Nancy Maynard Higginson, (etc, etc . . .) There will, we presume, be due you hereafter from the Estate an annual sum of \$75, & as much more to your sister. We shall carry both to her credit, &c. H. Higginson will write you respecting some property that will come to you from the Estate of y'r late Grandfather, Mr. John Cushing, of Scituate.

5. Nathaniel b. 15 May 1768, youngest son of John⁵ and Deborah (Barker) inherited the property at Belle House Neck. He d. 1827. After the death of his widow, Hannah (Jacobs) Cushing, in 1842, their dau., Mrs. William Haskins of Medford, sold the estate held by the Cushings since 1657 to David Briggs. (See Briggs chapter.)

iv. Nathaniel⁵, b. 12 Aug. 1724; d. 2 Apr. 1725.

v. William⁵, b. 23 Sept. 1725; d. 4 Feb. 1726.

Children of Judge John⁴ Cushing and Mary Cotton:

vi. Mary⁵, b. 6 Sept. 1730, the banns for whose marriage to her cousin, Rev. Jonathan Dorby, were published shortly before his death (see Judge John Cushing, 1st); m. 10 Nov. 1763 Rev. Ebenezer Gay of Suffield, Conn. (his second wife), son of Rev. Ebenezer Gay of Hingham. Her daus., Mary and Lucy Gay, m. respectively, Timothy and Benjamin Swan. Harriet Swan, wife of Henry Dana of Woodstock, Vt., who later purchased and resided

in the Cushing mansion at Walnut Tree Hill, was a dan. of one of these sisters. (See William T. Briggs.)

5. vii. William⁵, LL.D., b. 1 Mar. 1732; m. Hannah Phillips.
- viii. Charles⁵, b. 13 Aug. 1734; *grad. Harvard College 1755*; was educated as a lawyer, and with his brother William, two years his senior, went to the frontier town of Pownalboro', Me., where their father had large grants of land. York was the only county in what is now the State of Maine until in 1768 Lincoln County was established, with Pownalboro' as the county seat. The brothers, William and Charles Cushing, were the only lawyers living there at that time, and William was appointed the first *Judge of Probate* of the County of Lincoln, and Charles, first sheriff, an office which he held through the Revolution, where he became especially obnoxious to the Loyalists in the section for his vigilance in the discharge of the duties of his office. In 1781 he was a *Brigadier General*, and was *seized at night* by a party of Tories led by John Jones, taken from his bed and carried away to the British army at Castine, where he was held prisoner for some time. By 1783 he had moved to Boston, and was Clerk of the Superior Courts of Suffolk and Nantucket Counties from that date until his death 17 Nov. 1810. Like his brother, Judge William, he held important positions in Province and State under Royal and Republician governments for fifty years, sufficient proof of his ability and integrity — a gentleman worthy of his distinguished ancestors.

Charles⁵ Cushing m. 25 Aug. 1768 Elizabeth Sumner, sister of Gov. Increase Sumner. She d. 31 May 1817. They had eight children, b. in Pownalboro'. The two eldest d. in infancy. 3. Elizabeth⁶, b. 1772, m. Elisha Doane. 4. Mary⁶, b. 1774, m. (1) Hon. Eli P. Ashmun, United States Senator; m. (2) Stephen Codman. 5. Charles⁶, b. 1775, m. 1805 Ann Huske Sheafe. They lived in the Gov. Benning Wentworth house at Little Harbor, Portsmouth, N. H., immortalized by Longfellow in "Tales of the Wayside Inn:"

For this was Governor Wentworth, driving down
To Little Harbor, just beyond the town,
Where his great house stood looking out to sea,
A goodly place, where it was good to be.

It was a pleasant mansion, an abode
Near and yet hidden from the great highroad,
Sequestered among trees, a noble pile,
Baronial and colonial in its style;
Gables and dormer windows everywhere,
And stacks of chimneys rising high in air, —
.

Within, unwonted splendors met the eye,
 Panels, and floors of oak, and tapestry;
 Carved ehimney-pieces, where on brazen dogs
 Revelled and roared the Christmas fires of logs;
 Doors opening into darkness unawares,
 Mysterious passages, and flights of stairs.

.

Charles⁶ Cushing d. in 1849; his wife, Ann Sheafe, d. at Little Harbor in 1876 at the age of 93. 6. Sarah⁶, b. 1777; m. 1797 Charles Paine of Boston; they were grandparents of Gen. Charles Paine of yachting fame. 7. Lucy⁶, b. 1780; m. 1805 Maj. Henry Sheafe. Their summer home was a small house that stood, until about 1932, on the top of Wilson Hill, Norwell, nearly opposite the boulder marking the site of the first meeting-house of the Second Parish 1645-80, known as the "Sheafe house." It is said to have been surrounded by a charming garden laid out with bordered walks and arbors, and even today remnants of this garden are occasionally found in clumps of white narcissus along the stone wall that separated the property from that of Henry Briggs, Sheafe's neighbor on the east.

Major Henry Sheafe, who married Luey Cushing built the "Sheafe house." It had a "rainbow roof." Major Sheafe was Superintendent of the State Arsenal on Pleasant St. Boston, off Park Square. He was of stout build and soldierly appearance. The boys would do errands for him as eompensation for the privilege of keeping their rabbits in the arsenal grounds. As they multiplied, they found quarters in the eannon on the grounds. Everything went smoothly until Marcus Morton was elected Governor, when a eommittee was appointed to visit the Arsenal. The eommittee reported that rabbits and war material ought not to be kept to-gether. (From C. O. Ellms, unpublished MSS., Chief Justice Cushing Chapter, D. A. R.)

- ix. Edward⁵, b. 6 Sept. 1736; d. 1736.
- x. Hannah⁵, b. 2 Sept. 1738; m. 4 Jan. 1759 Rev. Samuel Baldwin, pastor of the First Church, Hanover, and an expert cabinet maker [I have a block front mahogany desk and other pieces made by him]. They lived in the old Baldwin house on Hanover Street, burned about 1896. Its site is now a part of an athletic field for the Sylvester High School, Centre Hanover. Their dau., Mary Baldwin, m. 1787 Robert Salmond, and William, John and Samuel Salmond, their sons, with Capt. Zephaniah Talbot (who m. Agnes Salmond), before 1838, began the manufacture of tacks at the old Tiffany mill, on the Seitnate side of the Third Herring Brook. In 1838 Samuel acquired the business, which is still conducted by his descendants, the Sylvesters, under the firm name of Samuel Salmond & Son, said son having been his son-in-law, Edmund Q. Sylvester, grandfather of the present owners.

Miss Fanny Baldwin, dau. of Rev. Samuel and Hannah (Cushing), lived to an advanced age, and d. at the home of Mrs. Samuel Salmond, 17 Nov. 1865.

- xi. Bethia⁵, b. 29 Mar. 1740; m. 1764 Abraham Burbank of Suffield, Conn.
- xii. A daughter⁵ (stillborn), b. 20 June 1742.
- xiii. Roland⁵, b. 9 Jan. 1744; d. 28 Mar. 1748.
- xiv. Lucy⁵, b. 30 Dec. 1745; m. 1771 Thomas Aylwin of Boston; had several children, with exception of the eldest, b. in Quebec, Can. A son, John Cushing Aylwin, b. 1778, was a Lieutenant in the United States Navy, and was *mortally wounded in the action between the frigate Constitution and the Java*, which was captured 29 Dec. 1812. Hannah Phillips Aylwin m. Governor Hoppin of Providence, R. I.; William Cushing Aylwin, b. 1784, m. his cousin Sarah Paine. (See Judge William Cushing.)
- xv. Abigail⁵, b. 8 June 1748; d. 1824; unnm.
- xvi. Roland⁵, b. 26 Feb. 1750; *grad. Harvard College 1768*; studied law in office of his brother William at Pownalboro', Me., practicing his profession there for several years in the part of the town that is now Dresden, Me. After a few years he moved to Gardner, Me., and continued his law practice, until in 1787 Waldoboro' was made a half-shire town of Lincoln County, Me. Roland Cushing was appointed Register of Probate, and removed to Waldoboro'. In 1776 Roland Cushing was a *Major in Col. Joseph North's (2d Lincoln County) Regt.* He was a man of distinguished talents, fine education, and was remarkable for his personal beauty and graceful manners. He d. unnm. 1778, ae. 38 years.

5. JUDGE WILLIAM⁵ CUSHING (CHIEF JUSTICE CUSHING) (4. *Judge John*⁴, 2d, *Judge John*³, 1st, *John*², Esq., *Matthew*¹), was born in the old Cushing home at Belle House Neck 1 Mar. 1732, and moved with the family to the new mansion at Walnut Tree Hill when he was nine years old. He prepared for college under Richard Fitzgerald, a grammar school master then teaching in Scituate, and *graduated from Harvard in 1751*. William Cushing was master of the Roxbury Grammar (later called Latin) School, and began the study of law under the celebrated Jeremy Gridley of Cambridge, Attorney General of the Province. He began his law practice in Scituate, and accompanied his father on his circuits.

About 1755 William⁵ and his younger brother Charles went to Pownalboro', Me. (See Charles Cushing.) When Lincoln County was established in 1768, William was appointed *Judge of Probate* for the new county, and held the office until his appoint-

ment, in 1772, as *Associate Judge* of the *Superior Court of Judicature*,* succeeding his father who resigned that year. While in Pownalboro' he lived in the family of his brother Charles, and on his appointment to the Superior Court, returned to his father's home at Scituate, where his aged father and unmarried sister Abigail were living.

William Cushing's appointment as a *Supreme Court Justice under the Crown* came just before the outbreak of the Revolution. Because of his official position, which demanded that he should refrain from taking part in any political discussions until the hour came for him to properly declare himself, he was subjected to some criticism and even suspicion, but this was allayed in 1776, when he drafted the Resolutions of the town of Scituate for the instruction of its Representative, Nathan Cushing, Esq. The strong and vigorous language of these Resolutions left no doubt in any mind of his loyalty to the Patriot cause. Judge Cushing was the only member of the King's Bench who supported the Independence and separation of the colonies from the mother country, and when the courts were reorganized, was the *only Justice of the Provincial Court who was retained in judicial position*. In an address, on 30 Aug. 1919, when the memorial tablet, erected in memory of Judge Cushing by the Scituate Historical Society, was unveiled, Chief Justice Arthur Prentice Rugg of the Supreme Judicial Court said:

The position of administrating justice in a province in rebellion was no holiday affair. It was a post of extreme peril. . . . Courage and deep conviction must have dictated his course.

One instance of this danger occurred at the time of Shay's Rebellion at Springfield. An account of this affair is told in a sketch written by his grandnephew, Charles Cushing Paine, published in Flanders' "Lives and Times of the Chief Justices." It says:

The Courts and Judges were subjected during these times to great annoyances, and occasionally to much personal danger; frequently the

* Re: Judge William Cushing.

The Superior Court of Judicature was the highest Court in the State of Massachusetts, which in 1772 included Maine. Judge William Cushing was Judge of Probate in Pownalboro' (then Massachusetts) when his father resigned in 1772, and William was then appointed to the position of Judge of Superior Court of Judicature of Massachusetts, the position held by both father, Judge John the Second, and grandfather, Judge John the First. He then returned to Scituate, a central point from which he made his circuits to the various shire towns of the State.

court houses were surrounded and filled by people armed and highly excited, and the Judges were refused admittance at the inns, or food either for themselves or their horses.

In 1922 Dr. Henry Barton Jacobs of Baltimore, born in South Scituate in the old Jacobs homestead near Assinippi Village, son of Barton Richmond and Frances (Ford) Jacobs, sent to the Chief Justice Cushing Chapter, D. A. R., for preservation, a letter written in Boston 10 Mar. 1853, addressed to L. J. Cist, Esq., in reply to a request by the latter to C. C. Paine for an autograph of Judge Cushing. The letter in part reads:

DEAR SIR: — Agreeably to your request last summer I enelose you an autograph of Judge Wm. Cushing — it is the only one I have been able to find, though confident that there is a file of letters somewhere among the papers from him to my Grandfather his brother — and with his name let a word go in company, of his character. . . .

On three occasions during his life the feeling of the community was evidenced toward him in a remarkable manner. His father, grandfather & great grandfather had been on the bench of our State, & in 1772 when his father resigned, Judge William Cushing was immediately appointed by Gov. Hutchinson to fill the place on the Supreme Bench — it was supposed of course by the Gov party, that he would take sides with them — but he did not, and he was the only one of the Judges who did not — and yet to the last moment he enjoyed the entire confidence & regard of the Gov^t party, & at the same time he so much possessed the respect & confidence of the liberal party, that on the reorganization of the Supreme Court, he was appointed Chief Justice. This office he held while Massachusetts was a sovereign state during all the period of Shay's rebellion, the particular ill will of which, as you will remember, was directed against the Courts — & his influence went far to mitigate that awful state of feeling.

During these times of excitement he had the remarkable power of never uttering a word on the subjects of excitement more than was barely necessary, and that word was always spoken kindly — and yet he was firm — on one occasion the insurgents had surrounded the Court house to the number of 800 or a thousand — the Judge arrived at the tavern — the insurgents demanded that the Court sh^d not be opened — the Chief Justice remarked quietly that it was his duty to open the court & he must do so — and asking the other Judges to follow he walked from the tavern to the Court house — the insurgents opened a way but with reluctance & their bayonets rapped on his bosom as he advanced — he was white with paleness but firm, & the court was opened. [This was in the western part of Massachusetts, probably Springfield.]

It was during these times of bitter feeling between the two parties, in 1785, when Hancock resigned as Gov^r, that *both* parties applied to him

to be, not the candidate of one, but of both — he declined — On the organization of the Supreme Court of the United States Washington appointed John Jay, who was Chief Justice of N. Y. to be Chief Justice & Wm. Cushing, who was Chief Justice of Mass^a as next Judge — & when Jay resigned in 1796 Washington appointed William Cushing the Chief Justice — it was a time when party politics ran so high & furious, that the common intercourse of society between gentlemen of the different parties was in a great degree suspended — & the position of William Cushing was perfectly well known — & yet he was *unanimously* confirmed by the Senate. In 1775–1785 — & 1796 — he then united on himself the goodwill of both sides — & yet he was an unwavering & firm supporter of his own side & views.

He was born 1732 — *graduated at Harvard College 1751* — & died 1810 — without issue — he was of good height & possessed great personal beauty — the features of his face were very fine . . .

Respy Yrs.

CHA^s C. PAINE,*

L. J. Cist, Esq., Boston March 10, 1853

On his appointment in 1777, as *Chief Justice of the Superior Court of Judicature*, Judge William Cushing labored with much success to place that court upon a firm and substantial basis, and the outcome of the affair at Springfield was due in no small measure to that success.

At that period much importance was attached to his charges to the Grand Jury. Most of them were unwritten and are not upon record. The most important on record, given by Chief Justice Cushing while on the Massachusetts Bench, was delivered at Worcester in Apr. 1783. This far-reaching judicial opinion abolished slavery in the State of Massachusetts. The particulars are interesting, and as follows: Slavery had been tolerated in the Province but when Massachusetts became a State, a phrase of the Constitution, which Chief Justice Cushing had helped frame in 1780, omitted the words which disfranchised “negroes, Indians and Mulattoes” and gave the right of suffrage to “every male person being twenty one years of age” and possessed of a certain amount of property, “being free,” etc. A negro by the name of Quaco, otherwise known as “Quork Walker,” born in slavery, put this to the test. At the age of nine months, with his father and mother, he had been sold to a Mr. Caldwell, who had promised Quaco his freedom at the age of twenty-five. After his death, his widow promised it should be twenty-one. The widow

* Major General in the Civil War.

Caldwell married Nathaniel Jennison of Barre, Mass., and after her death her husband claimed Quaco as part of her estate. When the negro became of age he ran away, but was overtaken, beaten, and imprisoned for two hours. John Caldwell, a brother of his first master, employed him after he ran away from Jennison, and on his imprisonment came to his assistance, and secured for him legal advice. The case was first tried in the Court of Common Pleas, and the jury awarded the negro a verdict of £50. The case was appealed, and finally came before the Supreme Court. The full bench of Chief Justice and three Associate Justices presided over the trial, and Chief Justice Cushing's charge to the Grand Jury is on record. He said in part:

As to the doctrine of slavery, and the right of Christians to hold Africans in perpetual servitude, and sell and treat them as we do our horses and cattle, that (it is true) has been heretofore countenanced by the Province laws formerly, but nowhere is it expressly enacted or established. It has been a usage which took its origin from some European nations, and the regulations of the British Government respecting the then Colonies, for the benefit of trade and wealth. But whatever sentiments have formerly prevailed in this particular, or slid upon us by the example of others, a different idea has taken place with the people of America, more favorable to the natural right of mankind, and to that natural, innate desire of Liberty, with which Heaven (without regard to color, complexion or shape of nose or other features) has inspired in all the human race. And upon this ground our Constitution of Government, by which the people of this Commonwealth have solemnly bound themselves, sets out with declaring all men are born free and equal — and that every subject is entitled to liberty — and to have it guarded by the laws, as well as life and property — and in short is totally repugnant to the idea of their being born slaves. This being the case, I think the idea of slavery is inconsistent with our own conduct and Constitution; and there can be no such thing as perpetual servitude of a rational creature, unless his liberty is forfeited by criminal conduct, or given up by personal consent or contract.

In 1788 Chief Justice Cushing was *Vice President of the Convention that ratified the Constitution of the United States*, and presided at many of its meetings.

As has been said, in 1789, when the Federal Government was organized, *President Washington*, after appointing John Jay of New York as Chief Justice, named *William Cushing of Massachusetts* as the first Associate Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States. As such, *Judge Cushing* administered the oath of office to *Washington* at his second inauguration Mar. 1793, Chief

Justice Jay being then in England as envoy to the Court of Great Britain.

While the duties of the Supreme Court Justices were not heavy at first, the long distances to be covered, from Falmouth, Me., to Atlanta, Ga., over roads almost impassable at certain seasons, made traveling an arduous task. These distances were covered by Judge Cushing in a traveling coach or chaise drawn by two horses, while Prince, his colored servant, followed in a lighter vehicle containing extra baggage. On long circuits during the winter and spring months a second servant, Scipio, accompanied him on horseback, riding ahead to see if bridges and roads were safe. In a letter to a relative of Mrs. Cushing living some thirty or forty miles from Atlanta, dated at Atlanta 17 Nov. 1793, Judge Cushing writes:

Mrs. Cushing and I should have done ourselves the pleasure of a short visit at your home had time and circumstances permitted; but I am obliged to hasten off to-morrow to Wake N. C., a space of 300 miles, to hold court there the last of this month and having travelled a journey of 1300 miles already with a pair of horses in a phaeton, somewhat encumbered with necessary baggage, it will be as much as we can do to reach Wake in season.

In the same letter he mentions other relatives "whom we have thought of calling to see in our progress to the northward after Wake Court is over, if the roads that way shall not be found inconvenient, and if it be not too much out of our way. Our course will be through Philadelphia, where I expect to be detained at court till the last of February; then homeward bound through Middletown, in Connecticut, Mrs. Cushing's native place, and at length I suppose we shall compleat a voyage of 8 months."

In 1794 Judge William Cushing's name was placed in nomination as a candidate for Governor of Massachusetts in opposition to that of Samuel Adams. He was averse to accepting such a nomination, and, in fact, declined it, but electioneering in his behalf continued. John Adams said at this time, "I shall be happier if Cushing succeeds, and the State will be more prudently conducted."

A letter to his old college friend, Theodore Parsons of Newburyport, reads:

Last evening I received your favor of the 18th of Feb., enclosed with Mr. Cabot's from Phila. whereof I understand that you and other friends are pleased to honor me by proposing me as a candidate for the chief of

ERRATUM

The birth of Hannah Phillips should read 1754.

1792 she wrote to Mrs. Olive Cushing at South Berwick, Me.:

government. At the same time that I most heartedly join with you in wishing well to the Union, I must be excused in continuing to decline the honor proposed. . . . In the first place, which however with a patriot you will say ought to be the last, I am not a man with sufficient fortune to hold that office, being confident that \$800 will not be competent to make a tolerably decent appearance through the year, and treat people with any degree of propriety, with all the economy I am master of. If I do but rub and go with \$1000 in the present mode of life, \$800 will necessarily fall short in the other. Add to this the habits of a country life to which I have always been used for the bigger part of the year, and which are strengthened as one advances in age, as also of a particular line of duty, the judicial, which by becoming natural, becomes tolerably easy, and must be attended with less fatigue of mind and less injury to health, than the more political work of the first station in the executive, — not to mention the uncertainty of annual election, and the continual gauntlet of newspapers to run, which latter, however, I do not much regard, being easily consoled with the consciousness of views and motives that are not bad.

When Chief Justice Jay resigned, in 1796, Judge Cushing was appointed his successor. The first intimation of the honor was conveyed to him at a large dinner party given by the President, when on entering the dining room Washington turned to him and said, "*The Chief Justice of the United States will please take his seat on my right.*" His nomination had been unanimously confirmed by the Senate, but notwithstanding this evidence of great trust in his integrity and ability, and against the urgent remonstrance of Washington, he declined the honor because of poor health. He had recovered from a severe illness in Washington that year, from the effects of which he suffered for the remainder of his life, which warned him against assuming added duties in his advancing years. He remained upon the Bench until 1810, and had prepared his resignation, which was signed and ready to be sent to President Madison, when he was stricken with a fatal illness in his home at Scituate. He died 13 Sept. 1810, at the age of seventy-eight years.

William⁵ Cushing married in Middletown, Conn., 11 Oct. 1774, Hannah Phillips, born in the old Phillips mansion 31 July 1734, daughter of George and Esther Phillips, and they went to live in the Cushing mansion at Walnut Tree Hill. The Judge's official duties made much traveling necessary, and as they had no children, Madam Cushing accompanied her husband on all his circuits. In 1792 she wrote to Mrs. Olive Cushing at South Berwick, Me.:

The time draws nigh for us to leave home, and not to return until May. We are travelling machines, and have no abiding place in any sense of the word.

Madam Cushing was short of stature, plump, black-eyed, with a pleasant, yet determined face — a stately woman, such as the formal manners of her day decreed the wife of a Judge should be. She survived her husband for twenty-four years, and passed the years of her widowhood in the home at Scituate. At her death in 1834 her personal belongings were distributed among her family connections. Among her most highly prized possessions were four portraits which hung in a row on the walls of the large state dining room of the mansion, — portraits of Washington, Adams, Judge and Madam Cushing, drawn in pastel by the English artist, James Sharpless, in Philadelphia. Madam Cushing had directed that those of the Judge and herself should be given to her niece, Esther (Parsons) Hammatt, and those of Washington and Adams to the Judge's niece, her namesake, Hannah Phillips Aylwin, wife of Governor Hoppin of Providence, R. I. The latter portraits were carried to the South by her descendants, and were either lost or destroyed in the Civil War. Those of Judge and Madam Cushing, in 1919, were owned by Mrs. Hammatt's grandson, William Cushing Donnell of Houlton, Me., who has since deceased.

Judge Cushing's will provided that on the death of Madam Cushing the homestead in which he and his father had lived should become the property of his nephew, Charles Cushing, in order that the beautiful estate should remain in possession of the Cushings, but in the twenty-four years that had elapsed since his death, Charles Cushing, then in his 60th year, did not desire to change his residence from the Governor Wentworth mansion at Little Harbor to the Scituate estate. He eventually sold the Scituate property to his cousin, William Cushing Aylwin, a wealthy Bostonian, who intended making it his summer home, but his wife, a beautiful and popular society woman, found Scituate too remote and quiet, and after a few years Mr. Aylwin sold the estate to Henry Dana of Woodstock, Vt., whose wife, Harriet Swan, was a granddaughter of Judge William's sister, Mary (Cushing) Gay. Their daughter, Harriet Dana, became the wife of Rev. William T. Briggs. (See Briggs, Chapter XVII.) The Danas lived in the mansion until after the death of Mr. and Mrs. Dana. The old mansion was burned in 1872. After the fire the property was sold out of the Cushing family.



DR. CUSHING OTIS
1769-1837



LUCY OTIS, WIFE OF THOMAS BARKER
BRIGGS AND GRANDMOTHER OF
LLOYD BRIGGS
(See Chapter XI)



CHIEF JUSTICE WILLIAM CUSHING
1732-1810



HANNAH PHILLIPS CUSHING
HIS WIFE

From "Old Scituate"

The Rev. William P. Tilden wrote of his recollection of the place when in its prime:

One of the fine old places in Scituate was Madam Cushing's, in the centre of the town. . . . She was a lady of the old school, and of the best society. She was always known as "Madam Cushing," and her fine old mansion and beautiful grounds were a delight to my boyish eyes. There was no place like it in town. Then, too, she was generous to us boys, and at cherry time would invite us into her beautiful garden, and give us the free range of her magnificent "blackheart" cherry trees, the largest and finest I ever saw.

When Judge William Cushing died in 1810 he was buried in the family burial lot on the hill at Belle House Neck, in accordance, it is said, with an expressed desire that he should be buried near the other members of his family. A burial place in this remote location was displeasing to Madam Cushing, and before her death in 1834 she had caused to be built on a plot in the South Parish cemetery, beside the tomb of Rev. David Barnes, and later, that of Rev. Samuel Deane, now known as the "minister's lot," a simple but dignified vault covered with a granite slab. It was her intention that upon her death the remains of her distinguished husband should be placed there beside her own, but the determined opposition of his nearest living relatives prevented the carrying out of her intention. The Judge lies with his fathers on the hill upon the old estate, his grave marked by a granite shaft bearing only the name "Cushing," while the remains of his wife lie on the knoll of the cemetery in South Scituate (Norwell) Village.

6. JOHN⁵ THOMAS (4. Nathaniel⁴, Nathaniel³, Nathaniel², William¹), born in 1696 in Plymouth, was the eldest living son of Nathaniel⁴, Esq., and Mary (Appleton) Thomas. He lived on the *entailed family estate* at Green Harbor, of which his father, Nathaniel⁴, who lived in Plymouth in his later years, had made a deed of gift to his son John⁵ at the time of the latter's marriage, and confirmed this deed in his will to John's eldest son, Nathaniel Ray⁶ Thomas.

John⁵ Thomas married in 1724 Mary Ray, daughter of Simon and Judith (Mainwaring) Ray of New London, Conn. Both John⁵ and his wife Mary (Ray) died in 1737, one year before the death of his father Nathaniel⁴. The following epitaph was taken from Burial Hill, Plymouth:

Here lyes inter d the Body of John Thomas, Esq^r who died Aug. ye 7th 1737 in ye 41st year of his age.

They had a family of eight children, of whom but two were living in 1737. On 8 Sept. 1737 their uncle, Nathaniel⁵ Thomas (Nathaniel⁴, Nathaniel³, Nathaniel², William¹), was appointed guardian of Nathaniel Ray and Simon Thomas. The latter did not long survive, leaving Nathaniel Ray⁶ as the only heir.

Child:

8. Nathaniel Ray⁶ Thomas, b. 1731 in Marshfield; m. Sarah Deering.

7. ISAAC⁵ THOMAS, JR. (5. *Isaac*⁴, *Nathaniel*³, *Nathaniel*², *William*¹) was born 16 Feb. 1728/9 in Pembroke West Precinct (now Hanson). He was but three years of age when his father died, and his mother was at first appointed his guardian; later, after his mother's second marriage to Isaac Little, the guardianship was transferred to Elijah Cushing, Esq. In the division of his father's estate the homestead was set off to Isaac, Jr., and his sister Mary, who was born after his father's death. Isaac's share was 145 acres of land, with part of homestead and barn.

ISAAC⁵ THOMAS, JR., married in Plymouth, 12 May 1748, Mrs. MARY (WAITE) HATCH, widow of Asa Hatch. She was born in Plymouth in 1723, a daughter of RICHARD WAITE and his second wife, MARY BARNES, to whom he was married in 1722. The first wife of Richard Waite was Elizabeth Kennedy, married in 1706. Richard was a brother of Return Waite, who married in 1707 Mary (Wilder) LeBaron, widow of Dr. Francis LeBaron. (See Wilder.) RICHARD and Return Waite were sons of Return Waite of Boston.

MARY BARNES, second wife of Richard Waite, was born in 1701, a daughter of JOHN BARNES of Plymouth, born in 1669, son of JONATHAN BARNES, born in 1643, and his wife, ELIZABETH HEDGE, daughter of WILLIAM HEDGE of Yarmouth, who was in Lynn in 1634, and later of Sandwich and Yarmouth. His wife was Widow BLANCHE HULL. Their daughter, ELIZABETH HEDGE, was born 1647, and married in 1666 JONATHAN BARNES. JONATHAN BARNES was born in 1643, a son of JOHN BARNES who was in Plymouth in 1631. He married in 1633 MARY PLUMMER of Plymouth. JOHN BARNES, son of JONATHAN and ELIZABETH HEDGE, born in 1669, married in 1693, MARY BARTLETT, born in 1673, daughter of JOSEPH BARTLETT and HANNAH

FALLOWELL, daughter of GABRIEL FALLOWELL, an early comer to Plymouth, who died in 1667. His wife was *Catherine* —. JOSEPH BARTLETT was born in 1639, a son of *Robert Bartlett*, who came, with Timothy Hatherley, Anthony Annable, Mrs. Standish, wife of Myles, and Mrs. Warren, wife of Richard, and his five daughters, in the ship *Ann* in 1623, and married in 1628 *Mary Warren*, daughter of RICHARD WARREN of the first *Mayflower* Company. She came to Plymouth with her mother in the same ship with Robert Bartlett. (See Anthony Snow.) Robert Bartlett must have returned to England, for we find him passenger on the ship *Lyon*, arrived at Boston from London 16 Sept. 1632, twelve weeks aboard and eight weeks from Land's End.

Asa Hatch, first husband of *Mary Waite*, to whom she was married in 1740, was a son of Rodolphus Hatch, born in Scituate 26 Dec. 1674, son of Thomas Hatch, Jr., and Sarah, daughter of *Rodolphus Ellms*. (See Rodolphus Ellms.) By the Scituate Records, Rodolphus Hatch married, first, 16 Dec. 1701, Elizabeth Tilden, born 5 July 1681, daughter of Nathaniel Tilden and Mary Sharp, and granddaughter of Deacon Joseph and Ellice (Twisden) Tilden. (See Tilden.) They lived in Scituate until after 1705, where their sons, John and Joseph Hatch, were born. Davis's "Landmarks," page 130, says: "Rodolphus Hatch (son of Thomas, Jr.; of Scituate), born in 1674, married in 1729 Elizabeth Holmes, by whom he had a family of eight children, of whom Asa (husband of Mary Waite) was one." Elizabeth Holmes does not appear to have been a descendant of John Holmes of Plymouth in 1632. She was probably descended from William Holmes, planter of Scituate, one of the Conihassett Partners of 1646, who removed to the Marshfield side of North River before 1662, where his widow Elizabeth died in 1693. They left many descendants. [This is my *second line* from *Richard Warren* of the *Mayflower*. — L. V. B.]

Before Isaac⁵ Thomas, Jr., was 21 he was employed in Plymouth, and there married 12 May 1748, and on 16 Feb. 1749 sold his Pembroke property.

16 Feb. 1749. Isaac Thomas of Plymouth & Mary (wife) dealer for £ 4100 from David Stockbridge of Hanover Esq. & Prince Barker of Pembroke, husbandman, a farm in Pembroke with my part of dwelling house on same, said farm being estate of father Mr. Isaac Thomas of Pembroke, dec'd, next Abraham Howland's land. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 41, p. 22.)

With this capital he purchased a house lot and outlying land in Plymouth, started in business on his own account as a merchant, and built a warehouse on Lothrop's wharf.

6 May 1752. Isaae & Mary Thomas of Plymouth merchant, for £50 (purchase) from George Watson of same, Esq. a house lot in Plymouth on New Street, next land of said Watson. (Plymouth Deeds, Vol. 41, p. 209.)

There are indications that his business ventures were at first not very successful, as shown by the following deeds:

Isaae Thomas of Plymouth, trader for £ 28, 1s, 4d by Timothy Bourn of Sandwich, half of 12 acres in Plymouth which I bought of Silvanus Bartlett 22 Feb. 1749. 20 Aug. 1753. (Plymouth Deeds, Vol. 42, p. 126.)

Isaae Thomas of Plymouth, dealer, for £20 from William Thomas of same, Physieian, besides the said William paying to Timothy Bourn of Sandwich Co. Barnstable, yeoman, the sums for which the premises stand mortgaged, a piece of land in Plymouth, at a place called Jourdain's, bounded by land late of Eleazer Faunce & Capt. Churchill & Jonathan Barnes, dee'd, the same land conveyed to me by Silvester & Martha Bartlett. 10 July 1754. (Vol. 43, p. 4.)

Thomas Torrey & Isaac Thomas of Plymouth, dealers, for £ 73, 6sh, 8d from Mrs. Priseilla Lothrop of Plymouth, warehouse built by us on wharf belonging to estate of Isaac Lothrop. 18 July 1754. (Vol. 43, p. 13.)

Oct. 30 1754. A Petition of Thomas Torrey & ISAAC THOMAS of Plymouth, Praying that an award given by George Watson Esq. & others in a cause between the Pet^{rs} and Robert Brown Esq. at the Inferior Court in Plymouth, may be set aside (the referees being convinced of a great Mistake in their awards to the Detriment of the Petitioners) and that they may have a new Trial.

In the House of Representatives: Read & ordered that the Petitioners serve the adverse Party, Robert Brown, Esq. with a copy of this Petition, that he shew Cause, if any he have, on the seventh of November next, if the Court be then sitting, if not, on the first Fryday of the next sitting of the Court, why the Prayer thereof should not be granted. (Court Records, Vol. 20, p. 293.)

Isaac Thomas of Plymouth, trader, & William Thomas of same physician for 5 sh from Silvanus Bartlett all right in land in Plymouth formerly mortgaged to Timothy Bourn of Sandwich, afterwards conveyed to said William Thomas. 30 Aug. 1758. (Vol. 45, p. 95.)

In 1757 Isaac⁵ Thomas, Jr., was one of the Commissaries in the Expedition against Crown Point, as shown by the following Court and Military Records:

No. 80. From Muster Roll of Company under command of Joseph Thatcher Colonel, Field officers. Feb. 18 to Dec. 28, 1757.

ISAAC THOMAS, Commissary, of Plym^o Served from Feby. 18 to Dec. 5. 41 weeks 5 days. wages £56. 6. 3. (Military Records. Vol. 96.)

April 19, 1757. In the House of Representatives. It appearing to this Court that Isaac Thomas charges the Government with the sum of Five Hundred and three Pounds Eleven shillings & four pence due to balance his account, a considerable part whereof was a saving out of the Soldiers Allowance & ought to be for the benefit of the Government & not of the Commissary and whereof the said Thomas has advanced in sundry articles delivered to said Soldiers the sum of One hundred & Sixty one pounds which the Government hath received the benefit of Therefore voted That the said sum of One hundred & Sixty one pounds be allowed him in his said account & no more.

In Council Read & Concurred

Consented to by a major Part of the Council. (General Court Record, Vol. 21, p. 526.)

Before 1760 Isaac⁵ Thomas, Jr., had gradually disposed of his property in Plymouth, including a pew in the meeting-house, and appears to have gone to Hardwick in Worcester County. His family probably went from Plymouth to his mother's home in Pembroke, where she was living, a widow, her second husband, Squire Little, having died in 1758. They must have been in Pembroke early in 1759, for their daughter, Mary Thomas, was baptized in Pembroke (East Parish) 17 June 1759, and a son Charles Thomas was born there 5 July 1761. Isaac Thomas' stay in Hardwick was short, for he was living in Marshfield in 1762, as appears by the pay roll of Capt. Abel Keen, which attests that *ISAAC THOMAS, son of Isaac*, entered His Majesty's service 3 July 1762, serving to 6 Dec. 1762; "time 22 weeks, and Billiting home at 8d per diem 7/4 £10.11. Deduct Clothing and 2/8 of the General £3. 5. 4."

In 1768, Isaac⁵ Thomas, Jr., was living in Pembroke during the Revolution. There were three Isaac Thomases in Pembroke during that period, — Isaac⁵, Jr., his son Isaac⁶ (b. 1749/50), and Isaac⁶, son of Capt. Edward⁵ Thomas (b. 1747), the latter Isaac being a nephew of Isaac⁵, Jr. It is impossible to separate or actually define all the service of these Isaac Thomases, and the complete service of the three is here given, in the hope that some further record can be found to distinguish one from the other. I have tried to segregate our Isaac, as follows:

REVOLUTIONARY SERVICE OF ISAAC THOMAS OF PEMBROKE

ISAAC THOMAS, Pembroke. Private, Capt. Thomas Turner's co. of militia Col. Anthony Thomas's regt., which marched April 20, 1775, in response to the alarm of April 19, 1775; service 3 days.

ISAAC THOMAS, Pembroke. Private, Capt. Elijah Cushing's co. of militia, which marched in response to the alarm of April 19, 1775, from West Parish in Pembroke to Marshfield; entered service April 21, 1775; discharged April 22, 1775; service 2 days.

[The above Isaae Thomas was probably 9. Isaae Thomas, Jr., son of 5. Lieut. Isaae, William Thomas line, b. 1729, d. 1775, aged 46.]

ISAAC THOMAS, Pembroke. Private, Capt. Freedom Chamberlin's co.; marched March 5, 1776; service, 5 days; company marched on the alarm of March 5, 1776, at the time of taking Dorehester Heights.

ISAAC THOMAS, Pembroke. Private, Capt. Ichabod Bonney's co., Col. John Cushing's regt.; marched Dec. 9, 1776; service, 17 days; company marched to Providence, R. I., on the alarm of Dec. 9, 1776.

ISAAC THOMAS, Pembroke. List of men raised to serve in the Continental Army from Col. John Cushing's (2d Plymouth Co.) regt. as returned by Capt. Josiah Cushing; residence, Pembroke; engaged for town of Pembroke; joined Capt. Pope's co., Col. Shepard's regt. (also given Capt. Winslow's co., Col. Marshall's regt.); term 8 months, to expire April —, 1778; *also*, list of men mustered by James Hatch, Muster Master for Plymouth Co. to serve in the Continental Army, dated Sept. 10, 1777; engaged by Capt. Winslow; term 8 months, to expire Jan. 10, 1778; *also*, Capt. Isaae Pope's co., Col. William Shepard's regt.; return (year not given); mustered by Continental Muster Master. (Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors, Vol. XV, pp. 591, 592.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears with rank of Private on Lexington Alarm Roll of Capt. Elijah Cushing's Co. Col. — Regt. which marched on alarm of April 19, 1775 from Pembroke (West Parish) to Marshfield. He belonged to Pembroke. Length of service 2 days. (Lexington Alarms, Vol. 12, p. 22.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears with rank of Private on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Jos^h Soper's Co. Col. — Regt. Time of enlistment July 24, 1775. Time of discharge Dec. 31, 1775. Time of service 5 mos. 21 days. — not given. Service under direction of Field officers of 1st Plymouth Co. Regt. (Sea Coast Defence Muster Rolls, Vol. 36, p. 226.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears among a List of Men in Capt. Joseph Soper's Co. in service 5 months 21 days, probably in 1775. (Massachusetts Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 55, p. 101.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears with rank of Private on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Ichabod Bonney's Co., Col. John Cushing's Regt. for service at Rhode Island on the alarm of Dec. 9, 1776. Time of enlistment Dec. 9, 1776. Time of discharge Dec. 26, 1776. Time of service 17 days. He belonged to Pembroke. (Various Service, Vol. 17, p. 141.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears with rank of Private on Muster Roll of Capt. Freedom Chamberlain's Co. Col. — Regt. Time of enlistment March 5, 1776. Time of service 5 days. He belonged to Pembroke. Marched on alarm at the *taking of Dorechester Heights*. (Various Service, Vol. 17, p. 232.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears in a List of Men mustered in Plymouth County to serve in Capt. Winslow's Co., Col. — Regt. by a return made by James Hatch, Muster Master, Sept. 10, 1777. Residence Pembroke. Term of enlistment, 8 months. (Massachusetts Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 42, p. 335.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears in a Return of Men enlisted into the Continental Army from — Co. of 2nd. Plymouth Co. Regt. (no date). He belonged to Pembroke and enlisted for Pembroke for the term of 8 months until April. Joined Capt. Winslow's Co., Col. Marshall's Regt. (Enlistment Rolls, etc., Vol. 42, p. 297A.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears in a List of Men mustered in Plymouth County to serve in Capt. Winslow's Co. Col. — Regt. by a return made Sept. 10, 1777. Residence Pembroke. Term of enlistment till Jan. 10, 1778. (Books: Enlisted Men, etc., Vol. 27, p. 166.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears in a Descriptive List of Men raised to reinforce the Continental Army for the term of six months, agreeable to Resolve of June 5, 1780. Age 28 years, stature 5 feet 4 inches. Complexion Light. Residence, Pembroke. Arrived at Springfield July 8, 1780. 9th Division. Marched to camp July 9, 1780 under command of Lieut. Jackson of the Artillery. (Massachusetts Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 35, p. 190.) [This record is that of Isaac, son of Isaac⁵, Jr., the only one definitely mentioning him.]

ISAAC THOMAS appears in a List of six months men raised by the town of Pembroke for service in the Continental Army during 1780. (Six Months Town Rolls, Vol. 27, p. 18.) [No particulars given.]

ISAAC THOMAS appears in a List of Men enlisted into Continental Army from the County of Plymouth. He belonged to Pembroke and enlisted for Pembroke. (Books: Enlisted Men and Officers, Vol. 27, p. 105.)

ISAAC THOMAS appears among a List of Men raised for the Six Months service and returned by Brig. Gen. Paterson as having passed muster, in a return dated Camp Totoway, Oct. 25, 1780. (Massachusetts Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 25, p. 235.) [Probably not Isaac⁵, Jr.]

ISAAC THOMAS appears with rank of Private on a Muster Roll of Capt. Isaac Pope's Co. Col. William Shepard's Regt. (date not given). He belonged to Pembroke, enlisted for Pembroke. Mustered by Continental Muster Master. Enlisted for 8 months. (Soldiers' Orders, etc., Vol. 10, p. 151.) [Probably not Isaac⁵, Jr.]

ISAAC THOMAS appears with rank of Private on A Pay Abstract of Capt. Joseph Soper's Co., Col. Theophilus Cotton's Plymouth Co. Regt. for service March 1781. 15 days. Service on 40 days expedition to Rhode Island. (Books: Abstracts of Rolls, Vol. 55, p. 102.) [Probably meant for Thomas.]

ISAAC THOMAS appears with rank of Private on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Joseph Soper's Co., Col. Theophilus Cotton's Regt. for service at Rhode Island on the alarm of — Time of enlistment March 5, 1781.

Time of discharge March 20, 1781. Time of service 15 days. (Rhode Island Service, Vol. 3, p. 134.) [Probably meant for Thomas.]

ISAAC THOMAS Jr. appears among A List of Men from Pembroke who received money for enlisting for 3 years or during war. Raised by Resolve of Dec. 1780. Dated Pembroke April 1, 1782. (Various Service, Vol. 34, p. 407.)

Isaac⁵ Thomas, Jr., d. 29 Sept. 1819 in Hanson, and is buried on the Old Burial Hill which was in Second Precinct or Parish of Pembroke, now Hanson.

Children of ISAAC⁵ THOMAS, JR., and MARY (WAITE) HATCH:

- i. Isaac } twins, b. 4 Feb. 1749/50 { d. 23 Dec. 1830.
- ii. Joshua } { d. 20 Feb. 1749/50.
- iii. Caleb, bpt. 3 Aug. 1755.
- 9. iv. MARY (POLLY)⁶, bpt. 17 June 1759; m. ICHABOD THOMAS, JR.
(See John Thomas line.)
- v. Charles, b. 5 July 1761.

8. NATHANIEL RAY⁶ THOMAS (6. *John⁵, Nathaniel⁴, Nathaniel³, Nathaniel², William¹*) was born in 1731 in Marshfield, and came into possession of the family estate on the death of his grandfather, Nathaniel⁴, in 1738. His uncle, Nathaniel Thomas, was his guardian, and he was reared after the English fashion, as befitted the owner of a large landed estate, upon which he led the life of a country gentleman, being considered one of the wealthiest men in the Province. By his wealth and a strong personality he became the leading citizen in the South Precinct of Marshfield, and was for many years moderator of the town meetings, at which, with the support of a considerable group of like-minded neighbors, he was able to control in large measure the policies of the town of Marshfield.

A few years after his marriage, in 1754, when the services of the Acadians were being sold in the towns on which they were billeted, he had taken into his service the family of Charles Muis, French Neutrals, who had been assigned to the town of Plymouth as part of its quota.

Many of my ancestors fought in the wars with the French and Indians and some were with General Monckton and Colonel Winslow. The better to understand the Acadians or French Neutrals I here give a brief summary of events at that time:

When the French Province of Acadia was given over to Great Britain in 1713 by the Treaty of Utrecht, one of the most perplexing problems ever brought about on the Western Continent had its genesis. By this

treaty, the peaceable, agricultural population of the Province were given the choice of remaining on their properties, were they "willing to remain there and to be subject to the Kingdom of Great Britain," in which case they were "to enjoy the free exercise of their religion according to the usage of the Church of Rome, as far as the laws of Great Britain do allow the same," or they might remove with all their effects, if they did so within the year. At the end of that time, all in the Province must take the oath of allegiance to the British Crown. Few left the Province.

Every effort was made by France, and her agents in Quebec and Acadia, to prevent the taking of the oath, with its provision of bearing arms for Great Britain. The French priests were especially active in protest against this provision; when not so, complaints were entered against them, as in the case of the Curé of Grand Pré, an elderly man, who was reported to be too much inclined to confine himself to his spiritual functions. It was not until 1730 that any number of the inhabitants could be persuaded to take the oath. Nearly all of these signed by crosses, and those who did sign believed, or claimed that they did so, on condition that they be exempt from bearing arms against the French or Indians, or in any war against the Kingdom of England. Because of this interpretation they became known as "French Neutrals." This oath was not violated for some years, in spite of pressure from the French without the Province, but after a time charges became general that some of them took arms, and that many others aided the enemy with information and supplies. They were still French at heart, making them enemies in the heart of the Province, at a time when the prospects of a French invasion seemed to loom at a no distant date, while the feeble garrisons maintained at Annapolis and Canseau were ill prepared to repel such an invasion.

Early in 1755 Governor Lawrence determined to take drastic measures to rid the Province of this menace to English supremacy, and wrote to Governor Shirley of Massachusetts "to make some effort to drive them from the north shore of the Bay of Fundy." Shirley immediately commissioned *Major John Winslow, then living on the Careswell estate at Marshfield*, to raise 2,000 volunteers to transport to Acadia. As second in command under General Monckton, with rank of Colonel, John Winslow raised this number of recruits in an incredibly short time, and to him was entrusted the difficult and delicate task of removing the "Newtrals." After many vexatious delays, the 2,000 recruits set sail 22 May 1755 in three small frigates for Annapolis, where they landed May 26. There Colonel Winslow found stringent orders awaiting him:

If you find that fair means will not do with them, you must proceed with the most vigorous measures possible, not only in compelling them to embark but in depriving those who shall escape of all means of shelter or support, by burning their houses, and by destroying everything that may afford them means of subsistence in the country.

These drastic orders could not be evaded, although most repugnant to Colonel Winslow, who wrote to Murray at Fort Edwards: "Things are now very heavy on my heart and hand."

Three months went by before the blow fell. Colonel Winslow summoned the inhabitants around Grand Pré to meet at the church to hear the Governor's proclamation, and similar summons were sent in other directions. It was then announced to them that

"by orders of His Majesty, all the French inhabitants of these districts are to be removed; And I am directed to allow you the liberty of carrying with you your money, and as many of your household goods as you can take without overloading the vessels you go in. I shall do everything in my power that all these goods be secured to you . . . and also that whole families shall go in the same vessel." They were then declared prisoners of the King. In Colonel Winslow's diary we read: "Thus ended the memorable fifth of September, a day of great fatigue and trouble."

Everything combined to make the situation more difficult and complicated. The transports sent were few in number, and arrived so slowly that there was great delay in embarking the prisoners, and it was late in December before the last were sent away. About 6,000 people were removed from the Province, of whom *2,000 were landed in Boston to be distributed through the towns of the Province of Massachusetts*. Taken from their homes with little but their clothing, crowded into the closely packed transports, they were in a pitiable condition when they reached the towns upon which they were billeted. They were most unwelcome charges. They represented a government which had long been at war with the English, and which had committed many atrocities upon the colonists with their Indian allies, — a people alien in language, customs and religion, without means of support other than that provided for the town poor, of *selling their services to the lowest bidder for their support*, who then received the result of their labor. Their only redress was to petition the General Court for relief and release from their bondage. Their appeals, on file in the State Archives, are most pitiful and often heart-rending. It is said that they were treated more humanely in Massachusetts than elsewhere, yet we find many protests are on file asking for relief of conditions under which they were forced to live, one of which we quote.

In February 1757 Nathaniel Ray Thomas had taken into his charge "one Charles Muse & wife & family," who were part of the quota assigned to the town of Plymouth, and had placed a bond of two hundred pounds with Harrison Gray, Esq., Treasurer of the Province of Massachusetts, to free the Province and the town of Plymouth of other charges other than those of their removal, sickness or "some Extraordinary providence," for one year. At the end of the year Miense & Cleremont presented a petition against the support furnished them. At this time, Feb. 1758, two of the selectmen of the town of Marshfield certified that they had viewed the circumstances of the French people under the care of Na-

thaniel Ray Thomas, had found them well provided for, yet found that their behavior toward him was "very unbecoming by reason of their absolute refusal to obey his reasonable commands, insulting him very much by many threatening speeches & much foul language, and are a very ungoverned Moross Family."

Meeting with no success by their petition, a second and a third one were presented. The last petition received some attention by the Court, and was therefore recorded. It reads: —

To His Excellency Thomas Pownal &c. Governour in Chief of the Province of the
Massachusetts Bay.

The humble Petition of Charles Micus and Paul Cleremont Sheweth that having already presented two petitions without success to the Council on our own behalf & that of our whole family, being all hired to Mr. Rae Thomas of Marshfield on condition that he would give each man a full suit of working Cloths & another of Sabbath Cloths & to our Wives and Daughters the same, all which may be seen in our agreement with him, now lodged in the Council Chamber, but your Petitioners having faithfully served him a full year according to agreement he now means to give us nothing but the mean old Duds on our Backs which is all we have had during our years service but our Women are a great deal worse being almost naked with a great many other grievances too tedious to trouble your Excellency with, but are all ready to testify upon oath when examined. Therefore in this wretched condition, without money, victuals Cloths or Lodging, we implore your assistance not doubting but you will as a true Father order that we may have everything we agree'd for and we shall as in duty bound forever Pray

CHAS MIEUSE

PAUL CLEREMONT

On the following fourteenth day of March, Nathaniel Ray Thomas petitions Governor Pownall, His Majesty's Council and the House of Representatives, that his contract with the Neutrals having expired, that he may be discharged from their further care, and his bond to the Province cancelled. The Council ordered that John Cushing, Esq., and Joseph Cushing, Esq., inquire into the affair, and they, on the 25th of April, reported that in their opinion the above bond should be cancelled and the Neutrals removed to the town of Easton. Accepted, read & concurred. 28 Apr. 1758.

Few people have been unmoved by the Acadians' tragic story, made familiar by Longfellow's "Evangeline" and Whittier's "Marguerite." Its romance has swayed our judgment in their behalf. On the English side it was a case of military necessity, bringing with it great suffering to the innocent because of the guilty.

In 1759 there were 156 *Neutrals in the towns of Plymouth County*. Of the 6,000 refugees transported in 1755, some twenty years later, an expedition numbering about 800 recruits from many of the Colonies, set out from Boston to return on foot to their former home in Nova Scotia. They began their march for Acadia across the New Hampshire and Maine wilderness without proper food or clothing. They had some fire-

arms, and subsisted on the way by hunting and fishing. Their long journey of four months was filled with incredible hardships, — children were born, and many deaths occurred. Some of the number made settlements along the way, and the few who succeeded in reaching Grand Pré found there a new nationality and new names; so turning sorrowfully away they settled at St. Mary's.

Many of the leading citizens living near Green Harbor were Loyalists, — notably, the families of Dr. Isaac Winslow and Nathaniel Ray Thomas. The latter had been appointed by General Gage, on 6 Dec. 1774, a "Mandamus Counsellor," an act expected to cement and strengthen the political situation in that part of Plymouth County. The following account of the "Loyalists and the Marshfield Tea Party" tells of the troubled period of the Revolution and the part that Nathaniel Ray Thomas bore in it:

THE LOYALISTS AND THE MARSHFIELD TEA PARTY

At the outbreak of the Revolution the political situation in Marshfield was more disturbing than in any of the surrounding towns, owing to the formation there of a society called the "Associated Loyalists of Marshfield" with an enrollment of 300 members, inspired and dominated in large measure by Nathaniel Ray Thomas and Dr. Isaac Winslow in whose house its meetings were held. The influence of these two men was far-reaching. Dr. Winslow, descendant of the venerated governors of the colony, and well beloved physician of the town, carried with him a large family connection by birth and marriage. Nathaniel Ray Thomas, proprietor of the largest estate in the section, and the inheritor of great wealth, became a dominant factor, in consequence, in controlling the policies of the town. At the same time the Whig party was by no means a weak minority, and drew to its membership many men of high character, if of less political influence, especially those who dwelt a little beyond the neighborhood around Green Harbor.

In 1765, after the affair known as the "Boston Massacre," Marshfield on the 14th of October, in town meeting assembled, gave instruction to its Representative to the Provincial Court, John Winslow, Esq., relative to the Stamp Act, which it strongly disapproved as one that "would prove the utter ruin of this Province," and at the same time desired him to show his "disapprobation of the late riotous proceedings in the Town of Boston in the month of September last."

Despite the fact that many of the colonists had avowed their intention to use no tea, as a matter of principle, until the hated tax was removed, the Loyalists had brought into town and stored a large quantity of tea, deemed as a challenge by the other party. The Boston Tea Party in Dec. 1773 brought matters to a crisis. A few days after the affair at

Griffin's Wharf became known in Marshfield, a group of Whigs, not to be outdone by the Boston party, went at midnight with ox carts to the places where the tea was stored in Marshfield, and demanded it. Resistance was useless; it was confiscated, and temporarily hidden until its destruction could be carried out. It was decided to burn it, and it was taken to a large rock on a near-by hill, since known as "Tea Rock Hill." There the torch was applied to it by Jeremiah Low, and the hated tea was burned to ashes. This historic rock was partially destroyed to furnish underpinning for the late Elijah Ames' new house upon the hill. Tea Rock Chapter, D. A. R., of Marshfield has marked the spot by placing a boulder bearing a bronze tablet, to commemorate the event, at the foot of the hill, beside the road leading to Duxbury from the "training green."

The destruction of the tea intensified the already scathing fires of hatred for the Tories. On the 31st of January following (1774), a town meeting was called at which Nathaniel Ray Thomas was chosen Moderator. The outcome of that meeting is best told by some paragraphs from papers of the day.

Extract from a letter from Duxbury Feb. 5, 1774, in the "Boston Gazette and Country Journal:"

I imagine you have by this time heard of the very remarkable Resolves of the town of Marshfield respecting the destruction of teas, &c. which was effected principally by the insinuating act of a certain man, who having lately rendered himself odious to the Province by his conduct in a public station, is endeavoring to wipe off the infamy on the people of that town. His insinuations are (as I am informed by people of veracity) that the tea must be paid for; that any town remonstrating against the destruction of it will effectually secure them against paying any part of the expenses, and if it is paid for, that his particular share will be £40 who commonly pays scarce £3 per annum of the Province tax. However the sentiments of the Old Colony are not to be collected from those of Marshfield.

Two days later appeared in the same paper, the following:

We are informed that the Resolves of the town of Marshfield were carried by a majority of only one vote, and we soon expect a more intelligent account of the meeting than has yet been given in a public paper.

The "Massachusetts Spy" of Feb. 23, 1774, said:

"A protest signed by a large number of the prominent inhabitants of the town of Marshfield against the proceedings of said town on the 31st of Jan. last," as follows: "We the subscribers think ourselves obliged in faithfulness to the community, ourselves and posterity, on every proper occasion to bear our public testimony against every measure, calculated to destroy that harmony and unanimity which subsists through the colonies and so eventually to the destruction of those liberties wherewith the Author of Nature and our happy constitution has made us free. Were they not already notorious, it would give us uneasiness to mention the Resolves which were voted in this town the 31st of January last. To the first of these Resolves we do not object; but do heartily join in recognizing our loyalty and subjection to the King of Great Britain and our readiness to be

ever subject to the laws of our legislature. In their second Resolve, they say that the 'measures and proceedings in the town of Boston in the detention and destruction of the teas belonging to the East India Company, are illegal, unjust and of a dangerous tendency,' against which we take the liberty to protest. We have long groaned under the weight of an American Revenue Act and when by the virtue of the people in not purchasing any goods loaded with a duty the malignity of the act was in some measure evaded, a scheme was devised and prosecuted by the ministry, to enforce said act by permitting the East India Company to enforce their infectious teas upon us, whether we would or not. At this, not only the inhabitants of Boston but of the whole province were very much and very justly alarmed, and while they were prosecuting every method that human wisdom could devise that the tea should be sent back undamaged, it was destroyed, but whether by the people of that town, or any other town of this province, does not appear. 3dly. They resolved to instruct their Representative, 1st, to endeavor that the perpetrators of these mischiefs be brought to justice. This appears to us to be the business of another department. We have executive courts and officers, whose business it is to punish offenders, and we trust they are faithful. 2dly. They instruct him to endeavor that his town be excused from paying for said teas, which we think might have been omitted, at least, till there was a probability of a requisition from proper authority for payment. They conclude with a denunciation 'of all methods of imposition, violence and persecution, such as has been most shamefully exercised upon a number of inhabitants of Plymouth by obliging them to sign a recantation,' &c: Such bitter, virulent and injurious reflections on our brethren at Plymouth, ought not to have taken place until some shadow of proof had been adduced to the town, that any such violence &c. was ever practised by them on a single person. The occasion of this our protest has given us great uneasiness and we were confident those extraordinary resolves would not have taken place but by the insinuations of a certain gentleman who seems willing his constituents should share in the resentment of the whole country, which he has incurred by his conduct in a public character. We mean not to countenance riotous and disorderly conduct but, being convinced that liberty is the life and happiness of a community, are determined to contribute to our last mite in its defence, against the machinations of assuming, arbitrary men, who, stimulated with a lust of dominion and unrighteous gain are ever studying to subjugate this free people." Marshfield, Feb. 14, 1774. (signed)

Anthony Thomas	Benjamin Tolman	Asa Waterman	Peleg Kent
John Brown	Jethro Taylor	John Waterman	Zenas Thomas
William Thomas	Samuel Williamson	John Shurman	Joshua Carver
Thomas Foord	Nathan Thomas	Samuel Tilden Jr.	Lot Howes Silvester
Thomas Waterman	Nehemiah Thomas	Samuel Oakman	David Carver
Isaac Phillips	Benjamin White Jr.	Gershom Ewell	Nathaniel Thomas
Samuel Tilden	Lemuel Delano	William Clift	William Thomas Jr.
John Dingley	Jabez Dingley	Joseph Bryant	Luther Peterson
Joseph Kent	Isaac Carver	Paul Sampson	Briggs Thomas
Benjamin White	Thomas Dingley	John Oakman	Elisha Kent
Joseph Hewit	Samuel Smith	Joseph Oakman	Timothy Williamson
Thomas Fish	Thomas Waterman Jr.	King Lapham	Joseph Clift
Jeremiah Low	Peleg Foord	Barnard Tuels	

Six months later feeling against Nathaniel Ray Thomas had become so intense in the surrounding towns that in Sept. 1774 the "substantial

yeomanry" of Pembroke, Seitate and Hanover, united with those of Marshfield, and marched "to punish a public officer who had not proved faithful to the welfare of the Commonwealth & Posteritie." They marched to his house, but too late to find their quarry.

The "Boston Evening Post" of Sept. 12, 1774, says:

We hear from the County of Plymouth that, on Wednesday last, upwards of 2000 of the substantial yeomanry collected from the several towns of Plymouth, Hanover, and Pembroke, repaired to the house of Nathaniel Ray Thomas, of Marshfield, one of the new Council; but, having had some previous intimation of the intended visit of the people, he thought it unsafe to remain, even in Marshfield, and accordingly fled, the night before, with all speed, to the City of Refuge.

Nathaniel Ray Thomas did not return to his home until, after the urgent request of himself and the other "Loyalists," who also feared for their lives and the destruction of their property, a company of the Queen's Guards, under command of Captain Balfour, was sent down and quartered in his new house.

The Queen's Guards, called the "Flower of the English Army," landed in their boats from the North River on Dec. 20, 1774, and were a most imposing sight as they marched by the Training Green in fine array, their red coats and shining bayonets glittering in the sun, on their way to their quarters on the Thomas estate.

The presence of troops in the Old Colony was greatly resented, and their arrogant demeanor, and not always exemplary conduct, testified to by the recollection of a certain tree upon the Thomas estate, to which they were tied and flogged for misdemeanors, so roused the ire of the people in the surrounding towns that when the news of Lexington and Concord came, and hostilities actually began, it was determined to drive them out. Concerted action by the militia of the County was planned, the meeting place to be on the Anthony Thomas estate on the road from Duxbury, from which, by an overland route over back territory along Cut River, the Thomas estate could be reached quite secretly. Kingston militia arrived early upon the scene, and Captain Wadsworth, impatient of delay, started without waiting for reinforcements from the other towns, but, when only a short distance from the enemy, realized that his force was too small to venture an attack. It was nearly three hours before a sufficient force had gathered, and in the meanwhile, Balfour and his troops hastily retreated by the way of Cut River to Brant Rock, where British men-of-war were lying in readiness to rescue them. Capt. Balfour's company was practically annihilated at the Battle of Bunker Hill, only five of them, and their captain, survived that 17th of June. Had the local militia arrived simultaneously, the second battle of the Revolution would have been fought at Marshfield. Nathaniel Ray Thomas, who had returned to his home with the arrival of protective troops in December, departed with them in April, never to return. When Boston was evacuated, owing to the strategy of his one-time neighbor,

Gen. John Thomas, he decided to depart with the British troops for Nova Scotia, and settled in Windsor, where he died in 1787.

Many of the other Tories were not permitted to leave Marshfield unpunished, several were seized and carted to the Liberty Pole, and required to sign statements of allegiance, while others were confined in Plymouth jail until released by order of the Council in Oct. 1776, on condition that they would pay the expenses of the proceedings against them, and leave their estates only for the purpose of attending church on Sundays. In all, five citizens of Marshfield, including Nathaniel Ray Thomas, were proscribed and banished. It has been said that Dr. Isaac Winslow was so beloved and respected that he or his property were never molested. One must believe, however, that he was able to convince the Committee of Safety that he would not, by word or deed, do anything inimical to the government.

On June 19, 1776, Marshfield in Town Meeting assembled, issued instructions to its representative, Nehemiah Thomas Esq. at the General Court held in Watertown, which were virtually a Declaration of Independence, an utterance in advance of that of the Continental Congress at Philadelphia on July 4th.

MARSHFIELD, June 19th, 1776.

Your constituents not doubting of your patriotism, now in legal meeting assembled, think it necessary to instruct you touching the Independence of America.

To the amazement of your constituents, the King of Great Britain is become a tyrant. He has wantonly destroyed the property of the Americans, and wickedly spilled their blood. He has assented to Acts of Parliament, calculated to subjugate the Colonies unparalleled by the worst of tyrants. Our petitions he has rejected, and instead of Peace he has sent the sword. Every barbarous nation whom he could influence he has courted for the destruction of the colonies.

Once we would have expended life & fortune in defence of his crown and dignity, but now we are alienated, and conscience forbids us to support a tyrant whose tyranny is without refinement. Alliance with him is now almost Treason to our country, but we wait patiently till Congress, in whose counsels we confide, shall declare those colonies Independent of Great Britain. The inhabitants of this town, therefore, unanimously instruct & direct you that if the Continental Congress should think it necessary for the safety of these United Colonies to declare them Independent of Great Britain, that the inhabitants of this town, with their lives & fortune, will most heartily support them in the measure.

BENJ. WHITE,
Clerk of the day.

At the said town meeting it was "voted that Captam William Thomas, Captain Joseph Clift and Benjamin White be a committee to call those persons to an account who have borrowed Powder, balls and flints out of the Town stock and to receive the money of them in order to purchase Town's stock." Then they "voted that there be the sum of £24 raised in addition to the town stock in powder, balls and flints. The General Court ordered that the Declaration of Independence be printed and a copy sent to the ministers of each parish of every denomination in this

state, and that they severally be required to read the same to their respective congregations, as soon as Divine Service was ended on the afternoon of the Lord's Day after such publication, thereof, to deliver the said declaration, to record the same in their respective town or district books, there to remain as a perpetual memorial thereof."

Thomas Hutchinson, in his *Diary and Letters*, says, under "March 8, 1775:"

In the morning at Lord Dartmouth's. He acquainted me with the contents of a letter he received the morning before from Gen. Gage of the 27th Jany., advising he had sent 100 men to Marshfield and Seituate many of the inhabitants having petitioned for them, and that he was sending two Regiments to New Hampshire. . . . In the afternoon I received a letter from my son of the 25th Jan. with an account of the Marshfield peoples having entered into Ruggles Association, all but 6, and the Gen. had sent 120 men at their request.

Under March 15, 1775, he writes, quoting Lord Camden:

A little town of Marshfield had desired soldiers from Gage; he thought it was an inland town and that 100 men had marched 40 miles into the country without being destroyed; but alas! it appears by the map to be a town upon the seacoast, to which the men were sent by water, — a town which had six of Mr. Hutchinson's Justices in it. Upon mentioning my name, most of the Bishops and many Lords, who sat with their backs to me, turned about and looked in my face. It happened that I never made a Justice in that town while I was in the Government.

Continuing, Hutchinson says, in a letter to Mr. Sewall on March 18, 1775 that he does not allow the wild statements of Lord Camden to pass without comment and that he thinks it strange that a man in Lord Camden's position should descend to misstatements to try and strengthen his argument and that he had been trying to think that one half of Lord Camden's speech, which took an hour and a half, will be sent to America, being calculated to keep up the spirit of opposition. He says Wilkes might have said, with as good a grace, "I am a little angry with him for asserting that the departure of the little town of Marshfield from the Confederacy was owing to Mr. Hutchinson's having made six Justices there, which brought the eyes of the Lords upon me, who I doubt not believed him, though it happens unluckily for him that I never made a Justice in that town."

In the days that followed, many of the Thomas family were active in the patriot cause, and as pledged in the declaration of 1776, supported with their lives and fortunes the independence of

the colonies. Conspicuous among them were Brigadier-General John, Colonel Anthony, Major Briggs, Hon. Nehemiah and Capt. William Thomas, as mentioned in the account of the family.

When Nathaniel Ray Thomas left the province with the British troops in April 1776 for Nova Scotia, he left his family behind him. His estate in Marshfield was confiscated by the Court.

"Oet. 1, 1779 Nathaniel Ray Thomas of Marshfield has absented himself for more than two years passed with the enemies of the United States of America & therefore the judge saw fit to appoint an administrator of his goods & chattels namely Joshua Thomas of Plymouth who shall render an inventory of absentee before Dec. 1st, 1779," etc. The inventory dated Nov. 30, 1779, totalled £64,660, 9s, 10d. The estate proved to have been heavily mortgaged, and the dower rights of his wife Sarah Thomas of one third of the mortgaged real estate near Green Harbor River is referred to in Vol. 28 p. 245. In 1781, Sarah Thomas petitioned the Legislature for a new assignment from the estate, which was granted her for as long as she remained in the Commonwealth. About 1784 or 85, with her younger children, she joined her husband in Winsor, N. S., where he died 19 Sept. 1787. She died there in 1810. (Plymouth Rec., Vol. 27, p. 29.)

Nathaniel Ray Thomas married, about 1753/54, Sarah Deering, daughter of Henry and Sarah (Packer) Deering of Boston.

Children of Nathaniel Ray and Sarah Deering Thomas:

- i. Nathaniel, b. 5 Aug. 1755.
- ii. Henry Deering, b. 19 Nov. 1760.
- iii. Sarah Deering, b. 6 Oct. 1762.
10. iv. John (Capt. John), b. 30 Aug. 1764; m. (1) Sarah Baker; (2) Lucy Turner.
- v. Mary, b. 17 Sept. 1766.
- vi. Martin Howard, b. 6 Oct. 1768.
- vii. Elizabeth Packard (Packer), b. 29 July 1770.
- viii. Charles, b. 12 Nov. 1772.

Capt. John Thomas appears to have been the oldest living son. The children who accompanied their mother to Winsor, N. S., were spoken of as her youngest children. It therefore appears probable that the first three children of the family died young.

9. POLLY⁶ THOMAS (7. Isaac⁵, Isaac⁴, Nathaniel³, Nathaniel², William¹) was baptized 17 June 1759 in Pembroke First Church, and married (by Rev. Thomas Smith) 14 Nov. 1784, Capt. Ichabod Thomas, Jr., a descendant of John Thomas. (See

John Thomas line and *John Cushing* line.) For her descendants, see 12. Capt. Ichabod Thomas, Jr. (*John Thomas* line).

10. CAPT. JOHN⁷ THOMAS (10. *Nathaniel Ray*⁶, *John*⁵, *Nathaniel*⁴, *Nathaniel*³, *Nathaniel*², *William*¹) was born 30 Aug. 1764 on the family estate in Marshfield, became of age in Aug. 1785, and then took measures to salvage such part of his mother's right of dower in the estate as might remain after her departure to Nova Scotia.

Feby 22, 1786. In the House of Representatives. On the petition of John Thomas of Marshfield, praying that such part of his father's Confiscated Estate as was duly assigned and Set off to his mother Sarah Thomas to be improved by her so long as she remained within this Commonwealth may since she is now departed therefrom be vested in him in fee. Resolved that all such parts and pareells of the confiscated real estate late of Nathaniel Ray Thomas of Marshfield, as Since his departure from this Commonwealth have been assigned and set off to his wife Sarah Thomas for her use and improvement so long as she remained within this Commonwealth, and the fee whereof since her departure therefrom is vested in this Commonwealth, be, and they hereby are given and granted to said John Thomas, son of the said Nathaniel Ray Thomas to have and to hold the same to him the said John Thomas his heirs and assigns forever, to his and their proper use & benefit. Provided nevertheless and this grant is on the following condition that after all the avails of his said fathers estate which have been received into the public Treasury shall be drawn out therefrom to the use of the Several creditors of said estate he the said John Thomas shall pay and satisfy all such debts as shall then remain due from his said fathers estate, and also such debts as may remain due on the settlement of the same.

And be it further Resolved that in case any individual creditor or creditors may be willing to take the said John Thomas's security in satisfaction of their whole demands against his said father's estate in preference to drawing their proportion thereof out of the public Treasury and the said John Thomas is willing to secure the same, such Creditor or Creditors are hereby inpowered and Authorized to make such compromise with said John Thomas without being obliged to wait till the avails of his said father's estate are first drawn out of the public Treasury, and for all such sum or sums of money which the said John Thomas shall thus secure to any Creditor or Creditors, the same shall go and be as so much in discharge of the Condition annexed to the grant aforesaid.

In Senate Read and Concurred

Approved by the Governor.

(General Court Records, Vol. 46, p. 432.)

It was upon the above terms that John Thomas, at the age of 22 years, recovered title to the Thomas estate, in place of the

large patrimony that might otherwise have been his had his father not been loyal to his King. He was never a wealthy man, and when late in years, after Daniel Webster and his family had been with the Thomases as paying guests, he asked Mr. Webster to purchase the estate, which he did in 1832, with the understanding that Mr. and Mrs. Thomas remain there for the remainder of their lives. Their son, Charles Henry Thomas, was made overseer of the estate, and the youngest son, Nathaniel Ray, accompanied the Websters to Washington, where he was employed by Mr. Webster until his death in 1840.

Col. Fletcher Webster and his family occupied the mansion after his father's death, and when it was destroyed by fire in the late 70's, his widow and son were residing there. While the present mansion was being built, the Websters occupied the old Winslow house near by, and after the death of Mrs. Fletcher Webster, the estate was sold to Walton Hall, whose family still live there in 1936.

The following is taken from "Memories of Daniel Webster," by William T. Davis, "New England Magazine" of Apr. 1902:

In 1825 he (Webster) saw for the first time the estate in Marshfield, which was destined to become his home. He was then living in a house which he had built in Summer Street, Boston, opposite the entrance of South Street, and which he continued to occupy a part of each year until 1839, when he sold it and made Marshfield his permanent home. For several years prior to 1825, it had been his custom to spend a part of the dog-days in Sandwich, shooting and fishing with John Dennison . . . as his helper and guide. It having been suggested to him by Mr. Samuel K. Williams* that Marshfield, with its marshes, its boat harbor and its brooks, would be a pleasant summer resort and much nearer to Boston than Sandwich, he stopped there on his next return from the Cape. Mr. Williams told him that Capt. John Thomas, an intelligent farmer occupying a comfortable house and estate, would doubtless be glad to accommodate him. Late one afternoon in early September, in 1825, accompanied by his wife, in a chaise with a trunk lashed to the axle, and his son Fletcher, a lad of twelve or thirteen, following on a pony, he drove down the avenue leading to the house of Captain Thomas, and drew up at the piazza where the Captain, with his oldest son, Charles Henry, was sitting, resting after putting into the barn a load of salt hay. . . . The hospitality of the house was at once extended to the party, and for several days Mr. Webster was a welcome guest, passing his time in shooting on the marshes and fishing in the waters of the bay. . . .

* Samuel King Williams married 1817 Elizabeth Winslow Whitman, daughter of Rev. Kilborn Whitman and Elizabeth Winslow, daughter of Dr. Isaac and Ruth (Stockbridge) Winslow of the old Winslow house in Marshfield.

Nathaniel Ray Thomas, the younger son of Captain Thomas, afterward entered largely into the life and affections of Mr. Webster. He was at that time attending a school in Duxbury . . . and was later taken by Mr. Webster to Boston under his special guardianship. He finally became a secretary of the great statesman whose love he shared with his own children. In 1840, at the age of twenty-seven, he died at Mann's Hotel in Washington, of bilious fever. . . .

After annual visits to the Thomas homestead, in the year 1831, Captain Thomas asked Mr. Webster to buy his estate, which, after repeated requests, he consented to do, upon the condition that Captain Thomas would occupy it as his home, free of rent, as long as he lived. Captain Thomas died in 1837, and after that time his widow lived with her son, Charles, in Duxbury, until her death in 1849. Though the purchase of the estate was made in 1831, the deed, in which the consideration was \$3,650, was not passed until April 23, 1832, and included the house and outbuildings and one hundred and sixty acres of marsh, tillage and woodland.

John Thomas married, first, Sarah Baker, born —, daughter of John of Marshfield and Ruth (Barker) Baker of Pembroke. She died 30 Aug. 1804; he married, second, Lucy Turner, born —, daughter of Nathaniel, and a sister of Barker Turner, the ship-builder. She was a granddaughter of Capt. Benjamin Turner of Pembroke. She died in Duxbury 13 Mar. 1849. Capt. John Thomas died on the Marshfield estate 27 July 1837.

Children of Capt. John and Sarah (Baker) Thomas:

- i. John, b. —; drowned young.
- ii. Sarah Deering, b. —; m. Waterman Thomas. (See John Thomas line.)
- iii. Ruth B., b. —; m. Francis G. Ford.
- iv. Lucy Baker, b. —; m. Peleg Ford.
- v. Mary G., b. —; m. Daniel Russell.
- vi. Betsey, b. —; m. Ichabod Sampson.

Children of Capt. John and Lucy (Turner) Thomas:

- vii. Charles Henry, b. 1807; m. Louisa Bradford; res. in Duxbury.
- viii. Ann, b. —; m. Dr. John Porter of Duxbury.
- ix. Nathaniel Ray, b. 1813; d. unm. 1840 at Washington, D. C., where he was employed by Daniel Webster as private secretary.

CHAPTER XV

BRIGGS ANCESTRY

JOHN THOMAS LINE

JOHN¹, SAMUEL², NATHAN³, CAPT. ICHABOD⁴, SR., CAPT.
ICHABOD⁵, JR., MERCY⁶ LITTLE THOMAS WHO MARRIED
CUSHING OTIS BRIGGS, MAJOR-GENERAL JOHN
THOMAS OF REVOLUTIONARY FAME

JOHN THOMAS LINE

1. JOHN¹ THOMAS, direct ancestor of Mercy Little Thomas, who married Cushing Otis Briggs, was born in England in 1621, came to New England in the ship *Hopewell* of London, Capt. Thomas Babb, master, which arrived Nov. 1635, with Edward Winslow, who was returning after having acted in England as agent for the Plymouth Colony. It is said that John Thomas was an orphan whose property had been lost through poor investments by those who had it in charge. He was then 14 years of age, and was brought up in the family of Edward Winslow, and later became steward of Winslow's estate at Careswell in Marshfield. His name is next to the Winslows in the first list of those who bore arms in Plymouth, Mass.

Research in England for information about the orphan John Thomas has produced little definite result. The Thomas family is said to have been of Welsh origin. In Ipswich Probate Office, Archdeaconry of Sudbury, book 43, rogen folio 68, is the will of a Roger Thomas of Wickhambrook, Suffolk, yeoman, dated 20 Oct. 1609, and probated at Bury St. Edmunds 11 Dec. 1609. This will mentions wife Joan and daughter Bridget, and bequeaths to son John Thomas "all my free land lying in Wickhambrook and Stradishall and my copyhold in Stradishall," also some personal property; and "I will that John my son and his wife shall abide and continue with Joan my wife in that manner he hath done untill the feast of the Annunciation of Our Lady next," etc. Archives Sudbury, book 53, fol. 67, Will of John Thomas, *alias* Rogers, of Wickhambrook, dated 1 Sept. 1636, mentions wife



ST. BOTOLPH CLUB
4 NEWBURY STREET, BOSTON

January 31, 1935.

The British Consul, S. C.

Tham. 12th Sept. 1934

L. Cabot Briggs Esq.

Boston Mass. U.S.A

Dear Sir,

I have very much pleasure in advising you that at the last meeting of the Executive Committee you were elected a COUNTRY member of this Club.

Your membership dates from the 12TH inst.

I remain

Yours very truly

H. D. Briggs

Dear Mr. Briggs:

It gives me very real pleasure indeed to notify you of your election to the St. Botolph Club as a resident member. I presented your nomination together with a huge sheaf of supporting letters to the Committee on Elections at their meeting yesterday afternoon, and it is no exaggeration to say that your name went through with flying colors. I remember our agreeable meeting a year or so ago in Harold Bowditch's company. With your many other acquaintances in the Club I look forward to seeing you at No. 4 Newbury Street where, I believe you will enjoy the privileges and the good fellowship of St. Botolph.

Faithfully yours,

H. D. Briggs

Secretary

Mr. Lloyd Cabot Briggs,
64 Beacon Street,
Boston, Massachusetts.

(See Chapter XXIX)

Audry and "beloved sister Bridget Halls," also kinswoman Mirabel Halls, to whom he bequeaths all his lands and tenements in Wickhambrook after his wife's decease. He also gives to Bridget Halls money "if it shall be paid by [said] Richard Pratt or his heirs, which is or shall be due for redeeming of said lands," etc. As our John Thomas came to New England in 1635, "Whose property had been lost through bad investments by those who had it in charge," — an interesting question arises whether John of Marshfield was related to the above-named John Thomas of Wickhambrook, Suffolk, whose property loaned or pledged to Richard Pratt was of doubtful value in 1636. (See William Thomas line, preceding chapter.)

When John Thomas married, 21 Dec. 1648, Governor Winslow gave him a farm from his own grant, upon which he settled. His house was situated about halfway between the fortified house of Governor Winslow, Careswell, and that of William¹ Thomas. On this farm afterward stood the home of the noted singer, Adelaide Phillips, which now (1936) belongs to Helmuth Weber, built beside the site of the first house of John Thomas. The site of the original house is marked by a statue which was given to Adelaide Phillips by her friends.

John Thomas' wife was SARAH PITNEY, born in England about 1628, daughter of JAMES PITNEY, born in England about 1583, and died in New England Mar. 1663/4. He was a felt maker by trade. He married at Rotherhithe, Surrey, England, 27 Dec. 1624, SARAH SMITH. Before 1635 he left his family in England and came to New England. His wife, Sara, aged 22 years, and two children, Sara, 7 years, and Samuel, 1½ years, and Margaret Pitney, aged 22, also Rodolphus Elmes and the Hanfords came in the ship *Planter* from London 11 Apr. 1635, arriving in Boston 7 June 1635. SARAH PITNEY's mother, SARAH (SMITH) PITNEY, died in 1648. James Pitney had land granted him in 1646 at Green Harbor, and in 1647 at Mount Skirgo. He removed to Boston in 1650, after the death of his wife, but he evidently died in Plymouth.

The last will and Testament of Mr. James Pitney taken by . . . Mr. John Bradford and John Bourne the 14th of March 1663 and exhibited to the Court held at Plymouth the 8th day of June 1664 on the oaths of the said John Bradford and John Bourne.

Those ye present witness that whereas I James Pitney aged eighty years or thereabouts being weak and siek but in perfect memory do give my soul to God and my body to the grave and my estate as followeth to my son JOHN THOMAS prim^o I give him my ox . . . which yoketh with

his ox in the draught and I give unto him my house . . . and I give unto my son JAMES PITNEY for his legacy, . . . twenty shillings which my son JOHN THOMAS shall pay him and I give to my daughter Abigail two cows one black cow which is a tall cow and one brown ewe and I give unto my daughter SARAH one ewe being a short legged one and I give unto my daughter SARAH all my bedding clothes & linen. My daughter *Sarah's children* my two calves and one yearling to be divided equally amongst them all and I do hereby appoint my loving daughter SARAH THOMAS to be my true and lawful executrix and I do appoint and authorize Mr. John Bradford to be my . . . that . . . this my will may be truly and faithfully executed according as is here declared. In witness whereof I have sett to my hand

Witness JOHN BRADFORD
JOHN BOURNE

JAMES PITNEY

(Plymouth Colony Records, Wills, Vol. 2, p. 21 (back)).

[Then follows an inventory.]

JOHN¹ THOMAS died in Marshfield in 1676. His wife, SARAH (PITNEY) THOMAS, died 2 Jan. 1682/3.

Children of John¹ and Sarah (Pitney) Thomas:

- i. John², b. 16 Nov. 1649, m. Sarah ——. He was drowned 24 May 1699. His widow Sarah m. (2) in 1702 Deacon John Foster of Marshfield, whose first wife was Hannah Stetson of Seitate, b. 1671, dau. of Thomas and Sarah (Dodson) Stetson. (See Stetson, under Kent.) Deacon John Foster lived at Plymouth, where his wife Sarah d. 26 May, 1731. John² Thomas was heir to his father's estate, and as he d. without issue this property descended to his nephew, 4. John³ Thomas, son of 3. Samuel².

INVENTORY OF ESTATE OF JOHN² THOMAS, JULY 26, 1699

Wearing apparell	£8	16	1
Cash	8	12	0
Arms & ammunition	5	2	0
A yoke of oxen	9	0	0
six cows	13	15	0
other young cattle	8	10	0
swine	4	0	0
Cloath & yarn		15	0
chest, tables & trunk in ye new room		18	0
Chairs & cushions		13	0
Bottles & glass		12	0
2 beds & bead steads & furniture in chamber	12	0	0
Brass ware	2	0	0
pewter ware	2	6	6
Iron ware	2	8	0

Earthern ware	6	6
chest & table in old room	4	0
spinning wheel & cards	6	0
Corn in house	£5	0 0
wooden dishes, spoons & bellows	3	0
Barrels, bsks & other lumber	1	10 0
Baggs	5	0
Spade, ax, hoe & forks	18	0
Horse goods & chains	8	0
Cart, plough & yoke	2	6 0
Syeh & tacklen	0	3 6
leather	5	0
cart raps, 2 sickles & a lock	4	0
Debts to ye Estate	8	1 8
Housing & lands where he dwelt	150	0 0
Other meadows	30	0 0

SETH ARNOLD

ISAAC WINSLOW

- ii. Elizabeth, b. 12 Sept. 1652. She lived with and cared for the wife of Gov. Edward Winslow, and died unm.
2. iii. SAMUEL², b. 6 Nov. 1655; m. MERCY FORD.
- iv. Daniel², b. 20 Nov. 1659; m. Experience Tilden, dau. of Thomas, 1698, a granddaughter of Elder Nathaniel Tilden of Scituate. (Sec Tilden.)
- v. Sarah, b. 20 Sept. 1661; m. 1681 Benjamin Phillips, son of John Phillips, the Phillips colonial ancestor. They lived near White's Ferry on an extensive property that extended from the ferry to the property of Peregrine White. A grandson, Capt. Nathaniel¹ Phillips, m. Joanna White, and built on a part of the old estate the house now (1936) owned and occupied by a descendant, Mrs. Ella Lindley. Capt. Nathaniel¹ and Joanna (White) Phillips had two sons, Daniel² and Nathaniel.² The latter Nathaniel of Revolutionary times was a Tory. He was arrested and lodged in jail, but after writing a penitent letter to the authorities (now preserved by the family) he was released, and went to the Provinces, where many other Tories had taken refuge. He accumulated a large property in Newfoundland, which was inherited by his brother Daniel² of Marshfield, who lived in the house built by his father. Daniel's² wife was Abigail Thomas, dau. of Zenas and Abigail (Peterson) Thomas of Duxbury. After receiving the fortune of his brother Nathaniel², Daniel² Phillips purchased farms for his two sons, Nathaniel³ and Daniel³, of two to three hundred acres each. Nathaniel's³ farm near the present Marshfield Hills railroad station, was occupied for many years after his death by his dau., Miss Abigail Phillips (now, 1936, Crosby's Antique Shop, "The Gallion"). Daniel's³ farm adjoined that of the Quaker, Moses Rogers (Henry Nelson's), on the summit of Rogers' or Nelson's hill. It passed to Daniel's³ son, Nathaniel⁴,

to the latter's son, Daniel⁵, and is now (1936) owned by Daniel's⁵ children. (Richard's "History of Marshfield.")

- vi. James, b. 30 Nov. 1663; m. Mary Tilden, dau. of Stephen and Hannah (Little) Tilden, a granddaughter of Elder Nathaniel of Scituate. They settled in Duxbury.
- vii. Ephraim, b. 1667; moved to Little Compton, R. I.
- 3. viii. Israel², b. Oct. 1670; m. Bethia Sherman.

2. SAMUEL² THOMAS (1. *John*¹), was born 6 Nov. 1655 at Green Harbor, died 2 Sept. 1720. He married 27 May 1680 MERCY FORD, born in 1662 in Marshfield, daughter of DEACON WILLIAM and SARAH (DINGLEY) FORD. His residence was probably that of his father-in-law, Deacon Ford, which was near the late George C. Baker's. Mercy (Ford) Thomas died Sept. 1741.

DEACON WILLIAM FORD, father of Merey, born in Marshfield 1633/4, was son of WILLIAM FORD, yeoman, born in 1604, son of "WIDDO FORD." Deacon William was a miller. He settled early in Marshfield and established the mill known as "Dunham's Mill," on the stream at the turn of the road on Plain Street. He married 4 Nov. 1658 Sarah Dingley, born in England about 1639, died in Marshfield 1727, aged 88, daughter of JOHN DINGLEY, an associate of THOMAS CHILLINGSWORTH, with whom he came to Lynn in 1637. He afterwards went with a colony to Sandwich and finally, with his friend Chillingsworth, settled in Marshfield, where he held many town offices. His daughter, Mary Dingley, married *Josias, son of Capt. Myles Standish*. [SARAH (DINGLEY) FORD, my ancestor, and Mary (Dingley) Standish were sisters.] JOHN DINGLEY was born in England about 1608, died in 1678 or 1689, according to different authorities. He married in England, about 1634, Sarah —, born in England.

DEACON WILLIAM FORD died 7 Feb. 1721/2, aged 88, and is buried in Cedar Grove Cemetery. His grave marks the site of the pew he occupied in an early meeting-house. — Ford, Mrs. Martha Ford and WILLIAM FORD arrived in Plymouth, sailing Aug. 1621 in ship *Fortune* from London, arrived at Cape Cod 9 Nov. 1621. He came from Southwark, a leather dresser.

William Ford of Marshfield, yeoman, deeds to son John Ford of Marshfield meadow land next John Barker's, June 20, 1695. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 1, p. 351.)

William Ford Sr., Josiah Ford, both of Marshfield, Joseph Ford of Pembroke, deeds lands in Marshfield. Jan. 26, 1713. (Vol. 10, p. 263.)

William Ford of Marshfield, yeoman, deeds to son Joseph one half his farm in Marshfield, after his own decease and the decease of his wife

Sarah, possession to be taken at their decease, Joseph agreeing to pay his sisters as follows: To sister *Mercy Thomas* 40 shillings; to sister Sarah Jones 40 shillings; to Mary Wilder 40 shillings; to Margaret Porter 40 shillings; to Experience Doggett 40 shillings, and to Bethiah Barker 40 shillings. This deed executed 5 Apr. 1716. (Vol. 12, p. 25.)

William Forde of Marshfield, yeoman, deeds to his grandson Pleg Ford of Scituate, innholder, one half of the share of his father, John Ford, deceased; the said Pleg paying after decease of William to William's grandchild Mercy Homes £20; and to grandchild Sarah Faunce £20 when she arrives at eighteen years. Executed 5 Apr. 1716. (Vol. 12, p. 34.)

William Ford of Marshfield, yeoman, deeds to his son Josiah Ford his mill land, housings and meadows that "I enjoy in the right of my father William Ford late of Marshfield deceased." Executed 19 March 1715/16. (Vol. 12, p. 170.)

WILL OF WILLIAM FORD

Vol. 4, Page 311, Plymouth Colony Records

1720. The eighteenth day of March in y^e year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and twenty I William Ford gen^t. of y^e Town of Marshfield in ye county of Plymouth in New England being aged & stricken in years & under bodily weakness, but of sound mind and memory praised be almighty God for ye same. Being in daily expectation of my great change & willing to settle things in order before my decease. Do therefore make and declare this my last will & testament in manner & forme following, hereby Renouncing nullifying and making void any former will or wills by me heretofore made and declared this to be my last will and testament & no other: and first and principally I commit my soul to God that gave it & my body to decent burial, when it shall it please God to call me home. and touching my outward estate which y^e Lord hath blessed me with: my will is y^t ye same shall imployed & bestowed as in and by these presents is expressed viz: my will is I give and bequeath unto my daughter *Mercy Thomas* a feather bed at her choicc and y^e one pair of sheets y^e one course & y^e other fine & one bolster & one coverlaid to y^e s^d bed. Item I give and bequeath unto my daughter Experience Doggett a feather-bed & one pair of sheets one course & one fine one coverlaid & one bolster to y^e said bed & she shall have her second choicc, Item. my will is that all y^e remainder part of my estate both moveable and imoveable where soever it is or may be found y^t is left at my decease & y^e decease of *Sarah my wife*, which I have not formerly disposed of by deed to my sons namely to John Ford & his son Pelag & Josiah & Joseph Ford having given them their full portions already shall be equally to and among my six daughters & their respective heirs viz: To Mercy Thomas, Sarah Jones, Mary Wilder, Margaret Porter, Experience Doggett & Bethiah Barker, and lastly I do constitute ordain &

appoint my well beloved son in Law Thomas Doggett to be sole executor of this my last will & testament. In witness where of y^e s^d William Forde have hereunto set my hand & seal y^e day & year above written.

his
WILLIAM Z FORD seal
mark

Signed, sealed, published ect.

WILLIAM FORD Junior.

JOSEPH FORD Junior.

ARTHUR HOWLAND Junior.

SAMUEL² THOMAS died 2 Sept. 1720. His will is recorded in the Plymouth Records, Volume 4, page 251:

WILL OF SAMUEL THOMAS

1720. In the name of God Amen — I Samuel Thomas of Marshfield, in the County of Plymouth in the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England Inholder being Sound & of perfect & disposing mind & memory and being desirous to settle my Estate before I go to the Grave the House appointed for all Living do make & constitute this my last will & Testament (Hereby Revoaking disannulling all my former Wills) That is to Say: First and principally I Resign my soul into the hands of Almighty God Hoping for Salvation by Jesus Christ and my body I commit to the earth to be decently buried. And as for the worldly Goods & Estate that I have a right in & unto (after my just debts & funeral Expences are paid and discharged): I give and bequeath unto my son John Thomas all the Lotts & Rights in Land that I have in Cut Island & Rouses Hummock so called with the beach belonging thereto in Duxborough in the County afores^d As also half my meadow, near where my father formerly Lived, and where the s^d John now lives in Marshfield afores^d which I think sufficient for him with what he hath already had to him his heirs and assigns forever. 2. I give & bequeath to my son *Nathan Thomas four Acres of Land adjoyning to his Own Lot (which I have already set off for him near the meeting house in Marshfield afores^d)*. To him his heirs & assigns forever. 3. Item. I give to my sons Samuel Thomas and Joseph Thomas the Other half of the meadow afores^d near where my father lived with all my Homsted whereon I now dwell in Marshfield afores^d (& the Common Right adjoyning) with all the buildings thereon viz. on the Homsted, to them and their heirs and assigns forever; That is to Say they the s^d Samuel & Joseph are to have half the s^d Homstead and half the dwelling house thereon with the meadow Bequeathed to them Immediately after my decease; and the Other half of my s^d Homstead and dwelling-house Immediately after my wife's term (hereafter in this will mentioned) is finished. 4. Item. I will and bequeath unto my son Gideon Thomas his Heirs and assigns forever all

the rest of my Land at the meeting house or near thereto in Marshfield afores^d being about Ten acres as also all my Island called Pine tree Island in Marshfield afores^d. 5. Item. I give and bequeath unto my son Josiah Thomas Two Lots of Land lying and being in Duxborough afores^d on the westward side of the South River adjoining to a place called Simmons's Meadow or if I should put that land away He is to Have Land Equivalent thereunto. To him his Heirs & assigns forever. 6. Item. My will is that my loving *wife Marcy Thomas* have the Improvement and profit of all my moveable estate whatsoever during her Widdowhood as also the Use & Improvement of One end or half my dwelling house which she chuses during her Widdowhood, & she shall also have & enjoy ye use profit & Improvement of half my s^d Homestead during her Widdowhood, and if she shall marry again she shall have and Enjoy the use and Improvement of One half of my said moveable Estate during her life. 7. Item. I give and bequeath to my daughters Bethiah and Sarah Thomas and their Heirs the sum of forty pounds that is, Twenty pounds each, besides what they have already had, That is to say and my will and meaning is If the moveables left by my wife after her widdowhood or decease be sufficient to pay the s^d Legacies, and if there be more than will pay the s^d forty pounds off my moveable Estate, then my will is that my *son Nathan* and his Heirs shall enjoy what is over & above. But in case my wife should by sickness, weakness or Lameness spend all or the greatest part of s^d moveables so that there be not enough left to make up the s^d sums to my s^d daughters, then my will is that my two sons Samuel & Joseph pay or cause to be paid to their said sisters the sum of Twenty pounds that is Ten pound to each sister after my wife's decease. In consideration of the Land & buildings that I have in this my will given them. And finally I appoint my son Samuel Thomas to be Executor of this my last Will and Testament, and in Testimony & Confirmation of the premises I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 31st day of January 1717.

Signed sealed &c.

SAMUEL THOMAS.

THEODOSIUS MOORE,

ISAAC WINSLOW.

SARAH WINSLOW.

Whereas in the body of my will I have given to my daughters the sum of forty pounds to be paid out of my moveable Estate if there be so much remaining after my wife's decease, and then the whole remainder of s^d moveables to be to my son Nathan — which upon further Consideration my will is that after the s^d forty pounds is paid to my said daughters my son Nathan shall have Ten pounds if there be so much left of my moveable estate, and the residue of the s^d moveables if there be more I give to my son Josiah.

In Testimony whereof etc. (as above).

Children of SAMUEL² and MERCY FORD THOMAS:

- i. Bethia, b. 25 Jan. 1681; m. Samuel Sprague; moved to Duxbury.
- 4. ii. John, b. 8 Nov. 1683; m. Lydia Waterman.
- iii. Samuel, b. 7 Dec. 1685; m. Rebecca Howland, 1726.
- 5. iv. NATHAN, b. 21 Nov. 1688; m. three times; 3d wife, SARAH FOSTER, who was my ancestor.
- v. Sarah, m. John Holmes 8 Sept. 1720.
- vi. Joseph, b. 1690; m. Lydia S. Winslow 1718.
- vii. Gideon, b. 23 Dec. 1692; m. Abigail Baker 1720/21.
- viii. Josiah, bpt. 16 Mar. 1698; m. Deborah Bartlett.

3. DEACON ISRAEL² THOMAS (1. *John*¹), born Oct. 1670 at Green Harbor, died 29 Jan. 1755, aged 85, married 23 Feb. 1698 Bethia Sherman, daughter of John and Jane (Hatch) Sherman.

John was a son of William Sherman, who came from England in 1629. He received a grant of land at Green Harbor in 1640, upon which he settled, and acquired considerable property. He married 23 Jan. 1639 Prudence Hill, and died 25 Oct. 1679.

Jane Hatch was a daughter of Walter Hatch, son of Elder William, the first ruling elder of the Second Church of Scituate, who settled on Kent Street in 1634, on the first lot south of Greenfield lane. Elder William Hatch was born in Sandwich, England, and embarked with wife Jane, five children and six servants in the ship *Hercules*, John Witherby, master, in 1634. He had been a merchant in Sandwich, and after settling in Scituate was an active and useful man in the settlement of the town. He died in Scituate in 1651, and the following year his widow, Jane, married, second, Thomas King, who had been chosen to succeed Elder Hatch in the Second Church. She died the year of her second marriage.

Walter Hatch, son of Elder William and Jane, was a shipwright. He was born in England, and married in 1650, first, Elizabeth Holbrook, daughter of Thomas Holbrook of Weymouth. He settled in Scituate on a point of land northeast of Stony Cove, not far from the site of the first meeting-house of the Second Society (Wilson's hill). It was he who built the corn and fulling mills in the "Two Mile" (for his sons). He was killed by lightning in a stable in 1701, when about 80 years of age. By will he distributed his property as follows:

WILL OF WALTER HATCH OF SCITUATE

I give to my two sons John and Israel Hatch all my land I live upon, and also the two mills. The Corn mill and the Fulling mill with all my 250 acres of upland, also 20 acres of meadow, and 50 or 60 acres of Woodland, and 5 acres of swamp. To Jane Sherman, my daughter, 20 pounds sterling in silver money and a cow. To my daughter Bethia Ford (w. of Michael) 20 pounds sterling in silver money and a cow. To Mary Hatch, my wife, (2d wife) 5 pounds per year. To my sons, Samuel, John, Israel and Joseph equally my land in Tunk [Hanson], containing 3,375 acres.

Children of Deacon Israel and Bethia Sherman Thomas:

- i. Gershom, b. 17 Apr. 1699; m. Mercy Hewett.
- ii. Joseph, b. 14 Jan. 1702; d. unm.
- iii. Amos, b. 2 Oct. 1703; m. Ruth White.
- iv. Bethia, b. 1705; m. Israel Hatch (son of Walter).
- v. Kezia, b. 13 Jan. 1708; m. John Dingley.
- vi. Abigail, b. 5 Apr. 1710; m. Thomas Waterman.
6. vii. Nehemiah³, b. 26 July 1712; m. Abiah Winslow.
- viii. Sybil, b. 6 Jan. 1714; m. John Tilden of Scituate.
- ix. Jane, b. 31 Dec. 1718; m. Thomas Ford.
- x. Deborah, b. 28 Apr. 1719; m. Jabez Washburn.

4. JOHN³ THOMAS (3. Samuel², John¹) was born in Marshfield 8 Nov. 1683 and died Jan. 1769, aged 86. His unele, John² Thomas, died without issue in 1699, and this nephew, the oldest son of Samuel, came into possession of the estate of his grandfather, 1. John¹.

John³ married 23 Dec. 1714 Lydia Waterman, who died 17 Jan. 1758. She was daughter of Joseph Waterman and Lydia Snow (daughter of Anthony). Joseph Waterman, born about 1646, was a son of Robert Waterman of Plymouth, later of Marshfield, who died 1665 (also given 1652). Josiah Winslow and Anthony Snow were appointed guardians of Joseph and a younger brother, Robert Waterman, minors at the time of the father's death. Robert, Sr., of Plymouth married 1638 Elizabeth Bourne, born in England, daughter of Thomas Bourne and wife Elizabeth, who came to Plymouth with several children about 1630. In 1637 he was granted land in Marshfield, and moved there.

Lydia Snow, wife of Joseph Waterman, was a daughter of Anthony Snow and wife Abigail Warren, daughter of Richard of the *Mayflower*.

WILL OF JOHN³ THOMAS

Vol. 20, page 356

1770. The last will & testament of John Thomas of Marshfield in the County of Plymouth in the province of y^e Massachusetts Bay in New England, yoeman. I the said John Thomas being under many bodily infirmities yet of perfect mind & memory thanks be given to Almighty God for the same, & calling to mind the mortality of my body & knowing that it is appointed once for all men to die, do upon serious consideration make & ordain these presents to be my last will & testament to remain firm & inviolable forever. That is to say principally & first of all I give & recommend my soul into the hands of God that gave it & my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in decent Christian manner at the discretion of my executor hereinafter named, nothing doubting but at the general resurrection I shall receive the same again by the almighty power of God, and as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, devise & dispose of the same in the following manner. Imp^r I give & bequeath unto my eldest son Anthony Thomas all my rights in the sedge flats lying in Green Harbour River. Item. I give & bequeath to my youngest son John Thomas all my rights in Duxbury beach, & Roouses hummoek. Item. I give & bequeath unto my daughter Zerviah Bradford wife to James Bradford a large pewter platter. Item. I give & bequeath unto my daughter Lidia Kent wife to Joseph Kent (mar. Marshfield 28 Feb. 1743) a large pewter platter. Item. I give & bequeath unto my daughter Sarah Kindsman wife to Jeremiah Kindsman a large pewter platter. Item. I give & bequeath unto my grandson Briggs Thomas two sheep. Item. I give & bequeath unto my grandson Waterman Thomas one cow. Item. I give & bequeath unto my grandson Judah Thomas two sheep. Item. I give & bequeath unto my granddaughter, Hannah Thomas two sheep. Item. I give & bequeath unto my *grandson Thomas Kent* one horse. Item. I give & bequeath unto my *granddaughter Lidia Kent* two sheep. Item. I give & bequeath unto my *grandson Nathaniel Kent* two sheep. Item. I give & bequeath unto my *grand daughter Abigail Kent* two sheep. Item. I give & bequeath unto my *grandson John Kent* two sheep. Item. I give & bequeath my *pew in the meeting house unto my daughter Lidia Kent's five children* above named equally to them all. Item. I give & bequeath unto my two sons & three daughters after my debts & funeral charges are paid, all the remainder of my estate both real & personal that is to say my two sons & three daughters above named are to have all my estate that is not herein before given away equally divided among them five.

Lastly my will is that my two sons viz: Anthony Thomas & John Thomas be the sole executors of this my last will & testament thus hoping that this my last will be kept & performed according to the true intent & meaning thereof. In witness whereof I the said John Thomas

have hereunto set my hand & seal this twelfth day of May Anno Domini one thousand seven hundred & sixty four.

Signed sealed etc.

JOHN WADSWORTH

JOEL PETERSON

JONATHAN PETERSON

JOHN THOMAS

Seal

JOHN THOMAS

Vol. 20, page 357

Addition to will. May the 12, 1764. Whereas as I the subscriber have a *negro slave whose name is Violet* it is my will that if she should be living after me she shall chuse which of my heirs she will live with, they that she chuseth paying her prisal into the estate that is to be divided, or *if she should be sold she shall chuse her master*. And further it is my will that if either of my children above named should sell any real estate that is given them by my last will, either of the brothers shall have the liberty to buy it as it shall be prized. Witness my hand.

JOHN THOMAS.

Children of John and Lydia Waterman Thomas:

- i. Zerviah, b. 3 Oct. 1715; m. James Bradford and moved to Plainfield, Conn.
- ii. Anna, b. 5 Apr. 1717; d. 7 Dec. 1723.
7. iii. Anthony (Col.), b. 25 Mar. 1719; m. Abigail Alden. (See Briggs chapter.)
- iv. LYDIA, b. Mar. 1721; m. JOSEPH KENT of Marshfield 28 Feb. 1743.
8. v. JOHN (MAJ.-GEN. JOHN, nephew of my ancestor, Nathan³ Thomas); b. 7 Nov. 1724; m. HANNAH THOMAS.
- vi. Sarah, b. 3 Nov. 1726; m. Jeremiah Kinsman of Norwich, Conn.
- vii. Keziah, b. 7 Nov. 1730; d. 11 Dec. 1751.

5. NATHAN³ THOMAS (3. *Samuel*², *John*¹), born 21 Nov. 1688, died 8 Nov. 1741 in Marshfield, was by trade a tanner. He built a house on the site of one now (1936) standing on the road to Brant Roek, at the top of the hill, after crossing the railroad at the Marshfield station. This house was torn down in 1863 by Luther Thomas, and the present house built on its site.

Nathan³ Thomas married, first, 4 Mar. 1713, Alice Baker, daughter of Kenhelm and Sarah (Bradford) Baker, a granddaughter of Major William Bradford of Plymouth and his wife, Aliee Richards, daughter of Thomas Richards of Weymouth. Kenhelm Baker was a son of Samuel Baker and his first wife, Eleanor Winslow, daughter of Kenhelm Winslow, brother of

Governor Edward Winslow. In the attic of Kenhelm Winslow's house, built in 1649, are the iron rings where slaves were tied.

Nathan³ Thomas married, second, 2 Jan. 1716/17, Abiah Snow, daughter of Rebekah (Baker) Snow and granddaughter of Anthony Snow and Abigail Warren, daughter of Richard of the *Mayflower*. Abiah (Snow) Thomas died 1 Feb. 1718/19.

NATHAN³ THOMAS married, third, at Plymouth, 17 June 1719, SARAH (FOSTER) BARTLETT, born 16 Apr. 1696, died 7 Feb. 1778, daughter of DEACON JOHN FOSTER and widow of William Bartlett. She was a descendant of THOMAS FOSTER, who arrived either in the *Hopewell*, Nov. 1635, from London, aged 14 years, or in the *Hercules* from London and Southampton, arriving 14 Apr. 1634 from Ipswich, Suffolk, England. He was born in England about 1612. He lived in Weymouth and Billerica, Mass., married about 1639 ABIGAIL VINES, and died 20 Apr. 1682. His son, JOHN FOSTER, born 7 Oct. 1642, died 3 June 1732, married *Mary Chillingworth*, daughter of *Thomas*, about 1663, and lived in Marshfield. *Thomas Chillingworth* was a prominent man in public affairs, and a large landholder. He was in Lynn in 1637, moved from there to Sandwich, and later to Marshfield. He married about 1637, Joane —, born in England about 1612. Widow Joane Chillingworth married in 1654 Thomas Doggett of Marshfield, and died 4 Sept. 1684.

DEACON JOHN FOSTER of Plymouth, son of JOHN and MARY (CHILLINGWORTH) FOSTER, and father of SARAH FOSTER, was born in Marshfield 12 Oct. 1666. He married 16 Nov. 1692 HANNAH STETSON, born in Seitate Nov. 1671. He was chosen Deputy or Representative ten different terms.

THOMAS STETSON, father of HANNAH, was born in Seitate 11 Dec. 1643, the third son of CORNET ROBERT and HONOUR (TUCKER) STETSON. In 1673 Cornet Stetson deeded to his son *Thomas* a river farm next south of his own, and north of the Bald Hill farm which he deeded the following year to his son, Captain Benjamin. A portion of the original house built by Thomas Stetson is incorporated in the house now (1936) standing on the property. For more than 100 years Thomas and his son, Ebenezer Stetson, occupied the house, and after the death of Ebenezer the farm of "100 acres together with buildings thereon" was sold in 1781 to Michael Ford by Noah Brooks, administrator, for £410. About 1785 Michael Ford remodeled the house as it is today. It has been known for many years as the "David Barnes Ford place."

THOMAS STETSON married in 1673 SARAH DODSON, born in Scituate 26 Aug. 1652, daughter of *Anthony Dodson*, a surveyor, who was born in England, and was in Scituate as early as 1650. He married 12 Nov. 1651 MARY WILLIAMS, daughter of JOHN WILLIAMS, and sister of *Anna Williams*, wife of *John Barker*. (See Barker.)

NATHAN THOMAS died 8 Nov. 1741, and his widow SARAH (FOSTER) married, third, 24 Oct. 1743, Jedediah Bourne (second wife). She died 7 Feb. 1778.

May 6, 1742. Mrs. Sarah Thomas of Plymouth widow is appointed administratrix of the estate of her late husband Nathan Thomas who died intestate. She is to render an inventory before Aug. 6, 1742, and in a like manner a true account of her administration to be rendered before May 6, 1743. (Plymouth Rec., Vol. 8, p. 459.)

The inventory taken in 1741 of estate of Nathan Thomas amounted to £2252, 19s, 3d, which included homestead valued at £885, — live stock £155, — meadow £450, — lot at Sandy Hill £200, these being the largest items. Household furniture about £200.

Alice Thomas daughter of Nathan Thomas late of Marshfield constitutes her mother Sarah Thomas to be her guardian, she being a minor above fourteen years of age. May 11, 1742. (Plymouth Rec., Vol. 8, p. 456.)

William Thomas of Marshfield a minor above fourteen years of age son of Nathan Thomas late of Marshfield, appoints John Thomas of same to be his guardian. (Vol. 8, p. 457.)

Nathan, ICHABOD & Sarah Thomas minors under fourteen years of age children of NATHAN Thomas late of Marshfield deceased. The Judge of Probate appoints *John Thomas to be their guardian*. [John Thomas, brother of Nathan.] May 11, 1742. (Vol. 8, pp. 457, 458.)

AN INVENTORY OF NATHAN THOMAS ESTATE, TAKEN 1741

To a Blue Coat with Black Calimenco Jacket and Breeches	9	0	0
Cash 7.6.3. To Great Coat 5.0.0	12	6	3
To a Suit of Homespun Grey Cloth	9	0	0
To Coatt Jacket and Leather Breeches	4	15	0
To two Linen Breeches		5	0
To Stockings 18s. To Gloves & Shoes 16s. To Hatt	3	4	0
To Wigs 1.50 To three shirts 3.3.10 To Gun & Sword 3.0.0	7	15	0
To a Pair of tow sheets 2.5.0. 2 Pairs Cotton and Linen Sheets 7.0.0	9	5	0
To a Pair of tow sheets 2.0.0. To a Pair of Cotton and Linen Sheets 3.5.0	5	5	0

To Three pair of Cotton and Linen Sheets all of a price at three pounds a pair	9	0	0
To Three pair of Cotton and Linen Sheets at forty shillings a pair	6	0	0
To a pair of Sheets at 1.5.0. 2 pair more 2.0.0	3	5	0
To Two pair of Flannel Sheets	6	5	0
To a pair of Flannel sheets, and a tow sheet and a pair of old Sheets	4	15	0
To Napkins and Table Cloths	2	5	0
To Ten Napkins. 2.0.0. To 12 Towels. 1.10.0	3	10	0
To Towels, Table Cloths & Pillow Bears	6	5	0
To Blue Worsted Cloth & New Calico	7	10	0
To New Cloth for Coverled & Blanket	5	15	0
To Bed & Bedding in the Garrett	13	0	0
To Hitchell 1.10.0. To Cotton, Wool & Flax 3.17.0	5	7	0
To Lumber in the Garrett 2.5.0 To Hay Ropes 1.10.0	3	15	0
To Bed & Bedding in the eastermost Chamber	20	0	0
To Bed & Bedding in the great Chamber	32	0	0
To Case of Draws, Table & Chest of Draws	7	0	0
To Chairs in the great Chamber	2	6	0
To Earthern and glass 1.0.0. To Bed & furniture in westernmost Bed Chamber 37.0.0	38	0	0
To Chairs, Looking Glass & Chest with drawers in same room	5	10	0
To Pillions, Side Saddle & other saddles	12	10	0
To Bed & furniture in the lower room	18	0	0
To Linen wheels & Chest 4.10.0 a Desk 6.0.0	10	10	0
To Bed & Bedding in great room below	41	10	0
To an oval table, 1.15.0 To Glass and Pictures 3.5.0	5	0	0
To Chairs 2.10.0 To nine silver spoons 19.0.0. To Indigo 3.0.0	24	10	0
To Knifes & forks 18s.0 To Bottles & Earthern ware 2.8.0	3	6	0
To Books, 5.0.0 To a Stone Pot 6s.0	5	6	0
To Shovel & tongs, andirons, spitt, tramels, box, gun & harness	5	18	0
To Pewter, 21.0.0 To Brass kettle & Iron Kettles 11.0.0	32	0	0
To powdering tubs & meat in them	14	0	0
To wooden utensils in the Cellar, Barrel of Cider and other stuff	6	10	0
To Lumber & wooden things and utensils in the kitchen	4	10	0
To Worsted Combs, 1.10.0 To Leather Bags, 2.0.0	3	10	0
To Pots, Kettles, frying pans & Earthen Pots	7	0	0
To grain in the Corn house and the Cask that held it	13	0	0
To Cedar Rails, Posts & Boards	7	0	0
To Salt & Meat	1	10	0
To Sett and Line 0.5s.0 To Gun Dog 15s.0	1	0	0

To Promissory notes for money	24	0	0
To Chains, wagons, Axes, hoes and other utensils for farming	10	0	0
To Live stock	155	0	0
To Shingles & Rails 4.0.0. To Bellows 0.16s.0	4	16	0
To Yarn 0.10s.0		10	0
To Wood Lott by Bakers	40	0	0
To Pine Lot so called	25	0	0
To Lot at Sandy Hill	200	0	0
To Meadow	450	0	0
To Homestead	885	0	0

Total over \$13000

NATHAN³ THOMAS evidently had slaves, for on 28 Oct. 1728 Jo a *negro* belonging to Mr Nathaniel Thomas and Phebe a negro woman belonging to Mr. Haviland Torrey were married.

Children of NATHAN³ THOMAS and SARAH (FOSTER) BARTLETT:

- i. Sarah, b. 1720; d. 1732.
- ii. Alice, b. 25 Dec. 1722; m. 16 Nov. 1743 Capt. Benjamin Phillips. They lived on Fort Hill, Boston.
9. iii. William, b. 31 Jan. 1727; m. (1) Mary Hill; (2) Abiah Thomas.
- iv. Nathan, b. 30 Aug. 1730; m. Sarah Bourne 1746; dau. of Deacon Jedediah.
10. v. ICHABOD, b. 28 June 1733; m. RUTH TURNER.
- vi. Sarah, b. 15 Nov. 1735 (twin of Nathaniel); d. unm. in Boston while visiting her sister, Mrs. Phillips, and was buried there.
- vii. Nathaniel, b. 15 Nov. 1735 (twin of Sarah); d. early, before 1741.

6. DEACON NEHEMIAH³ THOMAS (3. *Israel*², *John*¹), born 26 July 1712 in Marshfield, died 1782, was a tanner and a farmer, and for more than thirty years was town clerk of Marshfield. He lived on the farm of his father, Deacon Israel², which was later occupied by John T. Dingley, Esq., and afterwards by W. S. Severns. It is off Ocean Street (the road to Brant Rock) and east of the Congregational Chapel and town cemetery. He was a Deacon of the church, and was very active during the Revolution.

Richard's "History of Marshfield" says of him:

Deacon Nehemiah Thomas was a man of sterling worth in the township, and rendered invaluable *service in the American Revolution* as a counsellor and committeeman, etc. He was a member of the Provinieal Congress at Salem and Concord. In 1775 he was a delegate to the Assembly held at Watertown and was chosen to the Great and General Court held in the meeting-house at that place.

As Representative from Marshfield he was instructed to present to the General Court what was virtually a Declaration of Independence by Marshfield. (See Nathaniel Ray Thomas.)

Nehemiah and Abiah Thomas of Marsh^d, Tamer, for 65£ 5s. 7d. by Ezra Weston of Dux^o, shipwright, land in same near land of said Weston, 6 Apr. 1774. (Plymouth County Deeds.)

Among a list of names of "Gentlemen" in the Hon^l House of Representatives with an account of their Travel and attendance in the Great and General Court or Assembly from 19 July 1775 to 24 August — County of Plymouth, Dea. Nehemiah Thomas. Travel 40, attendance 19. £5.15.0. (Mass. Records, Vol. 33, p. 201.)

Deacon Thomas appears as one of a Committee appointed to supply the Army with blankets, Jan. 5, 1776. (Vol. 34, p. 470.)

Deacon Nehemiah Thomas married in 1741 Abiah Winslow, born in 1722 in Marshfield, daughter of Nathaniel, Jr., and Deborah (Bryant) Winslow. Her grandfather, Nathaniel Winslow, was son of Kenhelm and Eleanor (Adams) Winslow; he was born in Marshfield in 1667 and married, first, 1692, Lydia, daughter of Anthony Snow. He married, second, 17 Feb. 1717/18, Deborah Bryant, daughter of John and Mary (Hiland) Bryant of Seituat. Widow Abiah Thomas died in 1809.

Children of Deacon Nehemiah and Abiah (Winslow) Thomas:

- i. Alethea (Scituat Records and father's will) or Esther, b. 1 May 1742; m. Josiah Drew of Duxbury.
- ii. Abigail, b. 12 Mar. 1743; m. 1779 12. Briggs, Thomas.
- iii. Ruth, b. 3 Aug. 1746; d. 13 Aug. 1752.
- iv. Nehemiah, b. 3 June 1748; d. 18 Nov. 1752.
- v. Nathaniel, b. 1 Oct. 1750; d. young.
- vi. Olive, b. 28 Dec. 1752; m. Joshua Winsor of Duxbury (first wife).
- vii. Ruth, b. 14 June 1755; m. Joshua Winsor of Duxbury (second wife).
- viii. Lucy, b. 27 Nov. 1757; d. unm.
- ix. Hannah, b. 21 July 1760; m. 13. Judah Thomas (Mr. Judah).
- x. Winslow, b. 21 July 1763; m. Abigail Delano.
- xi. Nehemiah⁴ (Rev.), b. 3 Feb. 1766; m. Hannah Otis, dau. of James, M.D. (See Otis and Briggs and following Ichabod⁴.)
- xii. Charles, b. 6 Feb. 1768; m. Saba Everson of Kingston.

7. COL. ANTHONY⁴ THOMAS (4. John³, Samuel², John¹), born 25 Mar. 1719 in Marshfield, was a *Colonel in the Militia, commissioned 31 Aug. 1775*. He lived in a house now (1936) standing on the corner of Moraine and Parsonage streets. This homestead was the rendezvous of the "sturdy yeomen" who gathered there to *march for the capture of the Queen's Guards*.

(See "Loyalists and the Marshfield Tea Party," with Nathaniel Ray Thomas.)

In 1759 Anthony Thomas kept a store in Boston near Oliver's Dock. In November or December of that year a fire destroyed, among other things in it, the sum of forty-five pounds four shillings and one penny in Treasurer's notes. On March 29, 1760 (Vol. 23, p. 2, Gen. Court Records), he petitioned for a like sum to be paid to him in other notes out of the Treasury. The House granted him an allowance of like sum in notes payable A.D. 1763. In Council, Read and Concurred, and Consented to by the Governor.

In Feb. 1761, after a disastrous storm that changed the mouth of the South River, making it so much wider that the tides damaged the meadows to such an extent that they were becoming worthless as salt hay meadows, Anthony Thomas, Nehemiah Thomas, Noah Thomas and seven others petitioned Governor Bernard and the General Court that a dam be built across the South River to keep out the tides, from Shooting Hill to Dagget's Beach.

Hon. John Cushing of Scituate, Gamaliel Bradford of Duxbury, Thomas Clap of Scituate, Josiah Keen, Esq., of Pembroke and Mr. Samuel Seabury appointed by the Court a committee to view the place, and render an opinion on the proposed dam. This opinion was signed in behalf of the petitioners on 10 Dec. 1761.

Those who remember the controversy over the dyke at Green Harbor (Cut River) will be interested in this attempt to build a similar barrier more than 100 years earlier.

20 Oct. 1770. In the House of Representatives, Voted that Col^o Warren and Capt. Anthony Thomas with such as the hon^{bl} Board shall join be a Committee to take care of the Light House on the Gurnet near Plymouth Harbour and effectively repair and secure the same, etc. (General Court Records, Vol. 28, p. 307.) [See Capt. John Thomas.]

Capt. Anthony Thomas appears as a *Representative for Marshfield* in the County of Plymouth, May 29, 1771. Also, May 27, 1772. (Vol. 29, p. 3.)

John Thomas of Kingston, Esquire, James Bradford of Plainfield in the Co. of Windham and government of Connecticut, yeoman, and and Zerviah his wife (in the right of the said Zerviah), *Joseph Kent* of *Marshfield*, *mariner*, & *Lydia his wife* (in the right of said Lydia) and Jeremiah Kinsman of Norwich in the County of New London, yeoman, & Sarah his wife (in the right of said Sarah) — the said John Thomas, Zerviah, Lydia & Sarah being four of the children and heirs of John Thomas, late of said Marshfield, deceased, in consideration of 258 pounds eight shillings paid by *Anthony Thomas* of Marshfield, gentleman (the

other child & heir of said John Thomas deceased) all interest in a wood lot in Duxborough near to Amos Foord, bought by said John Thomas of one Gideon Thomas and another wood lot bought of Jesse Delano and 22 acres of salt Marsh in Marshfield called Neck Meadow bought of Joseph Waterman and Bourne's dock or Landing Place in Marshfield, &c, dated 22 June, 1771. (Plymouth Deeds, Vol. 56, p. 159.)

Col. Anthony⁴ Thomas was *with his brother, Maj. Gen. John Thomas, at Dorchester Heights in 1776*. He had been a Captain in the militia before his commission as Colonel in 1775. His record during the Revolution is given in "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. 15, p. 277, as follows:

ANTHONY THOMAS. Colonel, 2d Plymouth County reg't. of Mass. militia; list of officers; commissioned Aug. 31, 1775; also, official record of a ballot by the House of Representatives, dated Feb. 1, 1776; said *Thomas chosen Colonel*, 2d Plymouth Co. regt. of Mass. militia; appointment concurred in by Council Feb. 10, 1776; reported commissioned Feb. 10, 1776; also, official record of a ballot by the House of Representatives, dated March 21, 1776; John Cushing Jr. *chosen Colonel*, 2d Plymouth Co. regt. of Mass. militia, in room of said Thomas who declined to serve; appointment concurred in by Council April 1, 1776.

Anthony⁴ Thomas married Abigail Alden, daughter of Col. John and Hannah (Briggs) Alden. (See Briggs, Hannah⁷.) Their homestead passed to their son Judah, who was succeeded in turn by his son, Alden Thomas. Alden was unmarried, and the estate passed into the possession of a niece, Olive Thomas, who married Charles Sampson, son of Charles and Sarah (Thomas) Sampson of Waldoboro, Me. It was sold by their son, Frank T. Sampson, to the Hacketts, and is now (1936) owned by Rose Hackett (Mrs. Henry Carver).

Colonel Anthony died 14 July 1781.

Children of Col. Anthony and Abigail Alden Thomas:

12. i. Briggs (Major Briggs), b. —; d. 13 July 1833; m. 1779 Abigail Thomas, b. 1743, dau. of Nehemiah and Abiah (Winslow) Thomas. (See 6. Nehemiah.)
- ii. Judah ("Mr." Judah), b. —; m. Hannah Thomas, b. 22 July 1760, dau. of Nehemiah and Abiah (Winslow) Thomas. (See 6. Nehemiah.)
- iii. Waterman, b. —; m. Sarah Dexter of Providence, R. I., and moved to Waldoboro, Me.

8. MAJ. GEN. JOHN⁴ THOMAS (4. John³, Samuel², John¹) was born 7 Nov. 1724 in the family home at Green Harbor, in the

town of Marshfield, Mass. He was a cousin of my ancestor, Capt. Ichabod⁴ Thomas. He married Hannah, daughter of Nathaniel⁵ Thomas, Esq., of Plymouth (a descendant of the line of William Thomas) and his wife, Lydia Waterman. She was a woman of intelligence and accomplishment, and that an unusually confidential relation existed between the pair is shown by the tenor of General Thomas' letters to her. She died in 1819, aged 88.

John⁴ Thomas fitted himself for the practice of medicine under the tuition and training of an experienced physician, Dr. Simon Tufts of Medford, in accordance with the custom of his time. He began to practice medicine in the village of Green Harbor, where he had inherited the family home, and later he moved to Kingston, Mass., where he became eminent in his profession, which he practiced there except when engaged in public service or as a surgeon or officer of the army. As a physician he was skillful, and most successful.

In person he was six feet tall, erect and well-proportioned and of commanding appearance. The fine portrait of him, painted by Benjamin Blythe (in the possession of Miss Sarah Williams in 1915), depicts him as a man of grace with a distinguished face and presence. In manners, according to Miss Marcia Thomas in her delightful "Memorials of Marshfield and Guide Book to its Localities at Green Harbor" (1844), he was "affable and of unaffected sincerity. He never lessened his character or martial fame by arrogance or ostentation."

His *first commission* came to him at the *age of 22*, from Governor Shirley, on 1 Mar. 1746, authorizing him to practice *Chirurgery and Medicine in the Army*, and he accompanied a body of troops in that successful and romantic adventure against the supposedly impregnable *fortress of Louisburg, and to Annapolis Royal*.

Cotton Tufts of Weymouth writes in 1750 to Dr. John Thomas, Marshfield:

HINGHAM (COHASSET) Febru^{ry} y^e 24th 1750.

S^r: — I should have made Enquiry into your welfare, & informed you of my own, long ago, had not y^e Stars conspired to render me unhappy and to stop y^e Channels w^{ch} should have conveyd a line to you. A few weeks ago I was scituated with a Bachelor, whose Company was cheifly my Book My Employment was no Toil to me My Family was not numerous. neither were they disorderly. A Stamp or a Frown would command Silence in it. A pleasing Smile sat upon my Countenance. My sublunary Happiness was then in Perfection. . . . But alas I am now forsaken by Mortals, my Scene is changed. From y^e charming Quarters I formerly posses'd, am drove on y^e Rocks of Cohasset, where

(Let Thanks be to Indulgent Heaven) If I shall not be founder'd between 40 & 50 Boys now under my Tuition. About three weeks ago I went over to Weymouth to visit Doc^r Tufts who came thither upon a Visit he Informs me they are all in good health at Mistick [Medford] more especially His Rib who is in a thriving Condition. — A Scheme is projected (at Home) in order to reconcile y^e Churehmen & Dissenters in their Forms of Worship. Most of y^e Ceremonies which y^e Dissenters object against are to be abolished. S^r I hope to hear from you often for y^e future Seeing I have not heard from you since I saw you personally, I cannot inform you of any Thing new. Notwithstanding many Perplexities which attend me, yet I enjoy y^e Greatest of Blessings, my Health, which I hope you enjoy in Perfection . . .

Your sincere Friend & H Servant

To

COTTON TUFTS

Doc^r JOHN THOMAS

Jr Marshfield —

P.S. My Boarding Place is at Cap^t Sotherds near y^e Meeting House, w^{ch} Place I hope you not pass by without Calling.

In Feb. 1755 a second commission was issued to Surgeon John Thomas by Governor Shirley, authorizing him "to beat his drums anywhere within this province for enlisting volunteers for His Majesty's service," and many a volunteer from the towns of Plymouth County fell in behind his drum. The same year 1755 he was appointed *surgeon's mate in Shirley's regiment*, but soon left the medical staff and was *appointed a lieutenant* in a regiment then being raised as a part of General Winslow's expedition against the Acadians, which the verse of Longfellow has immortalized. This expedition is nowhere more fully told than in the diaries, fortunately preserved, of those two officers, — Gen. John Winslow of Plymouth and John Thomas of Kingston. These records show that Thomas played his part in the removal of the Acadians with fidelity, dignity and delicacy. In a list of men enlisted or impressed out of Tho^s Clap's Regiment for the expedition to *Crown Point* before & since 15 Apr. 1756, dated Scituate 24 July 1756, appears the name of *John Thomas*.

Manuscript Instructions to John Thomas Jun. of Marshfield, Gentleman, Capt; & First Lieutenants of the Company to be Immediately under my Command —

Whereas his Excellency Gov^r Shirley has Impowered me to Raise a Regiment for His Maj^{ty's} Service whereof the sd. *Governour is Col^o.* & the Subscriber Lieutenant Colonel —

to Regulate you in Recruiting for sd. Regiment

- 1st — you are to Inlist none but Able Bodyed Effective men — not under the age of Seventeen nor above Forty five —
- 2^d — you are to Inlist none but such as you will be answerable For as well for their passing Muster as their appearance & that at their Entering you pay them Two Dollars Down in part of their Bounty.
3. you are to Promise them that they shall Receive the King's Pay from the Day of their Inlistments and that you will Make the Two Dollars advanced them In Sound Old Tennor, & that they shall receive the King's pay Cloathing & arms as well as Provisions & Camp accoutrements in the same manner as other His Majestys Troops.
4. you are to assure the Recruits that they shall not Serve to the Southward or Westward of Pennsylvania & that as they Inlist for one year only, they shall absolutely be Dismiss^d at the End of that Time, or sooner if ye Service will admit.
5. you are to Receive for every Recruit brought to Parade Six Dollars out of which you are to pay the Bounty & you answerable for all Recruits.

By order of his Excellency the Gov^r

JOHN WINSLOW.

In spite of his military duties at this time, John Thomas was elected Representative to the General Court from the town of Marshfield in 1759 and 1760. In 1759 and again in 1760 he was *commissioned as Colonel of Provincials by Governor Pownall*. Whether he ever served in the army in any of the intermediate grades does not appear, but it is probable that he did. He *commanded a regiment part of both* of these years in Nova Scotia, as is shown by his petition to the Governor and Council of Massachusetts. In the year 1760 with his regiment he joined the Anglo-American army at Crown Point which was commanded by Sir Jeffrey Amherst, then Commander-in-Chief of all the forces in North America. This year the conquest of Canada was completed, and in his well-arranged plans and movements against Montreal, where the whole force of the French in the province were assembled, Colonel Thomas had honorable and important command. When the army left Crown Point, 16 Aug. 1760, and proceeded down Lake Champlain, the English regulars formed the center column, the right wing was composed of provincials under General Ruggles, and the left was made up of New Hampshire and Massachusetts troops *under Colonel Thomas* — an imposing array, which, sweeping all opposition before it, arrived in Montreal in September. The Governor surrendered his army and the city

at the first summons. The Provincials and Rangers were never better commanded than on this occasion, by THOMAS, Ruggles and Rogers. The two former were from Massachusetts, the one a distinguished barrister, the second an equally distinguished physician.

A Muster Roll of the Field and Staff Officers of a Regiment in His Majesty's service whereof *John Thomas, Esq., is Colonel* at Halifax from the 12 March, 1759, to 1 Nov. 1759.

John Thomas, Esq., Colonel, of Marshfield, wages per month of £25. Entered service March 12. Served until Nov. 1. Time of service 33 weeks, 4 days. Wages £209.16.5. (Military Records, Vol. 97, No. 278.)

May 28, 1760. *John Thomas, Esq.,* appears in a List of *Representatives*, for the Town of Marshfield, County of Plymouth. (Mass. Records, Vol. 23, p. 350.)

April 9, 1761. A petition of John Thomas, Esq. setting forth that *he had the Command of a Regiment at Nova Scotia* in the pay of the Province in 1759, and made up his Staff Roll to some time in May, 1760, when he was ordered to the Westward with a Regiment raised for that service, although his Regiment at Nova Scotia was not yet discharged. That he has the Muster Roll and all the accounts of the Nova Scotia Regiment to settle from its being raised until May 1760 and praying that he may have the usual allowance for such Service.

In the House of Representatives: Read and ordered That the prayer of the Petitioner be so far granted that there be allowed and paid out of the Public Treasury to the Petitioner the sum of Twenty one Pounds six shillings in full for his services mentioned in the Petition.

In Council, Read and Concurred.

Consented to by the Governor.

(Vol. 23, p. 676.)

John Thomas of Kingston, Esq., & Hannah his wife for £8 by Nathaniel Torrey of Plymouth, gentⁿ, land in Plymouth got on execution from William Torrey of same hatter, next Sylvanus Bartlett, John Torrey & Nathaniel Torrey, where old grist mill stands. 5 July 1763. (Plymouth Co. Records, Vol. 48, p. 239.)

It was soon after this campaign that John Thomas married "Mrs." Hannah Thomas of Taunton (int. 12 Sept. 1761; see Kingston Records), and about that time he went to live in Kingston.

On 23 Nov. 1768 John Thomas, Esq., Hannah Thomas his wife, and John Thomas of Plymouth, owners of the land called the Gurnet, at the northern entrance to Plymouth Harbor, upon which a lighthouse had been built, were given the privilege of keeping and finding the lighthouse, supplying it with wood, charecoal, oil and candles. *The light was maintained by them until 23 Apr.*

1775, at which time it was extinguished. During the Revolution a guard was maintained there and barracks built for them.

Oct. 6 1775 Resolved that there be paid out of the Publick Treasury of this Colony to John Thomas, Esq., £137.9.6 in full of his account for keeping the Gurnet Light House 18 months and supplying the same with wood, oyl, Candles, &c. (Mass. Rec., Vol. 33, p. 244.)

John Thomas of *Plymouth*, gentⁿ, for £60 from James Drew, same, yeoman, 2 tracts land in Plymouth, one called Little Pasture, where leather mill now standeth, near land of Ephraim Spooner, James Warren, Esq., and William Crombie, Thomas Jackson and John Torrey (Mortgage, 7 June, 1774, discharged 18 Feb. 1777). (Plymouth Records, Vol. 58, p. 72.)

Same, for £60 from *John Thomas of Kingston*, Esq., land & meadow near land set off to Widow Elizabeth Thomas as dower & land formerly of Nicholas Sever(?), Esq., Thomas Jackson & Dr. Lazarus LeBaron & children of Joseph Pearce. 15 March, 1774. (Vol. 58, p. 73.)

The commencement of the Revolution found Col. John Thomas, M.D., at Kingston, engaged in the practice of his medical calling, amid domestic happiness, professional distinction and military fame. In Sept. 1774 a Congress of the County of Plymouth was held at Plympton, and by adjournment, the following year at Plymouth, Col. John Thomas, Esq., was one of the delegates from Kingston, and Col. Anthony Thomas and Capt. William Thomas were delegates from Marshfield. The resolutions there adopted were considered well suited to the critical state of the times.

On 9 Feb. 1775 John Thomas, Esq., was member of a committee to consider what compensation should be made to delegates of the American Congress, and again on 10 Feb. he was appointed member of a Committee to revise Commission of the Committee of Safety and Committee of Supplies, and point out what amendments, if any, should be found necessary. (See Capt. William Thomas.)

On 9 Feb. 1775 Colonel Thomas was again called into active service and appointed one of the five general officers of the army by the Provincial Congress. His *commission as Lieutenant General* is signed by James Warren of Plymouth, President of the Provincial Congress. A contemporary wrote of him, "*A more brave, beloved and distinguished character did not go into the field, nor was there a man that made a greater sacrifice of his own ease, health and social enjoyments.*" Like many other general officers in the American Revolution who had served in the French and Indian War, Colonel Thomas had marched and fought side by side with English soldiers under English generals beneath the English flag.

His appointment by the Provincial Congress to the newly created rank of Lieutenant General was well deserved, and gave him rank over other officers whom he had commanded, including Pomeroy and Heath. After the Battle of Lexington General Ward was made Commander-in-Chief, and had headquarters at Cambridge, while General *Thomas commanded the Roxbury side as Lieutenant General*. Soon after the Continental Congress assumed control of the army and at once proceeded to the election of general officers. Among these, under General Washington, were four Major Generals, eight Brigadier Generals and an Adjutant General. Ward being the only Major General Massachusetts was entitled to General Thomas should have been the first Brigadier of the army, and is so called in his commission, but unfortunately the dates of the commissions of General Pomeroy of Northampton and General Heath of Roxbury gave these officers precedence. This was an affront to General Thomas, and there seemed to him nothing to do but to resign, so he withdrew from his command at Roxbury. The result of this blunder of Congress is fully explained in the following correspondence.

In the first letter that Washington wrote to Congress from his camp in Cambridge 10 July 1775 he says:

I am sorry to observe that the appointment of General Officers in the Provinces of Massachusetts and Connecticut has not corresponded with the wishes or judgement either of the civil or military. General Thomas is much esteemed and most earnestly desired to continue in the service, and so far as my opportunities have enabled me to judge, I must join the general opinion that he is an able, good officer and his resignation would be a public loss. The postponement of him to Pomeroy and Heath, whom he has commanded, would make his continuance very difficult and probably operate on his mind as the like circumstance did on that of Spencer.

It appears in the same letter that General Spenceer, who was from Connecticut, was so disgusted with General Putnam's promotion that he left the army without visiting General Washington or making known his intention.

Again, in a letter to General Schuyler, 28 July 1775 General Washington writes:

The arrangement of the general officers in Massachusetts and Connecticut has been very unpopular, indeed I may say very injudicious. It is returned to Congress for further consideration, and has much retarded my plan of discipline.

How highly General Thomas was esteemed, how earnestly it was desired he continue in the service, and how generally his resignation would be regarded as a public loss, is conclusively shown in the letter written by Gen. James Warren, Speaker of the House of Representatives, by order of that body.

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES,
WATERTOWN, July 22, 1776.

SIR:— This house approving of your services in the station you were appointed to in the army by the Congress of this Colony — embrace this opportunity to express their sense of them, and at the same time to desire your continuance with the army, if you shall judge you can do it without impropriety till the final determination of the Continental Congress shall be known with regard to the appointment of General Officers. We assure you that the justice of this house will be engaged to make you an adequate compensation for your services. We have such intelligence as affords us confidence to suppose, that a few days will determine whether any such provision shall be made for you as is consistent with your honor to accept, and shall give encouragement for you to remain in the service.

By order of the House,

JAMES WARREN,
Speaker.

General Thomas.

Congress passed a special resolve that General Thomas should have precedence of all Brigadiers in the army, in which decision the army and the public fully acquiesced. But he had withdrawn from the army.

Efforts from various quarters were made to retain General Thomas in the service which have no parallel in the annals of this country. Certainly Washington never wrote a stronger appeal than the following:

CAMBRIDGE, July 23, 1775.

SIR:— The retirement of a general officer, possessing the confidence of his country and the army, at so critical a period, appears to me to be big with fatal consequences, both to the public cause and his own reputation. While it is unexecuted, I think it my duty to make this last effort to prevent it; and after suggesting those reasons which occur to me against your resignation, your own virtue and good sense must decide upon it. In the usual contests of empire and ambition, the conscience of a soldier has so little share that he may very properly insist upon his claims of rank and extend his pretensions even to punctilio: but in such a cause as this, where the object is neither glory, nor extent

of territory, but a defense of all that is dear and valuable in life, surely every post ought to be deemed honorable in which a man can serve his country. What matter of triumph will it afford our enemies, that in less than one month, a spirit of discord should show itself in the highest ranks of the army, nor be extinguished by anything less than a total desertion of duty? How little reason shall we have to boast of American union, of patriotism, if at such a time and in such a cause, smaller and partial consideration can not give away to the great and general interest? These remarks not only affect you as a member of the great American body, but as an inhabitant of Massachusetts Bay, your own province, and the other colonies have a peculiar and unquestionable claim to your services; and, in my opinion, you can not refuse them without relinquishing in some degree that character for public virtue and honor which you have hitherto supported. If our cause is just, it ought to be supported; but where shall it find support, if gentlemen of merit and experience, unable to conquer the prejudices of a competition, withdraw themselves in an hour of danger? I admit, sir, that your claims and services have not had due respect — it is by no means a singular case; worthy men of all nations and countries have had reason to make the same complaint; but they did not for this abandon the public cause — they nobly stifled the dictates of resentment and made their enemies ashamed of their injustice. And can America show no such instances of magnanimity? For the sake of your bleeding country, your devoted province, your charter rights, and by the memory of those brave men who have already fell in this great cause, I conjure you to banish from your mind every suggestion of anger and disappointment; your country will do ample justice to your merits; they already do it by the sorrow and regret expressed on the occasion, and the sacrifice you are called to make, will, in the judgement of every good man and lover of his country do you more real honor than the most distinguished victory.

You possess the confidence and affection of the troops of this province particularly; many of them are not capable of judging the propriety and reasons of your conduct; should they esteem themselves authorized by your example to leave the service, the consequences may be fatal and irretrievable. There is reason to fear it, from the personal attachments of the men to their officers, and the obligations that are supposed to arise from those attachments. But, sir, the other colonies have also their claim upon you, not only as a native of America but an inhabitant of this province. They have made a common cause with it, they have sacrificed their trade, loaded themselves with taxes and are ready to spill their blood in vindication of the rights of Massachusetts Bay, while all the security and profit of a neutrality has been offered them. No arts or temptation could seduce them from your side, and leave you a prey to a cruel and perfidious ministry. Sure, these reflections must have some weight with a mind so generous and considerate as yours.

How will you be able to answer it to your country and your own conscience if the step you are about to take should lead to a division of the army or the loss and ruin of America be ascribed to measures which your councils and conduct could have prevented? Before it is too late, I entreat, sir, you would weigh well the greatness of the stake, and upon how much smaller circumstances the fate of empires has depended. Of your own honor and reputation you are the best and only judge; but allow me to say that a people contending for life and liberty are seldom disposed to look with a favorable eye, upon either men or measures whose passions, interests, or consequences will clash with those inestimable objects. As to myself, sir, be assured, that I shall with pleasure do all in my power to make your situation both easy and honorable, and that the sentiments here expressed flow from a clear opinion that your duty to your country, your posterity, and yourself, most explicitly require your continuance in the service. The order and rank of the commission is under the consideration of the Continental Congress, whose determination will be received in a few days. It may argue a want of respect to that august body not to await the decision; but at all events, I shall flatter myself that these reasons, with others which your own good judgement will suggest, will strengthen your mind against those impressions which are incident to humanity, and laudable to a certain degree; and that the result will be, your resolution to assist your country in this day of distress. That you may reap the full reward of honor and public esteem which such a conduct deserves is the sincere wish of

Sir, your very obed. & most humble servant,

GEO. WASHINGTON.

To Gen. John Thomas.

Nor were Thomas' fellow officers less eloquent. General Lee, an officer "who was considered by many as superior to Washington as a soldier [Coffin]," for the first time in his life condescended to address any one in the language of entreaty:

JULY 23, 1775.

Sir: — It is with the greatest concern that I have heard of your intention to quit the service of your country at a crisis when men of merit can be so ill spared. You think yourself not justly dealt with in the appointments of the Continental Congress. I am quite of the same opinion; but is this a time, sir, when the liberties of your country, the fate of posterity, the rights of mankind are at stake, to indulge our resentments for any ill-treatment we may have received as individuals?

I have myself, sir, full as great, perhaps greater reason to complain than yourself. I have passed through the highest ranks in some of the most respectable services of Europe. According them to modern etiquette notions of a soldier's honor and delicacy, I ought to consider at least the preferment given to General Ward over me as the highest

indignity, but I thought it my duty as a citizen and asserter of liberty to waive every consideration.

On this principal, although a Major General of five years standing, and not a native of America, I consented to serve under General Ward, because I was taught to think that the concession would be grateful to his countrymen, and I flatter myself that the concession has done me credit in the eye of the world; and can you, sir, born in this very country which a banditti of ministerial assassins are now attempting to destroy with fire, sword and famine, abandon the defense of her, because you have been personally ill-used?

For God Almighty's sake, for the sake of everything that is dear to you, for the sake of your country, of mankind, and, let me add, of your own reputation, discard such sentiments. Consider well the dreadful mischief such a pernicious example may occasion; consider well whether such a proceeding may not bring down upon your head the contempt and abhorrence of that community which has hitherto held you in the highest respect.

I beg you will excuse the liberty I take in thus addressing you; and ascribe it to its true motive — a zeal for the public good, and the great regard I have for your personal self, and that you will believe me most sincerely yours,

CHARLES LEE.

General Thomas.

THE ADDRESS OF THE FIELD OFFICERS OF THE SEVERAL REGIMENTS
BELONGING TO THE CAMP IN ROXBURY

[Showing the respect and affection of the men who served under General
Thomas]

To the Honorable John Thomas, Esq.

SIR: — Your *appointment as Lieut. General* by the Provincial Congress, in consequence of which you took the supreme command in this camp, gave singular satisfaction to all acquainted with your character, both on account of your inflexible attachment to the liberties of your country, and your knowledge and experience in military movements; and to your vigilance, prudence and skillful management is to be ascribed in a great measure, that order and regularity for which this camp has been celebrated, and which are essentially requisite to the very being of an army. To these important services you have the purest incense to a great and good mind, the unfeigned thanks of the officers and soldiers under your immediate command, as well as of every friend to his country and the rights of mankind. We are penetrated with the deepest concern, that, by an unfortunate concurrence of events, an arrangement is made which leads you to think, that you can not continue in the army, consistent with those delicate and refined sentiments of honor which are peculiarly and fitly characteristic of the soldier. We would not solicit you to do anything derogatory to your reputation, or the rank which you have

formerly sustained; but as no man has so much endeared himself to the regiments which compose your brigade, as yourself, we earnestly request that you would assume the command of it: — that vast dignity and consequence of the cause we are contending for, may be more than a counterpoise to other considerations, of what nature soever, that your country may still be advantaged by your abilities; and though mistakes are entailed to humanity, we doubt not the gratitude and justice of your countrymen will reward you in some degree adequate to your merit.

After all we submit the matter to your Honor's decision, assuring you that although we shall part with you with regret, yet we will demean ourselves as becomes the soldier.

In behalf of the within mentioned officers.

THEO. COTTON,
President.

Roxbury, July 25, 1775.

To these persuasive and stirring appeals General Thomas promptly responded, and remained as a general officer in command of the division of the army encamped at Roxbury, and thereafter devoted himself earnestly to those military duties in the siege of Boston for which his experience and training had so well qualified him. General Pomeroy did not return to the army and never received his commission, and the *Congress passed a special resolve that General Thomas should have precedence of all the Brigadiers in the army.*

Brig. Gen. John Thomas appears among a List of Officers commanding Regiments:

Rank, General — Brigade under command of *Brig. Gen. Thomas*, forming part of the Right wing of army under Maj. Gen. Wood. Stationed at Roxbury. Dated Head Quarters Cambridge, July 22, 1775. (Mass. Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 59, p. 551.)

The original plan of the British was to approach General Thomas' command and take possession of Dorchester Heights. In the Battle of Bunker Hill in June Thomas took no direct part, although his post at Roxbury, on the south of Boston, was cannonaded during the whole day of the battle. Until Mar. 1776 General Thomas commanded the most exposed camp of the besieging army at Roxbury. As Coffin tells us on the augmentation of his force, in May 1775, General Gage determined to occupy the Heights of Dorchester to the south, and those of Charlestown to the north, of the town. The occupation of these was not only necessary to the extension of his quarters, but indispensable to his holding of them. It was therefore determined in the first

instance to seize upon Dorchester Heights, as they were the most commanding and of easiest access to the Provincials. Agreeable to the plan concerted, Howe was to have landed on the peninsula nearest to the castle; Clinton on the flat between that place and Nook's Hill, while Burgoyne was to take post on the neck, and keep up a heavy cannonade on the camp at Roxbury commanded by Thomas.

From the strength, disposition and equipments of these corps, no effectual opposition could have been made to the operation of the royal army, and a few days more would have put it in possession of Bunker Hill. The arrangements of General Gage, preparatory to these meditated operations, necessarily attracted the attention of the inhabitants of Boston, and being communicated to the Provincial Congress, they became apprehensive of some hostile movement, without being able to penetrate the object of it. They recommended to the council of war the fortification of Dorchester Neck and Bunker Hill.

The resolution of the council of war being taken, Col. William Prescott, the hero of Bunker Hill, was ordered to take possession of the height, which brought on the battle of the 17th of June, and prevented their taking possession of Dorchester Heights, which left that point open, and which Thomas afterwards occupied most effectually.

Through the long days of the siege of Boston the third corps, under the command of General Thomas, remained in Roxbury, with the connecting line protected at material points by battery and redoubt. In the harbor the English ships swung idly at their anchors. In supreme command was Washington, with his headquarters at Cambridge. The summer days and the fall and winter months which followed brought no material success on either side, while the sound of morning and evening guns from the battery on Beacon Hill marked for both armies the passing hours. The British grenadiers, their caps of red pointed with silver, wearing white leather leggins and scarlet coats trimmed with blue, made an imposing spectacle as, to strains of martial music, they passed to and fro along the streets of Boston; but they were no more effectively picturesque than the Virginia riflemen, under Morgan, who had been taught to shoot in their boyhood and "punished for hitting game anywhere but in the head"; nor than the riflemen of the Pennsylvania companies, in which no man had been enrolled who could not hit the outline of a nose of common size at 150 yards. These riflemen wore long frocks, and around each waist a

belt upon which hung the tomahawk and a long, glittering scalping knife. Leggins and moccasins were decked with beads and brightly dyed porcupine quills. They wore small round hats, and on the hat, or on the frock, they bore the inscription "Liberty or death." A British writer describes them as "These shirt-tailed men with their cursed twisted guns, the most fatal widow and orphan makers in the world." And encamped there with the militia from Massachusetts and other New England colonies was a company of Stockbridge Indians, with bows and arrows, which they had used with effect upon the British regulars. There was suffering and disease in the camps of both armies in the cold winter days, but the stout Continentals in tents and huts upon the hillside suffered vastly more than the British soldiers quartered in Boston homes, who could exercise their horses in the riding schools in the churches, especially the Old South Church, and amuse themselves in watching the performance of plays at Faneuil Hall. . . .

As spring approached, Washington determined to fortify Dorchester Heights and compel the British to attack. On the nights of the 2d, 3d and 4th of March, a severe cannonading from the American batteries at Cobble Hill, Lechmere Point and Lamb's Dam, diverted the attention of the British troops. On the evening of the 4th of March the Heights were occupied by General Thomas, with about twenty-five hundred men and between three and four hundred carts with entrenching tools, and a train of carts with fascines and screwed hay. The whole moved in solemn silence and in perfect order and regularity, while a continued roar of the artillery from our lines served to engage the attention and divert the enemy from the main object. The amount of labor performed by this party in throwing up earthworks during the night, with the earth frozen to a depth of eighteen inches, is almost incredible.

By the morning of the 5th of March bundles of hay, fascines and chandeliers for entrenching purposes had been collected in large quantities; barrels filled with stone and sand to roll down the hill upon an assaulting party were ready; 2,000 bandages prepared; while on the Charles River forty-five bateaux and two floating batteries were moored. "As the day dawns the startled British sentinels report that the Heights of Dorchester are fortified!" Sir William Howe is said to have laid down his glass with the remark, "The rebels have done more in one night than my whole army could do in a month." The English General soon recognized that the Americans must be driven from these works or

his army must evacuate Boston; the fire of the English guns was directed upon the new redoubts, but a tremendous cannonade had but little effect. Twenty-four hundred soldiers, the flower of the English army, were landed at Castle William, and at night were to attack the works. But General Thomas was reinforced by 2,000 men; the breastworks were strengthened and in front were placed the heavy barrels, ready to be rolled down on the enemy. During this time Commander-in-Chief Washington arrived and encouraged the soldiers by reminding them that it was the 5th of March, the anniversary of the Boston Massacre, which he recalled to their remembrance as a day never to be forgotten. In his own words, "An engagement was fully expected, and I never saw spirits higher or more ardor prevailing." But now a violent storm sprang up, the sea ran high, and no boat laden with troops could cross the channel and land through the heavy surf. The rain fell in torrents, delaying the attack, and before the storm was over the Heights had been made impregnable and the opportunity to capture them was lost forever.

On the 7th there were indications in Boston that the British were preparing to evacuate the town, and on the 8th they sent a flag of truce, with the following note, signed by the selectmen of the town:

As His Excellency General Howe is determined to leave the town with the troops under his command, a number of the respectable inhabitants being very anxious for its preservation and safety, have applied to General Robinson who, at their request, has communicated the same to General Howe, who has assured him that he has no intention of distressing the town unless the troops under his command are molested during their embarkation or at their departure, by any armed force without, which declaration he gave General Robinson leave to communicate to the inhabitants.

If such an opposition should take place we have the greatest reason to expect that the town will be exposed to entire destruction. As our fears are quieted with regard to General Howe's intentions, we beg that we may have assurances that so dreadful a calamity may not be brought on by any measure without. As a testimony of the truth of the above we have signed our names to this paper, carried by Messrs. Thomas and Jonathan Amory, and Peter Jonhonet, who have the earnest entreaty of the inhabitants, through the Lieutenant Governor, who solicited a flag of truce for this purpose.

JOHN SCOLLEY,
TIMOTHY MARSHALL,
TIMOTHY NEWALL,
SAMUEL AUSTIN.

Boston, March 8th, 1776.

Washington gave no answer to this informal declaration of Howe's, or any assurance to the wishes of the inhabitants of Boston, but acted in conformity to both by letting Howe depart unmolested. General Thomas' own account of this transaction, in a letter to his wife, follows:

DEAR MRS. THOMAS: — We have for sometime been preparing to take possession of Dorchester Point, and last Monday night about seven o'clock, I marched with about three thousand picked men, beside three hundred and sixty ox-teams and some pieces of artillery. Two companies of the train of teams were laden with materials for our works. About eight o'clock we ascended the high hills and by daylight got two hills defensible.

About sunrise the enemy and others in Boston appeared numerous on the tops of houses and on the wharfs, viewing us with astonishment, for our appearance was unexpected to them. The cannonading, which had been kept up all night from our lines at Lamb's Dam and from the enemies lines likewise, at Lechmere's Point, now ceased from these quarters, and the enemy turned their fire towards us on the hills, but they soon found it was to little effect.

About ten o'clock we discovered large bodies of troops embarking in boats with their artillery, which made a formidable appearance. After some time they were put on board transports and some of the ships came down near to the castle, as we supposed, with a design to land on that shore.

Our people appeared in spirits to receive them. We were now in a good posture of defense, and had two thousand men added to our number. The enemy viewed us critically, and remained in that situation that night. The next day they came to sail, and returned to town and landed their troops. On Friday, about two o'clock P.M., they sent a flag of truce with a paper, a copy of which I enclose.

I have had very little sleep or rest this week, being closely employed night and day. But now I think we are well secured. I write in haste, thinking you may be anxious to hear, as there is much firing this way. We lost but two men killed in all this affair. How things are in Boston or what loss they have sustained from our shot and shells, at present, we are not informed, but I am sensible we distressed them much, from appearances. I have wrote you enclosed by the same hand, and am, in haste,

JNO. THOMAS.

Dorchester Hills, in a small hut,
March 9, 1776.

Your son John is well and in high spirits. He ran away from Oakeley privately on Tuesday morning, and got to the sentries and came to me on Dorchester Hills, where he has been most of the time since.

Mrs. Thomas' disobedient son John, aged 10, had been left by his father on the Monday evening, when he marched for Dorchester Heights, in care of his colored servant, Oakeley, who, no doubt, was instructed to keep him from mischief and danger. On Tuesday morning the boy found everything in motion and battle expected, where his father was to act a conspicuous part, considered it dishonorable to remain in retirement, hazarded his father's displeasure, and sought the post of danger. One may imagine in what manner he was received by a gallant and affectionate parent!

On the 17th of March, English soldiers and American loyalists marched down State Street to waiting transports, never to return. Only as an emblem of peace and goodwill has the British flag floated above the city since that eventful day.

Of all Washington's military plans none were better formed or more skillfully executed than that of taking possession of Dorchester Heights building fortifications and placing cannon on the ramparts in one night, which drove the British from Boston. The selection of the officer and troops to carry it into effect were the best possible, and nothing however minute was omitted to secure complete success. This was immediate proof of Washington's opinion of General Thomas and he was not disappointed this time.

Washington had been eight months in command, and no successful or brilliant operation had taken place under his immediate orders. People had begun to complain audibly that he was not so desirous to take Boston as to prolong his command. They did not know that he had frequently laid plans before his military council to drive the British from that town, which were rejected on account of the too great hazard supposed to attend them. This was the first of his plans which was adopted — the first part of it was to compel retreat from the works at Dorchester; the second, to enter the town of Boston by another body of troops, while the first was in execution.

With the evacuation of Boston the attention of Washington was directed to another and more distant field. The necessity of sending relief to the ill-fated expedition led into Canada by Montgomery and Benedict Arnold was both apparent and immediate.

When the news reached Washington of the desperate condition at Quebec, the question at once presented itself — what general officer can be entrusted with the duty of relieving and taking command of the American army in Canada? General Schuyler's health unfitted him for so dangerous a task. Neither General

Wooster nor General Putnam, in the opinion of Washington, was competent to take a separate command at that distance and to lead the American forces in so critical a crisis. Even Arnold, with all his brilliancy and daring, recognizing the gravity of the situation, declared that a general of greater experience than himself ought to be appointed. The choice fell upon General Thomas, who in the mature judgment of Washington and of his officers was, of all the available American officers, the best fitted for this important, dangerous and almost hopeless undertaking. It was high praise from the foremost of Americans. Possessing the confidence of officers and men alike, gallant, experienced, manly, unpretending, all knew that he would lead the colonial troops to victory, if victory were possible to human effort or human valor, or would wisely conduct the retreat of the army, if retreat were absolutely necessary before overwhelming odds.

On the 6th of March, 1776, he was advanced to the rank of Major General and ordered to proceed immediately to command in Canada.

A most complimentary letter from John Adams, then at Philadelphia, written to General Thomas on 7 Mar. 1776 gives a correct view of American affairs in that quarter at that time:

DEAR SIR: — The Congress have determined to send you to Canada. They have advanced you one step by making you a Major General, and have made a handsome establishment for a table. Your friends, the delegates from your native province, were much embarrassed, between a desire to have you promoted and placed in so honorable a command on the one hand, and a reluctance at losing your services at Roxbury or Cambridge on the other. But all agreed that you ought to be placed where you could do the most service, and Canada was thought to be very important, and by some the most important post in America. You will have excellent advice and assistance in the committee we are sending, Franklin, Chase and Carrol.

Walker, Price and Bendfield will be in Canada too, as soon as you. Generals Wooster and Arnold will give you the best information. The department to which you are destined has been in great confusion, and every gentleman who has come from them has a different account. General Schuyler, who is an honest man and a good patriot, has had a politeness about him towards Canadian and British prisoners, which has enabled them and their ministerial friends to impose upon him in some instances.

This has occasioned some altercation between him and Wooster. Schuyler's head quarters will be at Albany, I suppose, and he will be of vast service in procuring and forwarding supplies and in many other ways in promoting the service.

But his health will not permit him to go to Canada. I wish I could write you a volume, for to give you the characters of persons in Canada of whom we have heard, and some of whom we have seen, would fill one. But these hints must suffice.

Your humble servant,

JOHN ADAMS.

Let me beg of you to write me if you can spare time. It is of great importance that the delegates from New England should be truly informed of the course of things in Canada.

General Thomas hastened to Albany and there undertook the almost impossible task, at that season of the year, of leading the forces gathered there to Quebec, by way of Ticonderoga. The following letter which he received from General Schuyler after his arrival in Albany gives but a faint idea of some of the difficulties in his way:

SARATOGA, Friday Evening, eight o'clock,
March 29, 1776.

SIR: — By a letter this moment received from my secretary I have the pleasure to learn you have arrived at Albany. Lest you should be induced by the hope to still be able to cross the lakes on the ice to leave Albany, I send by this express to advise you of the impossibility. Four companies are now lying about forty miles north of Fort Ticonderoga without being able to proceed, as a great part of the lake is open. I hope a few more warm days and high southerly winds will remove the obstacles.

The first of the cannon will arrive at Fort George tomorrow, and I hope the whole will be there by the middle of next week. Had a sufficient number of carriages been procured by the persons to whose charge they were committed at New York, they would have been at Fort George on Monday. I propose doing myself the pleasure of seeing you on Sunday, or Monday at farthest, by which time I hope all will be in such a train as to leave me to return without anxiety.

I am, sir,

Your most obedient and humble servant.

PIL. SCHUYLER.

General Thomas.

In spite of difficulties, Thomas pressed forward and reached Ticonderoga; continuing his march, on the 26th of April he entered the Chateau de Ramesay at Montreal, headquarters of the American forces; then down the St. Lawrence, and on the 1st of May he reached the American army near Quebec.

In the month of April, General Wooster had arrived at Quebec,

at which time Arnold's horse fell with him and injured his leg, which had been wounded, and confined him for some time. Believing himself neglected, he obtained leave of absence, and took command at Montreal. A considerable part of the army being entitled to discharge in April, no inducements could prevail on them to continue longer in so severe a service. This deduction of General Wooster's force was the more felt because the present state of the roads, the lakes and the St. Lawrence impeded for a time the arrival of the reinforcements destined for his aid.

Among the first who reached camp in this state of affairs was General Thomas, who had made great exertions to join the army. He arrived on the 1st of May, 1776, and found his whole force to consist of nineteen hundred men, and less than one thousand, including officers, fit for duty. Among the effectives were three hundred, entitled to a discharge, who refused to do duty. The sick were generally ill of the smallpox, in the hospital. And this force was necessarily divided so as to occupy different posts which it had been deemed necessary to maintain, at great distances from each other, and on both sides of the St. Lawrence, so that not more than three hundred men could be brought together at one point, which might be attacked by the whole force of the enemy; and there were only one hundred and fifty barrels of powder and six days' provisions. To oppose the one hundred and fifty cannon mounted on the walls of Quebec, the batteries in his command could mount not more than fifteen guns, and already sailing up the St. Lawrence was the great English fleet, laden with seasoned veterans from England, stores, ammunition and ample supplies.

Amidst these unpromising circumstances, the hope of taking Quebec appeared to General Thomas chimerical and longer continuance before the town useless and dangerous. He called a council of war on the 5th of May, in which it was determined that they were not in a condition to risk an assault, and that the sick should be removed to the Three Rivers and the artillery and other stores embarked in boats, in order to move with the army up the river to a more defensible position. On the evening of the same day certain intelligence was received that a British fleet was below, and the next morning five ships, which had with much labor and danger made their way up the river through the ice, made their appearance. They soon entered the harbor and landed some men, while the Americans were assiduously employed in the embarkation of their sick and stores, the more slowly because the first appearance of the ships in the river deprived them of the aid expected from the teams and carriages of the Canadians.

At about one o'clock Carlton made a sortie at the head of one thousand men, formed into two divisions, and supported by six field pieces. No entrenchments had been thrown up for the support of the camp, and not more than three hundred men with one field piece could be brought into action. Thus circumstanced, victory was scarcely possible, and could have produced no important effect, as the enemy would immediately retire under the cannon of the town, while defeat would certainly annihilate this little army. General Thomas, therefore, with the advice of the field officers about him, determined not to risk an action and ordered his troops to retire up the river. This was done with much precipitation, and many of the sick with all the military stores fell into the hands of the enemy. . . . The army fell back up the river to De Chambault, where Thomas determined to make his stand, — a position of unusually strong, natural advantages, forty-eight miles above Quebec. Up the river came the stout English detachments, through the woods pressed forward the Canadian forces and their Indian allies. Exhausted, but not dismayed, the brave soldiers of New England rallied round their beloved general. The expected reinforcements from Montreal failed to arrive; their ammunition spent, their rations exhausted, it was determined by a council of war that the army should not longer attempt to hold the position, but continue the retreat to the mouth of the Sorel on the other side of the river.

The American Commissioners, Chase and Carroll, reported that it was their firm and unanimous opinion that it was better to withdraw the army immediately from Canada. No American soldier was captured in that masterly retreat. The confidence of Washington in General Thomas had not been misplaced.

General Thomas took command of the army when it was too weak to maintain its ground, and when the time for saving the sick and the military stores had passed. An unwillingness on the part of General Wooster to disappoint public expectation, and his fear of meeting their temporary displeasure, seems to have been the only reason that the siege was prolonged until Thomas' arrival.

From his headquarters at Sorel on the 20th of May, 1776, General Thomas writes to the Commissioners:

In order truly to judge of my situation, you will be pleased to figure to yourself a retreating army, disheartened by unavoidable misfortunes, destitute of almost every necessity to render their lives comfortable or even tolerable, sick, and as they think, wholly neglected, no probable prospect of a speedy relief; if you will please, Gentlemen, to reflect on

these circumstances for a moment, you will not be surprised when you are informed that there are great murmurings and complaints among the soldiers.

This letter, which had been burned in some places, is not readily decipherable, but sufficient has been read to show the deplorable condition of the army under General Thomas in Canada. General Thomas already had smallpox upon him, "But he passed his days in the saddle and his evening at the writing table until the 2nd of June arrived and then he died, and his country has not forgotten him," says a distinguished English historian.

On May 21 General Thomas wrote his last official letter, and probably the last letter of his life. It is dated Headquarters, Sorel, May 21, 1776, and is addressed to General Wooster, and reads:

I am at this period unfortunately seized with the smallpox, the safety of the Army makes it necessary that I should be removed from camp and I shall be for some time unable to discharge the duties of my office. The command in consequence devolves upon you, and as the main body of the army is here, you will immediately think it necessary to repair to this place as soon as possible.

There, at Chamblée, on the Sorel River, still anxiously awaiting reinforcements, he died of smallpox, at the age of 52 years. During the course of his professional life he had been uncommonly skillful in the treatment of this disease, and had never taken it, by inoculation or otherwise; but the disease at this time was of so malignant a type that he had been entirely blind for some days before his death. The Hon. Joshua Thomas, who was one of his aides and long after a distinguished and able judge, often spoke of General Thomas' perfect collection and soundness of mind to the end of his last sickness, which was noticed by all of his attendants. Richards' "History of Marshfield" tells us that "in 1886 his grave was found and marked. The Indians had kept the place, and it was thus discovered."

General Thomas was succeeded in his command by General Lincoln, with whom he was personally and intimately acquainted. They were similar in manners and character. Lincoln's military career was longer and more varied, but when vanquished and compelled to surrender an army and city, so well established was his spotless reputation that he continued to enjoy the undiminished respect and confidence of Congress, the army and the Commander-

in-Chief, as fully as when he received the surrender of a well-appointed British army at Yorktown.

John Thomas appears among a List of Officers whose widows or orphans received half pay for seven years, by Resolve of Aug. 24, 1780. Rank, Colonel. Died June 3, 1776, before the City of Quebec. (Mass. Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 40, p. 116.)

Military Service in Revolution, as given in "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. XI, page 598

JOHN THOMAS, Kingston. Communication addressed to the Provincial Congress, dated Roxbury Camp, May 25, 1775, signed by said Thomas, accepting his appointment as Lieutenant General of the Mass. army; *also*, general order dated Headquarters, Cambridge, July 22, 1775, making disposition of the forces about Boston, and dividing the army into 3 grand divisions to consist of 2 brigades each; said Thomas, Brigadier General, assigned to the command of a brigade, which with the brigade commanded by Brig. Gen. Spencer was to form the right wing of the army under Maj. Gen. Ward and to be stationed at Roxbury; *also*, list of the regiments raised by the colony of Mass. Bay and places where they were stationed, as returned by Jno. Kneeland, who was appointed Sept. 30, 1775, by the House of Representatives to collect returns of the men belonging to the regiments and who completed and delivered said returns to a committee of the General Court, Oct. 18, 1775; said Thomas reported Colonel and his regiment as stationed at Roxbury; *also*, Colonel (also given General); list of field and staff officers appearing on a muster roll of Capt. Josiah Hayden's co. for Sept. and Oct. 1775, dated Camp at Roxbury; *also*, account of the seven years half pay allowed, agreeable to resolve of Aug. 24, 1780, to widows and orphans of officers who were killed or died in service; rank, Colonel (also given Major General); reported died June 8, 1776, before the city of Quebec; half pay allowed to June 3, 1783.

Records: Provincial Congress, 1774-75

Feby. 3. 1775 Among a Committee appointed to consider the representations relative to several persons working for and supplying the King's troops appears Col^o Thomas. (Vol. 31, p. 68.)

Feby. 7. 1775 Among a Committee to consider what compensation should be made to the Delegates of the American Congress and how money may be obtained to pay them appears Col^o Thomas. (Vol. 31, p. 71.)

Feby. 9. 1775 Col. John Thomas appears among a List of Persons appointed as General Officers. (Vol. 31, p. 74.)

Feby. 9. 1775 Col. Thomas appears on a committee to bring in a Resolve directing how the ordinance in the Province shall be used. (Vol. 31, p. 77.)

Feby. 10. 1775 Col. Thomas appears on a committee to revise the Commission of the Committee of Safety & the Commission of the Committee of Supplies & point out what amendments, if any, are necessary. (Vol. 31, p. 79.)

June 20. 1775. Letter to Gen. Ward: ask him if it is not proper and expedient that an immediate draft of a regiment or more from Roxbury to Cambridge be made — Stating — that his good sense will undoubtedly incline him to consult General Thomas. (Vol. 32, p. 107.)

June 22. 1775 Court Records. Committee appointed to consider by what means the army before Boston may be strengthened. Reported in part that they judge it absolutely necessary that the eight companies stationed in the County of Plymouth belonging partly to General Thomas' Regiment and partly to Col. Cotton's Regt. be immediately ordered to join the army as soon as possible. (Vol. 32, p. 120.)

June 27. 1775. Committee appointed to consider a Letter from Genl. Thomas respecting a Petition for liberty to permit provisions to be carried to those who were taken Prisoners by Gage's Troops on the 17th instant — now in Boston. (Vol. 32, p. 167.)

June 27. 1775. A Letter from General Thomas read nominating Mr. Samuel Brewer to an Adjutant General in the Massachusetts Army. (Vol. 32, p. 168.)

June 27. 1775. Report on General Thomas' Letter re provisions to wounded friends in captivity in Boston — 'That General Thomas be requested moderately to supply said Prisoners with Fresh Meat in case he can convey it to them and them only. (Vol. 32, p. 173.)

July 1. 1775. Ordered that Col^o Mitchell deliver the 215 Spears which he has procured for the use of the army to General Thomas at Roxbury. (Vol. 32, p. 212.)

July 1. 1775. Resolve for taking care of the sick and wounded in the army.

"Ordered" a copy to be sent to General Thomas. (Vol. 32, p. 214.)

Among a List of Persons appointed Deputy Commissarys in the Massachusetts Army one for each Reg^t appears Mr. Waterman Thomas — Marshfield, recommended by Gen. Thomas. (Vol. 32, p. 207.)

Sept. 27. 1775. A Letter from General Thomas relative to two chaises and a Sulkey at Gov^r Hutchinson's seat at Milton. Read. (Vol. 33, p. 214.)

Jany. 25. 1776. Among allowanees to the General Officers appears — To General Thomas who served this Colony as Lieutenant General *Eighteen* (£) per month (from the time they entered into the service of the Massachusetts Army until they were put into the pay of the Continental Army or were otherwise discharged). (Vol. 34, p. 553.)

June 15, 1784. In the House of Representatives. On the petition of Mrs. Hannah Thomas praying that the Barrack on her land at the Gurnet may be given to her for the damages done to her house, fences &c. while a Garrison was kept at that place.

Resolved that the prayer of the petition be granted and that she the said Hannah Thomas be entitled to the Barraek on her land at the Gurnet as her own property, which shall be in full for what Damages she has sustained.

In Senate Read & Concurred.

Approved by the Governor.

(Vol. 45, p. 357.)

Children of Maj. Gen. John and Hannah (Thomas) Thomas:

- i. Hannah, b. 14 Nov. 1762; m. (int.) 25 Sept. 1784 Rev. Zephaniah Willis, who was Pastor of the First Church of Kingston, Mass., for more than sixty-six years. He was born in Bridgewater, Mass., 1754, son of Zephaniah and Bethia (Hayward) Willis, and died in Kingston 6 Mar. 1847, aged 90 years 10 days. Mrs. Hannah (Thomas) Willis d. 8 Aug. 1834. They had a family of 10 children b. between 1785 and 1800, of whom 7 died in infancy. Their daughter, Betsey Willis, b. 3 Nov. 1792, d. 15 Feb. 1843.
- ii. John⁵ (Col. John), b. 17 Jan. 1766, was the boy who ran away from Oakley, the General's colored servant, and joined his father on Dorchester Heights in 1776. (See letter to the General's wife.) The only descendants of Gen. John Thomas bearing the name of Thomas were through his son, Colonel John. He m. (1) 12 Sept. 1791, Waity Gray, b. 21 Oct. 1752, dau. of Capt. Wait and Saba (Ripley) Gray. She d. 25 Feb. 1802. Augustus Thomas, son of Col. John and Waity, m. Sally Brewster; William Appleton, b. 1800, was lost at sea in Feb. 1827; John, the oldest son, b. 5 May 1793, m. Hannah Hedge of Plymouth, b. 1804, dau. of Barnabas and Eunice Dennie (Burr) Hedge. They lived for a time in Plymouth, and later at Irvington-on-the-Hudson. William Appleton Thomas, son of John and Hannah (Hedge), b. in the old Dr. Thatcher house at Plymouth, was educated at the University of the City of New York, and lived at Irvington-on-the-Hudson, where he was a friend of Washington Irving. In his later years he moved to Kingston and lived on the estate of Col. Thomas Hill. He was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society and the Pilgrim Society of Plymouth. He d. at Kingston in Dec. 1903, ae. 74 years.

Col. John⁵ Thomas m. (2) 22 Dec. 1805, Judith (Drew) Sampson, widow of Capt. Joseph Sampson. Their dau., Hannah Thomas, b. 19 Oct. 1809, m. 10 May 1837 Capt. Theodore Bliss Cunningham of New York City.

21 June, 1802. In the House of Representatives, on the petition of Nathaniel Goodwin Major General of the fifth division of the militia of this Commonwealth, praying that John⁵ Thomas, Colonel of the first Regiment first Brigade of said division may be permitted & authorized to raise a company of Light Infantry within the town of Kingston.

It was so resolved, read and confirmed by the Senate and approved by the Governor, provided it did not reduce the established Militia Company in

Kingston below the numbers prescribed by law. (General Court Records, Vol. 54, p. 141.)

19 Feb. 1822. In Senate: Resolved, that John⁵ Thomas of Kingston, Charles I. Holmes of Rochester in the County of Plymouth, Esq., be and they are hereby authorized to receive and examine any and all demands now existing against said Herring Pond Tribe of Indians, and to allow such of them as shall appear to be just and legal and that the said John Thomas and Charles I. Holmes are hereby directed, authorized and empowered to sell at public vendue so much of the land necessary to raise a sum sufficient to pay the demands against said tribe, &c. &c. (Vol. 64, p. 246.)

- iii. Nathaniel, b. 23 June 1769; d. 1 Aug. 1846, ac. 77 years 1 month 9 days; umm.

On the thirty-first day of May, 1776, General Thomas, blinded by smallpox, dictated his will, which he was unable to sign, as follows:

WILL OF MAJOR GENERAL THOMAS

Vol. 24, page 194

1776. In the name of God, Amen. I John Thomas of Kingston, in the County of Plymouth and Colony of Massachusetts Bay, being now at Chambill, in the Province of Quebeek, Grievously afflicted with the smallpox yet of sound mind & memory do make this my last will & testament, and dispose of the estate which the Almighty hath blessed me with in manner & form following, that is to say —

Imprimis. I will that my debts be paid out of my said estate. Item. I give & bequeath unto my dearly beloved wife Hannah the whole of my personal estate for her to dispose of as she sees fit, & the whole Of my real estate I give and bequeath to my sd. wife during the term of her natural life, & I do hereby empower her my said wife to dispose of my Real Estate to my children by her last will & testament or any other writing by her subscribed, During the term of her natural life in such manner and proportions as to her shall seem meet, & I do hereby appoint my said wife Hannah Thomas the sole executrix of this my last will & testament. The said John Thomas, Esq., delivered the foregoing instrument & declared it to be such in presenee of us to sign the same this 31st day of May in the year of Christ 1776.

Attest, SAMUEL BREWER
 JOSHUA THOMAS

9. CAPT. WILLIAM⁴ THOMAS (5. *Nathan*³, *Samuel*², *John*¹), born 31 Jan. 1727 in Marshfield, was familiarly known as "Capt. Willie." When a young man he went to Malden to learn the trade of shoemaker, and there became acquainted with his first wife, Mary Hill. He succeeded to the family estate through his father, Nathan³. He was very *active* at the outbreak of the *Revo-*

lution. Much of the town's powder and ammunition was stored in a lower bedroom of his house when the Queen's Guards came to Marshfield and passed very near to its hiding place. Soon after, the patriots, led by Jeremiah Low and his brother-in-law, Benjamin White, removed it to safer quarters over the Duxbury line with ox teams at midnight. He died shortly after the beginning of the Revolution, and it was he who fired the signal gun from the top of Ward Hill the morning after the Battle of Lexington, which was the signal agreed upon to inform the townspeople that hostilities had begun. (See "Loyalists and the Marshfield Tea Party" under Nathaniel Ray Thomas.)

Capt. William Thomas married, first, Mary Hill, daughter of Abraham Hill of Malden, who died in Mar. 1753. He married, second, 11 Mar. 1754, Abiah Thomas, daughter of Capt. James and Deborah (Sherman) Thomas of Duxbury.

Children of Capt. William Thomas and Mary Hill:

- i. William^s, b. 21 Sept. 1747; was a Revolutionary soldier. He m. Abigail Sherman.

William Thomas, Marshfield. Corporal, in Capt. Thomas Turner's co. of militia, Col. John Bailey's reg't; pay abstract for mileage, dated Jan. 10, 1776; mileage for 69 miles allowed said Thomas; company reported *encamped with Brig. Gen. Thomas's brigade; also*, in descriptive list of men raised to reinforce the Continental Army for the term of six months, agreeable to the resolve of June 5, 1780, returned as received of Justin Ely, Commissioner, by Brig. Gen. John Glover, at Springfield, July 10, 1780; *age 32 years; stature 5 ft. 6 in; complexion light; engaged for town of Marshfield, arrived at Springfield July 9, 1780; marched to camp July 10, 1780, under command of Capt. Daniel Shays; also*, in list of men raised for the six months service and returned by Brig. Gen. Patterson as having passed muster in a return dated Camp Totoway, Oct. 25, 1780; *also*, on pay roll for six months men raised by the town of Marshfield for service in the Continental Army during 1780; marched to camp July 5, 1780; discharged Jan. 8, 1781; service, 6 mos. 17 days, including travel (287 miles) home. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. XV, p. 619.)

- ii. Mary, b. 11 Feb. 1749; m. Abijah Waterman. In father's will was called "Mary Simmons." They removed to Maine.
- iii. Nathan, b. 18 Jan. 1751; d. 15 Dec. 1751.
- iv. Sarah, b. 21 Jan. 1753; m. Thomas Baker, son of Samuel and Hannah (Ford) Baker; d. 6 Jan. 1822.

Children of Capt. William Thomas and Abiah (Thomas):

- v. Deborah, b. 28 May 1755; d. unm. 1794.
- vi. Luther, b. 25 Jan. 1757; succeeded to the homestead. He m. (1) 1799 Rebecca Dingley, dau. of Isaac and Rebecca (Phillips) Dingley. Their dau. Marcia A. Thomas, b. 9 Aug. 1800, d. unm. 14 Sept.



THE "BEDFORD," BUILT BY ICHABOD THOMAS AT PEMBROKE IN 1772, ARRIVED IN LONDON CARRYING THE AMERICAN FLAG AT HER MAST, 3 FEB. 1783, TWELVE DAYS BEFORE PEACE WAS DECLARED BETWEEN THE UNITED STATES AND GREAT BRITAIN

(See page 708)

See "History of Shipbuilding on North River, Mass.," page 169. From a painting owned by L. Cabot Briggs

1879. She was the author of the pamphlet, "Memorials of Marshfield," which, until 1906, was one of the few publications giving genealogical data of the early families of the town. She was the leading spirit of the Fair, held in 1851, to raise funds to fence in and preserve the "Old Burying Ground." (Winslow Burying Ground.) Although her means were small, she left a sum of money for the erection of a monument "To the memory of the early settlers of Green Harbor." Her sister, Sarah Thomas, b. 20 Feb. 1805, gave much time and effort in helping Miss Marcia collect information for the pamphlet, and after the death of her sister, in 1879, saw that the provisions of the latter's will were faithfully carried out, and the monument erected. Sarah Thomas d. unm. 14 Oct. 1896, ae. 89. Their brother, William Foster Thomas, b. 10 Jan. 1802, d. unm. in 1896. In 1835 these children of Luther Thomas by first wife, Rebecca (Dingley), built the house where they afterward lived, now (1936) marked by a wooden tablet bearing an inscription which states that it was the home of Miss Marcia Thomas.

Luther Thomas m. (2) 1810 Anna Hewett, who d. in 1837 or 1838. They had a son, Luther Thomas, Jr., b. Oct. 1812, who m. 1835 Abigail Tolman Sampson. He succeeded to the home of his father and grandfather, and in 1868 tore down the old house built by Nathan³ Thomas and built the one now standing, on the same site.

- vii. Jesse, b. 5 Feb. 1760; is said to have been a very enterprising and successful merchant, but d. a young man.
- viii. Aliee, } twins, born 6 July 1762 { d. 1763.
 ix. Abiah, } { d. 1768.

10. CAPT. ICHABOD⁴ THOMAS, SR. (5. Nathan³, Samuel², John¹), born 28 June 1733/4, died 2 Mar. 1788 in Marshfield, was a shipbuilder, and built at the Brick Kilns from about 1764 to 1787-88.

ICHABOD THOMAS was *Ensign in the 1st Company, Pembroke, 2d Regt. of Militia, County of Plymouth, Thomas Clap, Esq., Colonel*, in 1762, and on 27 Nov. 1765 his commission was issued as CAPTAIN of "*ye Troop 2nd Reg^t of Militia Plym^o, T Clapp, Colo.*" He fought in the French and Indian War, and was also a soldier in the Revolution with service as follows:

ICHABOD THOMAS. Private, Capt. Calvin Partridge's Co., Col. John Cushing's regt.; drafted Sept. 23, 1776; service, 28 days; company marched to Rhode Island.

ICHABOD THOMAS. Private, Capt. James Harlow's Co., Col. Ezra Wood's regt.; entered service June 5, 1778; service, 8 mos 8 days, including travel (480 miles) to and from camp; regiment raised for 8 months to guard passes of North River; also, order on Lieut. John Potter,

Paymaster, Col. Ezra Wood's regt., for wages, dated Plympton, April 20, 1779, signed by said *Thomas* and others. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. XV, p. 591.)

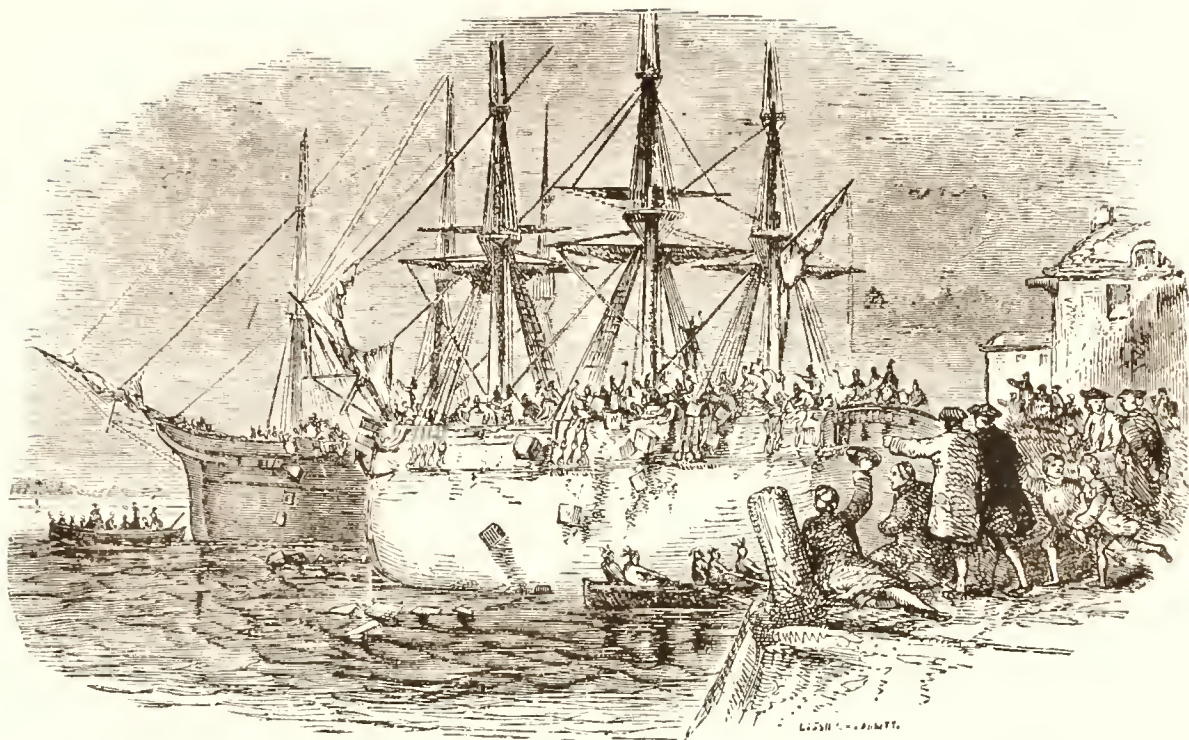
He built at the Brick Kiln yard, Pembroke, many vessels which became famous. One of his first ships was the brig *Norfolk*, which he built in 1765, and the same year he built the ship *Neptune*, a famous whaler, captured later on a voyage to London by a British Admiral. In 1772 Captain Thomas built at the Brick Kilns, for William Rotch of Nantucket, one of the most successful merchants of his day, the *Beaver*, one of the ships from which the tea was thrown overboard in Boston Harbor 16 Dec. 1773.

About the same time that he built the *Beaver*, he built, also for William Rotch of Nantucket, the ship *Bedford*, which was delivered to her owner and made one or two voyages, but was laid up at Nantucket from 1777 to 1782. In 1782 the old Quaker merchants had private information that peace was coming, but the newly built *Maria*, just delivered by Ichabod Thomas could not be dispatched immediately, so the *Bedford* was "hailed down," loaded, and sent to London. With a full cargo of oil, she arrived off Trinity on 6 Feb. with the stars and stripes flying. Her arrival was thus chronicled by an *English magazine* of that day:

The *Bedford*, Capt. Mooers, belonging to Massachusetts, arrived in the Downs on the 3rd of February, passed the Gravesend the 4th, and was reported at the Custom House, the 6th. inst. She was not allowed regular entry until some consultation had taken place between the Commissioners of the Customs and the Lords of the Council, on account of the many Acts of Parliament yet in force against the rebels in America. She was loaded with 488 butts of whale oil, is American built, manned wholly by American sea-men, wears the rebel colors, and belongs to the Island of Nantucket in Massachusetts. This is the first vessel which has displayed the 13 rebellious stripes in any British Port. The vessel lies at Horsely Downs, a little below the Tower and is intended immediately to return to New England.

The terms of the treaty of peace between England and the victorious colonies was first made public in a postscript of one of the London papers about a week before the arrival of the *Bedford*, but the King's proclamation was not published until twelve days after her arrival. It is therefore no wonder that her appearance created great excitement and astonishment at the audacity of the rebellious colonies.

Captain Thomas built the *Maria* for a privateer, but she was never used as such, for when completed William Rotch purchased



THROWING TEA INTO BOSTON HARBOR FROM THE "BEAVER," BUILT BY ICHABOD THOMAS, SR., BRICK-KILN YARD, PEMBROKE, 1773



ICHABOD THOMAS, SR.
1733-1788



BOSTONIANS PAYING THE EXCISE MAN
BY TARRING AND FEATHERING, AT
CORNER OF WASHINGTON AND ESSEX
STREETS

Original picture owned by Hon. Josiah Dunham

her for a merchantman. The story of her career would make a romantic book. She sailed from Nantucket for London 4 July 1785, with her owners as passengers, who were going to establish the whale fishery from an English port. She sailed under the United States flag until 1862. On the twenty-ninth day of Sept. 1859 she sailed from New Bedford on her 27th, and last, whaling voyage. On these voyages she is credited with having taken 24,419 barrels of sperm oil, and 134 barrels of whale oil, and in 1859 it is said that there stood to her credit \$250,000; she had been of expense to her underwriters but once, and then only for a trifling amount.

On 24 Feb. 1863 she was repaired and sold at Talcahuana, Chili, to Messrs. Burton and Trumbull of Talcahuana, who used her in the coal trade. She continued sailing in the Pacific under the Chilian flag, probably to avoid the risk of her capture by rebel cruisers, until 1870, under the name of *Maria Pachaco*. On 1 July 1866 she was fitted out for Talcahuana, on a whaling voyage, under command of Capt. David Briggs of Dartmouth, Mass. She was condemned at Vancouver's Island in 1872, after sailing for ninety years, during which time she touched at nearly every port of the globe.

In 1785 the *Falkland* was built by Ichabod Thomas for William Rotch, who sold her to France, and as a French privateer, she took many English ships in the English Channel. The *Somerset* was also one of Captain Thomas' ships. While on her passage from London to Nantucket as a *London* packet during the Revolution, she was taken by Commodore John Paul Jones. (For further account of vessels built by Captain Thomas at the Brick Kilns, see "Ship-building on North River," by Briggs.)

Ichabod Thomas of Hanover, shipwright, in consideration of £130 paid by William Thomas of Marshfield, cordwainer, bought out Ichabod's interest in estate his honored father left him. (Plymouth Co. Rec., Vol. 46, p. 206.)

Ichabod Thomas of Pembroke, gentⁿ, for 56£ 13 sh. 4d. from Nathan Stevens, land and dwelling house I bought of Josiah Keen, Esq., bounded by land of Israel Turner, Jacob Barstow. (Also signed by Ruth his wife.) 18 Oct. 1770. (Vol. 56, p. 166.)

Ichabod Thomas of Pembroke, gentⁿ, for £9 from Lot Phillips of same, ½ Cedar Swamp in Pembroke bought by Blaney Phillips & Ichabod Thomas of William Baker of Boston in 1773. 9 March 1785. (Vol. 64, p. 130.)

Mary Turner wid. of Benj. Gentleman David Turner Bloekmaker, Ichabod Thomas of Pembroke, Gentleman & Ruth his wife et al buy

land for £108 from Jeremiah Hall in Pembroke near dwelling house of said Hall. (Vol. 59, p. 80.)

ICHABOD THOMAS married 22 Jan. 1761 RUTH TURNER, b. 8 Feb. 1736/7, daughter of Capt. Benjamin and Mary (32. Briggs) Turner. They were married in Pembroke by the Rev. Thomas Smith.

Capt. BENJAMIN TURNER, father of RUTH (TURNER) THOMAS, was born in Scituate 23 June 1704, son of THOMAS TURNER and HANNAH LASSELL. Thomas Turner was called on Scituate records, "*Thomas Sr.*" He was born in Dorchester about 1655, and married, about 1681, HANNAH LASSELL, born in Hingham 31 Aug. 1662, daughter of JOHN LASSELL, born in England about 1620, and died in Hingham 21 Oct. 1700. JOHN LASSELL married in Hingham, 29 Nov. 1647, ELIZABETH GATES, who was born in England about 1628, and died in Hingham 3 Aug. 1704. She was a daughter of STEPHEN GATES, born in England, who died in 1662. STEPHEN GATES married in 1627 or 1628 ANN VEERE, born in England, and died 19 Feb. 1682/3. He lived in Hingham and in Cambridge, Mass.

THOMAS TURNER, Sr., was a soldier in *King Philip's War*. He was a son of Capt. William Turner, who came from Dartmouth, South Devon, England, to Dorchester, Mass., and was admitted to the church in 1642. He was one of the members of the First Baptist Church in Boston, 28 May 1665. William Turner had belonged to Mr. Stead's church in Dartmouth, England. He was excommunicated in July 1665 by the church at Charlestown; summoned 11 Oct. 1665; 17 April 1666 was fined and cast into prison; July 20 1668 was again imprisoned, and in Dec. 1671 "has been near to death" from constant imprisonment. The election in May 1673 of John Leverett as Governor ended the persecution. Capt. William Turner raised a company in *King Philip's War*, mostly Anabaptists, which the authorities refused to accept, but afterwards did so. He died at Deerfield, Mass., 19 May 1676.

Capt. Benjamin Turner was Captain of a Troop of Horse. About 1730 he was in Pembroke, and began building vessels at the Brick Kilns. Most of the noted shipbuilders were apprenticed to him, and his descendants — Thomases, Briggses and Turners — succeeded him at that yard. His son-in-law, Capt. Ichabod Thomas, was his immediate successor. He died in Pembroke 13 Feb. 1770.

WILL OF BENJAMIN TURNER, FATHER OF RUTH (TURNER) THOMAS

Vol. 20, page 544

In the Name of God. Amen.

This sixteenth day of August in the year of our Lord 1757 Benjamin Turner being in health & sound mind, do make this my last will as follows, after comended my soul to God that gave it & my body to decent burial.

Impr^s. I give & bequeath unto my well beloved wife Mary (Briggs — Cornelius, Jr³., Cornelius², Walter¹) the improvement of my whole estate both real & personal during the full term of her natural life with full power to sell & dispose of so much of my real estate as may be sufficient to bring up my children that are under age, she paying all my just debts & funeral charges, & paying five shillings to the two children of my daughter Ann deceased, in full of their portion.

Item. I give to my ten children (now living) the whole of my estate after their mothers, (death) provided they all survive her, but in case of the death of any of them before their mother my mind & will is that it should be equally divided among the survivors.

Also my mind & will is that my wife Mary be sole executrix of this my last will & testament in witness whereof I the said Benjamin Turner have hereunto set my hand & Seal the day & year above written

Signed, Sealed etc. before. —

BENJAMIN TURNER

Seal.

Caleb Turner Jr. David Stockbridge. Ruth Turner.

Tho^s Jenkins sells to Tho^s Turner his Farm Messuage & Tenement in Scituate containing 40 acres bounded northerly to the way that lyeth to the northward of Stony Brook &c. Together with a Piece of meadow or Pasture Land lying to the southw^d of the aforesaid 40 acres. — Also 15 acres of Salt Meadow bounded westerly to the Cross way & Street &c. with all Islands in the Creeks adjacent. Also 8 acres of Upland at the 2^d Cliff. Deed dated April 29, 1715 & recorded B^k 11 F. 49.

Thomas Colman sells to Tho^s Turner 10 acres of Land in Conihasset that was laid out May 29, 1688 for Gowing White. Deed dated April 25, 1706. B^k 6 P. 35/6.

Charles Church sells to Tho^s Turner Taylor & Tho^s Turner Shipwright $\frac{1}{4}$ of an aere (with the Dwelling House on it) w^{ch} he had of the Town of Scituate. and a Piece of Land he bought of John Whistons Heirs. — and 5 acres adjoining lot of Jon^a Briant, and his whole Interest in the Comons. Deed Dated Mareh 11. 1707/8 & record^d B^k 6 F. 154/5.

These are all the Purchases I find made by Tho^s Turner. —

JOHN COTTON, Reg^r.

WILL OF THOMAS³ TURNER (THOMAS², HUMPHREY¹)

Vol. 4, page 292

I Thomas Turner of Scituate in y^e County of Plymouth in New England, Esq. Being sick & weak of body, but of sound mind & memory, (praised be God for it) do make & ordain this my last will & testament in manner & form following viz: —

First of all I commit my soul to God that gave it & my body to decent burial at the discretion of my executors hereafter named, and touching my worldly estate, I give devise & dispose thereof in manner & form following —

Imprimis. I do hereby order, appoint, & impower my executors hereafter named viz. my two sons David Turner & Thomas Turner to make sale of so much of my lands & real estate as may be sufficient for the payment of my just debts: and what shall remain of my estate both real & personal after my just debts paid as afores^d I give to my *beloved wife Hannah* (Jenkins) *Turner* the use or improvement thereof during her natural life for her own support & the bringing up of my children, she remaining my widdow, and after her death or remarriage which shall first happen, my mind & will is that the remainder of my estate both real & personal shall be equally divided unto & among all my children viz: David Turner, HANNAH BARKER, Thomas Turner, Ephraim Turner, Relief Ewell, Ruth Turner, Sarah Turner, Jemima Turner, Lillis Turner, Abigail Turner & Mary Turner to them their heirs & assigns forever. To be equally divided betwixt them, as aforesaid, & in ease of my wifes remarriage my mind & will is that my s^d wife shall have 30£ paid her out of my estate that then the remainder of my afores^d estate, shall be equally divided unto & among my s^d children their heirs & assigns as aforesaid.

Lastly. I do hereby nominate & appoint my afores^d sons David Turner & Thomas Turner to be joynt executors to this my will & testament.

In witness whereof I the s^d Thomas Turner have hereunto set my hand & seal this nineteenth day of December, Anno Domini One thousand seven hundred & twenty, In ye seventh year of his majesty's reign.

Witnesses.

THOMAS TURNER

Seal.

Caleb Loring Samuel Barker Nathaniel Pitcher.

INVENTORY OF THO^s TURNER ESQ^{rs} ESTATE

[He died in 1721]

A true & perfect Inventory of the Lands, goods & chattels & estate of Thomas Turner Esq^r Late of Scituate dec^d made & taken by us whose names are under-written, as the same was shewn to us this 24th of May Anno Domini 1721 is as follows.

Imp ^{rs} His housing & Lands at home. His meadow Lands & upland with a Clift lot	£40	0	0
Item. His lands lying upon & about the hill call ^d Churchs hill adjoin ^g to the country road cont ^g 100 acres	250	—	—
Item To arms	1	5	—
Item. To 4 beds, 2 with bedsteads & curtains, y ^e other one with a bedsted & the other without all of 'em, priz ^d at	30	—	—
Item. his purse & apparel	16	16	—
Item his books	2	11	—
Item. To three chests, 1, trunk & a writing desk all at	1	16	—
Item. To 1 loom, warping barrs & other weaving tackling	2	16	—
Item. To pewter & brass	5	—	—
Item. To iron ware	2	14	—
Item. More in iron ware, at	1	18	—
Item. To Sheets & other linnen	3	4	—
Item. To Chairs	1	16	—
Item. To a ease of draws, & 2, chests of draws & a look ^g glass & a <i>multiplying glass</i> , a table & joint stool	4	15	—
Item. To Spinning wheels & other old Lumber viz: Pails washing tubbs, trays & milk pans steel yard, & mortar	2	5	—
Item. <i>One horse, bridle, saddle & pillion</i> (all old)	4	—	—
Item. 2 cows, 3 3 year old heifers, & 1 2 y ^r old heifer	20	—	—
Item. To 2 swine a/ 15/ apiece	1	10	—
	£792	6	0

Nathaniel Tilden John Barker Samuel Turner.

April y^e 5th 1722. David Turner, & Thomas Turner Exeors to the last will & testament of Thomas Turner, Esq^r, late of Seituate in the county of Plimouth, deceas^d made oath that the above is a true & perfect inventory of the estate of the s^d Tho^s Turner Esq^r as far as is come to their knowledge & if more hereafter should appear they will also give it in.

Before me.

ISAAC WINSLOW, Judge of Probate.

A true copy of Record Exam^d p Edward Winslow Regr.

THOMAS TURNER'S PURCHASES AND HIS EXE^{rs} & C SALES.

David Turner & Thomas Turner Exec^{rs} to the Will of Thomas Turner Esq^r of Seituate deceased, Sell to Thomas Jenkins for 250£, 100 acres of Upland & Swamp Land near a Place ealled Church's Hill adjoining to the Country Road, being 10 ten acre Lots which said Turner Esq^r bought of Charles Josselyn. —

They also sell to said Jenkins for 100£ 10 acres of upland at the 2^d Cliff, both Deeds dated October 11, 1722 & Recorded B^k 16. F. 123. No Conditions in the Deeds.

They also sell (as Exec^{rs}) to said Jenkins for 160£ 4 acres of upland & 20 acres of Salt meadow in 3 Parcels. The upland bounded on the West by Simon Delis's Land, Northerly by the Common or highway &c. The Salt meadow one Piece of 3 acres bounded Easterly by the Causey, Northerly by Stony Brook &c. The other Piece of 17 acres bounded westerly by the Causey & highway, Easterly & northerly by the Creeks &c. Deed dated March 7. 1723/4 B^k 18 F. 101.

Tho^s Jenkins conveys to Tho^s Turner the 4 acres of upland & 20 acres of Salt meadow above mentioned. — also one third of the Housing & Buildings where his Daughter Hannah Turner dwelt with the one third Part of 5 acres of Land thereto adjoining which he purchased of the Heirs of Eliz^a Hewett — Also 10 acres of upland on y^e 2^d Cliff. The Condition of the Conveyance being that he sho^d maintain his mother the s^d Hannah Turner during her natural Life. Deed dated July 20, 1725. B^k 20 F. 23.

Tho^s Turner sells to John Doggett for 10£ all his Right in the 5 acres where he dwelt with the Housing & Buildings thereon. Deed dated Nov^r 14. 1727. The Deed absolute. B^k 22, F. 134.

He also conveys to said Doggett (upon Condition that he would maintain his s^d mother *Hannah Turner*) the whole of what was conveyed to him by his Grandfather Jenkins as above said. Also the Improvement of 12 acres of Salt marsh joyning to the s^d Cliff during his Grandfather's Life. Deed dated Nov^r 18. 1727. Book 22, F. 135. —

These are all the Deeds I find from Tho^s Turner Esq^r Exec^{rs} or Heirs. —
JOHN COTTON Regr.

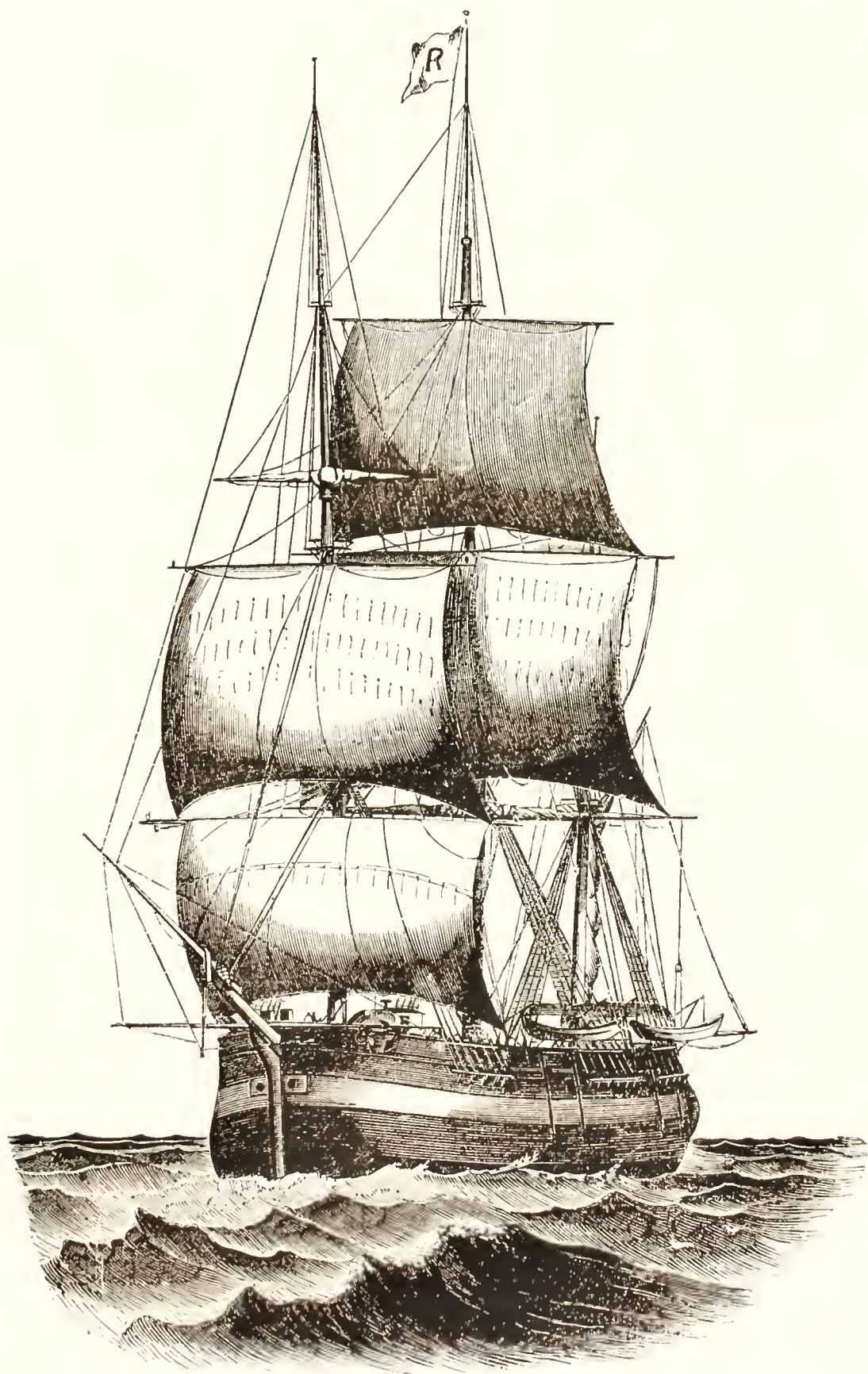
EXCORS ACCOUNT ON THO^s TURNER'S ESTATE

OCTOBER 12th 1733.

To the hon^{ble} Isaac Winslow esquire, judge of the probate of wills for the county of Plimouth in New England, on account of what estate we David Turner & Thomas Turner, rec^d into our hands as Executors to the Last Will & testament of our honrd father Thomas Turner late of Scituate esq^r dec^d.

1 Received in cash	10	0	0
2 The Land at the Clift sold at	100	—	—
3 The Land up the River y ^t was Josselyn's sold at	250	—	—
4 The Land that was mortgag ^d 24 acres sold at	160	—	—
5 Two young cows sold at	8	—	—
6 An old horse sold at	3	—	—
7 In money from Gershom Stetson	1	10	—
8 In money of Thos. Perry	1	11	—
9 The 2/3 ^{rds} of 5½ Acres of land sold at	90		
	<hr/>		
	£624	1	0

An acc^{ot} offer^d to the judge of Prob^t by
us David Turner, Thomas Turner



SHIP "MARIA"
BUILT BY CHARBOD THOMAS, JR., 1782

(See pages 708-709)

See "History of Shipbuilding on North River, Mass.," page 171

An account of debts that were due from the estate of our honrd father Thomas Turner, Esq^r dec^d which have been paid by us David Turner & Tho^s Turner, exeōrs to the will of our honrd father.

To Mr Job Randal due by bill	0 10 0	To John Merrit	5 2 6
To Thomas Briant	19 0 0	To Hannah Damon	1 14 6
To Mr Jon ^a Waldo	20 0 0	To Mehitable Damon	1 2 4
To Mr Job Randal int. for a bond	12 7 0	To Joseph Clap	1 7 3
To D ^{cr} Otis	5 2 0	To Simon Delis	6 1 0
To Mr Job Randal in tak ^s up a bond	34 0 0	To Joseph Briant	2 0 0
To D ^{cr} Palmer in tak ^s up a bond	7 12 0	To Joseph Nash	0 16 0
To Mr Remington	0 13 0	To James Cudworth	2 0 0
To Ensign Otis	0 10 0	To Mr Murdock of Plim ^o	2 3 8
To our hon ^d Grandfather Tho ^s Jenkins	100 0 0	To Mr Job Otis	9 16 0
To Mr John Doane in tak ^s up a bond	74 0 0	To D ^{cr} Loring	3 5 0
To Mr Tilden for 4 days ap- prizing	1 0 0	To D ^{cr} Boylstone	8 0 0
To Benj ^a Perry	0 14 0	Interest money to the bank	37 10 0
To Mary Tilden	1 7 6	Taking up the mortgage	160 0 0
To Benj ^a Randal	0 11 6	To Jonathan Kinsley	1 2 0
To Lenox Beverley	3 15 0	To Mr Waldo's heirs	12 2 8
To Mr Tho ^s Cushing	8 15 9	To John Wibourn	15 0 0
To Tho ^s Buck 2 cows	8 0 0	To Nathan Pickles	1 1 6
More to Tho ^s Buck in money	6 13 0	To D ^{cr} Le Baron	1 3 0
To Experience Damon	2 18 0	Due to me Tho ^s Turner for work with my father be- fore his decease	7 0 0
To Mr James Cushing	1 5 6	Due to me David Turner funer ^l charges & other ar- ticles upon book	7 9 0
			<hr/>
	£308 14 2		296 6 5
			<hr/>
			308 14 2
			<hr/>
			£605 0 7

Yet to be p ^d to Jabez Howland at Bristol	16 10 0
To Mr Barber at Boston 49/ to Jon ^a Elmes 20/	3 9 0
My trouble £7. proving the will & Record ^s 1.10.0	8 10 0
	<hr/>
	£28 9 0

Oct. 30, 1733. Then received of M^r David Turner, one of the excors. named in the last will & testament of his father Tho^s Turner Esq^r late of Scituate in the county of Plimouth dec^d the above & within acc^{ot} of his adm^r on s^d estate, which acc^{ot} is allowed.

P^r ISAAC WINSLOW Judge of Probate

A true copy of record examined ꝑ Edward Winslow, Regr.

Capt. Ichabod Thomas and his wife settled upon an estate in Pembroke which Ichabod had purchased from James Randall

the year of his marriage. It stands on a knoll, commanding a fine view of the valley and surrounding hills, on the south side of the "King's Highway," the old stage road from Boston to Plymouth, now Washington Street. Its site was probably a part of an early grant to Lieut. Francis Barker. Thomas Barker, son of Lieutenant Francis, erected a large house upon it when he married Bethia Little, daughter of Isaac of Marshfield. Thomas Barker sold the estate in 1733, and removed to North Carolina. Thomas Tracy, the new owner, lived there for four years, and in 1737 sold it to James Randall.

DEED OF JAMES RANDALL TO ICHABOD THOMAS

[Extracted]

To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting, &c: Know ye that James Randall of Pembroke in the County of Plimouth in New Eng. Blacksmith, for and in consideration of the sum of One hundred and Eight pounds in Lawful Money of New Eng. to me in hand paid by Ichabod Thomas of the town, etc. afores'd, Shipwright, the rec'pt whereof I do hereby acknowledge and myself satisfied content, etc. Have given, Granted, etc. unto him the s'd Ichabod Thomas, his heirs, and assigns forever a certain farm or tract of land with the buildings and fencing thereon, standing and belonging, etc. in ye township of Pembroke afores'd, containing by estimation 21½ acres more or less, bounded as followeth: — Beginning at a large Rock lying on the South side of the county road near where the house stood, formerly belonging to old Lev. Barker, now Taylor's, from thence is bounded by s'd roade to the land of David Magoun, and thence westerly by s'd Magoun's land to the land of *Col. James Otis, Esqr.* — taken by virtue of an Execution s'd Otis had against s'd Randall, and thence southerly by s'd Otis' land to the land I sold to Capt. Benjamin Turner, and thence easterly by said Turner's land to said County road, thence northerly by s'd county road unto the s'd great Rock, the bounds first mentioned, except and always reserving the way which formerly belonged to Abraham Booth, from the County road to his land. To have and to hold, etc. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Seal this twenty-ninth day of January, Anno Domini, 1761.

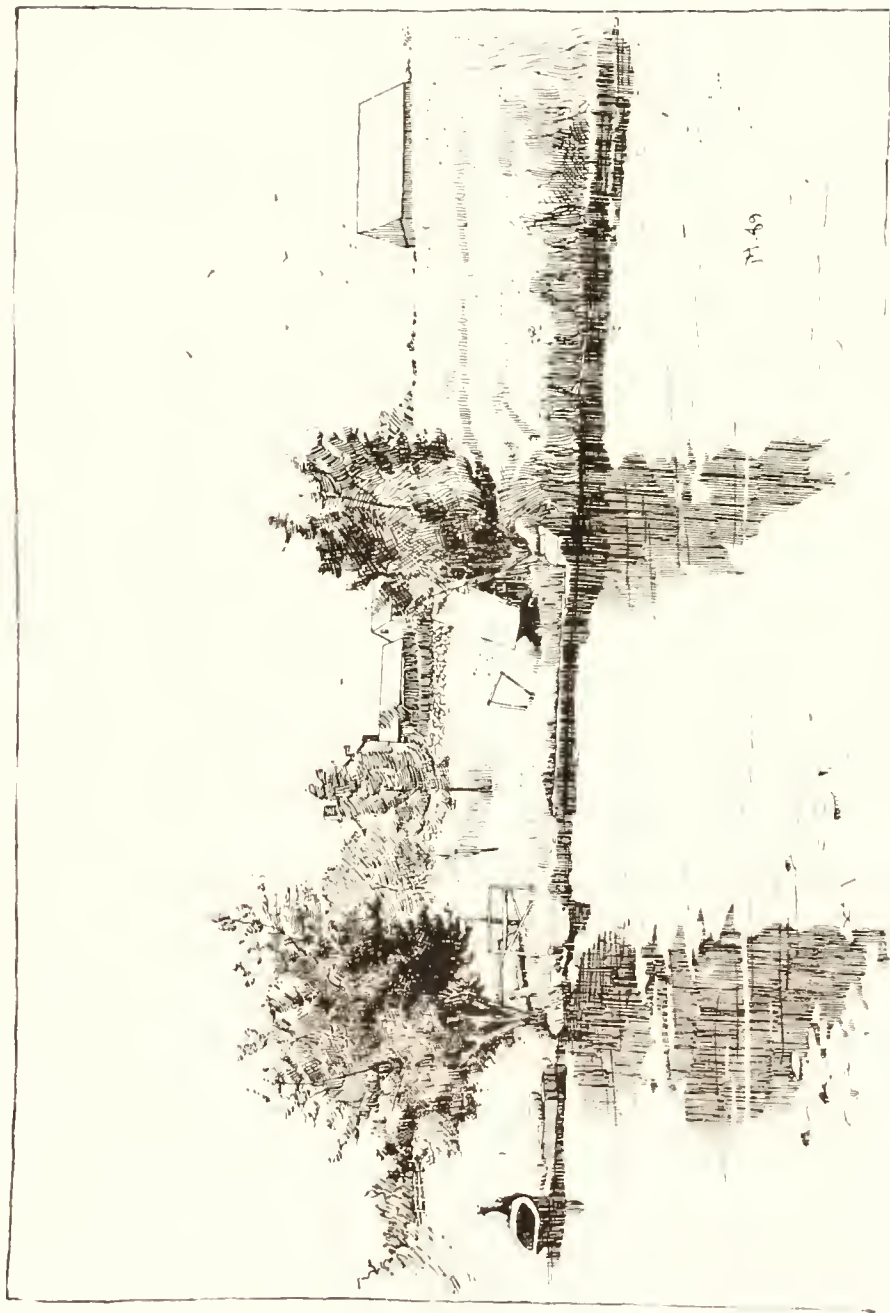
JAMES RANDALL (Seal)

Signed, Sealed and delivered in presence of

Elisha Barker.

Benj^a Turner.

CAPT. ICHABOD⁴ THOMAS died 2 Mar. 1788, and his wife RUTH (Turner) 12 Oct. 1801, in her 66th year. They are buried in the old Briggs Burial Hill nearly opposite to where they lived in Pembroke. "Ancient Landmarks of Pembroke" says:



THE BRICK-KILNS, ICHABOD THOMAS SHIPYARD, PEMBROKE, MASS.

See "History of Shipbuilding on North River, Mass."

The Anthony Collamore site was conveyed to his son, *Thomas Barker*, born in 1686, who erected a large house on the estate and lived there with his numerous family. His wife was Bethia, daughter of Isaac Little of Marshfield, and sister of Hon. Isaac Little of Pembroke. In 1714 he is called *Captain Barker*. He held many public offices; was Representative five years, and long a Justice of the Peace, ranking as "Gentleman." . . .

Though *Colonel Barker* [probably a son] was a loyalist, his wife was an ardent patriot. She presided at the meeting of those Edenton women who drew up their famous agreement to *drink no more tea till the tax should be removed*. When the British soldiers seized a horse from her stables, she cut the halter with a sword and set the animal free. Elizabeth Barker, only surviving child of Colonel Thomas, born in 1745, was early left an orphan. She was educated by her kinsman, Governor Peyton Randolph of Williamsburg, in Virginia, and refusing offers of marriage from Thomas Jefferson and Patrick Henry, married Col. William Tunstall of Carolina, where her descendants still live.

In 1737 Ichabod Thomas, shipwright, a native of Marshfield, bought for £108, from James Randall, a blacksmith, the old Thomas Barker farm at Pembroke.

Captain Thomas had sought employment on the North River when shipbuilding was in its prime. He married Ruth, daughter of Capt. Benjamin Turner, a pioneer in that business, and himself became one of the most noted builders on that stream (see "Shipbuilding on the North River", by Briggs).

Dr. Anthony Collamore's son, Henry H. Collamore, Esq., succeeded to the estate and lived there until about 1899, when he moved to Fall River. Mr. Collamore was much in public office, and served as selectman, 1883-94. His house was later the summer residence of Hon. James M. W. Hall of Newton.

The following is taken from "Plymouth County History:"

Capt. Benjamin Turner came to Pembroke about 1730 and built vessels at the Brick Kilns. His sons and grandsons also carried on business there. Seth Briggs, Enos Briggs, Elisha Briggs, Alden Briggs and Luther Briggs all followed that trade successfully on the same spot. The work was mostly carried on by the Briggses and Turners, furnishing a market for all the lumber and employment for all the men in all the country round.

Soon after the Revolutionary War Capt. Ichabod Thomas built the whaling vessel (*Maria*) that proved very famous. As many as five square-rigged ships were on the stocks in this yard at one time, being so close that one could step from the staging of one vessel to that of another. . . .

Near the North River bridge, on the estate recently occupied by Lorenzo Sherman, Capt. Thomas Turner built whale ships for the Nan-

tucket and New Bedford trade. All these vessels were small, not exceeding 300 tons in size.

On the Pembroke side of North River were shipyards of George Turner, Thomas Turner and Nathan Cushing.

Down the river, below the Third Herring Brook, was the yard of Elijah Barstow and Capt. Thomas Waterman, — the Sunset Hill yard. After Captain Waterman died, his son, Thomas B. Waterman, continued the business of shipbuilding at the same place with Mr. Barstow, and these gentlemen continued long after all others had abandoned the business, and built the last vessel on the river.

ADMINISTRATION

Vol. 27, Page 267

To Ichabod⁵ Thomas Jr. of Pembroke, Shipwright; Whereas Ichabod⁴ Thomas, late of Pembroke, Gentleman, having died intestate, the said Ichabod Thomas Jr. is appointed the administrator of said deceased's goods, chattels &c. He is to render an inventory before June 22nd 1788 and likewise to furnish an account of his administration before March 22, 1789. Given March 22, 1788.

INVENTORY

Vol. 30, Page 311

Wearing apparel, gun & Sundries	7	14	6
Bibles & other books; chairs, 2 tables, beds etc.	16	12	6
Tables, desk, plate crockery, case drawers, pewter, beds etc.	16	12	8
Bed sheeting, table cloths, towels, pewter, chairs, iron	19	14	3
Brass ware, provisions & sundries, saddles & bridles	18	13	0
Cart, wheels & farming tools, Horses — 1 yoke oxen	53	17	0
1 Cow called <i>Christophus</i> , 5 do. 6 young cattle, 4 swine	31	8	0
	<hr/>		
	164	11	10
Real Estate & Pew in Church	660	0	0
	<hr/>		
	£824	11	10

Pembroke, March 7th 1788

Seth Briggs, Seth Hatch, Rob^t L. Eells.

WIDOW'S DOWER

Vol. 30, Page 340

Set off to *Ruth Thomas*, the widow of the deceased as her dower or thirds about *Twenty one acres of land which the said Ichabod bought of James Randal, also about eight acres and three quarters which Ichabod bought from Dr. Jeremiah Hall.* Excepting and reserving for the heirs the Easterly half of the garden together with about one acre & 31 square poles of land on which the barn stands, bounded as follows, beginning at the

centre of the wall, thence ranging South 12 degrees & $\frac{1}{2}$, West 7 poles & 17 links to a small apple tree, thence North 76 degrees & $\frac{1}{2}$ west 6 poles, thence South 84 degrees & $\frac{1}{2}$, west 6 poles & 11 links thence North 44 degrees & $\frac{1}{2}$ East 3 poles, then South 58 degrees & $\frac{1}{2}$, East 13 poles to the centre of wall aforesaid, excepting & reserving to the widow a part of barn, the part on the North side floor together with the privilege of barn-floor & of passing, also to widow South part of the dwelling house, front part thereof lower room, chamber over it, also the garret, privilege of the kitchen & oven, also one third part of the cellar, also the privilege of passing & repassing etc. Pembroke, April 21st 1788.

Children of CAPT. ICHABOD⁴ and RUTH TURNER THOMAS:

12. i. ICHABOD⁵ (*Capt. Ichabod, Jr.*), b. 23 Oct. 1761; m. POLLY THOMAS.

ii. Sarah, b. 8 Nov. 1763; m. 13 Dec. 1787 Rev. Levi Whitman of Wellfleet, Mass., a relative of Rev. Kilborn Whitman of Pembroke. Sarah Thomas was his first wife, and after her death, 17 Dec. 1803, at the birth of her eleventh child, Rev. Levi Whitman m. 1807 Dorothy (Drew), widow of Sarah's brother, Charles Thomas. Rev. Mr. Whitman was born in 1748, and died in Kingston, Mass., 7 Nov. 1838, ae. 90 years.

Sarah⁵ Whitman, dau. of Rev. Levi and Sarah (Thomas), b. 24 Feb. 1790, m. Albion K. Parris, who was Governor of Maine in 1822 when Lafayette visited there. In 1852 he was mayor of the city of Portland. Mrs. Parris died in Washington, D. C., in Jan. 1883, ae. 93.

iii. Benjamin, b. about 1764, "followed the sea."

iv. Charles⁵, b. 31 Aug. 1765 in Pembroke, m. in Kingston, 27 Mar. 1788, Dorothy Drew, b. in Kingston about 1763, dau. of William Drew. They moved to Macomb, McDonough County, Ill. After the death of Charles Thomas, his widow Dorothy m. (2) 16 Apr. 1807, Rev. Levi Whitman (see Sarah Thomas). By her second marriage to the Rev. Mr. Whitman, Dorothy (Drew) Thomas had a son, Thomas Whitman, b. 1809, who d. in infancy. Mrs. Dorothy Whitman d. in Boston 4 Feb. 1840, ae. 77 years.

Charles⁶ Thomas, son of Charles and Dorothy (Drew) Thomas, was b. 23 Oct. 1788; enlisted as an artificer in Captain *Walbach's Company, United States Artillery, in the spring of 1814*; was discharged 25 Apr. 1815, and d. 20 Jan. 1818 in his 30th year.

George⁶ Thomas, son of Charles and Dorothy (Drew) Thomas, called George, 2d, was b. 22 Dec. 1790, and by special act of the court, on 10 Mar. 1827 had Priest added to his name, making it George Priest Thomas. He m. (1), 5 Apr. 1809 Maria West Foster, b. 1791, dau. of Robert and Mary (West) Foster. She d. in Boston 27 Jan. 1847, ae. 56 years. He m. (2) 25 June 1851

Mary Pratt Nichols of Reading, Mass. George P. Thomas d. in Boston 24 Jan. 1867, ae. 77 years. An extended account of the twelve children of George Priest Thomas is given in Briggs' "Shipbuilding on North River."

- v. Christopher⁵, b. 4 Aug. 1767 in Pembroke, lived in Pembroke. He m. 15 July 1784 Huldah Dwelley, dau. of Jedediah Dwelley a soldier in the French War, who married Lydia Soule. In a passport issued to him by the American Consulate, London, England, in 1803, when Christopher Thomas was 36 years of age, he was thus described: "Color, fair; height, 6 feet; mark, top of right arm; eyes, gray; nose, large; mouth, small; chin, long; hair, light brown."

Christopher and Huldah (Dwelley) Thomas had a dau. Alice⁶ (Eley), b. 26 Oct. 1785 in Pembroke, who m. 22 Sept. 1806 Thomas Barstow of Scituate, b. in Scituate 2 Jan. 1783, son of Thomas and Lydia (Sylvester) Barstow, who lived on the Fox Hill farm of the Barstows on North River. Thomas⁷, Jr., and Alice (Thomas) Barstow lived in New Bedford, where he died. A dau., Elizabeth Dwelley Barstow, m. Capt. Stephen M. Potter of New Bedford.

- vi. Ruth, b. 12 Apr. 1769; m. (1) Dr. Charles Turner 7 Jan. 1789, who was b. 8 Sept. 1766, the oldest son of Thomas Turner of Pembroke and his wife, Joanna Phillips. They lived in the old Robert Barker house on Washington Street, North Pembroke, where the house of Nathaniel Gross stood later. Dr. Charles Turner was instantly killed by a fall from his horse at night, on 9 Aug. 1804.

Mrs. Ruth (Thomas) Turner m. (2) 1 Mar. 1812 Jabez Morse of Pembroke, an innkeeper.

Ruth Thomas⁴ and Dr. Charles Turner had three children: (1) Charles⁵ Turner, b. 8 June 1789, was educated at Cambridge and d. 12 Mar. 1812. (2) Joanna⁵ Turner, b. 10 Aug. 1791, and d. 10 Nov. 1791. (3) John⁵ Phillips Turner, b. 12 Sept. 1792, went to Coals Mouth, Kenawha County, West Virginia. By her second husband, Jabez Morse, Ruth Thomas had a daughter, Ruth Turner Morse, b. 24 June 1813, who m. (int.) 4 June 1843, Freeman Hinckley of Barnstable. She m. (2) — Bacon, and in 1889 was living at 4 Weld Avenue, Boston.

- vii. John Thomas, b. 1773; probably followed the sea.
- viii. William, b. 1775; d. 12 Oct. 1802, ae. 27 years.

11. REV. NEHEMIAH⁴ THOMAS (6. *Nehemiah*³, *Israel*², *John*¹) was born 3 Feb. 1766 in Marshfield, graduated Harvard College 1789, and was educated for the ministry there. He was ordained at Scituate, and installed over the First Church in 1792, and served as its pastor until his death. He resided for a few

years in the "old parsonage" on Brook Street near the Harbor, but later built for himself a house on Brushy Hill, Greenbush, later the home of Enoch Cole, and now owned by the latter's grandchildren.

Rev. Nehemiah Thomas married (int.) 11 Sept. 1795, Hannah Otis, born 24 Feb. 1767, daughter of Dr. James and Lucy (Cushing) Otis. She died 28 Mar. 1831 from a "most malignant kind of inflammatory sore throat."

A portrait of the Rev. Mr. Thomas hangs in the Cudworth house (Scituate Historical Society house) at Scituate Centre. This portrait hung for many years after Mr. Thomas' death in the dining room of the Dr. Cushing Otis house, and was presented to Chief Justice Cushing Chapter D. A. R. by James H. Barnard. The back of the canvas bears this inscription, —

Nehemiah Thomas aged 28, June 10th 1794. Ordained Nov. 14, 1792. This likeness was painted by Dr. Ruphus Hathaway of Duxbury June 2, 1794.

Dr. Hathaway's granddaughter, Mrs. Judith Smith, wife of Sylvanus Smith of East Boston and formerly of Pembroke, the shipbuilder who built the bark *Amy Turner* on which L. Vernon Briggs sailed around Cape Horn in 1880, related many interesting facts of her grandfather, who, when his medical studies were nearly completed, began to seek a location in which to establish a practice. He traveled from town to town for this purpose, and paid his way by painting portraits.

Rev. Nehemiah Thomas died suddenly 9 Aug. 1831. After his death his homestead was sold, and of its furnishings, two chairs are now preserved in the Kent Memorial house in Norwell Village, a loan from L. Cabot Briggs, son of the donor of the memorial.

Children of Rev. Nehemiah⁴ Thomas and Hannah Otis:

- i. Henry, b. 14 Dec. 1796; entered *Harvard College in 1813*, and d. in Cambridge 1 Nov. 1813. "He was a youth of uncommon acquirements and of great promise. His classmates erected a beautiful monument as a testimony of their respect to his memory, in the churchyard at Cambridge, and his college friend, the Rev. Ira Henry Thomas Blanchard of Harvard, paid the respect of his lost friend of procuring legal permission to assume his name." (Deane's "History of Scituate.")
- ii. Harriet, b. 1 Sept. 1798; d. unm.
- iii. Lucy Otis, b. 30 Aug. 1800; d. unm.
- iv. Francis, M.D., b. 13 Apr. 1804; *grad. Harvard College 1829*, and in 1831 was a student and assistant attendant with Dr. Wyman at the

McLean Hospital for the Insane; he m. 14 Apr. 1834 Sally Delano Dunbar, b. 24 Jan. 1801, dau. of Jesse, Esq., and Sally (Witherell) Dunbar of Scituate, and resided in the "Dunbar mansion" on Front Street, Scituate Harbor, facing "Will James' Dock," and commanding a beautiful view of harbor, Cedar Point with its lighthouse, and the First Cliff. Sally (Dunbar) Thomas d. 11 Feb. 1835 in Curacoa, W. I., a few weeks after the birth of a dau., Sarah Helen Thomas, who d. early. Dr. Thomas practiced medicine in Scituate for many years, and was succeeded in his practice by Dr. Frank Thomas Vinal. The Dunbar mansion house is now (1936) the residence of Capt. E. E. Edson.

There was a Joseph Thomas who deeded for £4,000 his property on Curtis, or Buttonwood, Hill, in 1780, to James³ and Thomas Barker Briggs, a relative of Mercy⁶ Little Thomas, daughter of Ichabod⁵ Thomas. Joseph was a tanner, lived in Plymouth, and married Abigail, probably daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Curtis, born 1703. Joseph and Abigail Thomas were very old when they sold this property and retained the use of one room, but they lived but a short time after the sale. The property was deeded to Samuel in 1684 by his father, Thomas of York.

12. MAJOR BRIGGS⁵ THOMAS (7. *Anthony*⁴, *John*³, *Samuel*², *John*¹), born 20 Apr. 1719 in Marshfield, was a *soldier in the Revolution*, and was one of those who signed the pledge not to drink tea until the tax was removed, a pledge which he faithfully kept.

REVOLUTIONARY SERVICE

BRIGGS THOMAS, Marshfield, *1st Lieutenant*, Capt. Thomas Turner's Co. of militia, Col. John Baley's regt.; pay abstract for mileage, dated Jan. 10, 1776; mileage for 69 miles allowed said Thomas; company reported encamped with Brig.-Gen. Thomas's brigade; also, 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Turner's Co.; in list of officers of Col. Cary's regt. raised to reinforce the army until April 1, 1776; also, 1st Lieutenant, Capt. Thomas Dingley's 13th (Marshfield) Co., 2d Plymouth Co. regt. of Mass. militia; in list of officers chosen by the several companies in said regiment, as returned by John Cushing, Jr., and others, dated Hanover, May 8, 1776 ordered in Council May 10, 1776, that said officers be commissioned; reported commissioned May 10, 1776; also, Lieutenant, Capt. John Turner Jr's Co.; in list of officers appointed to command the several companies of a regiment drafted from Brig. Gen. Joseph Cushing's brigade and Brig. Gen. Otis's (Barnstable Co.) brigade, to be commanded by Col. John Cushing Jr., and ordered to march to Rhode Island, as returned by Joseph Cushing to Maj. Gen. Warren, dated Hanover, Oct. 30, 1776; in Company raised in Pembroke and Marshfield; also,

Lieutenant, Capt. John Turner's Co., Col. John Cushing's regt.; engaged Sept. 21, 1776; service, 2 mos.; Company marched to Rhode Island. ("Mass. Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. XV, p. 579.)

He married 1779 Abigail Thomas, daughter of Deacon Nehemiah and Abiah (Winslow) Thomas (see 6. Nehemiah). They lived on what was known as the ancient "Beadle estate" in the Rexham section, near the old mouth of the North River. A descendant, John Dana Thomas, now occupies the house as a summer home (1936). Major Briggs Thomas died 15 July 1833.

Children of Major Briggs and Abigail (Thomas) Thomas:

- i. Waterman, b. —; m. Sarah Deering Thomas, dau. of Capt. John and Lucy (Baker) Thomas (see William Thomas line). He succeeded to the homestead at Rexham, later that of his daughter, Sarah Ann Thomas, who m. 26 Nov. 1840 Deacon Elijah Ames. Sarah Ann Thomas and Elijah Ames had a family of 10 children. Their son, Elijah Ames, went to Grant, Mont., where he engaged in the cattle business. When he retired from business he returned to Marshfield, and built a house on Tea Rock Hill, in which his wife and daughter now (1936) reside.

The two youngest children of Deacon Elijah and Sarah (Thomas) Ames, Lucy T. and Ray Ames, lived in the old homestead, which was sold by them to John Dana Thomas, whose wife is Miriam Baldwin Nash, a granddaughter of Deborah (Briggs) Nash.

John Thomas, a son of Waterman and Sarah (Deering) Thomas, settled in Boston. He was the grandfather of John Dana and Frank Rogers Thomas. (See Deborah Briggs.)

Sept. 24, 1779. Grant of £4000 to Col. Waterman Thomas to procure Provisions for the soldiers now doing duty at Campden, also to be delivered to him Fifteen thousand weight of Bread and one hundred and twenty Gallons of New England Rum for the use of said Troops. (Mass. Records, Vol. 39, p. 506.)

Sept. 30, 1779. Whereas it has been represented to this Court by the Commissary General that it is not in his power to comply with the order of this Court for supplying Col. Waterman Thomas with fifteen thousand weight of Bread & one hundred & twenty Gallons of Rum and also that he can not supply the workmen of the fortifications with rum until he shall receive a supply thereof — Therefore Resolved that the Commissary General be and is hereby directed to deliver to Col. Thomas or his order, so much Bread, Flour and Rice as will amount in the whole to Fifteen thousand weight apportioning the Quantity of each as the public stores will admit, and it is also Resolved that the Commissary be and he is hereby directed and impowered to borrow such a quantity of Rum as will supply the said Thomas with the aforesaid one hundred and twenty gallons and also for the supply of the workmen of the fortifications. (Vol. 40, p. 20.)

20 Sept., 1781. In the House of Representatives. Waterman Thomas of Thomaston having removed to Boston, John Langdon was appointed in his

room as one of the Committee . . . to inquire into certain facts sett forth in a Representation of the Selectmen of Boothbay — The said Waterman Thomas being unable to attend such service. (Vol. 43, p. 21.)

- ii. Lucy, b. —; m. Nathaniel Pratt of East Bridgewater.
- iii. Abiah, b. —; m. Israel Hatch, b. 1782, son of Amos and Hannah (Phillips) Hatch. She died 1866. A dau., Luey B. Hatch, m. 1834 Charles W. Macomber, son of Dr. Charles Macomber, *Harvard College* 1799, who m. Dorothy Hitehoeck, dau. of *Dr. Gad Hitchcock* of Hanson. (2) Sarah W. Hatch m. (1) Nahum Packard of Marshfield and (2) Robert Sylvester of Hanover. (3) Elizabeth Hatch m. Magnus Ventress 1848. Mr. Ventress left a sum of money to build a hall and town offees for the town of Marshfield, known as the "Ventress Memorial," near the Fair Grounds. (4) Caroline Hatch, b. 18 June 1822, d. 19 Nov. 1842.
- iv. Abigail, b. —; m. Dr. Isaac Paine. They settled in Marshfield.

13. CAPT. ICHABOD⁵ THOMAS, JR. (10. *Ichabod*⁴, *Nathan*³, *Samuel*², *John*¹), born in Pembroke 23 Sept. 1761, succeeded his father as a shipbuilder at the Brick Kiln yard. He lived in the house which he had inherited from his father until he retired from business, when the old home was sold to Dr. Anthony Collamore. On 14 Nov. 1784 he married Polly Thomas, daughter of Isaac and Mary (Waite) Hatch Thomas of Hanson, of the William Thomas line, the ceremony being performed by the same minister who had officiated at his father's marriage, the Rev. Thomas Smith. Capt. Ichabod Thomas, Jr., died 11 Nov. 1859.

In 1791 *Ichabod Thomas, Jr.*, was commissioned by Governor John Hancock, *Ensign in 2d Regiment, 1st Brigade, 5th Division of the Massachusetts Militia, comprising the counties of Plymouth, Barnstable, Bristol, Dukes and Nantucket*. In 1795 he was appointed by Gov. Samuel Adams *Lieutenant in the same regiment*, and in 1802 appointed *Captain by Governor Caleb Strong*. The muster roll of his Company for the year 1804 contains the names of three commissioned officers, four sergeants and musicians, and fifty-six men. Each year, on the first Tuesday of the month of May, his Company was called together for inspection. On 1 Mar. 1807, at his own request, his resignation was accepted, and he was honorably discharged.

Capt. ICHABOD, Jr., learned his trade of shipbuilding from his father, and built with him at the Brick Kiln yards. Between 1788 and 1805 his uncle, Calvin Turner, a famous shipbuilder, built next him in the same yard. Captain Ichabod undoubtedly had a part in building many of the well-known ships turned out

Francis Bernard

FRANCIS BERNARD, Esq:
Captain General and Governor in Chief, in and
over His Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts*
Bay in New-England, and Vice-Admiral of the same.



To *Richard Thomas* Esq. — Greeting.

By Virtue of the Power and Authority in and by His Majesty's Special Commission to
Me granted to be Captain General, &c. over this said Province of the *Mass*
Bay in New-England, I do by these Presents (reposing special
Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and good Conduct) constitute and appoint you the said
Richard Thomas, ————— to be Captain of the First of the second
Regiment of the Militia in the County of *Essex* at *Worcester* in the said Province.

You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the Duty of a Captain
in leading, ordering and exercising said ————— in Arms both inferior Officers and
Soldiers and to keep them in good Order and Discipline, and they are hereby commanded to obey you
as their Captain, ————— and you are yourself to observe and follow such Orders and Instructions, as
you shall from time to time receive from your Colonel or other superior Officer, your superior Officers and
Soldiers, pursuant to the Commission in this behalf bearing.

Given under my Hand and Seal at Arms, at BOSTON, the 2th
Day of *November* In the 3rd Year of the Reign of His
Majesty King GEORGE, the THIRD, Anno Domini, 1765.

By His Excellency's
Command,

Province of the
Massachusetts Bay

John Hancock Esq. is appointed to be Captain of the
first of the second Regiment of the Militia in the County of *Essex* at *Worcester* in the said Province.
of Portsmouth, instead of the oath of Allegiance and Supremacy Required & Subscribed
Test, or Declaration, also took the oath of Allegiance and the Oath Relating to other
Government Bills before us the subscribers being empowered to administer the
same by Deedimus from his Excellency the Governor.

Thos. Clapp
David Stockbridge

COMMONWEALTH
OF
MASSACHUSETTS.

By His EXCELLENCY

John Hancock, Esq.

GOVERNOUR OF THE COMMONWEALTH OF
MASSACHUSETTS.

To *Richard Thomas* Esq. — Greeting.

YOU being appointed Ensign of Company in the second Regiment
of the Militia of this Commonwealth, comprehending the
first of the second Division of the Militia of this Commonwealth,
By Virtue of the Power vested in me, I do by these Presents, (reposing special
Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and good Conduct) Com-
mission you accordingly. — You are therefore carefully, and diligently to dis-
charge the Duty of an Ensign in leading, ordering and exercising said
Company in Arms, both inferior Officers and Soldiers; and to keep
them in good Order and Discipline, and they are hereby commanded to
obey you, as their Ensign, ————— and you are yourself to observe and
follow such Orders and Instructions, as you shall from Time to Time receive
from me, or your superior Officers.

John Hancock

GIVEN under my Hand, and the Seal of the said Commonwealth, the 2th Day
of *November* in the Year of our LORD, 1765, and in the 3rd Year
of the Independence of the United States of AMERICA.

By His Excellency's Command,

John Hancock

by these masters. The first vessel of which we know he was the master builder was the schooner *Dolphin*, 49 tons, built in 1799 at Pembroke. She was commanded by Capt. Prince Howes, and was engaged in trading. In 1812 she brought corn from Virginia in the winter, and in the summer she was used for fishing. During the war with England, while under the command of Capt. Elisha Howes, she was captured by the British fleet off Penobscot River, Maine. They took her crew and towed her for a while, but as she was in ballast and not of much value, they gave her up.

At various times *Ichabod Thomas, Jr.*, built in partnership with Elisha Briggs and with William Cushing. He and Calvin Turner were the "Co." of William Cushing & Co. Previous to 1806 Ichabod⁵ Thomas entered into partnership with his uncle, Calvin Turner, and in that year they built the brig *Only Son*, 170 tons, Ebenezer Nickerson of Provincetown master. Soon after this they gave up building in Pembroke and built together in Hanover. *The Rising Sun*, owned by Freeman and Ebenezer Burgess of Harwich, was built by Calvin Turner and Ichabod Thomas in Hanover in 1806. (For other ships see Briggs' "History of Ship-building on North River.")

The Indian trading post established at Kennebec in Maine was the most important business enterprise in which the Pilgrims entered. The original proprietors were William Bradford, Myles Standish, Isaac Allerton, Edward Winslow, William Brewster, John Howe, John Alden and Thomas Prince. (See Governor Bradford's "History.")

Governor Bradford, in his "History of Plimouth Plantation," gives a very interesting account of many difficulties attending the management of the Kennebec Plantation. Some of the people at Massachusetts Bay, as well as the Dutch settlers at New Amsterdam, were continually interfering with the trade, and Thomas Morton of Wollaston fame, an unscrupulous Englishman, found it profitable to supply the Indians with firearms, ammunition, etc., until they became a menace to the colonists.

Governor Bradford tells us of a trading voyage of "the barke" laden with commodities to the Kennebec in 1634 in which "the sole right to the trad" was disputed by one Hocking of Massachusetts Bay. Hocking had anchored in the Kennebec River with the purpose of intercepting the Indian trade before it reached the trading post. During the altercation that ensued, Hocking shot and killed Moses Talbot, one of the crew of the bark, whereupon his friend, John Alden, seized a musket and shot Hocking. In the words of Governor Bradford, "One of the fellows who

loved him well, could not hold but shot Hocking dead." This was John Alden, who was later arrested and detained at Boston by the Bay government, and, oddly enough, it was his old rival, Myles Standish, who was dispatched to the Bay Government to secure his release. However devoted John may have been to Priscilla, evidently his life was not all poetry. John Alden had his troubles.

Feb. 13, 1816. In Senate. On the petition of inhabitants of Brownville and of *Ichabod Thomas and others* — Resolved — that the Governor and council be authorized to nominate and appoint a Committee who shall be authorized to survey and if the public good requires it to lay out a road beginning at the northern extremity of the road now made through the Indian town ships, so called, on the west side of the Penobscot River, and thence running north a little westerly through the land belonging to the Commonwealth, to the township number two, in the seventh range north of the Waldo patent; thence in the nearest practicable and convenient direction through said township Number three in the same range, and to the mills in said Brownville; thence the nearest convenient direction to the township of Williamsburgh; thence to the land belonging to the Commonwealth in the south part of township number six in the ninth range; thence through said township to the land of the Commonwealth lying north of said range, Consulting in the general direction of said road the advantage of the Commonwealth in selecting favourable ground for a proper avenue to the great body of the lands. (Mass. Gen. Court Rec., Vol. 60, p. 450.)

Ichabod Thomas was then living in Pembroke, and was building vessels at Brick Kiln Lane yard.

The following is a letter from Mrs. Joshua (Mary) Perry to her cousin, Miss Marcia Thomas of Marshfield:

HANSON, Dec. 11th, 1859

DEAR COUSIN MARCIA: — My Father Ichabod Thomas was born October 23^d 1761 and died Nov. 11 1859 his fathers name was Ichabod, and his mothers name was Ruth Turner, daughter of Capt. Benjamin Turner, Capt. of a troop of horse, his father died aged 55, & his mother 65 years, his father was a ship builder, and my Father learned the trade of him. My father remembered well this last summer, about the ship his father built in the revolutionary war, called the Maria, a notice of which appeared in the papers last summer, as arriving in New Bedford from a three years cruise in the Indian Ocean, as being built in Pembroke for a privateer, was bought by W. Rotch a merchant of Nantucket, was used as a whale ship, it needed repairs after some time, & Mr. Rotch told his son in law Samuel Rodman he would give it to him, he said he would not accept it, Mr. Roach then said the ship was built by his old friend, Ichabod Thomas & should be repaired, he made the necessary

Muster-Roll, of Capt.

Ichabod Thomas

Company of Foot, 1804

Officers' Names.	Muskets.	Bayonets.	Cartridge Boxes.	Iron Rods.	Scabbards and Belts.	Flints.	Wires and Drusks.	Knapacks.	Cartridges with Balls.	Rifle Guns.	Balls.	Pounds of Powder.
<i>Ichabod Thomas</i>												
<i>Charles Beston</i>												
<i>Briggs Hatch</i>												
<i>Humphrey Sumner</i>												
<i>Miles Stanish</i>												
<i>George Humphrey</i>												
<i>Joseph Estes</i>												
<i>Charles Little</i>												
<i>John Fish</i>												
<i>Comfort May</i>												
<i>Charles Jones</i>												
<i>Ichabod Shuford</i>												
<i>Samuel Bushup Jr</i>												
<i>Isaac Hatch</i>												
<i>Ephraim Tubbs</i>												
<i>Henry Ford</i>												
<i>Elias Cox</i>												
<i>Edward Bates</i>												
<i>William Standish Jr</i>												
<i>Thomas Bates</i>												
<i>Caleb Bates Jr</i>												
<i>Joshua Magoun</i>												
<i>Samuel Fish</i>												
<i>Asa Keen Jr</i>												
<i>Samuel Baker</i>												
<i>Samuel Reed</i>												
<i>Samuel Living Jr</i>												
<i>Samuel Ladd</i>												
<i>Archibald Talor</i>												
<i>William Tabor</i>												

repairs, & then offered it again, it was then accepted, her register is dated A.D. 1782 & she is consequently in her 77th year.

My father was the oldest of 8 children 6 sons & 2 daughters. My mothers name was Thomas, but her ancestors lived in Hanson, and were not related to my father who lived in Marshfield. My mother lived to be 80 years & 6 months and died 1840. Mr. (Joshua) Perrys Father & Mother were born in 55, his father I believe was 92 when he died, & his mother almost 100 wanting a little more than two months. Four aged people to live in one house. My father enjoyed good health with the exception of a difficulty in his throat, he had this difficulty for years, he was anxious to live, he said, everything looked pleasant round him, & he did not feel quite ready to go. He would be eating from an hour, to an hour & a half, each meal. Father was a great reader, his general knowledge of geography was good, he had locality large, he knew about foreign ports, & places, better than my uncles (who were sailors,) they said. His knowledge of history was good, & a reader of newspapers untill a short time before his death, he said he could not remember, & could not see very well, & must give up reading, he always shaved himself when well, his last birthday he shaved himself for the last time, & did it well, his hand was steady. We were all the children he had living, he had six, three died in infaney, we had one brother who lived to be thirteen years old, father died easy, at last, he gasped for breath a few times & was gone. Father was a Master Ship builder he built in partnership with Mr. William Cushing, & Mr. Elisha Briggs & his Uncle Calvin Turner, I recollect, but how many ships he built I do not know, he built at the ship yard at the brick kiln, a place on the north river, about three quarters of a mile from his house. About two years after I was married, my father and mother came to live with me, in (Maine) my mother lived about 20 years & my father nearly forty with us. I was sorry you could not come & see us while father lived, but hope when the snow comes, you will wrap yourself up warm and invite the sailour boy & his sister to bring you up and see us, I shall not be able to go and see you, until next summer. Please give my love to all the friends, and accept much yourself, Mr. Perry wishes to be remembered to all.

Most Affectionately Yours,

MARY PERRY.

If you have any numbers of that Antiquarian paper, I should like to see them some time, & like to hear from you again.

P.S. You will see by the date of this, how long it is since I began it, I would now add, that father, this last autumn, told the anecdote of Mr. Cobb of Kingston, when he was an hundred years old, he sent for a minister from Plymouth to preach the century sermon, Mr. Willis did not like it, and Mr. Cobb told him he should preach the next century sermon. Father then said if he should live to be an hundred, he should like to have his grandchild (Rev. Wm. T. Briggs) who is a minister of Princeton, preach a sermon. I send you fathers autograph.

This letter, which has been preserved seventy-five years, concerns two sisters, daughters of Ichabod⁵ Thomas, Jr.

Ichabod Thomas of Pembroke, shipwright, admin^r on estate of Ichabod Thomas of same, Gentⁿ, dec^d, for 196£ 18s. 5d. from Bailey Hall of same yeoman, meadow land in Pembroke next land sold Robert Barker & land of William Cushing. 12 March 1790. (Plymouth Records, Vol. 71, p. 90.)

Andrew Bradford, gentⁿ, Calvin Turner & Ichabod Thomas, shipwrights, all of Pembroke, and Polly Bradford, Sarah Turner & Polly Thomas, wives of aforesaid, for £90 from Alden Briggs, gentⁿ, of same, ½ of tract of land in Pembroke next Capt. Thomas Turner's and Seth Briggs' land, undivided with the above named Andrew, Calvin, Ichabod & Alden "as an absolute estate of inheritance." 26 March, 1792. (Vol. 72, p. 208.)

Ichabod Thomas of Pembroke, gentⁿ, vs. Christopher Thomas of Scituate, shipwright, execution for 20 pounds describes as belonging to Christopher — one ninth part of two thirds of dwelling house wherein Ichabod Thomas, late of Pembroke, died & lived being Easterly part of said house, &c, undivided with Ichabod Thomas, Sally Whitman, Charles Thomas, Ruthy Turner, Benjamin Thomas, John Thomas and William Thomas. Dated 11 June, 1794.

RUTH THOMAS, widow.
(Vol. 75, p. 193.)

Andrew & Mary Bradford, Alden & Marcy Briggs, & Ichabod & Polly (signed *Mary*) Thomas of Pembroke, gentleman, for \$350 from Calvin Turner of Pembroke, shipwright, all interest in two pieces of land in Pembroke with dwelling house and barn thereon now occupied by said Calvin Turner next Alden Briggs's garden & building yard & bounded by North River & Thomas Turner's building yard. 26 Apr. 1796. (Vol. 91, p. 12.)

Ichabod Thomas of Pembroke, Admin^r of Estate of Ichabod Thomas of same, gentⁿ, dec^d, for 196£ 18sh. 5d. from Robert Barker of same, gentⁿ, meadow land in same near land of Isaac Keen. 26 Sept. 1790. (Vol. 91, p. 92.)

Capt. Ichabod Thomas is described as a man of unusual intelligence and a "great reader." He was a lover of history and had a wide knowledge of geography; his brothers, who were sailors, said he knew more of foreign ports than they. He retired from active business about 1820, before he was 60, and he and his wife went to live with their daughter Mary and her husband, Joshua Perry, in Brooks, Maine, and afterwards returned with them to Hanson, Mass. Under Mrs. Perry's tender care they both lived to a ripe old age. Mrs. Thomas died 10 Apr. 1840. Her husband

survived her by nearly twenty years; he died 11 Nov. 1859, aged 98 years and 17 days. (See Briggs' "History of Shipbuilding on North River.")

Children of CAPT. ICHABOD⁵, JR., and POLLY (THOMAS) Thomas:

- i. Ichabod, b. — 1788; d. 15 Oct. 1801.
- ii. MERCY LITTLE, b. 25 Sept. 1791; m. 101. CUSHING OTIS BRIGGS. (See chapter on *Cushing Otis Briggs*.)
- iii. Mary, bpt. 4 July 1802; m. Joshua Perry (int.) 14 Feb. 1818. Joshua Perry was b. in Pembroke 27 Apr. 1788, son of Seth and Hannah (Josslyn) Perry. He was uncle of Edward Young Perry, the principal promoter of the Hanover Branch Railroad. After their marriage in 1818, Joshua and Mary Perry lived in Brooks, Maine, where Mr. Perry was in the lumber business. Here they were joined, about 1820, by Ichabod⁵ Thomas and his wife, who lived with them for nearly forty years, returning with them later to Hanson, Mass. They had no children. (See Chapter XIII.)

14. MARY THOMAS⁶ (13. *Ichabod*⁵, *Ichabod*⁴, *Nathan*³, *Samuel*², *John*¹), baptized 4 July 1802; married (int. 14 Feb. 1818) Joshua Perry.

Joshua Perry was born in Pembroke 27 Apr. 1788 (Cemetery Records, 1789), son of Seth and Hannah (Josselyn) Perry. He was an uncle of Edward Young (E. Y.) Perry, the principal promoter of the Hanover Branch Railroad. The Perrys lived in Brooks, Maine, and about two years after their marriage Mrs. Perry's parents, Capt. Ichabod Thomas, Jr., and wife Polly went to live with them there, after selling their Pembroke home to Dr. Anthony Collamore. After a few years Mr. and Mrs. Perry and her parents returned to Hanson, and added to their household the parents of Mr. Perry.

In a letter dated 1859, Mrs. Perry wrote to a cousin: "About two years after I was married, my father and mother came to live with me, in Maine. My mother lived about 20 years, and my father nearly forty with us. . . . My mother lived to be 80 years & 6 months, and died 1840. Mr. Perry's father & Mother were born in '55, his father I believe was 92 when he died, & his mother almost 100 wanting a little more than two months. Four aged people to live in one house. . . . Father was a great reader his general knowledge of geography was good, he had locality large, he knew about foreign ports & places, better than my uncles (who were sailors) they said. His knowledge of history was good & a reader of newspapers untill a short time before his death, he said he could not remember, & could not see very well, & must give up reading, he always shaved himself when well, his last birthday he shaved himself for the last time & did it well, his hand was steady." He died 11 Nov. 1859 aged 98 years 17 days.

They had no family.

Mary Perry writes her sister, Mrs. Cushing O. Briggs:

HANSON, May 3d, '60.

DEAR SISTER: — . . . The woman we now have seems to be kind-hearted, and the man, a Western man from Illinois of few words, formerly a schoolmaster there. Mr. Perry likes them very well; so do I. They have a stirring baby a year and a half old, only one object in view, to bring Father and Mother in subjection to her sovereign will and pleasure, which for the most part she succeeds in doing. Last week the man who made Father's and Mother's gravestones called to let us see them and take his pay on his way to put them up. They looked very well, I should think of good marble on the footstones, "Thomas", and on the headstones their names, ages, &c. . . . Our peach tree show the red blossoms in great abundance, and the strawberries look finely. Mr. Perry thinks our peonies and snowballs are showing signs of life. . . . From

Your affectionate Sister,

MARY PERRY.

HANSON Nov. 11th/60

DEAR SISTER: — *This day I am 66 years old, & also the anniversary of our fathers death*, I have thought & dreamed of him much of late, in imagination I see him on the bed, & am round him putting in his bricks adjusting his bed clothes, & arranging other things on his chest & chair for his convenience, one night I went in before retiring, to fasten his window, & to see that all was right, he said who is here? I said no one comes round you but me, he said I love to have you round me. Think of his shaving himself for the last time on his birthday. I should like to go on the hill & see where Father & Mother *Softly lie & as sweetly sleep, low in the ground*. If you should be able to come, do write me, or let Mary write, & if you should not, write me & let me know how you are. I never had a more pleasant visit at Boston than the last. Your children were so very thoughtful of our comfort, that I remember them all with increased affection.

Monday afternoon. I resume my pen I suppose *Hannah, & Lloyd & families will be with you Thanksgiving* give a great deal of love to all your children, & grandchildren, tell Hannah I remember her nice chamber that is waiting for me. Tell little Edwin he made me a pleasant call last summer. Emma & the little brothers will like a present of something perhaps. Tell *Lloyd* I think of little Hattie & should be most happy to see her ladyship, & Harrisons great noble Alderman that is to be as uncle Perry calls him. What a parade for the Prince (of Wales) in Boston. I should like to have *seen the 1200 Children & heard the music*, & should have had no objection to seeing the Prince. I have many things to say,

hope to see you and say them, if you should be very sick let me know it, I feel that life is uncertain.

Love to Mr. B. & Frank & yourself from Mr. P. & Your Humble Servant

MARY PERRY.

WILL OF JOSHUA PERRY

Be it remembered That I Joshua Perry of Hanson in the County of Plymouth and Commonwealth of Massachusetts Yeoman, being in good health and perfect memory but considering the uncertainty of this mortal life, and the certainty of death, do this Sixteenth day of March in the year of Our Lord One thousand eight hundred and forty-two, make publish and declare this instrument to be my last will and testament in manner following Viz.

First I give and devise to my nephew Edward Y. Perry, youngest son of my deceased brother Elijah Perry, the farm on which I now live which was deeded to me by my Father Seth Perry, reserving the improvement of said farm to my wife Mary Perry during her natural life, said farm is to be held liable to the faithful fulfilment of a certain Bond my Father Seth Perry and my mother Hannah Perry hold against me for their maintainance. To have and to hold the same to him the said Edward Y. Perry his heirs and assigns forever.

Item I give and devise to my said wife Mary Perry all the remainder of my Estate real & personal wherever the same may be found, with the improvement of the Farm above mentioned subject to the fulfilment of said Bond. To have and to hold the same to her my said wife her heirs and assigns forever. And lastly, I do constitute and ordain my said wif Mary Perry, sole Executrix of this my last Will & Testament.

I testimony whereof I do hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written.

JOSHUA PERRY Seal

Signed, sealed, published, pronounced, and declared by the said Joshua Perry, as and for his last will and testament, in the presence of us, who at his request and in his presence and in the presence of each other, have hereunto set our names as witnesses to the same

CUSHING O. BRIGGS

CHAS C. BRIGGS

HANNAH B. BRIGGS

CHAPTER XVI
DESCENDANTS OF WALTER BRIGGS
GENERATION VII

119. SARAH COLLIER⁶ BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁵, *Joseph*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 30 Sept. 1833 in Cohasset. She married 19 June 1853 Israel Cook Vinal, born in Scituate 19 Sept. 1829, son of Levi, Jr.⁷ (*Levi*⁶, *Jacob*⁵, *Jacob*⁴, *John*³, *John*², *Widow Anna*¹), and Judith (Cook) Vinal. Lived on Elm Street, Cohasset. She died 9 Dec. 1895.

Children of Sarah C. Briggs and Israel C. Vinal:

- i. JOSEPH BRIGGS VINAL, b. 1 May 1854; m. 2 July 1878 Ella J. Sargent.
- ii. KATE TILDEN VINAL, b. 17 Dec. 1855; prob. d. young (not mentioned in "History of Cohasset", 1909).
- iii. CLARA COOK VINAL, b. 6 May 1859; m. 9 June 1880 Lester Gilbert Willett, South Weymouth.
- iv. ISRAEL DAY VINAL, b. 21 Nov. 1860 (not mentioned in "History of Cohasset").
- v. CATHERINE HIGGINS VINAL, b. 27 Jan. 1864; m. 11 Mar. 1884 Charles F. Westgate, Boston.

120. CLARA BATES⁷ BRIGGS (78. *Captain Joseph*⁶, *Joseph*⁵, *Joseph*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 5 Oct. 1840 in Cohasset, and married 21 Nov. 1864 Henry Clay Mapes, born 1837 in Coxsackie, N. Y., who died in Cohasset 17 Oct. 1904. He was a conductor on the Duxbury and Cohasset (South Shore) Branch of the Old Colony Railroad (New York, New Haven & Hartford) for many years, where his courtesy and genial manner won him many friends. The Mapes family lived in the old Joseph Briggs house on Elm Street, Cohasset, which has been in possession of the Briggs family since 1750.

Children of Clara B. Briggs and Henry C. Mapes:

- i. GEORGE BRIGGS MAPES, b. 19 July 1865; is a conductor on the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad; lives in Joseph Briggs house; m. 11 June 1885 Carrie Edith Griffin of Gloucester, dau. of Oliver and Edith (Hutchins) Griffin. Their children: (1) Clara Adele, b. 14 Jan. 1886, m. 20 Nov. 1907, Albert M. Kimball of Hingham; (2) George Perry, b. 4 Mar. 1902; unm.
- ii. HARRY ELY MAPES, b. 8 July 1867; was in the employ of the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad for many years, department of real estate and rentals, of which he became the head; a *Representative to the General Court, 1905-07*; active in Cohasset town affairs, having been chief of fire department, on school committee, and chairman of selectmen. He died in Cohasset 24 Oct. 1925. Lived in one half of the Joseph Briggs house. He left no family. His wife was Mrs. Mary (Quinn) Johnson, who later married, as his second wife, the late Walter Shubruk of Cohasset.

121. NATHANIEL⁷ BRIGGS (80. *Ezra*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 6 May 1820 in Braintree. He married (int.) 17 Jan. 1841 Caroline Clark, born in 1821. He died in Weymouth 29 June 1849, aged 29 years.

Children of Nathaniel Briggs and Caroline Clark:

176. i. HENRY HARRISON, b. 1841; m. Betsey Jane Maxham.
177. ii. CHARLES, b. 1844; m. Angeline Lewis.
- iii. CAROLINE MARY, b. 1846; m. William Bates.
- iv. GEORGE N., b. 1848.

122. JOSEPH⁷ BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 18 Apr. 1821 in Hanover. He married 24 Nov. 1842 Mary T. Dwelley, born 10 Nov. 1821 in Hanover, daughter of Lemuel and Jane (Cushing) Dwelley. They lived in the Lemuel Dwelley house on the corner of Main and Union streets, Hanover, now (1936) William C. Whiting's. Joseph Briggs died 28 May 1869, and some years after his death his widow and

son, Charles W., built a new house on the opposite side of Main Street, nearly opposite Union Street.

Lemuel Dwelley was a descendant of Richard Dwelley, who came into Scituate before 1665, probably from Hingham. He had a farm about one mile north of the Third Herring Brook on River Street, Norwell, where Capt. Seth Foster, the shipbuilder, later lived, whose wife was Abigail, daughter of Dr. James Otis. (See Otis.) Richard's son, John Dwelley, married Rachel Buck, daughter of Cornet John Buck, 1693. They were the ancestors of the Dwelleys of Hanover. Lemuel Dwelley's wife, Jane Cushing, was a daughter of Col. David Cushing of Hingham.

Children of Joseph Briggs and Mary T. Dwelley:

- i. SARAH F., b. 18 Aug. 1843; d. 3 Apr. 1867; unm.
- 178. ii. JOSEPH AUSTIN, b. 8 May 1851; m. F. Ella Damon.
- 179. iii. CHARLES W., b. 15 July 1853; m. Ruthena Stockbridge.
- iv. LUCIA A., b. 28 Oct. 1858; d. 15 Sept. 1862.

123. JOHN GILMAN⁷ BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 11 Oct. 1823 in Hanover, and died 2 Mar. 1893 in Norwell. He resided in the Gorham Clapp house on South Street, Norwell, in the locality formerly known as "the Clapp neighborhood." He married 6 Sept. 1870 Ella G. Clapp, born 23 May 1852 in South Scituate, daughter of Stephen Gorham and Rachel (Sherman) Clapp. She is now living in Dorchester with her daughter, Mrs. Jacobs.

Stephen Gorham Clapp was a descendant of the sixth generation from Thomas Clap (Scituate, 1640), son of Stephen⁶ and Delight (Bowker), and grandson of Silvanus⁵ and Elizabeth (Benson) Clap. (Stephen Gorham⁷, Stephen⁶, Silvanus⁵, Nathaniel⁴, Deacon Stephen³, Samuel², Thomas¹.)

Children of J. Gilman Briggs and Ella G. Clapp:

- i. ELIZABETH C., b. 28 Apr. 1871; m. Charles O. Jacobs.
- 180. ii. JOHN HAROLD, b. 22 Aug. 1885; m. Helen A. McHale.

124. WILLIAM SOUTHARD⁷ BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Han-

over 21 Feb. 1826. He was a dealer in wood, with his brother, Richard P. Briggs. Under the name of Briggs Brothers they also for many years carried on a prosperous ice business in South Scituate and Hanover.

William S. Briggs married 15 Feb. 1871 Charlotte S. Gardner, born 17 May 1842, daughter of Hiram and Lucinda (Bailey) Gardner, who lived on the corner of Washington and Mill streets, Hanover. William S. Briggs lived on South Street, Norwell, in half of a two-family house built by the Briggs brothers (William S. and Richard P.). This house was burned some years after their deaths. It stood near the junction of South and Mill streets, on the site of a house later owned by C. Georgetti. William S. Briggs died in Norwell 25 Jan. 1910, aged 84 years. His widow is now (1936) living in Hingham.

Children of William S. Briggs and Charlotte S. Gardner:

181. i. SARAH FRANCES, b. 29 Dec. 1871; m. Wilbur F. Litchfield.
- ii. JOSEPH, b. 14 Apr. 1874; m. 9 Oct. 1906 Maud Whiting of Rockland, and lives on Main Street, Norwell. No children.
182. iii. WALTER SOUTHARD, b. 21 Dec. 1879; m. Charlotte Osborne.

125. RICHARD PAINE⁷ BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 21 Oct. 1828. He was associated in business with his brother, William S. Briggs (see 124), and lived in the southern half of the house which they built on South Street. For a number of years Richard P. Briggs was a selectman of the town of South Scituate (Norwell), and a Director of the South Scituate Savings Bank, 1896–1906. He married 2 Dec. 1860 Catherine Maria⁶ Clapp, born in Scituate 5 Sept. 1834, daughter of John⁵ and Lucy (Otis) Clapp, and granddaughter of Col. John⁴ Clap (John³, Deacon Stephen², Thomas¹), an officer in the French War and in the Revolution, whose wife was Chloe Stowers of Hingham. Lucy Otis, wife of John⁵ Clapp, was a daughter of Charles and Sarah (Tilden) Otis. (See Otis chapter.) Richard P.⁷

Briggs died in Norwell 4 May 1906. His wife died 7 Apr. 1900.

Children of Richard P.⁷ Briggs and Catherine M. Clapp:

183. i. NELLIE, b. 20 Sept. 1866; m. William L. Foster.
- ii. EDWIN CLAPP, b. 5 Apr. 1869; resides in Hingham; unm.

126. MARGARET⁷ HEUSSIER BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 29 Sept. 1838. She married 26 Nov. 1855 Joseph W. Ramsdell, born in Pembroke 14 Apr. 1830, son of Bartlett and Emily (Sturtevant) Ramsdell. He was an anchor-smith and lived in Pembroke. Joseph W. Ramsdell died in Pembroke 27 Nov. 1906. Margaret (Briggs) Ramsdell died 8 Dec. 1908 in Pembroke.

Children of Margaret H. Briggs and Joseph W. Ramsdell:

- i. EMMA M. RAMSDELL, b. 23 Mar. 1857; m. 14 Dec. 1881 Frederick W. Church (2d wife), son of William and Betsey Church of Hanover. Frederick W. Church m. (1) Minnie Murray, by whom he had a dau., Alice G. Church, who m. 1904 Joseph Foster Merritt of Norwell. Frederick W. Church lived in Ashmont. He d. in Pembroke 29 Feb. 1892. His wife, Emma Ramsdell Church, d. in Pembroke 9 Feb. 1896. Children of Frederick and Emma (Ramsdell) Church: (1) Joseph W. Church, b. 7 Aug. 1884; m. 9 Feb. 1918 Sophy Richmond Phillips, b. 11 July 1885, dau. of Morrill A. and Sophia R. (Simmons) Phillips of South Hanover, and granddaughter of Hon. Percz Simmons. They lived on the corner of Broadway and Water streets, South Hanover. They have children: (i) Margaret Church, b. 8 Apr. 1920; (ii) Sophy Richmond and Frances Tilden, twins, b. 25 Apr. 1922. (2) Arthur Briggs Church, b. 15 July 1886; was a lawyer in New York City; m. Elizabeth M. Avery of Gloucester; had World War service; Corporal, Co. A, 107th Inf., A. E. F.; 4 months in France; *killed in battle Sept. 29, 1918*, in which his regiment under General Haig broke the Hindenburg line at its strongest point, a battle won by terrible loss of life. Arthur Briggs Church Post, A. L., of Pem-

broke was named in his honor. (3) Ethel S. Church, b. 6 Feb. 1890; m. 26 July 1912 Richard L. Hayward of Hanover, b. England 2 Nov. 1882. Live in Pembroke. They have a son, Richard L. Hayward, Jr.

- ii. ANNIE BRIGGS RAMSDELL, b. 17 June 1859; d. 26 Dec. 1928 in Hanson. A teacher in Pembroke schools.

EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS OF ARTHUR BRIGGS CHURCH,
FROM FRANCE, TO HIS AUNT, ANNIE B. CHURCH, AT
SOUTH HANOVER

May 30, 1918. — . . . The people I have met and I have had a good opportunity to see more than many others are extremely hospitable and interesting. It is agreeable for me, for I speak French. The day after we got in here, we had to make preparation to billet the troops, and each company had to furnish one "non com" for the work. I was chosen for my company and so I went from house to house talking with the people and making arrangements. It was most enjoyable and by night fall I felt like a regular Frenchman. . . . The American soldiers shape up splendidly, and I want to say right now I am mighty proud that I am an American. The things you see and hear but which I cannot write, make the heart swell with pride. I am glad I am here trying to do my little bit to put the Boches out of business for good. And we'll do it. Away out there in America you have not yet the intense feeling there is here — an intensity of emotion and purpose which scatters any last lingering doubt of the righteousness of our cause as the blazing sun disperses the dew. Here life is real and mighty earnest for most of us

Sunday, June 30, 1918. — . . . The hot fighting is right ahead of us I can't tell you where we are but take my word for it that "Jerry" as the Tommies call the Boche will get all that's coming to him when we go after him. He'll find one of the best regiments in the world stacked up against him, and he'll see a bunch that never quits. I tell you a few days here are enough to make any man proud that he is an American. . . . While I write this letter the artillery is raising Hell this beautiful Sunday morning. My thoughts wander back to St. Andrew's Church where the congregation is now singing in perfect tranquility, the windows open, while here what a difference! Thank God that we are here to nail these butchers before they ever get to our own homes. No sacrifice of life or treasure is too great to make that our own may

be spared what these poor creatures have seen and lived through — or died in. You are too far away to realize what it is. . . . You must not allow yourself to worry about me. These are unusual times and we must make the best of it. We happen to be living at a time when the greatest cataclysm in the history of the world is taking place. None of our ancestors remember such days. We are a part of them. We have been called upon to save the world from the darkest, most sinister scourge that ever threatened it, and having set ourselves to that task we must see it through no matter what the cost in life or treasure. I cannot for a moment think of my own personal sacrifices or fortunes, the loss of a life of comparative ease, or perhaps the eventual cost to me of life or health. That we shall get out of it I have but little doubt. I feel better and stronger than ever in my life, haven't a fear in the world, and look forward to going through to the finish and coming home to sit with you by that old fireplace again. I may get a little used up, but I'll surely come back and will find you there waiting for me.

At the Front, Aug. 15, 1918. — . . . We are very very busy, and I am feeling pretty tired for we are hard at it these days. . . . The best news I can send is that I have been very lucky — not a scratch so far; I hope this will keep up. You people back home know more about the war than we do and get the news before we do. Of course you have read of the big victory at Amiens and the heavy fighting between the Aisne and the Marne. Things look good. . . . Things will come out all right. . . . Don't worry about me, and if they should get me, don't go moping around about it, any of you. Just say that I did my duty and died in a good cause. . . .

August 24, 1918. — . . . *Les Affaires marchent bien ici chez nous.* I continue to be among the lucky and to date am without a scratch and hard as nails. . . . We came out of the line a few days ago, and now are back of the line for a little rest and slackening up, and I am making the most of it. I have had a slight touch of Grippe the last few days, nothing at all serious and today am feeling better. By tomorrow I'll be quite *au fait* again. . . . The Yanks are coming over fast now. I see by the paper today that 1,440,000 are here. I haven't run across any of the boys from home yet, but that is not strange. . . . The fall season seems to have set in here. It has rained almost continuously the last three days and by a month more, we'll be knee deep in mud, I suppose. . . . It is raining hard again and in this little hole in the ground I find it hard to write. Besides it is getting dark. It's like one

of those cold, gray November days back home in the States. . . . Bye and bye around November, I am going to write Joe what I want for Christmas, for I expect to hang up my stocking along the Rhine somewhere, and I want something in it. . . .

Tuesday, Sept. 2, 1918. — Well, I am laid up for repairs in a hospital, just now. They call it influenza. . . . I am now over the worst of it. Have been in the hospital since the 25th of August and today is the first day I have been on my feet. . . . I am getting along nicely. . . . It may be three weeks before I get back to the company in the midst of hard fighting again. I got wet through just after coming out of the front line trenches the last time . . . then I thought I had shaken it off, but it came back again. So now I am getting rid of it and getting a good rest at the same time. And believe me, the rest does seem good. Here it is the first of September. It doesn't seem possible, for we have really had no summer here; the weather is much cooler than at home and before we know it, we'll be in the long cold winter spell, which I confess I look forward to with no pleasant anticipation. . . . I'll mend rapidly now. . . . I have been thinking about you all the week — home seems far far away, but then this bloody war is going good now, and I'll be home before very long. . . .

France, Sept. 12, 1918. — . . . They say that you worry all the time about me. Now you must cut that out. I am out of the hospital now and back with the company, back of the lines for a rest and getting on my feet in fine shape again. You must not worry about me. My good luck is still with me and its going to keep up. I'll be back with flags flying. . . . We are many miles from where I wrote you the last time. I came here alone and joined the company on Sunday last. Things are going pretty well with me. . . . The rainy season I guess has started in. We have had rain every day for the past four days. Just now the sun is out but the roads are muddy, and believe me the mud of France is some mud. . . . The Old U. S. A. looks better to me every day in my dreams and I look forward to sailing into New York harbor again one of the fine days of 1919. . . . We have got the Hun tribes on the run now and I hope we keep them going. I think it will be a long hard pull ahead but the fight is on and a tremendously powerful American Army is going to turn the trick. I was never so proud of America as I am right now and I wouldn't for the world be home at this time. The game is a hard one and it takes a strong man to stand up under the rigours of line work, but I am standing it well and am in excellent shape. . . . It seems good to get back with the company. It is like a big family and

until you have been away from your company you don't realize how much you have become attached to it and the close ties of friendship and affection you form with men by whose side you have fought and with whom you have slept in barns, yes and slept while marching. You will hardly believe that a man will go to sleep while on the march, but it is a fact. . . .

The following letter was written the day before he was killed at the front:

FRANCE, Sept. 28, 1918.

DEAR AUNT ANNIE: — I am going to get off a few scribbles here while I can, for it may be a week before I get another chance. My gas mask is my desk and I am sprawled out on the ground in the sun.

It is a beautiful afternoon, one of those autumn afternoons such as you have at home, when by four o'clock the dew begins to fall, and a coolness pervades the atmosphere. I can almost smell the grapes hanging on the vines out in Pembroke. But here, — no grapes, nothing edible of any kind except "bully beef" and hard taeck in your iron rations and what is strewn around the kitchen, the two wheeled rolling kitchen which hangs to us as close as possible.

There are no houses for miles around only the ruins of the homes of the French peasantry and their little villages. What a tragic dream it all is — of the farms and barns nothing left but the wreckage and droves of rats which gibber and squeak at you and people the cellars. Such is the sole habitation of this once fair and happy country, save for the fighting men, the Yanks, the Ausies (Australians) the Tommies and the "Frogs" (Frenchmen).

Do you remember those cold winter nights years ago when you started me in Caesar's Commentaries, and the first sentence where it is stated, after reciting the tribes that inhabited the three different parts of Gaul — "Eorum Belgae Fortissimi sunt" and I think the Allobrogi came in second. Well, if old Julius Caesar were here today he would say, "Eorum omnium Americani fortis sunt" and award the other places. What an aggregation from every corner of the Globe — from Baffin's Bay to Argentine and from the East Indies to Frisco, Christians and unbelievers, Mohammedans and Confucionists, Buddhists and Tartars — all tribes and clans gathered for the big smash which is to break the back of the Boche. . . . The artillery has just opened up and is playing "Merry Hell" over there. But I am not going to the party

this afternoon. I'd rather lie here in the sun. Its healthier. . . . Keep up courage, and don't you ever worry about me. I have been lucky so far and there is a lot of good campaign left in me yet. I've lost about twenty pounds, I think since I have been here and guess I go about one hundred and forty now harder than cast steel. . . . Now I must say goodbye for the time being. Will send you a card in about a week.

A chaplain of the 107th Infantry, writing of the battle of 29 Sept. 1918:

I wish I could tell you of the sublime heroism of my boys, but words are inadequate and then, too, thoughts are wholly unable to fittingly conceive of that which is written in the heart of God himself. Never before in my life have I seen such nobility of soul. Never again in the history of my life shall I witness the marvelous courage of men who are but ordinary men such as the rest of us, but in the moment of need were stripped of their ordinary life and character and stood out in the glowing radiance which must have illuminated the face of the dying Christ. As I told the boys when they gathered around my little altar to receive the Bread of Life after the battle was over, I experienced the same feeling which John the Disciple must have felt when he stood afar off and watched the crucifixion of the Saviour. My heart was filled with unutterable sadness, and yet that sadness was overwhelmed and engulfed in the floodtides of joy which were released when I but thought that they, as Jesus, were shedding their blood for humanity. . . .

127. CHARLES B.⁷ BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 29 Jan. 1838. He lived in half of his father's house on Washington Street, Hanover. He married 12 Oct. 1872 Annie L. Jacobs, born 28 Sept. 1851, daughter of William Jacobs of Randolph, and granddaughter of Stephen Jacobs of Assinippi. (See Otis chapter.) William Jacobs married 14 Oct. 1849 Susan Anna Loring, daughter of Enos and Jane (Hersey) Loring. Enos Loring was a tanner, and lived on Main Street, South Hingham.

Daughter of Charles B. Briggs and S. Anna Loring:

184. i. ANNIE LORING, b. 2 Dec. 1876; m. Gilbert H. West.

128. ELBRIDGE BOARDMAN⁷ BRIGGS (81. *Joseph*⁶, *Ezra*⁵, *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Hanover 30 June 1840. He lived in half of his father's house on Washington Street, of which his brother, Charles B., occupied the other half, and later lived at Assinippi in the Ebenezer Blanchard house on the southeast corner of Washington and Webster streets. Elbridge B. Briggs married 31 May 1866 Lucy Burr Barker, born in South Scituate, near Church Hill, 31 May 1843, daughter of Waters Burr and Lucy (Sherman) Barker. She died in 1917. Elbridge B. Briggs died in 1919.

Children of Elbridge B.⁷ Briggs and Lucy B. Barker:

185. i. JENNIE BURR⁸, b. 20 Sept. 1868; m. Alfred H. Loring.
- ii. HELEN LANE⁸, b. 10 Sept. 1876; unm.; lives in Stoneham.
186. iii. EDITH BOARDMAN⁸, b. 19 Aug. 1880; m. G. Herman Donham.

129. MARY CURTIS⁷ BRIGGS (86. *Billings*⁶, *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Boston 5 June 1820. She married 22 Apr. 1840 John Reed, born 24 Apr. 1816 in Burlington, Mass., and died in Boston 4 Nov. 1854. Mary Curtis (Briggs) Reed died in Boston 9 May 1897.

Children of Mary Curtis⁷ Briggs and John Reed:

- i. BILLINGS BRIGGS REED, b. 15 June 1841 in Boston.
- ii. MARY OLIVE REED, b. 23 Jan. 1844.
- iii. JOHN PARSONS REED, b. 18 Aug. 1846.
- iv. JOSEPH WELLINGTON REED, b. 20 July 1852.

130. PAUL DEAN⁷ BRIGGS (88. *Paul*⁶, *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 7 May 1823. He lived in his father's house on the corner of Summer and Cedar streets, South Scituate (Norwell), and died 2 Dec. 1874. He married 20 Oct. 1846 Almira L. Damon, born in Scituate 7 Oct. 1822, daughter of William Damon, Jr., and Charlotte Litchfield. Almira (Damon) Briggs died 28 Sept. 1883, aged 61 years.

Children of Paul D.⁷ Briggs and Almira L. Damon:

187. i. BENJAMIN⁸, b. 28 Mar. 1848; m. Ellen A. Hyland.
- ii. SARAH A.⁸, b. 20 Sept. 1852; d. 3 May 1873, ae. 20 years, 7 months.
- iii. GEORGE ALDEN⁸, b. 23 Sept. 1854; m. 29 Oct. 1878 Abby Cora Hardwick. They had no family.
- iv. WILLIAM⁸, b. 22 Mar. 1859; d. young.

131. ELLEN⁷ BRIGGS (89. *James P.*⁶, *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 19 Nov. 1829 in Watertown, Mass. She married Nathaniel Ellms, born in Scituate 27 May 1829, son of Nathaniel Ellms and Nancy Hatch. Nathaniel Ellms was a mason, and lived on Summer Street, Norwell, where his son, George B. Ellms, is now living (1936). He died in South Scituate 16 Jan. 1897. After the death of her husband, Ellen (Briggs) Ellms lived in her father's house on the corner of Summer and Cedar streets, Norwell, with her unmarried brother, Alfred Briggs, and widowed sister, Adeline (Briggs) Brown. She died 28 Dec. 1921.

Nathaniel Ellms was a descendant of *Rodolphus Elmes*, *Conihassett Partner*, 1646, who married Catherine Whitcomb. (See Elmes chapter.) Jonathan² Elmes (Rodolphus¹) married Patience —, and, according to Deane, received a large grant of land between Great Swamp and Mount Hope (on Summer Street, Norwell), where his descendants are now living (1936). Joseph³ Elmes, born 1700/1, married 30 May 1732 Elizabeth Sutton, born 8 Mar. 1711–12, daughter of Nathaniel Sutton and Margaret (or Mary) Ray of Hingham. Joseph⁴ Elmes (Joseph³, Jonathan², Rodolphus¹), born 15 Mar. 1732/33, married 29 Nov. 1759 Mary³ Lincoln, born 1 June 1738, daughter of Jacob² and Mary (Holbrook) Lincoln. Jacob² Lincoln was a son of Mordecai¹, who came from Hingham to Scituate in 1700, and built the three Lincoln mills on Bound Brook. *Mordecai*¹ was the ancestor of President Abraham Lincoln, through his son *Mordecai*² who married Abigail, daughter of Rev. Nathaniel Eells of the South Parish, and removed to Taunton.

Joseph³ and Margaret (Ray) Ellms had a second son, Nathaniel⁴ Ellms, who was a *soldier in the French War*. In 1763 Joseph³ Elmes of Scituate petitioned Governor Bernard and the General Court as follows:

The Petition of Joseph Elmes of Scituate Humbly Showeth — That his Nath'l Elms was a Soldier in his Majesties Service in the year 1762 in Capt. Keen's Company & Col^o Hoar's Regiment at Nova Scotia and was at the Reduction of St John's on Newfoundland and underwent such Hard ships and fateagues that he contracted such an Ill habitt of body that he was taken sick in his Passage Home, that he came home sick, some in the latter end of November last and continued sick about three weeks and then died, whereby your Petitioner was Put to Great Charge & Trouble amounting to Nine Pounds, 15 Shillings according to the account annexed, which he Prays may be allowed out of the Publick Treasury to Reimburst him the same — as in Duty Bound shall ever Pray &c.

JOSEPH ELLMS

The Charge of my son's Sickness & funerall. —

to 2 nurses 3 weeks w ^h I paid them in cash	.	.	1	4	00
to Rum & Suger and firewood	.	.	0	18	00
to the Board of the Nurses, watchers, candles &c.	.	.	2	13	04
to a Coffin 10/8 Diging the Grave 8/	.	.	0	18	8
to a Voile of Drops	.	.	0	00	7
to a shirt, sheet & other Grave Cloths	.	.	0	15	11
to the Dr Bill	.	.	3	04	6

Scituate, March 25, 1763

Sworn to before me

THOS. CLAPP. Just Peac.

The Committee Report three pounds six shillings in full (Exclusive of y^e Doctors bill) to be paid to the Honorable Thomas Clapp Esq^r for y^e use of y^e Petitioner

JAMES HUMPHREY p order.
(Court Records, Vol. 80, No. 347.)

Nathaniel⁵ Elmes, son of Joseph⁴ and Mary (Lincoln), was born in 1766, and married Elizabeth Wade, born 21 Apr. 1765, daughter of Issachar⁴ (Joseph³, Thomas², Nicholas¹)

and Elizabeth Hanford Wade. Their son, Nathaniel⁶ Ellmes, born 4 Dec. 1794, married 30 Sept. 1821 Nancy⁷ Hatch, born about 1802, daughter of Daniel⁶ Hatch (Jonathan, Jr.⁵, Jonathan⁴, Hezekiah³, Thomas² and Sarah (Elmes) Thomas¹). Nathaniel⁷ Ellms, born in 1829, was their son.

Children of Ellen⁷ Briggs and Nathaniel Ellms:

- i. LUCY JACKSON ELLMS, b. 10 Sept. 1859; d. 6 Dec. 1871.
- ii. HOWARD ELLMS, b. 3 Apr. 1861; d. 23 Oct. 1863.
- iii. WALTER BRIGGS ELLMS, b. 3 Mar. 1863; d. 9 Jan. 1930; unnm.
- iv. GEORGE BRIDGES ELLMS, m. (1) Deborah J. Litchfield, who d. 1 Oct. 1898, ae. 31 years, leaving no living children. He m. (2) Nettie (Bogues) Brown, widow of his cousin, Harry Briggs Brown (see 132. Adeline B. Briggs), by whom he has a son, Edgar B. Ellms⁹. George B. Ellms m. (3), in Medfield, Mrs. Mabel P. Tingley of Medway.

132. ADELINE BRIDGES⁷ BRIGGS (89. *James P.*⁶, *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Watertown 15 Jan. 1832. She married in South Scituate, 12 Dec. 1861, Henry⁷ Brown, born in Scituate 5 Mar. 1834, son of Samuel⁶ Brown (Joseph⁵, Jonathan⁴, Jonathan³, Samuel², Samuel¹) and his first wife, Louisa⁷ Clapp (Thomas⁶, Benjamin⁵, Joseph⁴, Samuel³, Thomas², Richard¹ of Dorchester, England). Henry⁶ Brown was by trade a calker, and later a farmer. He married, first, 2 Dec. 1858, Lucy Jackson Ellms, daughter of Nathaniel and Nancy (Hatch) Ellms, and a sister of Nathaniel Ellms, who married Adeline's sister, Ellen Briggs. Lucy J. (Ellms) Brown died in 1859. Henry Brown died in Scituate 18 Jan. 1917. Adeline (Briggs) Brown died at Holbrook 15 Sept. 1922, aged 90 years, 8 months.

Children of Adeline B.⁷ Briggs and Henry Brown:

- i. JOSEPHINE BROWN, b. 1862; m. Robert Mills of Weymouth. Lived in Weymouth and later in Holbrook. They had two children, a son and a daughter.
- ii. HARRY BRIGGS BROWN, b. 1868 in Scituate; m. 30 June 1889 Nettie Bogues of Cohasset, dau. of Henry E.

and Addie (Woods) Bogues, who was born 23 Dec. 1869 in Cohasset. Henry Bogues was from Roekland, Me. Nettie (Bogues) Brown m. (2) George Bridges Ellms, son of Nathaniel and Ellen (Briggs) Ellms.

Harry Briggs Brown, Jr., son of Harry Briggs and Nettie (Bogues), was born 9 May 1890. He is a *World War Veteran*, Service Headquarters Co., 306th Field Artillery, 77th Division, A. E. F., fifteen months in France. He m. 20 Sept. 1923, in Medfield, Ida May Tingley of Medfield; lives on Summer Street, Norwell, and has a family.

133. ALBERT HIRAM⁷ BRIGGS (89. *James P.*⁶, *Benjamin*⁵, *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 11 Sept. 1841. He lived in Boston, later in Wollaston, Mass. He married 16 Oct. 1872 Mary Louisa Richards, born in Boston 28 Apr. 1842, and died 29 Apr. 1914. Albert H. Briggs died 20 Dec. 1917. They are buried in First Parish Cemetery, Norwell.

Mary Louisa Richards was of the eighth generation from William Richards, who was mentioned in Plymouth Records 25 Mar. 1633. He came into Scituate in 1635/6, and received a grant of land on the North River adjoining that of Cornet Robert Stetson, from which it was divided on the north by a ravine. In 1639 he had a farm on this tract which he sold in 1650 to Gowin White for £75, and removed to Weymouth, where he died in 1680. A part of his North River farm became a part of the Thomas Brooks or Ruggles farm, and is now a part of the estate of the late John Harris Gutterson, purchased with Riverdale farm from Henry A. Turner. William Richards' will mentions wife Grace and sons James, Benjamin, John, William and Joseph. William⁴ Richards, fourth generation from William¹ of Scituate and Weymouth, removed to Bristol, Me. His son, Erastus⁵ Richards, had a son Erastus⁶ who had Ambrose⁷, born in Bristol, Me., 1 May 1806 and died in Boston 3 Apr. 1862. His wife was Sarah Kent, a descendant of William Kent. Mary Louisa⁸ Richards was a daughter of Ambrose⁷ and Sarah (Kent) Richards, born 28 Apr. 1842.

Children of Albert H.⁷ Briggs and Mary L. Richards:

- i. PAUL, d. young.
- 188. ii. ALBERT BILLINGS, b. 18 June 1878 in Boston; m. Amy D. Ferguson.
- iii. RICHARD ELLIOTT, d. young.

134. CAROLINE FORRESTER⁷ BRIGGS (90. *Otis*⁶, *Bartlett*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 18 Oct. 1837 in Scituate. She married in 1857 George H. Sables, born 2 Dec. 1832, son of Thomas (of Malden) and Abigail (Bradford) Sables, who lived in Medford. George H. Sables died 11 Dec. 1919 in Scituate. Caroline (Briggs) Sables died 10 Mar. 1900 in the Otis Briggs house on Old Oaken Bucket Road.

George H. Sables built a house on the hill at Belle House Neck, in which he lived in his later years. After his death it was purchased by Rev. John Holland of Weymouth, who enlarged and improved it for a summer home. It is now owned and occupied by John F. McJennett. His mother, Abigail Bradford, was a sister of Charlotte Bradford, wife of David Briggs (see 91. David), and of George Loring Bradford, who married Margaret Tilden Bailey, daughter of Job and Lydia (Wade) of Scituate.

Daughter of Caroline F. Briggs and George H. Sables:

- i. MABEL WADE SABLES, b. 3 Aug. 1859; m. Samuel Wilson, and lives in the Otis Briggs house on Old Oaken Bucket Road, Greenbush.

135. ALBERT K.⁷ BRIGGS (91. *David*⁶, *Bartlett*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Medford, Mass., 23 Apr. 1837. He married Mercy Tilden Colman, born in Scituate 30 Apr. 1837, daughter of Joseph⁷ Colman, Jr., and Deborah⁸ Tilden. They lived on the old Cushing estate at Belle House Neck, purchased by his father in 1842. Albert K. Briggs sold the property to Roger Sherman Dix of Brookline, now of Hingham, who makes it his summer home (1936).

Mercy Tilden Colman, wife of Albert K. Briggs, was a descendant of Joseph¹ Colman, shoemaker, who was in Scituate, 1638. He lived west of the "High Hills," known

as "Colman Hills," where several generations of his family lived. Few records of the early generations have been found. He moved to Connecticut before 1690, probably to the vicinity of Norwich. Most of his children belonged to the Society of Friends. A son, Thomas² Colman, married Margaret —, and had a son, Joseph³ Colman, b. 18 Feb. 1685, who married, in Newport, R. I., 12 Feb. 1702/3, Mary Mew of Newport. Their son, John⁴ Colman, born 28 Apr. 1706, married Leah Nichols 12 Nov. 1729, daughter of Joseph and Bathsheba (Pincin) Nichols, whose property north of Stockbridge mill pond was purchased by Dr. Isaac Otis in 1719, and sold by him in 1723 to Joseph Nash (the so-called widow Nichols' property). Joseph⁵ Colman, son of John⁴ and Leah, born 3 Oct. 1739, married 13 May 1765, Mercy Studley, daughter of David, Jr., and Elizabeth (Curtis) Studley of Scituate. Joseph⁶ Colman, Jr., son of Joseph⁵ and Mercy (Studley), was born 1 Aug. 1767, and married 18 Apr. 1792 Lydia Rich of Provincetown. Their son, Joseph⁷ Colman, 3d, born 12 Mar. 1798, married 1 Jan. 1822 Deborah⁸ Tilden, born 7 Oct. 1802, his cousin, daughter of Capt. John⁷ and Mercy (Colman) Tilden. (Deborah⁸, Capt. John⁷, Thomas⁶, John⁵, Joseph⁴, Nathaniel³, Deacon Joseph², Elder Nathaniel.¹)

Albert K.⁷ and Mercy (Colman) Briggs had only a daughter who died when a young child; after her death they adopted a daughter of Joseph Morris and Mandana (Clapp) of Scituate. She was known as Sarah or Sadie Briggs; she married George Whorf, has a family, and lives in Scituate. In his later years, after the sale of the Belle House Neck property, Albert K. Briggs made his home with this adopted daughter, Mrs. Whorf.

136. SELINA CURTIS⁷ BRIGGS (94. *James S.*⁶, *Joseph*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 26 Oct. 1824 in Scituate. She married 18 Nov. 1849 Capt. Perry L. Parker, born in Scituate 5 July 1820, son of Perry Leatherbury and second wife Polly (Litchfield) Parker. Captain Parker and his wife Selina (Briggs) are buried in the old cemetery on the Common at Scituate Center.

Children of Selina C. Briggs and Capt. Perry L. Parker:

- i. PERRY LLEWELLIN PARKER, b. 9 Nov. 1853.
- ii. IDA VIRGINIA PARKER, b. 11 July 1855.
- iii. JOSEPH SYLVESTER BRIGGS PARKER, b. 8 Aug. 1857.
- iv. GEORGE SCARBORO PARKER, b. 3 Sept. 1859.
- v. SELINA MIRIAM PARKER, b. 6 Oct. 1863.
- vi. WILLIE GRANT PARKER, b. 29 Apr. 1866.

137. HANNAH WADE⁷ BRIGGS (94. *James S.*⁶, *Joseph*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 29 Oct. 1833 in Scituate, and married 26 Nov. 1856 George Whitefield Bailey, shoe manufacturer at North Scituate, and lived on Booth Hill Road, near Gannett's Corner (North Scituate), where Henry Sylvester now lives (1936). George W. Bailey died in 1891. His widow, Hannah (Briggs) Bailey, died in 1897.

George Whitefield Bailey was a descendant of Thomas Bailey of Weymouth as early as 1640, who died there in 1681. A grandson, John³ Bailey (John², Thomas¹), came to Scituate before 1670 as a tenant of Capt. John Williams on his farm at Farm Neck, which adjoined that of *Walter Briggs*. Captain Williams died in 1694, leaving by his will to his tenant, John Bailey, "the farm on which he now lives at the Neck in Scituate." George W. Bailey⁷, born 1 Aug. 1830, was son of Job⁶ (Joseph⁵, Caleb⁴, Joseph³, John²) and Lydia Foster (Wade) Bailey. Lydia Foster Wade, was a daughter of Jotham and Margaret (Tilden) Wade, a descendant of Nicholas of Brushy Hill, and first wife, Elizabeth Hanford.

Children of Hannah W.⁷ Briggs and George W. Bailey:

- i. HERBERT BRIGGS BAILEY, b. 28 Sept. 1857; shoe manufacturer; m. Nov. 1885 Alice Charlotte Brown of Cohasset. Lives in Wollaston, Mass. Their son, George William Bailey, b. 14 May 1887; *grad. Harvard College*; associated in business with his father; m. June 1913 Alice Cooper of Honolulu, b. in California, dau. of Judge Henry E. Cooper and his wife, Mary Ellen Porter. She was educated at Oahu College in Hawaii and at Wellesley College. They live in Weston, Mass. Mrs. Alice (Cooper) Bailey is a member of the

school committce of the town of Weston; member of the Professional Woman's Club, and a director of the Boston Author's Club. She is a writer of stories for children, of which her published works are "Katrina and Jan," a story of Holland, "Kimo" and "Sun Gold," stories of her native Hawaii. Her lectures on Hawaii have been very popular, for which she has more than 300 slides for illustration. Her father, Judge Cooper, was born in Indiana, came to Boston and received his degree of LL.D. at Boston University. He went to California in 1878, later removing to Hawaii about the time of the death of King Kalakaua. On the dethronement of Queen Liliuokalani he became Secretary of the Territory, and later was its Governor-General. He was prominent in politics when Hawaii was annexed to the United States. George W. and Alice (Cooper) Bailey have three children: Mary Alice, George W., Jr., and Richard Briggs Bailey.

ii. JOB FOSTER BAILEY, b. 14 June 1865; d. 10 Aug. 1866.

138. ELLEN DEBORAH⁷ BRIGGS (96. *Barnabas W.*⁶, *Joseph*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 16 Feb. 1835 in Scituate. She was educated for a teacher at Bridgewater State Normal School. After graduation in 1856 she taught for ten years, at one time in the district schools of South Scituate. She married 18 Nov. 1868 Luther Paul of Newton Center, a market gardener.

Children of Ellen D. Briggs and Luther Paul:

- i. HELEN FLORENCE PAUL, b. 5 Jan. 1870; m. Lieut.—Grant, then stationed at Fortress Monroe, Va. She died suddenly, before the age of 40 years, at Winthrop, Mass., where her husband was then stationed at Fort Banks.
- ii. LUTHER GORDON PAUL, b. 29 July 1871; m. Agnes Marchant of West Newton. A physician at Newton Center.
- iii. Twin girls, b. 16 Jan. 1873; d. young.
- iv. HARRIET OTIS PAUL, b. 22 Nov. 1874; unm.
- v. JAMES IRVING PAUL, b. 29 July 1876; m. Grace Johnson of Brookline. A coal dealer at Newton Center.

139. JOSEPH OTIS⁷ BRIGGS (96. *Barnabas W.*⁶, *Joseph*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 9 Nov.

1836 in Scituate. He was a ship carpenter, and learned his trade of his father and uncle, Barnabas W. and James Sylvester Briggs, at their yard at Scituate Harbor (see "History of Shipbuilding on North River"). He worked in the Charlestown Navy Yard for some years, but later in life was employed in the freight department at the North Station in Boston. In his later years he became totally blind. He lived in Somerville, Mass., where he died in 1930, and was buried at Scituate. Joseph Otis Briggs married 31 Dec. 1869 Elsie Orcutt, who came from Maine.

Their daughter, Elsie Gertrude Briggs, born 15 June 1871, died in 1895, unmarried.

140. JULIETTA FRANCES⁷ BRIGGS (96. *Barnabas W.*⁶, *Joseph*⁵, *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 28 Sept. 1846 in the house on the Country Way, Scituate, where she is now living at the age of 89. She married 1 Mar. 1870 W. Webster Hunt, born 27 Aug. 1847 in Scituate near Mungo's Corner, son of Howland Litchfield and Olivia (Leach) Hunt. He died in Scituate in 1929. Mrs. Julietta (Briggs) Hunt was a member of the school committee of the town of Scituate for some years.

Children of Julietta F. Briggs and W. Webster Hunt:

- i. GRACE WEBSTER HUNT, b. 11 Sept. 1872 in East Weymouth, Mass.; d. Nov. 1874.
- ii. ALBION WALLACE HUNT, b. 14 Oct. 1874; living in Scituate; unm.
- iii. W. WEBSTER HUNT, Jr., b. 6 June 1877; m. Mary Wyman (b. in Chelsea).
- iv. FREDERICK JAMES HUNT, } twins, b. 3 Feb. 1884; d.
- v. JAMES FREDERICK HUNT, } young.

141. ANTOINETTE FOSTER⁷ BRIGGS (100. *J. Warren*⁶, *Elisha*⁵, *John*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 13 Jan. 1850 in South Scituate. She married 31 Oct. 1875, Nathaniel Cushing of Holliston, Mass., born in Taunton, Mass., son of Capt. Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Barstow) Cushing. Antoinette (Briggs) Cushing died 13 May 1927 in Whitman, Mass.

Nathaniel⁷ Cushing was a descendant of Capt. Elijah³ Cushing (son of John², John¹ of Belle House Neck) who settled at Cushing's Corner, Hanson. His son Nathaniel, born in 1729, served in the French and Indian War and in the Revolution. He had a son Nathaniel⁴, born in 1762, who married Mehitable Dodge (daughter of Rev. Ebenezer of Abington), whose son, Ezekiel Dodge⁵ Cushing, born 2 Jan. 1790, married Delia, daughter of Capt. David Sawyer of Boston. Dr. Ezekiel Dodge Cushing became an eminent physician. After practicing in some of the largest hospitals in France he settled in Hanover in 1827, and lived in the Lawyer Whitman house near North River bridge (Pantooet), where he died 5 Apr. 1828. His son Nathaniel⁶, born in Boston 22 Feb. 1818, married 18 Dec. 1845 Elizabeth Barstow, daughter of Capt. Edward and Amy (Bailey) Barstow.

A son of Antoinette F.⁷ Briggs and Nathaniel⁷ Cushing, Elmer Cushing, born in 1876, died June 1902 in Whitman, unmarried.

142. SUSAN FRANCES⁷ BRIGGS (100. *J. Warren*⁶, *Elisha*⁵, *John*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in South Scituate 19 Feb. 1856. She married 18 Mar. 1876 Joshua Warren Foster, born in Hanover 5 Jan. 1854, son of Joshua and Rosamond (Cushing) Foster. They lived for many years in the Walter Foster house on River Street, Norwell, in which Frank Macfarlane now lives (1936), and built later a house on River Street at the end of the lane leading to the old Wanton Ship Yard, in which they now reside. Their daughter, Rosie Warren Foster, born 1 Aug. 1878, died in 1902 unmarried.

J. Warren⁴ Foster is a descendant of Jonathan¹ Foster, a Revolutionary soldier, who settled in Mason, N. H., and whose son, Joseph² Foster, came to Hanover and married Grace⁷, daughter of Luther⁶ (Jonathan⁵, Isaac⁴, Jonathan³, John, Sr.², Humphrey¹) Turner. Joshua³ (Joseph², Jonathan¹) married Widow Rosamond Scott, daughter of Zattu Cushing.

CHAPTER XVII

DESCENDANTS OF WALTER¹ BRIGGS

GENERATION VII

WILLIAM T.⁷, HANNAH B.⁷, JAMES E.⁷, HARRISON O.⁷, MARY T.⁷,
CHILDREN OF CUSHING OTIS⁶ BRIGGS

143. REV. WILLIAM THOMAS⁷ BRIGGS (101. *Cushing O.⁶, Thomas B.⁵, James⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹*) was born 1 Dec. 1815 in the Briggs homestead on Cross Street, South Scituate. His common school education was supplemented by brief academic courses at Hanover and Weymouth, and his apprenticeship as a shipbuilder was served in his father's yard, with that of his brother, Charles Cushing Briggs, two years his senior. When the newly organized firm of Cushing O. Briggs & Sons (the sons being Charles C. and William T.) resumed shipbuilding in 1838 (see Cushing Otis Briggs chapter). William T. Briggs, at the age of twenty-three years, was the master carpenter of the first vessel built by the firm, the bark *Emma Isadora*, 213 tons, of Boston, for Henry W. Fletcher of Boston for the Smyrna trade. (See Cushing O. Briggs.)

In 1834 William T. Briggs was Secretary of the old "Plymouth County Anti-Slavery Society." This society gained an added impetus after the settlement in 1836 of Rev. Samuel J. May as pastor of the Second Parish. Interest in anti-slavery in this part of Plymouth County had heretofore been rather lukewarm, but after a time became strongly anti-slavery, owing in great measure to Mr. May's influence in his own parish and the surrounding section. William T. Briggs was an able assistant. The following summons attests that he probably did not believe in compulsory military service:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS, PLYMOUTH SS. — To the Sheriff of the County of Plymouth or either of his Deputies or either of the Constables of Scituate in said County. — Greetings — In the name of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts you are hereby required to summon William T. Briggs of Scituate aforesaid Shipwright to appear before me Ebenezer T. Fogg Esq., one of the justices of the peace for the County aforesaid at my office in So. Scituate on the second day of June next at one o'Clock in the afternoon then and there to show cause if any he has why judgment should not be rendered that he has forfeited twenty Dollars for refusing and neglecting to perform the duty of Clerk of the company of infantry in the 2d Regiment 1st Brigade and 5th Division at a company drawing the first day of May, inst. . . . Hereof fail not and make due return of this writ with your doings thereon unto myself on or before the said hour of the day of June next. . . .

Dated at Scituate aforesaid the 21st day of May in the year eighteen hundred and thirty eight.

EBENEZER T. FOGG, Justice peace.

On 15 Oct. 1835 William T. Briggs wrote a letter from Medford, where he was then employed, to his father in Scituate, which shows that he had thought of entering the ministry. In it he speaks in a discouraging way of preparing for the ministry, because it would take so many years. He says: "Two or three in preparation, four or five to get through college, and two or three more before he gets to be self-supporting." He also says: "There are so many thousands who have enjoyed every advantage of learning and are still out of employment, and other thousands who are employed but scarcely supported. . . . He who has a smattering of Greek and Latin may receive attention for the moment, but he cannot obtain that solid, substantial respectability which the Huge Paw of the farmer or mechanic often carries with him."

Through the kindness of his great-uncle, Thomas Otis of New York City, William T. Briggs was led to leave the shipyard in 1841-42 and enter Oneida Institute, at Whitesboro, N. Y., from which college he graduated in 1845. He then entered Andover Seminary, and while there received a call to the Congregational Church at North Au-

dover, where he was ordained and settled in 1846. Later he received a call to Princeton, Mass., where he was installed in 1855, but resigned in 1863 to take charge of the Educational Department at Newbern, in the military district of North Carolina, which position he held until the close of the Civil War. In 1866 he became pastor of the Congregational Church in East Douglas, Mass., resigning in 1887, after a pastorate of uninterrupted harmony of twenty-one years, and was made "pastor emeritus." His services were sought by several societies, but he remained firm in his resolution to spend his declining years in rest and quiet, "free from labor and enjoying the competence that it has been my fortune to accumulate."

In a letter dated only "Tuesday Morn.," probably written in 1846, Harrison O. Briggs writes his brother, Edwin Briggs, care of T. Pratt, Medford, Mass., as follows:

I received a call from William on Saturday and an invitation to his wedding, which is to take place on the 20th of this month. . . . William wishes me to be sure and see you this week, as there are arrangements made for you and Harriet to act as groomsman and bridesmaid. Mother will probably expect you on Monday night, as the wedding is to come off on Tuesday morn at eight o'clock precisely. . . . Osborne Howes wants to know what we would build a ship of 450 tons for. William Bangs wants us to build a ship from 350 to 400 tons. I shall therefore be on Change today and try to get headway once more on the shipbuilding business. I am first going to Brooks and rouse his dormant energies if possible. Holbrook came to me the other morning and wanted to know, in case he and his friends should desire for a brig of 180 tons, whether we would do it for a fair price.

Rev. William Thomas Briggs married 20 Oct. 1846, soon after his installation as pastor of the North Andover Congregational Church, Harriet Swan Dana, an old acquaintance and former neighbor at Scituate. She was born at Woodstock, Vt., 14 Mar. 1822, a daughter of Henry Dana of Woodstock. Her mother, Harriet Swan, was a descendant of a half sister of Judge William Cushing, who had married Rev. Ebenezer Gay of Suffield, Conn. A few years after the death of Madam Hannah Cushing, wife of

Judge William, in 1834, the Danas had purchased from William Aylwin the Walnut Tree Hill estate of the Cushings. (See John Cushing chapter, with Lieut. Isaac Thomas.) Their property adjoined that of Cushing Otis Briggs. A sincere friendship existed between the children of both families, shown in many of the family letters. Harriet (Dana) Briggs died at North Andover 7 Mar. 1849. Rev. William T. Briggs married for a second wife, 10 Nov. 1852, Abby Learned Davis of Oxford, Mass. He died in East Douglas, Mass., 24 Sept. 1898.

Child of Rev. William T. Briggs and Harriet Swan Dana:

- i. HARRIET SWAN, b. 7 Mar. 1849 at North Andover; d. 19 Dec. 1849.

Children of Rev. William T. Briggs and Abby L. Davis:

- ii. ABBY DAVIS, b. 8 Dec. 1853, at North Andover; d. 19 Dec. 1853.
- iii. WILLIAM HARRISON, b. 10 Mar. 1855 at North Andover; m. 1885 Vivia Rowley of Montezuma, Iowa; d. 2 Oct. 1897, leaving no children.
- 189. iv. HELEN LEROY, b. 15 Sept. 1858 at Princeton, Mass.; m. Rev. Carleton P. Mills of Williamstown, Mass.
- v. ANNA ISABELLA, b. 27 Sept. 1861 at Princeton; d. at East Douglas 17 July 1866.

144. HANNAH BARKER⁷ BRIGGS (101. *Cushing O.*⁶, *Thomas B.*⁵, *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 13 June 1819. After attending the public schools of the town she went to Barre, Mass., where by further study and advanced courses she prepared for teaching. In 1844 she taught the school in Greenbush Village, near Chandler Clapp's store. A letter written by her from Barre to her brother, William T. Briggs, tells something of her life at the school, and how the school was conducted:

BARRE, May 25, 1840.

MY DEAR BROTHER: — Only think, I have been here almost five weeks. . . . I enjoy myself very much. The ladies and gentlemen of the boarding house are forbidden all communication from

one room to the other. For the first three or four weeks after I came here the gentlemen came into the ladies' sitting room, but were almost always afraid of being seen by the people of the house. We certainly had some very agreeable conversation on very interesting subjects, and I saw nothing but what was perfectly proper; but this has come to an end. Last Saturday eve two gentlemen came into this room and while we sat talking Mr. Robinson walked to the door and said, "Ladies, it is bedtime. All communication between Gentlemen and Ladies is strictly forbidden. The ladies have a sitting room and the gentlemen have one, and we wish them to keep in it, unless they wish for a private interview. If so, they can have a private apartment." They have not forbidden our walking with them. How soon they may do it I can not tell. Now let me ask you what you think of this? But enough of this. . . . Tell mother if she needs my help I will be ready to come any time. Staying here thirteen weeks will amount to but \$26, and you know Uncle has agreed to forward more if I wish. . . . Since writing the above Mr. Robinson feels differently. He says he has no objection to the gentlemen coming into the room once in a while. He is a sectarian man, but after all it is an excellent boarding place. . . . Give my love to all the family — Farewell!

Truly your sister,

HANNAH B. BRIGGS.

Hannah B. Briggs to her aunt, Miss Deborah C. Briggs,
at South Scituate:

BARRE, June 15, 1840.

Thanks to you dear Aunt, for your very excellent letter. I like my school very much. The principal is, I think, an excellent teacher. He is very pleasant and it seems to be his desire to make his pupils understand what they learn. His method of teaching grammar is very good indeed. . . . Mr. Tillinghast, the assistant, is to be the principal of the school in Plymouth County. He has a very stern look, and no wonder: he has been a soldier for many years and has been a teacher of the Military Academy at West Point. The school here is opened with reading the Scriptures and prayer, and we spend nearly an hour in reading and conversation; we then attend to the recitations. The studies are Algebra, Arithmetic, Grammar, Geography, History, Astronomy and Smallics "Philosophy of Natural History." I wish you were here to listen to Mr. Newman's reading. He has a fine voice and is the best

reader I ever heard. They have 16 boarders, four ladies and twelve gentlemen; the family never sit at the table with us, and you must know it is very agreeable to us to go to the table with so many gentlemen and so few ladies. The town is a very pleasant place: there are some beautiful spots in Barre. Yesterday afternoon, for the first time since I left home, I took a ride of about eight miles. We went by the canal with one gentleman and three ladies. Next week they commence a course of lectures on Phrenology, which is such a favorite science of yours. I have attended one concert since I came here; the music was by a brass band. I have the pleasure of hearing the Band sometimes on a beautiful evening. . . . I was surprised to hear of the removal of the Coffin family to Scituate and was glad to hear that he went into Mr. Fogg's store and put it in good order. . . . I was very glad to have you give me an account of Caroline Tilden's success in her school. . . . I should judge that Clara evinces the same zeal she formerly did and is agreeable and sociable. I suspect she still thinks Mr. May is perfection. . . .

Yours with affection,

HANNAH BRIGGS.

Hannah B. Briggs to her aunt, Deborah C. Briggs, at Boston:

SCITUATE, Feb. 20th, 1842.

MY DEAR DEBORAH: — . . . In going to and from school I often pass your house and it does indeed look desolate and dreary. . . . There has been a report here that Mrs. Otis thought of spending the remainder of her days in Boston. . . . Scituate remains the same "land of steady habits" that it has always been. The people seem to go on as they have done without wishing for a change. They have had but very few lectures this winter. On Tuesday next, being the birthday of Washington, they intend to have an Anti-Slavery meeting, and some of the children are to speak Anti-Slavery pieces. They ought to have you here to instruct them as they did before. In the evening we are to have a Temperance meeting. . . . The public school closed last week and they have had a private school of but one week. Many thought it best to have a woman's school, and thought the price was too great for them to pay, and so it was given up for the present. I believe Mr. Luffkin has given very good satisfaction this winter. Some of the children thought of going to the house to recite lessons in the Latin Grammar, but Ruth was not willing to have them

there. They recite their lesson after school is dismissed. In the neighborhood where I have been teaching school death has been making rapid progress. Within the short space of two months seven heads of families and the blooming youth and the tender infant have alike been made its victims. . . . Among those of whom you have probably heard was the death of Mrs. Esther Haskins. . . . Give my love to Mrs. Otis and Abby. I hope you will not stay in Boston longer than April. . . .

Hannah Barker Briggs married 12 June 1849, in Boston, Francis James of South Boston. He was born in Scituate 16 July 1819, a son of Elisha James, M.D., of Greenbush Village (Scituate), who lived in the house that is now (1936) the residence of Gorham G. Peters. Dr. Elisha James' wife was Lydia Young Little, daughter of Capt. James Little of Scituate and Lydia Young.

Francis James was by occupation a mason. He lived on Broadway, South Boston, and engaged in real estate, of which he was a large holder.

JAMES

Dr. Elisha James was a descendant of John James, a freeman in Scituate in 1668, who purchased the farm of Ephraim Kempton near the Block House on North River, and married in 1675 Lydia, daughter of John and Mary (Brewster) Turner, whose property adjoined that of Kempton. John James died from wounds received in the Indian Raid of 20 May 1676, about the time of the birth of his son John on 10 Jan. 1676/7. John, born 1676/7, was a deacon of the Second Church. He married Eunice Stetson, daughter of Captain Benjamin and granddaughter of Cornet Robert Stetson, in 1700, and lived in his father's house. Their son, Capt. Benjamin James, born 12 May 1711, settled on the east of Colman Hills, on land now (1936) owned by the Gillis family. His son Benjamin, born 23 Feb. 1744, was the father of Elisha, M.D., who married 19 May 1808 Lydia Young Little.

Children of Hannah B. Briggs and Francis James:

- i. EMMA FRANCES JAMES, b. 2 June 1850 in South Boston; m. 27 Feb. 1873 Col. J. Payson Bradley, formerly of Methuen. She died at her home, 468 Audubon Road, Boston, 2 June 1926, ae. 76.

THE BRIGGS GENEALOGY

Jere Payson Bradley was b. 7 June 1848, son of Captain Leverett and Catherine Frye Bradley of Methuen. His grandfather, Enoch Bradley, was an officer in the Revolutionary War, and his maternal great-great-grandfather, Col. James Frye of Andover, commanded the 4th Essex Regiment at the Battle of Bunker Hill, and died from wounds received that day. His grandfather, Enoch Bradley, was a captain of dragoons in the old militia days, and his father, Capt. Leverett Bradley, was a Captain in the old 6th Mass. Regiment, and later in the Civil War.

Jere P. Bradley was educated in the schools of Methuen, and at the breaking out of the Civil War, when he was thirteen years of age, he enlisted as a drummer boy in Company B, 14th Mass. Infantry, which in 1862 was changed to 1st Mass. Heavy Artillery. He became its regimental bugler, and actively participated with his regiment in all the engagements of the Army of the Potomac. He retired from the army a "veteran soldier," and at the age of 17 re-entered school and studied mechanical engineering. In 1868 he entered the employ of the Downer Kerosene Oil Company, and in 1869 constructed the first successful apparatus for burning crude oil as fuel; in 1881 he invented the factory security lamp, which remained in general use in manufacturing plants until the introduction of electricity; in 1894 he joined the Seccomb, Kehew & Sons Company as a partner, and later incorporated the Kehew-Bradley Company.

He joined the state militia in 1873. In 1897 he was appointed on the staff of Gov. Roger Wolcott with rank of Colonel, serving three years during the war with Spain. He joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1877, was elected Commander in 1897 and was elected Commander of the Massachusetts Department, Grand Army of the Republic, in 1906. At the outbreak of the World War he offered his services to the government in any capacity where he could be of real use, and was assigned to recruiting duty in connection with the enlargement of the National Guard units of the State to full war strength. The best recruiting days on Boston Common are said to have been those when

Colonel Bradley sounded the rally on his war bugle of 1861. He died on Patriot's Day 1927, within a few weeks of his 79th birthday.

On 1 Jan. 1926 Colonel Bradley wrote:

Fully realizing at my age . . . the uncertainty of life, I have thought it best to jot down a few ideas for my dear family to consider after I have been called home by the Great Commander. When that time comes, I want you all to remember how very good our Heavenly Father has been to me, guiding me through so many dangers and permitting me to live many years beyond the psalmist's span of life. Therefore, do not unduly mourn my departure, but consider it as a part of life's journey to the Promised Land. Although a soldier in spirit, all my life I have ever been a man of peace. Therefore, let there be no military display, but let the flag that I have loved so well and for whose preservation I was willing to lay down my life be my pall. Let my four Bradley nephews, who also gladly responded to the call of duty, be my bearers. . . .

Children of Emma F. James and Col. J. Payson Bradley:

1. Francis Edwin Bradley, b. 21 Nov. 1873; m. 11 June 1911 on his death bed at Phoenix, Ariz., Jessie Holroyd. He d. at Phoenix 11 June 1911.
2. Fannie Josephine Bradley, b. 1 Mar. 1877; m. 10 June 1903 Donald Grant McLean. They reside in Beverly, Mass. They have children: (1) Ruth Frances McLean, b. 11 June 1904, m. 2 Sept. 1926 Rev. Paul Eberly of Lodi, N. Y., and have children: i. Martha Frances Eberly, b. 9 Sept. 1927; ii. Donald James Eberly, b. 22 Oct. 1928; iii. Peter Wilson Eberly, b. Apr. 1933, d. 29 May 1933; iv. Robert Lincoln Eberly, b. 12 Feb. 1936; (2) Elizabeth Bradley McLean, b. 22 May 1906, m. Philip Gage Daniel, and has a dau., Joan Bradley Daniel, b. 8 Aug. 1932.
3. Marion Bradley, b. 12 June 1886; d. 27 Aug. 1888.
4. Mildred Bradley, b. 24 Jan. 1891; m. Leverett Bradley and resides in Lakeville, Conn.

- ii. Edwin Irving James, b. 5 Feb. 1854 in South Boston; m. 28 Feb. 1883 Minnie H. Pierce of South Boston, b. 11 June 1864, dau. of Nelson and Syntha A. Pierce. They reside in Newtonville, Mass.

Children of Edwin I. James and Minnie H. Pierce:

1. Florence James, b. 23 Feb. 1884; d. 11 Aug. 1884.
 2. Edwina James, b. 6 Sept. 1885; m. 25 Oct. 1922 Sumner W. Newcomb. They have children: i. Mary Newcomb, b. 11 Apr. 1925; ii. Elizabeth Newcomb, b. 19 Oct. 1928.
 3. Nelson Pierce James, b. 30 Nov. 1888; m. (1) 3 Feb. 1915 Freda M. Phillips of Dorchester, Mass., who d. 25 Dec. 1922. Children: i. Nelson Pierce James, Jr., b. 4 May 1916; ii. Stanley Phillips James, b. 10 Oct. 1917. He m. (2) 9 Jan. 1937 Martha Lander of West Newton. He d. 20 Mar. 1937.
- iii. Charles Thomas James, b. 21 Aug. 1856; d. 15 Sept. 1902; unm.
- iv. Arthur Holmes James, b. 7 Oct. 1858 in South Boston; m. 15 Apr. 1902 Mrs. Martha (Godfrey) Spiller, b. 12 Dec. 1871.

Mrs. Arthur H. James has been very active in the Woman's Charity Club of Boston, of which she was treasurer for several years. She is a member and an Ex-Regent of Old North Chapter, D. A. R., of Boston; State Corresponding Secretary of Massachusetts Daughters of the American Revolution, 1929-32, and State Vice Regent, 1932-35.

145. JAMES EDWIN⁷ BRIGGS (101. *Cushing O.*⁶, *Thomas B.*⁵, *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 8 May 1821, and learned the art of shipbuilding in his father's yard on North River. When he was 19 years of age he left home to work for Joshua Turner Foster in his Medford shipyard. He wrote his family at Scituate soon after his arrival:

MEDFORD, February 23, 1840

To All the Good Folks: -- I got to Boston about one o'clock on Monday and found that the stage did not start for Medford until

five. . . . Then I began to feel a little homesick, for I knew I should not get here until after dark and should then have to hunt up a boarding place. I walked about the streets for an hour or two, then went to the stage office and waited patiently until the stage started. The reason I felt homesick was because I was not used to travelling alone, but always had somebody to look out for things. I got here a little after dark and told the stage driver to leave my chest at Foster's. I did not know as Foster would want me, as it was so much later than what I agreed. I found him there and told him I had come, but rather late in the day. He said it was better late than never and that he would go with me and try and find a place to board. We went to Mrs. Hatches first, but she was full; we then went to Mr. Elisha Stetson's (brother to Eben) and he said he would take me. I then went to Foster's to get my clothes, and on opening my chest found I could have done very well without a boarding place for a week to come, had I known the provision was put in there. I ate a good supper out of my old chest and then went back, and by the time I got settled it seemed as if I had been gone a week. I carried my chest to the ship-yard the next morning, clothes and all, and believe I shall keep it there. My boarding place is first rate. Two of the boarders are singers and one of them has got a flute that cost \$4.50, which he lends to me when I want it. By the way, I have got it now, and am going to tune up as soon as I have this letter written. We have a sing 'most every night, out of the "Boston academy." My arm begins to feel lame and itches like scantum; I believe it will take. . . .

With love to all both great and small,

EDWIN BRIGGS.

Replying to this letter, his mother wrote:

SCITUATE, March 1, 1840.

MY DEAR EDWIN. — . . . I began to feel very anxious feeling you were sick. I felt very bad about your going away alone, but knowing that man deviseth his own way but the Lord directeth his steps, I felt reconciled, feeling that He has the same care for you there as here. . . . I said yesterday I did wish you might board where there were singers and a flute, and I was pleased when you wrote. It always gives me much pleasure to hear my children enjoy themselves. . . .

Your affectionate Mother,

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

In Feb. 1842 we find Edwin Briggs in East Boston, and in July 1843 in South Boston, where he and his brother Harrison were engaged as journeymen shipbuilders, and later in Medford. He writes:

SOUTH BOSTON, Sept. 14th, 1844

MY DEAR MOTHER: — . . . Harrison and I left Medford last Monday for Boston. We launched Monday morning and came down in the vessel to Boston, so as to lose no time, and from there we went to South Boston Monday night. We found Sister Mary well excepting a bad cold. She enjoys herself very much, likes her school and appears perfectly happy and contented. Am in hopes to be at liberty by next Saturday night, when I shall come with Harrison and probably Otis. . . .

Your affectionate Son,
EDWIN.

It was about this time that Edwin and Harrison O. Briggs began building with Capt. Noah Brooks at his yard at the foot of F Street, South Boston. The near-by supply of lumber was getting very scarce, and builders had to go considerable distances for a supply that could be shipped by water to Boston. The following letter shows that it was necessary to go as far as Maryland to find suitable lumber for use at South Boston for the new firm. Both Edwin and his brother Harrison went to Maryland for this purpose, and write from there to their father, Cushing O. Briggs, at Scituate. Harrison writes:

PERRYMANSVILLE, HARFORD COUNTY, MARYLAND,
Jan. 24. (1845)

MY DEAR FATHER: — As we shall have to take our money from the savings bank in course of a short time, we have thought it best if you send it directly on here. . . . When Mr. Stetson was on here before, he had his money sent in letters and found no difficulty, as the Government is responsible for any loss if the money is enclosed in the presence of the Postmaster. To send \$250 would cost something like \$4. . . . We are all in good health and have been so ever since we have arrived here. We are getting along with our timber as well as we could wish and have fine weather for our business.

Edwin writes:

We eat our breakfast generally before daylight and work as early and late as we can see. . . . We employ five negroes and one white man besides five of our own company, making eleven in all. If we have good weather I think we shall get what timber we want in about one month. It surprises even ourselves sometimes to see what we can do when we set out in earnest. Some days we finish from five to six tons. Mr. Stetson thinks of getting a freight for himself when we get through, and has made us an offer to stop and help him; but I think our love for home will predominate over his offer. . . . I was in Baltimore this week and intended to have called on *Charles Torrey*, but he could not be seen without a ticket from the Directors and then no one was allowed to speak to him, and I concluded not to go.

Edwin Briggs writes to Cushing O. Briggs:

PERRYMANSVILLE, February 13, 1845.

DEAR FATHER: — We received your letter with one hundred dollars yesterday, and as there is little probability of the rest not coming perfectly safe and that we shall get all our timber out and be ready to come home in two or three weeks, we wish you to send on the other hundred and fifty immediately if you can. We have fine weather here most of the time and have worked every day with our jackets and waistcoats off. The birds are singing and everything has the appearance of the spring of the year. We all enjoy good health. It is now nine o'clock, and we have a letter yet to write to Captain Brooks. . . .

From your affectionate Son,

EDWIN.

In 1847 their partnership with Capt. Noah Brooks was dissolved, and E. and H. O. Briggs removed to South Boston Point, "near the rolling mills," where they built until after the Civil War, employing mostly men from their native town, whose skill in building vessels on the banks of the North River had already been tested by the Briggs family. They built some of the fastest and most famous clipper ships that have ever been launched in the United States, among them, many of which were mentioned under H. O. Briggs, were the following: the *Newton*, 450 tons burthen; *Reliance*, 450 tons; *Oxenbridge*, 580 tons; *Mary*

Glover, 650 tons; *Southern Cross*, 1,000 tons; *Northern Light*, 1,050 tons, which last was built for Capt. James Huckins. She made the quickest passage ever made (by a sailing vessel) between Boston and San Francisco around Cape Horn. E. and H. O. Briggs also built the *Cape Cod*, 850 tons; *Winged Arrow*, 1,150 tons; *Meteor*, 1,150 tons; *Golden Light*, 1,150 tons, which was struck by lightning on her first voyage when only a few days out, and burned to the water's edge; *John Land*, 1,150 tons; *Bonita*, 1,150 tons; *Cyclone*, 1,150 tons; *Boston Light*, 1,180 tons; *Starlight*, 1,180 tons; *Grace Darling*, 1,240 tons; *Saracen*, 1,300 tons; *Cossack*, 600 tons; *Vistula*, 1,185 tons; *Marmaluke*, 1,300 tons; *Fair Wind*, 1,300 tons; *Alarm*, 1,200 tons; *Joseph Peabody*, 1,200 tons; *Asa Eldredge*, 1,300 tons; *Dreadnought*, *Colorado*; and many others.

About 1865 the Briggs Brothers dissolved partnership and went out of business. J. Edwin Briggs never engaged in active business again. On 2 Oct. 1869 he sold to John Bates and others the Ship *Colorado* "as she now lays in New York, with all on board or on shore, including the ship's chronometer, for the sum of Twenty-five thousand dollars in cash."

James Edwin Briggs married 6 Jan. 1847 (another record says 25 Dec. 1846) Harriette Richmond Stetson, born in Medford 14 May 1825, daughter of Jotham and Harriet (James) Stetson.

Jotham Stetson was born in Scituate 17 Nov. 1794, son of Silas and Martha (Milton) Stetson. He married 31 Oct. 1822 Harriet James, born in Scituate 1 Jan. 1796, daughter of John and Prudence (Stanton) James. (See Stetson chapter.)

Harriette (Stetson) Briggs died in Medford 10 Oct. 1879. J. Edwin Briggs died in South Scituate 24 June 1880. Their residence was in Medford.

Children of J. Edwin Briggs and Harriette Stetson:

- i. FRANK STETSON, b. 21 Feb. 1848; d. 21 Nov. 1859.
- ii. EDWIN RICHMOND, b. 8 Sept. 1860; d. 24 Sept. 1860.
- iii. By adoption, Lilian Frederica, b. 11 Nov. 1861; d. abt. 1934. She married Charles Chadbourne of Medford, by whom she had a son and possibly other children.



THE DEACON NATHANIEL HAYWARD HOUSE,
EAST BRAINTREE
WHERE MERCY LITTLE BRIGGS LIVED AFTER
HER HUSBAND, C. O. BRIGGS, DIED, 1862



ABIGAIL CUSHING
WIFE OF DR. CUSHING OTIS AND DAUGHTER
OF JUDGE NATHAN CUSHING



HARRISON OTIS BRIGGS
1824-81
(See page 767)



HANNAH ELIZABETH STETSON
1828-81
WIFE OF H. O. BRIGGS

146. HARRISON OTIS⁷ BRIGGS (101. *Cushing O.*⁶, *Thomas B.*⁵, *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 30 Jan. 1824. Like his brothers he followed shipbuilding, and acquired proficiency first in the family yard on North River. When he was 19 years of age his father gave him the remainder of his time, in order that he might go with his brother, J. Edwin Briggs, to South Boston and gain practical knowledge of the building of larger vessels than were then being built on North River. The Briggs ships built at South Boston vied with those built by Donald Mackay at East Boston, and fleets from both these yards substantially helped to make the fame of New England as a great shipbuilding center. J. Edwin and Harrison O. Briggs were fortunate enough to be able to retire from business in time to avoid loss, and both secured handsome profits.

Following is a letter sent by Harrison O. Briggs during his first trip to Europe, to his brothers, Edwin and Lloyd Briggs, care of E. and H. O. Briggs, South Boston:

LIVERPOOL, August 3rd, 1856

DEAR BROTHERS:— I have just arrived in Liverpool after a passage of 10½ days. The weather has been fine and the voyage satisfactory. The thermometer has ranged from 46 to 56 deg. Ever since we left I have worn an overcoat every day and have not felt uncomfortable. After leaving New York on Wednesday we had smooth weather until Sunday — when we passed Cape Race and stood north across the banks of Newfoundland as far as Lat. 53, where we saw three icebergs — One large one looked fine in the sunlight and reflected all the colors of the rainbow. During the next day we had some fog, and on the next day the wind blew harder and the sea ran higher than I have ever seen it. The steamer was obliged to shape her course in such a direction that the sea ran athwart ship, and she rolled her paddlehouses under. At dinner the dishes flew in all directions and the decanters jumped around like mice. The weather the succeeding days has been very pleasant and we have run at full speed the whole time with the exception of the stormy days and about five hours in making the coast of Ireland, averaging 300 miles a day. . . . On Saturday August 2nd we made the northern coast of Ireland and sailed within two miles of the shore, passing within two miles of

the Giant's Causeway and viewing splendid scenery. The usual course is to sail around the south end of Ireland, but this is a little shorter route and the Captain thought the ocean clear enough of ice to venture the northern passage. On Sunday August 3rd we made "Bell Buoy," which is at the mouth of the River Mersey, 25 miles below Liverpool, took a pilot, and was anchored off Birkenhead opposite the city at 11 A.M. We are now quartered at the Adelphi Hotel. I shall look around tomorrow and find if the *Grace Darling* has arrived in London and what the state of the market is in this quarter. I wish you would write by every steamer, and let me know about business and how the ship progresses — who makes the rigging, &c, also for Lloyd to write all the particulars about the state of affairs at home. . . .

From your affectionate Brother,

H. O. B.

Briggs Brothers' yard was at the foot of F Street, where they built the famous ship *Southern Cross* and others. Later Messrs. Briggs moved to K Street. Josiah C. Amee, with the title of General, was the sailmaker. He was a brother-in-law of Josiah Dunham and lived on Broadway.

The clipper ship *Northern Light* was built in South Boston by E. and H. O. Briggs in their shipyard at the foot of K Street, and held the unbeaten record for clipper ships when she came into the port of Boston in 78 days and 8 hours out of San Francisco by the way of Cape Horn. This record run was heralded throughout the country. She was commanded by Capt. Freeman Hatch, from Eastham on the Cape, that cradle of dauntless seamen. He died in 1889, and on his tombstone in the cemetery at Eastham is inscribed: "Freeman Hatch, 1820-1889. He became famous making the astonishing passage in clipper ship *Northern Light* from San Francisco to Boston in 78 days 8 hours — an achievement won by no mortal before or since."

"American Clipper Ships," Vol. II, published by the Marine Research Society of Salem, gives three and one-half pages to an account of the run of this famous vessel.

The "Boston Traveler" of Saturday, 21 Apr. 1928, gave an account of the famous clipper, from which we quote:

. . . But more than the bare fact were the features of the run that in 1853 had even greater fascination than record sporting event news ever had in 1928.

The *Light* romped into the Golden Gate on the same date with the *Contest* and the *Trade Wind*, a duet of New York built clippers, and when it was later learned that the three were to sail around the Horn on about the same day, wagers began to swell on the prospective event. It was New York *versus* Boston. Moreover, the *Contest* was conceded to be the fastest in ballast trim, and for that reason betting was largely on the *Light* against the *Trade Wind*.

The getaway was a thrilling one on the west coast. The entire waterfront of San Francisco flocked to see the respective sailings: the *Trade Wind* on March 10, the *Contest* on March 12, at 3 P.M., and the *Light* on March 13, 1853.

Logs and stories afterward disclosed features of the race. One story was that Capt. Hatch walked up on the *Contest* off Cape Horn, and signalled that he couldn't sail along in company because "he couldn't hold his horse."

At least, the *Contest* was 79 days on the run, the *Trade Wind* 84 days, and the *Light* 78 days. The best single day of the *Light* was 355 miles as against 320 of the *Contest*. As a result of this marathon of the seas, the *Light* came more than ever into demand.

Among the many clipper ships built by E. and H. O. Briggs in South Boston, recorded and illustrated in "American Clipper Ships," by Howe and Matthews, we find the *Alarm*, 1856; the *Bonita*, 1853; the *Boston Light*, 1854; the *Golden Light*, 1852; the *Grace Darling*, 1854; the *Joseph Peabody*, 1856; the *Meteor*, 1852; the *Northern Light*, 1851; the *Starlight*, 1854; the *Saracen*, 1854; the *Southern Cross*, 1851; the *Vistula*, 1855; the *Winged Arrow*, 1854; and others.

On his retirement, about 1865, Harrison O. Briggs took an active part in relieving the suffering of the inhabitants of the city of Savannah, after its occupation by United States troops under General Sherman. On 9 Jan. 1865, a meeting of the citizens of Boston was held at Faneuil Hall, and in four days over \$34,000 was subscribed in Boston for that purpose. The money and supplies were placed in the hands of trustees or agents, who gave their time and services. Harrison O. Briggs, as the head of the committee, requested

the Collector of the Port of New York to grant clearance for provisions to the amount of \$50,000 in value. He was one of the two trustees who sailed from Boston with their trust 14 Jan. 1865, on the steamer *Greyhound* (offered free by Glidden & Williams), and which arrived in Savannah 25 January. The third trustee sailed from New York on the same day on the *Daniel Webster*.

The following letter was sent to General Sherman at Savannah:

BOSTON, January 13th, 1865.

Major General W. T. SHERMAN, *Savannah, Ga.*

DEAR SIR: — As the Executive Committee of citizens of Boston, who have contributed supplies to be forwarded to Savannah for the relief of the sufferers of that city, we beg to introduce to your acquaintance, as our agents, Messrs. Harrison O. Briggs, Julian Allen and William H. Baldwin, who offered to take charge of their transmission and delivery.

We have given them a letter from the General Committee to the Mayor of Savannah, and our written instructions for their guidance. We enclose to you copies of these papers.

They will, of course, be in all respects subject to your direction or, in your absence, to that of the General commanding in Savannah.

Permit us to assure you that we all feel a profound appreciation of the great services to our country of yourself and your noble army.

We are very respectfully yours,

WILLIAM GRAY.

E. R. MUDGE.

JOHN A. BLANCHARD.

NATHAN CROWELL.

WM. T. GLIDDEN.

The committee, headed by Harrison O. Briggs, performed their duties most faithfully, and at a public meeting held in Savannah on 25 Jan. 1865, presided over by the Mayor, R. D. Arnold, among other resolves that were passed was the following:

Resolved, That our most cordial thanks are due to Messrs. H. O. Briggs, W. H. Baldwin and Henry D. Hyde, committee on the

part of the Citizens of Boston, who, at this inclement season of the year, have sacrificed the comforts of home, and braved the privations of a winter voyage, to fulfill their mission of mercy.

In 1860 Harrison O. Briggs was elected a member of the Board of Aldermen of the city of Boston, and while a member of the Board was appointed chairman of the committee which had charge of the arrangements for the reception and entertainment of H. R. H. the Prince of Wales.

After 1865 Harrison O. Briggs was Manager of the Bristol Line of steamers for a few years, until in 1872-73 he opened a banker's and broker's office on State Street in connection with his brother, Lloyd Briggs. He had been a director of the National Bank of the Republic for many years, and was greatly interested in its affairs. On the death, in 1876, of its President, David Snow, Harrison O. Briggs was chosen his successor, a position that he held at the time of his death. While a resident of South Boston, Mr. Briggs lived on G Street at the top of the hill. Later he lived at 124 Marlborough Street, Boston, where he died 6 Dec. 1881.

Harrison Otis Briggs married 14 Oct. 1847 Hannah Elizabeth Stetson, born in South Boston 17 Nov. 1828, daughter of Alpheus and Hannah Williams (Kent) Stetson, both of Scituate ancestry. Alpheus Stetson was born in Scituate, son of Micah and Sarah (Copeland) Stetson. Hannah W. Kent was a daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Brooks) Kent of South Boston, earlier of Scituate. (See Kent chapter.) Mrs. Hannah (Stetson) Briggs died in Boston 27 Nov. 1881.

Children of Harrison O. Briggs and Hannah E. Stetson:

190. i. ELLA STETSON, b. 21 Dec. 1849 in South Boston; m. George Andrew Thayer.
191. ii. LIZZIE FLORENCE, b. 1 Sept. 1853; m. Andrew Gerrish Webster.
192. iii. FRANK HARRISON, b. 26 Feb. 1860; d. 1930; unm.
- iv. HARRISON OTIS, JR., b. 26 July 1871; d. 26 Nov. 1872.

147. MARY THOMAS⁷ BRIGGS (101. *Cushing O.*⁶, *Thomas B.*⁵, *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 11 Apr. 1828 in the Briggs homestead on Cross Street,

Scituate. She married 14 Apr. 1852 James Turner Tolman, and lived until about 1886 in the Col. Charles Tolman house on Pine Street, Norwell, not far from Church Hill, now (1936) the residence of the family of the late Walter Sanger Crane, Jr. James T. Tolman sold the old estate on Pine Street to William B. Brooks, and purchased the house on the corner of Oakland Avenue and Broadway, Hanover, near the "Four Corners," which had been built in part from timbers taken from the first St. Andrew's Church edifice, which stood on the summit of Church Hill. The house was built for a rectory for the society, and was first occupied by the Rev. Mr. Cooper from 1812-16. James T. Tolman died in Hanover 29 Jan. 1896. Mary (Briggs) Tolman died in Hanover in 1909.

TOLMAN

James Turner Tolman was born in Scituate 22 Aug. 1825, son of Col. Charles and Judith (Hatch) Tolman. He was a descendant of Thomas Tolman, born in England, who settled in Dorehester before 1640, and had sons John and Thomas Tolman. John Tolman of Dorchester had a son, Capt. Benjamin Tolman, who came from Dorchester to Scituate in 1709, and married Elizabeth Perry, widow of Bezaleel Palmer. Captain Tolman established a tannery on the brook in the valley, near his residence, later that of his son-in-law, Joseph Copeland, forty rods east of Church Hill, now (1936) Mrs. Louisa (Sylvester) Hall's. Elisha Tolman, son of Capt. Benjamin and Elizabeth (Perry) Palmer, born 20 Nov. 1718, married 3 Dec. 1740, Miriam Turner, born 3 Feb. 1713/14, daughter of Charles and Mercy (Curtis) Turner of Winter Street. Samuel Tolman, son of Elisha and Miriam (Turner), born 25 Apr. 1756, married 25 Nov. 1784 Rebecca Copeland, born 30 Aug. 1755, daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth (Tolman) Copeland, who was his cousin. Col. Samuel Tolman, born 8 Aug. 1785, who married 21 Feb. 1819, Judith Hatch, b. 1798, was their son. The land on which the Colonel Tolman house stands was, according to a tradition, a part of the estate of Charles Stockbridge, whose daughter, Abigail Stockbridge, married Gilbert Brooks. Another daughter, Experience Stockbridge, married Recompence Tiffany, for whom Tiffany Road has been so called. The late William B. Brooks, who purchased the property about 1886, was interested in it because it was once owned by his ancestor, Gilbert Brooks.

The architecture of the present house indicates that it was built about the middle of the eighteenth century.

Children of Mary T. Briggs and James T. Tolman:

- i. MORGIANNA TOLMAN, b. 4 Apr. 1856, was a teacher in the public schools of South Scituate and Abington. She began teaching about 1875 in the ungraded school in District No. 4, South Scituate, then in District No. 7, in the grammar school on River Street north of Church Hill; but she found her life work in the Abington High School, 1885-1926, giving to it a service of forty-three years, and on her retirement was greatly honored by her past pupils. She is unmarried and lives in the family home on Oakland Avenue, Hanover.
- ii. HERBERT CUSHING TOLMAN, b. 4 Nov. 1865; after attending the local schools, grad. Rockland High School 1884. Received B.A. degree Yale 1888; Ph.D. Yale 1890; assistant in Indo-European languages Yale 1891; instructor in Latin, University of Wisconsin, 1891-92, and remaining there as assistant professor of Sanscrit 1892-93; professor of Sanscrit and acting professor of Greek at University of North Carolina 1893-94; became professor of Greek, Vanderbilt University, Nashville, Tenn., 1894. In 1914 was appointed Dean of the College of Arts and Sciences (Vanderbilt), which position he held at the time of his death.

Soon after he went to Vanderbilt, Dr. Tolman was given a leave of absence to pursue his studies abroad, and in 1896 attended the University of Berlin, and again in 1905 was given leave of absence to attend the University of Munich. Previous to this time he had received his D.D. degree at Peabody College, and later, in 1913, received his S.T.D. from Hobart; LL.D. from University of Nashville in 1913, and same degree from University of Louisville 1917. In 1913 was tendered the presidency of Hobart College, but declined the offer.

In languages he was known internationally, and won signal recognition for his numerous works, especially in the field of ancient Persian, Greek and Sanscrit. He was an eminent scholar, and held membership in a number of organizations, both in the United States and abroad. He was Honorary Canon of All Saints Cathe-

dral at Milwaukee from 1904, and member of the Royal Asiatic Society from 1924 until his death. He attended both the international Congress of Arts and Sciences at the St. Louis Exposition in 1904, and the Archeological Congress at Athens, Greece, in 1905. He was a lecturer of the Archeological Institute of America in 1912, and was in charge during several summers of Holy Trinity Church in Munich, Germany, Christ Church in Lucerne, Switzerland, and special preacher at Old Trinity Church, in New York, on several occasions.

Dean Tolman was noted as an author of numerous works, and won high praise from a noteworthy British magazine for a treatise on cuneiform inscriptions. He was also the author of the following works: "Harper and Tolman's Caesar's Gallic War," 1891; "Tolman's Persian Inscriptions," 1892; "Kerr and Tolman's Greek Gospel of Matthew," 1892; "Harper's Text Edition of Caesar," 1893; "Harrington and Tolman's Greek and Roman Mythology," 1897; "Tolman and Stephenson's Herodotus and the Empires of the East," 1899; "Art of Translating," 1900; "Urba Beata," 1902; "Myceneus Troy" (with G. C. Scoggins), 1904; "Via Crusis," 1907; "Ancient Persian Lexicon and Texts," 1909; "Ancient Persian Language and Cuneiform Supplement," 1910; "Christi Imago," 1915; Editor, "Vanderbilt Oriental Series" (nine volumes completed); Associate Editor of "World's Progress" (ten volumes). One of his major works was "Ancient Persian Lexicon and Text," giving the ancient Persian cuneiform inscriptions, followed by "The Cuneiform Supplement," giving the cuneiform texts in the original. The former volume was published, together with an "Index Verborum," written by Dr. E. L. Johnson.

Dr. Tolman was a thirty-second degree Mason, also a member of the Phi Beta Kappa honorary scholastic fraternity, and was President of the Vanderbilt Chapter of that order. His services as a priest in the Protestant Episcopal Church were sought by the leading parishes in America. Every summer he filled pulpits in the larger parishes of the East, and during the scholastic year he filled the pulpit at Christ Church on numbers of occasions. As a reader, Dr. Tolman had few equals.

and his reading of the Episcopal service was impressive. As a lecturer he was known far and wide, and he had represented Vanderbilt as an exchange lecturer.

Dr. Herbert C. Tolman died in Nashville 24 Nov. 1923. On the occasion of the thirty-first anniversary of the founding of the Vanderbilt Chapter of Phi Beta Kappa by Dean Tolman, Vanderbilt University paid tribute to his memory. He was beloved as "teacher, scholar and friend" by hundreds of Vanderbilt men of past years. A bronze bust of the Dean was presented to the University by the Tolman Memorial Association.

Herbert Cushing Tolman married 26 Aug. 1891 Mary B. Wells of New Haven, Conn. They had an adopted child, Mary Alice.

CHAPTER XVIII

DESCENDANTS OF WALTER BRIGGS

LLOYD⁷ BRIGGS

GENERATION VII

CUSHING OTIS⁶, THOMAS BARKER⁵, JAMES⁴, JAMES³,
CORNELIUS², WALTER¹

148. LLOYD⁷ BRIGGS was born in Scituate 8 Apr. 1830; died in Boston 12 Mar. 1911. He lived in Boston, Hanson, Hanover and Boston, respectively. He married in Boston, 15 Nov. 1858, *Sarah Elizabeth Elms Kent*, born in Scituate 22 Sept. 1834, died in Boston 7 May 1909.

The family of Cushing Otis⁶ Briggs had been steadily increasing since his marriage in 1813, when he took his bride to the comfortable home in Scituate which he had prepared for her and in which his grandfather, James Briggs, and his two maiden aunts had lived. It was here that my father, Lloyd⁷ Briggs, was born in 1830. It was in the same year that Cushing Otis Briggs dissolved his partnership with his brother, Henry⁶ Briggs, and started building ships independently at the Briggs shipyard. Judging by the many ships which he built and the various adventures of those in which he retained an interest, these must have been years of increasing prosperity for him until 1837.

I have in my possession the account book of Dr. Cushing Otis, who was great uncle of Lloyd Briggs, and in it I find the entry, "1830, April 9 — To Cushing Otis Briggs, to delivering your wife, \$4." This entry was evidently made the day after Lloyd was born. When Noah Kent and his wife were temporarily in Scituate, I find in this same account book, "1834, Sept. 22, — To Noah Kent for attendance on your wife, \$4." It was not until twenty years



LLOYD BRIGGS, ESQ.

1830-1911

we shall boldly express them. . . . Personal attack is not worthy of notice; captious ascerbity is beneath it. We are aware that it is not now the mode to appear in such stunted robes as we have adopted; but we have chosen to set fashion at defiance and study our own convenience. . . . The minds of many parents have been much agonized during the past fortnight by the disclosure of a system of depredation carried on by a combination of young men, minors and apprentices in respectable mercantile establishments, who have been for a long time plundering their employers of goods and money to an extent unparalleled in the annals of the city. . . . Some of our most influential citizens are engaged in an attempt to prevent the recurrence of similar crime and calamity, by removing temptations and destroying the principal incentives. . . . The first blow should be aimed at the third row of the theatres. Let them be entirely closed or their pestilential atmospheres, thoroughly purified from contagion. . . . Let the police of the green boxes be rigid in the maintenance of order; well-paid; of reputable character and above bribery. Let there be no private entrance to this moral pandemonium; . . . let there be no difference in the price between the third and first tier of boxes; no saloon; no side scenes or screen behind which conscious guilt can conceal itself from the eyes of friends, parents or guardians. . . . Public stables and bar-rooms, billiard tables and bowling alleys are fruitful sources of that unwarranted extravagance in minors which so often involves consequences of the most appalling nature.

This paper tells us in that year the precious metals imported to the United States were valued at \$7,400,000, and exported, \$4,300,000.

Lloyd Briggs first went to a little school taught by his sister Hannah, in a schoolroom in the old part, or ell, of his father's house. Afterward, until he was sixteen years old, he attended the school located next the home of his great-uncle, Dr. Cushing Otis, working in his father's shipyard when not occupied with his school work.

It was decided that he should leave school at sixteen, and he probably worked in his father's shipyard until the autumn, when he entered the machine shop of J. P. Coney, in South Boston, as apprentice.

He kept up a correspondence with his last instructor in the Scituate school, Mr. Paul B. Merritt. Among my

father's papers I found a letter, dated 13 Mar. 1847, enclosing a valedictory written by Mr. Merritt, and read at the examination at the close of Mr. Merritt's school in Feb. 1847. The letter concludes:

I submit it to your disposal, and if its occasional perusal shall call up any reminiscences of your last school winter, may I not hope that a single thought will be bestowed upon him whose pleasure and happiness it was to be your instructor, who will ever be solicitous for your happiness and prosperity in life, and who with fervent prayers to heaven for its blessing on all your undertakings, subscribes himself,

Your sincere friend,

PAUL B. MERRITT.

My father's elder brother William had already entered Andover Seminary, and was studying for the ministry. William wrote from North Andover, under date of 20 Mar. 1847, to Lloyd (then in Scituate), a letter from which I quote:

DEAR BROTHER: — Mary⁷ writes that you are about leaving your home, so that I may regard you, like myself, as a branch cut off from the old trunk and in one sense distinct. I hope you will take the friendly hints in this letter as a brother's legacy, although they may not come to you clothed with much wisdom or experience.

When Washington's mother was reminded of the honours heaped upon her son and the blessings he had conferred upon his country, she said she was not at all surprised, for George was always a good boy. Lloyd, your father and mother can say this of you. Fidelity and honesty have shone quite clearly and I think beautifully through your conduct, and thus inspired them and me with high hopes. . . . You can know only by experience what a step it is from the paternal roof into the open world. You will have no father's commands, no mother's warm chidings to repress the rashness of youth, and in your hours of dejection and sorrow you will not be able to lay your head upon the lap of their affection and look into their eyes of sympathy.

I would urge scarcely anything more earnestly than that you look well to the company you keep. Don't be taken by appearances. You will find that though men may sing sweetly and talk smoothly you are not to trust them always.

Be prudent in your expenses while you are liberal in your charities. Cultivate a love for study and do not live an idle moment. Industry, if rightly directed, will fill your heart, head and purse. Remember that you have a soul to be cared for as well as a body. Take the Bible which your mother gives you and keep it in your pocket to feed your heart upon.

I know you will be true and faithful to your employer. Show that you feel interested for him, and he will feel more interested in you. . . . You must try to come to Andover in the course of the summer, and write often.

God bless you, is the prayer of your brother

WILLIAM.

In Sept. 1847 Lloyd left home to serve his apprenticeship with Jabez Coney, whose machine-shop was in South Boston. Here he was one of twenty apprentices. He first lived in Hudson Street, which was then a fashionable part of Boston. His experiences are best told in his own words in a letter to his mother:

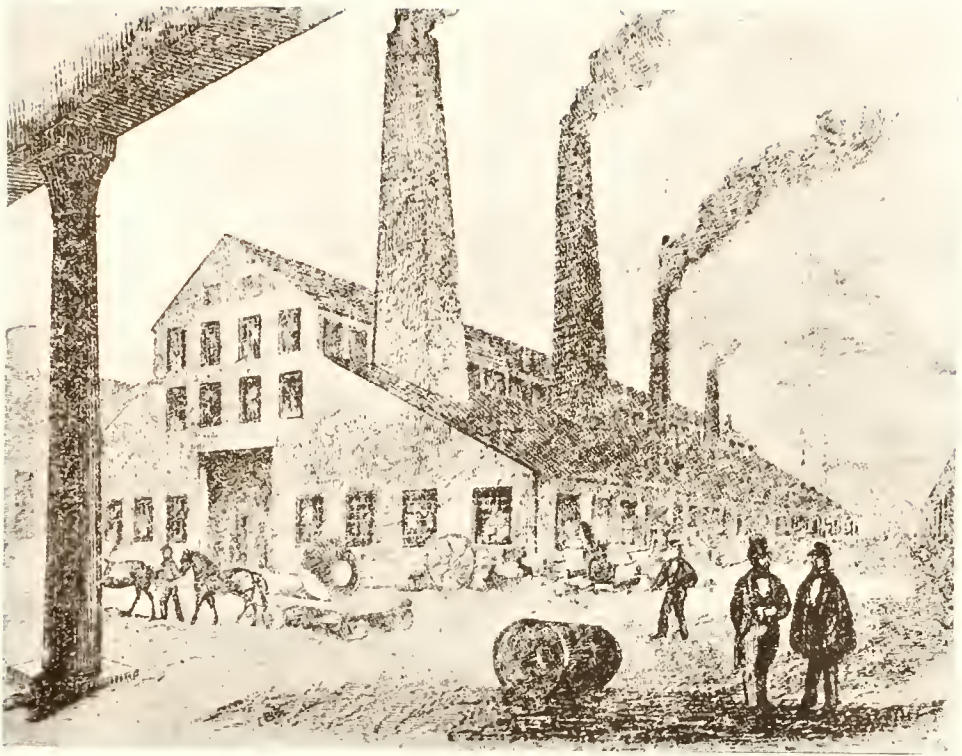
125 HUDSON STREET, BOSTON,
September 26, 1847

After starting in such a hurry and being shut up in that dark carriage on such a stormy morning, I felt almost homesick. I rode to Hingham all alone, arrived in Boston and got my chest to the house in safety. I walked about all the forenoon and at two and a half left for Andover. It stormed furiously and I did not feel much like going. The storm seemed to increase and by the time I got to Andover it was about east. After I got out of the vehicle I found it was a long way to Mr. Hersey's but I pushed on through mud and water about up to my knees, and at length, after a tedious march, arrived almost exhausted.

I found William and we entertained each other as well as we could until night. Sunday it rained very hard. Monday it rained harder. Tuesday was a most beautiful day. In the afternoon I left.

Arriving in Boston Tuesday night I went to my boarding place and the next day saw Mr. Coney who told me he was going to Concord and would not be back until next Monday. I hardly knew what to do and began to be almost afraid I should not get in at Mr. Coney's after all.

I went to the shop Monday morning and the foreman set me to work. Mr. Coney passed through the shop in the forenoon



ALGER'S FOUNDRY (NEAR VIEW)



DISTANT VIEW OF ALGER'S FOUNDRY, SOUTH BOSTON, 1848

and made me a very polite bow. I have now worked a week and think I shall like it very much. He puts apprentices ahead as fast as they have a mind to go.

I have a very nice boarding place, with good food and enough of it, with a little room by myself. I bless you, my mother, for the kind teachings you have given me! Often when I look into my chest I can hardly keep from shedding tears to see how a mother's hand can put in every little thing.

I have a firm faith that we shall at last meet, an unbroken family, in that blessed abode where we shall never part. I am pleasantly situated indeed. The woman whom I board with is a Baptist. She wishes us to make ourselves perfectly at home. We commence work at $\frac{1}{2}$ past 6, have an hour at noon, and leave off at $\frac{1}{2}$ past 6 all the year round. We leave off at dark Saturday night.

You know I was opposed to changing and keeping Saturday to Sunday night, but have been obliged to do so myself, although I keep them both as well as I can. I believe Mr. Coney gives his apprentices \$3 per week for Board, and as much as they have a mind to ask him for for clothes. The greatest objection to the trade is the dirt, but one feels better when he is washed. I have not spent much for dainties. I can not help enjoying myself, but at times do feel a little homesick and, as Mrs. Benjamin James says, "I would not give much for anyone who does not."

I have very pleasant men to work with, who are willing to show and help me. The foreman is a very nice man, a member of Mr. Patten's church. He tells me how to do things that I know nothing at all about, but I go right off to work upon them, seldom asking him anything, but find out among the workmen and do it.

There are about twenty apprentices. I have not had an opportunity of seeing Mr. Fairchild about joining the church, but intend to do so as soon as I can. I want when you write me for Hannah and Mary to put in a word — father, mother and even Frank, all put in a word, and direct it to 125 Hudson Street.

Nelson Curtis, who is quite a fine fellow here, had but \$2 when he started.

There are to be some fine music and fireworks on the Common on Tuesday night, September 28.

Your affectionate son,

LLOYD.

The Briggs families have always been most united. I extract from a Round Robin letter to Lloyd Briggs from

his mother and his sisters, Mary Thomas and Hannah Barker Briggs in 1847, addressed in care of his brother Edwin and wife, where Lloyd was visiting.

Mary writes:

. . . I was very glad to hear you were so well situated and with Edwin and Harriett. I have no doubt that you will be very happy indeed. I ask your candid opinion upon the subject, do you not think you shall enjoy yourself as well as I shall at Bethiah Tolman's? You can not imagine how you are missed in our little circle, once so large, but which has been diminishing slowly until now but a few remain. . . . I hope you will often gladden Scituate by the light of your countenance, and I think by this time you will be glad to hear the news of this your native town. . . .

Hannah writes:

As you have just gone from your beloved home and entered upon a new scene of action, I thought it best to do what little I could to encourage you and keep you in good spirits by letting you know frequently how we prosper without your dear society and how we get along without your kind assistance. Truly, we do miss you very much. We regret your absence and feel it deeply. It seems as though you must take your accustomed place at the table, and when we sit by the fire with our small circle we wish that you could join us. . . .

On 21 Dec. 1847 Lloyd's mother, Mercy Little Briggs, addressed a loving letter to him at 125 Hudson Street, part of which I quote:

I want to tell you what a good boy you have been to me. . . . Hannah boards at Edward Little's, the Master likewise. Our boy Charles has been a week at Mr. Duncan's to see his sister, and your father, Frank and myself were all the family. Our school has commenced and your being away is no loss to you, for the teacher is but nineteen and never taught before, and Charles says it is the most noisy school he ever was in. Frank Dana goes to school this winter very much against his inclination. He says he had much rather work.

Give much love to Mrs. Otis, Debby (Briggs) and Abby (Otis). . . . Be sure and write every opportunity, and let us know how you enjoy yourself and when you want anything. If

you have "Blake's Philosophy" and can spare it for Charles this winter, I wish you would send it by Mary.

May Heaven's choicest blessings rest upon you! May you find sweet peace in believing! So prays your own Mother,

MERCY L. BRIGGS.

On 7 Feb. 1848 Lloyd's sister, Mary T. Briggs, mailed from Scituate a letter to him from which I quote:

. . . By the way, you need not say anything about it, but Francis has been up to see Hannah twice during her vacation, and we hope something may result from that protracted courtship. She had to leave school on account of the scarlet fever which prevailed to an alarming degree in Marshfield. Mr. Sherman, where she boarded last summer, lost his only child, Mr. Wetherbee two children and Mr. Tappan one. The teacher in our district has left, being unable to manage the school, and in his stead we have Mr. Mungo. Charles likes him very much, for he keeps very good order. . . . I saw Paul B. Merritt the other day; he inquired very particularly after you, so you may expect a letter forthwith from his royal Highness. He has a very large school, and there has been a report that he is courting Harriet Curtis. . . . Welthea James inquires often after you. Mother sends love to you and Edwin, and says that she thought when she was visiting you that your cup of happiness seemed full. She does not think there is a single hour in the day but what she thinks of her beloved children and their companions. . . . Tell Edwin and Harrison if it should be good sleighing and they can not work in the shipyard they must take you and, with their wives, visit Scituate. . . . *Horace Briggs has gone to Rhode Island after timber.* . . . Give my love to Mrs. Otis's family and Aunt Deborah Briggs. . . . Mr. Barnes, who worked for us last summer, occupies a front seat in the choir of Mr. Mosely's church.

Ship timber had already become nearly exhausted in Plymouth County. The last standing timber of sufficient size for ships' knees and other framing was cut in Bridgewater and hauled to Scituate by oxen. Cushing O. Briggs then sent his sons to Maryland to select and cut ship timber which was delivered to Hobart's or Briggs' shipyard by water. As long ago as when the United States Frigate *Constitution* was built at Hartts' yard, now Constitution

Wharf, Boston, the master carpenters were sent to St. Simons Island near Brunswick, Georgia, to select and cut live oak trees which were sent to Boston to build the frame of the frigate. Her anchors came from the Old Forge, Hanover, Mass.

A letter from Lloyd's sister, Mary T. Briggs, dated Seitu-ate 5 Mar. 1848, mentions the death of Mary Sampson, a neighbor, after an illness of a few weeks. I quote a few passages from a letter to Lloyd Briggs, still at 125 Hudson Street, from his mother, dated from Seitu-ate 22 Dec. 1848:

EVER DEAR LLOYD: — S. Allen has cut your pants, and I have finished them. I think they will set well. We have now a very severe snowstorm which commenced yesterday. Your father, myself and Frank sit down alone to enjoy it and the unnumbered blessings we have continually bestowed upon us, our own health and the health of my family. . . . Tell Edwin and Harrison I write to you because you are alone, and they have beloved wives and one dear babe. . . . God bless you!

Your ever loving mother,

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

In 1849, having nearly served his time as apprentice at J. P. Coney's, my father went to the Portsmouth Navy Yard as engineer, and assisted in "setting up" the engines in the U. S. S. *Saranac*, the first steam vessel built there and also the engines for the floating dry dock. The *Saranac* was afterward lost off California.

In Sept. 1897, I visited Portsmouth and the Kittery Navy Yard with my father, arriving at Portsmouth at noon on 5 Sept., as recorded in my diary. We engaged rooms at the Rockingham House, quite famous at this time, and after lunch hired a horse and buggy of Cochran, proprietor of the American Stables, for \$2.50 for the afternoon. The horse was a beautiful creature, an ambitious little beast named "Nero." We drove over the toll bridge, 2,000 feet long, crossing the Piscataqua River to Kittery, where, at the Navy Yard, I saw the very shears of which father used to climb to the top in his work, also the dry dock, for which he built the engines and helped place them in position. We walked all about the yard and I listened to many tales of the hap-



LLOYD BRIGGS
IN 1846, AGED 16 YEARS THE YEAR HE LEFT HOME

penings of 1849, when father was there. He told me about a gunner who had only one leg, Richard Fletcher Dunn, who was "in active service on board the *Constitution* at the time of her memorable encounter, and was for more than forty years a gunner in the Portsmouth Navy Yard." His duty was to sit astride one of the guns with a swab in his hands, and after the gun had been fired to run back and reach over to swab it out. Then it was reloaded, run up to the porthole, and fired again, he still sitting astride. While in that position a ball from the enemy's gun struck his leg. He, however, did not feel it at the time, and was not aware he had been injured until they took him off the gun and carried him below. After the war was over he performed one season in a circus with only one leg. Dunn was afterwards appointed a gunner, and stationed in the Portsmouth Navy Yard where he remained until his death.

We visited the Piscataqua House, called the Hayes House in my father's day, where he spent the first two weeks of his residence at the yard. It was then kept by one Hayes, whose son Alonzo, clad in weather-beaten clothes, and nearly 80 years of age, we saw working in the yard. We visited the Isaiah Hanscom house, where father lived when he left the Hayes House. Mr. Hanscom, who was then clerk of the yard, had a wife and three children and did not usually take boarders. Father inquired for John Paul, who used to be quartermaster on the yard (in 1848/9), and learned he was dead, but that his brother, William Paul, was living in Eliot.

When father was at Portsmouth he walked two miles every Sunday to attend the Congregational Church at Kittery Point, built in 1714. We visited this church and the parsonage just back of it, occupied, in father's time, by a minister who preached Sundays and farmed the rest of the week.

The only resident we could trace who was living there in 1849 was Miss Lucy Cutts, whom father remembered, and who was at church when we called. With her nephew she inherited the Lady Peppercell house, now called the Cutts house, across the road from the side of the church. This is

a most interesting house, with a knocker on the panelled door that opens into a large hall, from which rises the stairway. It was built by Lady Pepperell in 1759 that she might be near her daughter who lived in the old Sparhawk house, so called, built by Col. Nathaniel Sparhawk who married the only daughter of Sir William Pepperell in 1742.

We next drove by the "New Road" to Greenacre. There were many flowers in the yards of the houses, and on the banks and under the windows, and about 100 feet from many of the houses, in the fields, could be seen gravestones, the family graveyard so frequently located on the ancestral farms. In the evening we went to the Methodist Church in Portsmouth and walked her streets, seeing the Sinclair place, Parrott's residence, the man who invented the Parrott gun, and the house where father boarded for a time.

The next morning 6 Sept. 1897, we breakfasted at seven, after which I photographed father's old boarding house, kept in 1850, when father boarded there, by a Mrs. Haley. We then took the 7.50 boat to Badger's Island, where many famous ships were built, and from here went by an electric car to Kittery Point where we called on Miss Lizzie Cutts, and from her learned that Miss Lucy Cutts married "old John Lawrence, people said for his money, but he only left her his place and \$2,800 — which was invested in Portland Gas at 15½ which she promptly sold and invested the proceeds in the West and lost all." We visited Fort Constitution, where, on 13 Dec. 1774 "Paul Revere arrived 'express' with letters from some of the leaders in Boston to Mr. Samuel Cutts," bringing reports that troops were embarking at Boston to take possession of Fort William and Mary, as this fort was then called. We visited Fort McClary, built in 1700, and returned to Boston at the end of the day.

It is interesting to note that the first pioneer on the Piscataqua River of whom there is any definite information was Martin Pring, who sailed up the river in his sloops the *Speedwell* and the *Discoverer* in the year 1603, in search of sassafras trees, but, not finding any, he sailed away. The first colony established in New Hampshire was by John Mason, a merchant of London and secretary of a council

established in Plymouth (Devonshire), England, by Royal Charter, "for planting and governing New England," and from this council he obtained for himself and Sir Fernando Gorges, in Aug. 1622, a grant of land comprising all that is now New Hampshire. To this land they gave the name of Laconia and formed the so-called Company of Laconia. In May 1623 they sent out the first settlers of New Hampshire under the leadership of a Scotchman named David Thompson, who settled on land now included in Dover and on Odiorne's Point, and built a manor house, called Mason Hall, of stone and timber encompassed with a ditch and strong palisades, and fortified with eight guns.

Lloyd Briggs' mother wrote to him while visiting her children in Boston, on 19 May 1849, to Kittery, Maine. Enclosed in her letter is one from his sister Mary, who says:

I write to tell you how glad the reception of your letter made us — to know that you were pleasantly situated, that everything was just to your mind and that you were so happy. . . . The inhabitants of Scituate have been increasing the last few weeks. One moved into the house Mr. Perkins's family formerly occupied and one into Uncle Henry's. The former had twelve children and the latter six. Horace Briggs is quite attentive to one of their daughters — "A new face." . . . Lucy Ann Briggs is published to — Nichols, and Lucy Briggs to Cushing Nash. Is it not quite singular that there are three cousins now published? Lucy Briggs, I understand, is going to be married in the Meeting House — quite a splendid affair. Lucy Ann will not have any wedding, I think. She is going to reside in Danvers, and Emeline is going to accompany them and stay there for the present. Mother is going to remain in South Boston until after the Anniversaries. . . . William may come to Boston to attend the Anniversaries. He writes, "The little baby is very well and has gained half a pound." He hopes "to be a parent without being an idolator."

He received another letter from his mother written from Scituate 23 Nov. 1849:

I am sorry to read you are to remain there (Kittery) four or five weeks longer. You can not know how much I want to see you. You have been gone for five months — only think of it; but then I comfort myself when I think you are not in California. I long

for the time when I shall welcome home my conscientious and decided Lloyd. . . . How is your pocket money? Do let me know if you need any, and I can send some in a letter, plenty of it. . . . James Tolman visits here and, as you say, I think he is a likely young man.

Under date of 19 Aug. 1850 Lloyd's sister Mary addressed a letter to him at 47 Harvard Street, Boston. Her letter was mailed in Hanover, Mass. She writes:

. . . Mother and Hannah have gone to tea at Dr. James's. We have just received a visit from Mr. and Mrs. Jones of Illinois, she being the *sister of the late Abigail Nichols*. We also have had a call from Mrs. Ruggles and Samuel. They came on from Wendall in a private conveyance. Samuel inquired very particularly after you. Welthea James has gone to Duxbury with Mr. Merritt. I thought you might like to hear a little about Scituate, but I have not mentioned to you that I passed an afternoon with Laura, Lucia and Paley Duncan a short time since. He has been troubled with pain in his head, but is soon to resume his studies, I think in Amherst. It is nearly tea time. Mother, Father and all send much love, in which I join.

Writing again on 2 Nov. 1850 to her brother Lloyd, at 94 Tyler Street, Mary says:

Mr. Alden now takes the place of Mr. Farnum in the church at Marshfield. It is reported that Mr. Dodge is coming to sing here. He has been singing in Hanover and Abington. Augusta Tilden is going to Roxbury after Thanksgiving to pass the winter. Uncle Charles's family start for Danvers next Tuesday. I believe the night of Charlotte's marriage is not yet appointed. I think you were very much favored to get such fine chances to hear Jenny Lind sing.

I was very glad to hear of your prosperity in your drawing and singing school. May your songs always be ascriptions of praise! . . . Wonderfully favored have we been in the family, all spared to another Thanksgiving in health and happiness. . . . If you come for Thanksgiving, bring your carpet bag for apples. . . . Julia Turner has engaged a school for the winter in the district where Mr. John P. Turner resides.

My father often told me of his pleasure in hearing Jenny Lind sing in the great concert hall, which was then quite

popular, in the upper part of the Fitchburg Railroad Station, an imposing structure with towers made of Quincy granite which was standing until a few years ago next to the North Station, Boston.

Among my Uncle William's sermons is one labeled *Family Sermon, Lloyd's Birthday, Aged 21 years*, 8 Apr. 1851. The text is from Proverbs 23:25: "Thy father and thy mother shall be glad and she that bare thee shall rejoice." The sermon begins:

So it is, my brother, I am sure, with these parents as they look upon you tonight. Thy father and thy mother are glad as they behold their youngest and well-beloved son, grown to manhood. They bless the gracious Providence that watched over your infant years, guarded your youthful steps and made you what you are.

And yet around this home, welcomed as it is by us all, there gathers in some respects a saddening interest. Well do I remember a just similar season when an elder brother stood where now stands the younger, our happy circle then complete, and amid Christian counsel and fervent prayer was commended to God and the cold charities of the world. The place of that brother is vacant tonight, and yet I believe he looks sweetly down upon us, perhaps is very near us, it may be mingling in these services with an interest more intense than it is possible for us to feel.

On 19 Mar. 1851 Mary addressed a letter from Scituate to her brother, Lloyd Briggs, 10 Albany Street, Boston:

Only a note, my much loved Brother. I shall be excused from writing a long letter to you now, as seeing Mother will be worth more than reading a dozen letters. I received your letter and was very happy to hear of your health and prosperity. Your letters always contain good news. I have been visiting Aunt Mary Perry. Grandfather [Ichabod Thomas] is well, only his limbs fail him. I have not seen anything of the girls up the street since I came home, with the exception of Hannah Packard and Julia Tilden. The first-mentioned has grown quite pretty and I believe anticipates the pleasure of seeing you while you are at home. Julia Turner is now at Charlestown. It is surmised she has gone to prepare for her approaching marriage. . . . Quite lively the young people have been here this winter, if balls are a proof of it, and I believe they are not afraid to have a little spirit present at those times. There is a dancing school, taught by

David Torrey, Jr., in his brother's hall. I hope you will make us a long visit now that you are free.

A letter from Lloyd's sister Mary, written from South Scituate and addressed to Kittery, Maine, dated 26 Aug. 1851, shows that he returned to Kittery either to make a visit or for some special engineering work:

. . . I have just returned from the dedication of the new Methodist Church. It is situated on Church Plain. Paley Duncan and Miss Hawes dined here last Wednesday. He thinks of going to Amherst the last of next week. . . . Remember me to Mr. and Mrs. Hanscom particularly.

MARCY L. BRIGGS TO HER SON LLOYD, 16 ALBANY STREET, BOSTON

SCITUATE, December 21, 1851.

MY MUCH LOVED LLOYD:—We received your letter last Sabbath and were very much pleased and gratified to hear of your health and prosperity, and that your employer is so well satisfied with your work—which I like much better than *money*; and then ten shillings a day, which your father says is better than \$2 for ship carpenter, as they lose all bad weather. You are perfectly independent and have never wanted for a week's work since you were free. Do not be over anxious to be rich but steadily pursue your business and I have no doubt that you will have all that is best for you, and you and I don't wish for more. . . .

Mr. Dodge had a concert at the Town House. About seven hundred attended. I wish you would tell Gough and the Hutchinson family it is my desire for them to remain in the city until I have visited! . . . Mrs. Simon is dead, aged 103 years and 4 months. Dr. Thomas's daughter is very low. Lucy Dana is now in New York to spend six or eight weeks, with Eliene. Francis Turner with the two children he lost were brought to Scituate and buried in Mr. Foster's burying ground—An afflicted family. I shall visit Boston in about two weeks and stay ten days.

Your fond Mother,

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

LLOYD BRIGGS, PLYMOUTH, MASS., FROM HIS MOTHER

SOUTH SCITUATE, June 18, 1852.

MY EVER DEARLY LOVED LLOYD:—We were so pleased and gratified when we received your letter that, although it is a very

heavy task for me to write a letter, yours made me feel so happy I thought I must answer it. . . . You mention our going to Andover. We went, as we calculated, on the 8th of June. We returned with Edwin to South Boston and passed the night with him, and the next day home, so that will finish the visit to Andover (and William) for the present. In the afternoon your father, myself and Hannah called on Mrs. (Cushing) Otis and saw her for the last time. I don't know but you may have heard of her sickness and death. She went out on Wednesday afternoon, was taken with a severe pain and they got a carriage and conveyed her home. She died just one week after. When we called she appeared glad to see us, and knew us, but said very little. She wished Debby and Abby always to live together. Abby was very much distressed when we were there. It is a very great loss to them. Your father went over the next morning, but Mrs. Otis was dead (she died 9 June 1852, aged 77). She died on Wednesday noon, and at nine o'clock on Thursday morn the funeral was at the house and she was brought to Scituate and put in the tomb, there to remain until the Resurrection Morn. Mary, as well as all of us, make great dependence on the Fourth of July, as it will come on the Sabbath. We expect you will come on Saturday and stay as long as possible. Edwin and Harrison are full of business. They have launched one vessel. The owners of the second have offered them two thousand dollars more if they will get the vessel off in three weeks, and they have now 120 men in the yard. The other vessel they have not begun yet, and she is to be off in November. Oh! what a hurrying to get a little money, and perhaps have to leave it as soon as they get possession of it! Julia Tilden is about getting married to Mr. Bradbury, partner with Julia Turner's husband, of Charlestown.

From your affectionate mother,

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

TO LLOYD BRIGGS FROM HIS MOTHER

SCITUATE, August 6, 1852.

EVER BELOVED LLOYD:— Since writing you Francis and Hannah, William and Edwin and his wife, your grandfather, and Harrison and his wife, have visited me. . . . Mr. Jotham Stetson had his work house set on fire and burned with his timber to ashes. The loss, \$1600. Paul Curtis's also was set on fire in several places. They are on the committee to enforce the liquor law, so it is expected the fire was set by rummies. I think you will be very

lonesome this winter and if you can get a good chance you better return to Boston. I hope your music is all you wish and expect. Who should come here but young Sam Ruggles, quite a pretty young man and appears very well. He wishes to hear from you and says to direct the letter to Orange. . . . Father, mother and Frank send you love.

Your affectionate mother,
MARCY L. BRIGGS.

MARCY L. BRIGGS TO HER SON LLOYD, SOUTH BOSTON, MASS.

JUNE 19, 1853.

MY VERY DEAR LLOYD:— . . . Thank you for your kind invitation to visit Kittery. I can not accept, as I have journeyed so much lately and shall have in the course of the summer to go to Andover. I also have had company ever since I returned and shall until after the 4th. I depend on seeing the children on the Fourth.

[Every year there was a gathering of the family at the house of the parents in Scituate on the Fourth of July. According to the letters visits were anticipated some time ahead, and the daughters and daughters-in-law usually remained for a visit after the holiday.]

A LETTER TO LLOYD, SOUTH BOSTON, FROM HIS MOTHER

SCITUATE, February 18, 1855.

MUCH LOVED LLOYD:— . . . I returned in safety, although through a severe storm. Mr. Foster brought us to the door; and I took no cold from walking through the snow. We had bad drifts and on Saturday the men dug out the track. . . . Dear Lloyd, you don't know and I am afraid you never will, the unspeakable happiness it gives your father and mother to see the kindness and care of our children as we are entering upon our second childhood. Lloyd, you are alone and the youngest; therefore if you want any work done and I am capable of doing it, send it home and I will do it. My life seems to be all happiness. I presume all your alms to the poor will be had in remembrance at the last great day.

May the blessing of your Heavenly Father always rest upon you and that decision of character which has always marked you keep you in the path of duty is the prayer of your affectionate mother.

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

This is the last letter we have of hers from South Scituate. The parents moved from their old home to Braintree in 1859.

JABEZ CONEY¹ TO LLOYD BRIGGS, BROADWAY BANK, BOSTON, MASS.

PHILADELPHIA, Nov. 27, 1858.

I received your kind letter last evening of the 24th inst., with three ten dollar bills enclosed all right. I am very much pleased to know that you possess one qualification that if you follow up through life you can not fail to be a valuable man in any community, no matter what your occupation: that is promptness. *Be prompt in all things and you will in one sense of the word be always at leisure.* . . . A large portion of the troubles and perplexities of business now in the last half of the Nineteenth Century is occasioned by men not being prompt. . . . The neglect of one man not being true to his promises deranges the whole business, perhaps of ten men. What we lack in this go-ahead Young America is discipline; we lack it in our public schools. If I could have my way in educating children, I would not allow them to have a book until they were ten years of age; teach them discipline; teach them that you, when you tell them [to be] at such a place at 9 o'clock you mean 9 o'clock, not that it is 9 until it is 10. Very few men nowadays are what we call reliable. . . . It has often been said that no code of human laws can make a man honest, but if we have no laws men will be compelled to be honest; this no doubt is true in regard to debt and credit; if there were no law to collect a debt, no man would be trusted except on his honor. . . . I came to Philadelphia to rest and enjoy myself with my sons. . . . As you say, I think there have been some pretty good workmen and some pretty likely young men turned out of my place as apprentices — and thank God that none of them have been ruined in the short time they were with me. I happened to think that one of my oldest apprentices, Charles French, is President of the Canton Bank; I hope to see you in the same position ere long. Remember me to Mr. S. Adams. Tell him I am well and in good spirits.

From your old Master,

JABEZ CONEY.

Lloyd Briggs left the Portsmouth or Kittery Navy Yard to accept a similar position at the Charlestown Navy Yard, and while there he boarded at No. 10 Albany Street, then

¹ Mr. Coney was the engineer to whom Lloyd Briggs had been apprenticed.

at 16 Albany Street, later at 94 Tyler Street, Boston, then in Charlestown, then in Somerville. From the Charlestown Navy Yard he went to Plymouth, Mass., in 1852, to do the same kind of engineering work. It was while there that he had an offer of a position as teller in the Broadway Bank, South Boston, which he accepted some time before 1858. At this time the number of notaries public was limited to fifty, and it was only by the death or resignation of a notary that one could receive a commission. Hugh Montgomery, who found the care of the Sears estates quite enough to occupy his entire time, offered to resign his commission in favor of Lloyd Briggs, who accepted the honor, and was appointed a notary 30 Mar. 1858, although at the time he was paying and receiving teller in the Broadway Bank. After he accepted the position at the Broadway Bank he met Sarah E. E. Kent, who was living with her grandfather, Josiah Dunham, and early in 1858 they became engaged. He invariably spent Sundays with his father and mother in Braintree, and Miss Kent frequently accompanied him. She became very fond of Mrs. C. O. Briggs and speaks of her in the letters she wrote at this time as "Lloyd's Sainted Mother."

Miss Kent went to Augusta, Maine, to visit her father, 10 July 1858, and on 20 Aug. Lloyd Briggs left Boston at 7 P.M. on the Steamer *Eastern Queen*, arriving at the mouth of the Kennebec River at four the next morning, and after making stops at Bath, Gardiner and Dresden, he left the boat at Hallowell and proceeded to Augusta by stage, where he arrived at 11 P.M., meeting, probably for the first time, Miss Kent's father, Noah B. Kent. On the 21st of Apr. 1858 Lloyd Briggs bought of his brother-in-law, Francis James, a house and land on Gold Street, South Boston, adjoining the property of Howard Clapp, M. D. Bowen, and S. W. Jenkins, for his bride, whose family contributed most of the furniture and a Gilbert piano, which was given her by her grandfather when she was 16 years old (still in possession (1936) of her grandson, Lloyd Cabot Briggs). On 15 Dec. 1858 they were married and moved into their new house.

All the family were present, including Noah B. Kent, who came from Augusta to attend the wedding.

A letter to Lloyd Briggs, South Boston, from his mother at Braintree, soon after his marriage, says:

MY VERY DEAR CHILDREN: — I received your letter, Lloyd, last night, and it made me so happy I could not refrain from answering it this morning. You don't realize what a blessing it is to have a wife to travel hand-in-hand with you! I believe if you had gone over the world you would not have found one to make your home so happy. *Home* — how thankful I am you can call one spot your home! How different your feelings and mine when you went from me as an apprentice, going out in this dark world with no friendly hand to care for you. . . . Father, while reading your letter, said how happy he felt on his return home that he had found so kind and affectionate a daughter, who loves him. May you be long spared to each other! . . . I shall send a few things by express on Saturday which I hope will be acceptable, as it will help Lizzie in her sewing. Lloyd, one thing more — Don't bring one thing home to me Christmas as a present, for you know I rather despise the idea of presents at that time more than any other. If I can see you both it is all I desire. With very much love from Father and myself, I remain,

Your affectionate Mother,

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

In Dec. 1859 Lloyd Briggs addressed a letter to the President and Directors of the Bank of the Republic, applying for the position of teller, and gave among his references the cashiers of the Columbian, Freeman's and Mechanics Banks, also the officers of the Broadway Bank, where he was then teller.

The next month, on 2 Jan. 1860 he was "unanimously elected" to office in the Bank of the Republic, at \$700 per annum, under a notice sent him by Joseph J. Whiting, Secretary of the Board of Directors.

On 3 Jan. 1860 Ezra H. Baker went on a bond with Lloyd Briggs to the Bank of the Republic for the sum of \$1,000, the amount of the bond a teller was required to give. On the 24th of January he left the Broadway Bank and assumed his new duties on the 25th.

He wrote in his diary: "On Sunday January 29, 1860, at 6 A.M., went for Mrs. Eaton and at 3:15 P.M. a nice little girl was born to us" (Hattie). On 8 Feb. 1860 he received his first appointment as Justice of the Peace. On 4 July of this year he heard Edward Everett's oration at the old Music Hall, and saw three balloon ascensions on Boston Common. On 22 Feb. 1861 his father was taken ill at his house in Braintree. Under 8 Mar. is the following entry in his diary: "William, Edwin and wife, Hannah, Mary, Elizabeth, Harrison's wife, Deborah Briggs, and I are with father." His father died 10 Mar. 1861, Sunday morning, at 4 o'clock. More than twenty-four hours before he died, Lloyd Briggs records in his diary: "Father very low, he bid us all good bye, and is very, very happy. I sat up most of the night with him, which was a great satisfaction to me." On 5 May his daughter Hattie was baptized and on 20 Oct. 1861 Velma was born: "Baby born at 11:30 precisely. Weighed 7 lbs. Dr. York, Mrs. Park, and sister Hannah present." Previous to his father's death Lloyd Briggs received the following letter from his mother, addressed to the Broadway Bank, South Boston:

BRAINTREE, January 8, 1859.

MY DEAR LLOYD AND LIZZIE: — I was saying to Mr. Bowditch in the afternoon I had not heard one word from Boston, when I received your letter. It was almost like seeing you. I had a charming visit at your house and feel grateful to Lizzie for her kindness. I came home the happiest person you ever saw. I told your father I was so happy I did not care to go out again this winter. When I think of you and Lizzie starting together under His guiding and protecting care I feel my cup is running over with blessings. . . . I hope Harrison's stomach will always be too delicate to smoke!

Ever your affectionate mother,

MARCY L. BRIGGS.

MARY PERRY, AN AUNT OF LLOYD BRIGGS, SISTER OF HIS
MOTHER, ADDRESSES HIM AT SOUTH BOSTON

HANSON, MASS., April 10, 1859.

DEAR LLOYD AND LIZZIE: — . . . The conversions that we read of at the South I think we may safely say are all a sham, first from the ministers who are allowed to preach there — unless they are friends of slavery they are not allowed to stay. You will recollect Boardman, son of the missionary, who was settled in South Carolina, was obliged to leave because he would not say he approved Sumner's caning by Brooks, and an Abolitionist man or woman, if they are suspected of abolition, may think themselves fortunate indeed if they escape with life. Bailey's paper, "Free South," printed in Kentucky, states that a very amiable man, educated in a Carolina college, who had just got through with his studies for the ministry, was asked in Kentucky whether they in Carolina had bloodhounds to hunt slaves. He replied, yes, he thought it a very benevolent institution to hunt them and bring them back; they were starving; he had joyned in the hunt himself. The fault that Garrison finds with Choate and Beecher is not that they have not said the right thing about slavery, but that they are in loving brotherhood with those that uphold the system. Phillips says that if Beecher should shut his pulpit against the friends of slavery, it would tell through the country.

. . .

Your affectionate aunt,

MARY PERRY.

Marcy L. Briggs writes to her daughter-in-law, care of Lloyd Briggs, Bank of the Republic, from Braintree, Mass., under date of October 23, 1860, after the birth of their first child:

DEAR DAUGHTER LIZZIE: — . . . Hattie will write soon, I expect. Don't let her cry; William says it will hurt her disposition. I used to do all I could to prevent my children from crying, and you see what fine dispositions they have. . . .

From your affectionate

MOTHER.

His mother's health began to fail about this time, though she lived for nearly two years. The old nurse, Ruth Mead,

was still a faithful friend. She wrote Lloyd from Scituate 27 Dec. 1860 (and under her signature Father has written "Ruth Mead nursed my mother when I was born"):

I hear that your mother is very sick. I feel very anxious to hear from her and know of no surer way to find out the particulars than by writing you. . . . 'Twas my birthday last Monday. I was 82 years old. . . .

From your affectionate friend,

RUTH MEAD.

A letter addressed to Lloyd Briggs, Bank of the Republic, written about this time, shows his mother not lacking in courage and humor in a difficult situation:

DEAR CHILDREN: — Rejoice with me! My help has left this afternoon and Mrs. Fogg is with me. We are now quiet and happy as one can expect. Mrs. Rideout went away pleasantly. — Oh! I want to see Hattie, as well as you and Lizzie. . . .

Your loving

MOTHER.

In 1862 Lloyd Briggs made several efforts to induce the United States to accept his services in the Civil War, even going to Washington in January 1862 for that purpose, but he could not pass the physical examinations, and was rejected, especially on account of his false teeth, having already lost his own, and it was then necessary to tear off the paper tops of the gun charges with the teeth before ramming them home. He often related his experiences in Washington, where on 20 Jan. 1862 he saw the Massachusetts 7th Regiment.

On 23 Jan. 1862 he describes some of these experiences in a letter to his mother sent to Braintree, Mass., dated from Boston, but postmarked at Hanover, Mass.:

I have been to Washington. We left Boston Tuesday night and arrived in New York Wednesday morning, and after seeing the sights left, Thursday morning for Philadelphia, we remained Thursday night, leaving on Friday for Washington, where we arrived about six o'clock in the evening. We left Washington Monday night at six, for home, traveling between 400 and 500

miles in twenty-four hours. Arrived in Boston at 6 o'clock Tuesday night; not stopping upon the road more than a few moments anywhere between Washington and Boston except two hours in New York. . . . I can assure you Washington is a lively place now, filled with soldiers and officers and a steady stream of Army wagons passing through from morning until night, Sundays not excepted. I counted sixty in procession, close together, each wagon drawn by six mules or four horses. Officers galloping back and forth through mud up to the horses' knees. The hotels are crowded to overflowing. At the Willard Hotel, where we stopped, ten or eleven hundred dine every day. In the hotel there is a very long hall where, at dark, the ladies and gentlemen, dressed in their best, promenade until eleven or twelve o'clock every night. As they do it to show themselves, there are, as you might suppose, some very fine dresses exhibited. The Army officers resort there a great deal and appear to enjoy a promenade with the ladies quite as well as they would a battle. I hardly think people need look for an advance of the Army in the vicinity of Washington at present, as the roads are in such a condition it would be almost impossible to move artillery, and infantry could not move without that. Besides, it would be about as impossible for men to march. Over across the Potomac the mud is actually up to the hub of the wheels of a common carriage in many places, so you may imagine how these Army wagons and mules look when they come into the tents to load and return. Probably the fighting will be done in some other part of the country at present. By and bye, when the enemy are pretty well weakened and their army drawn off to other points, and the roads are better, they will become an easy prey at Manassas. Of course all this is my guess, but my guess may be as good as an editor's. It seems foolish to attack the enemy just where they are strongest, when there are so many weak points which can be so easily taken and great advantages gained.

We went into the President's house, which is magnificent, visited the Capitol while Congress was in session and saw all the great men and among them Vallandigham. Also went to the Smithsonian Institution and Patent Office. I saw the coat, pants and vest worn by General Washington when he resigned his Commission; also his camp chest and his writing desk, used throughout his entire campaign, and other articles belonging to him; the coat worn by Andrew Jackson at the Battle of New Orleans, a cane of Benjamin Franklin's, the original Declaration

of Independence, hair from the heads of all the Presidents of the United States and many other things of interest.

General McDowell was at the hotel almost every day, also Brownell who shot Jackson who shot Ellsworth, and I had a long conversation with him.

Your loving son,
LLOYD.

On 14 Feb. 1862 he paid his last visit to his father's and mother's old home in Braintree, for after his father's death it was decided to give it up, and on 21 Feb. his mother moved to a Mrs. Haywood's to board. He visited his mother at least once a week, often taking his wife and children. They drove down with his brother Harrison's horse or "Grant's horse and carriage," from the livery stable, or when alone by "horse cars to Quincy" and walked the rest of the way. His mother died on 15 Aug. 1862, "as the clock was striking twelve midnight."

The local Braintree paper printed an obituary, from which I quote:

In Braintree, 16th August 1862, Mercy L., widow of the late Cushing O. Briggs, 71.

Seldom does death remove one so universally beloved. It was literally true — none knew her but to love and praise her. With a character of singular energy and decision, was blended a nature full of generous and quick sympathies, and overflowing with kindness. A deep and fervid piety wrought within her heart and threw its luster over her whole life. . . . Partly through a happy temperament, the bright side of life was ever turned toward her, and she was uniformly cheerful and happy.

Next to her God she lived in and for her family. The heart of her husband safely trusted in her; and her children "rose up to call her blessed." Few mothers were ever more beloved by their children, and few children have reason to bless God for such a mother.

In my father's diary I find that on 12 Sept. 1862, while visiting his sister, Mary Tolman, in South Scituate, he "attended the funeral of Loami Sylvester killed in battle." On 5 Dec. 1862, his diary says, "Closed a contract with Naylor & Co., for \$200,000 for Government Ordinance and



HOUSE OF LLOYD BRIGGS AND FAMILY
44 G STREET, SOUTH BOSTON, 1861-68

Vouchers on account of Charles *Vernon* Culver of Franklin, Pennsylvania.”

The name *Vernon* and its owner impressed him, but it was not until he later met *Vernon H. Brown*, with whom he became intimate on account of *Mr. Brown's* business relations with his brother *Harrison*, that he decided to name his son *Vernon*. *Vernon H. Brown* was for twenty-nine years *New York Manager* of the *Cunard* steamship line. *Lloyd Vernon Briggs* was born 13 Aug. 1863, Sunday, at 7 A.M. *Dr. D. M. B. Thaxter* who attended the birth, was paid \$12, and the nurse, *Mrs. Doyle*, \$17 for her services.

Lloyd Briggs was in the *Broadway Bank* until 1860, when he entered the *Bank of the Republic*. It was on June 15 of this year that he was promoted to the position of paying and receiving teller of the *Bank of the Republic* at \$1,200 a year. On 14 July he writes that several persons were shot in *Boston* on account of the draft, which caused riots.

A last letter from his old nurse, *Ruth Mead*, is dated from *Boston*, 30 Dec. 1863. It was addressed to *Lloyd Briggs, Esq.*, care of *George McLaughlin & Co.*, *Plymouth, Mass.* She says, “. . . I was 85 years the 24th of this month. I received your letter and present and was very glad indeed to hear from you and yours. . . .”

On 6 Apr. 1864 *Lloyd Briggs* bought from *Ubert L. Pettingill* the house in *South Boston* described in this deed:

In consideration of Five Thousand Dollars paid by *Lloyd Briggs* of *Boston*, Bank Teller, . . . land and buildings are conveyed situated in that part of *Boston* called *South Boston*, bounded southerly by *Fourth Street*, ninety-six feet; westerly by *G Street*, eighteen feet, and easterly by a passage way and northerly by land of *Benjamin James*.

On 19 Apr. 1864 he moved into “my new house 44 G St.” and on 11 Sept. “*Lloyd Vernon* was baptized.” On 27 Sept. “*Hattie* commenced to go to *Miss Newell's* private Kindergarten School and the Directors of the bank raised my salary to \$2,000,” and on 25 Mar. 1865 they gave him a present of \$300. The summer of 1865 his family were in

South Scituate, and he spent his vacation in August with them, and part of the time went "gunning with Harrison on North River." In Sept. Velma commenced going to Miss Newell's school and Hattie to the public school. In the fall father visited Portsmouth and Kittery, and his brother Harrison made an excursion west to the oil regions. On 25 Mar. 1867 his salary at the National Bank of the Republic was raised to \$2,800, and on 21 Sept. the Directors voted him a present of \$200. The summer vacation of the family was spent at Mr. Dow's, Atkinson, N. H., where Dr. Hovey attended the children. Early in 1868 father's health began to fail, owing to overwork and much sickness in the family, causing him great worry and many sleepless nights. Dr. Thaxter called Dr. Storer, and they decided he must leave the bank and go into the country. As Velma had just entered the grammar school where Hattie was, and his work at the bank as both paying and receiving teller was most satisfactory to all, it was a great disappointment to have to give up his work. Mr. Fay and Mr. David Snow, directors of the bank, told him he would die if he did not, so he reluctantly decided to leave the bank, and on 21 Apr. 1868 sold his house at 44 G Street to a Mr. Cheney for \$7,500, and moved all his family and effects to a house his uncle Joshua Perry had found for him in Hanson, Mass., owned by Mrs. Job Luther, for \$70 a year rent, and on 1 May 1868 he moved there and made up his mind to do nothing but farm and rest. Having reluctantly sent in his resignation 28 Mar. 1868 he received the following letter:

TO LLOYD BRIGGS, 44 G STREET, SOUTH BOSTON

Your letter addressed to the President and Directors of the Bank of the Republic, resigning the office of Teller, was duly presented to the Board; and for the reasons therein assigned the Directors are constrained to accept your resignation. . . .

In discharge of the duty assigned us, we can not refrain from expressing our deep sympathy for you in the Providence which by the loss of health compels you to relinquish a position you have so long filled with credit and honor to yourself and with so much satisfaction to the other officers and Directors, although the office involves so much of care, labor, and responsibility. We know that



LUTHER HOUSE, HANSON, MASS.
WHERE LLOYD BRIGGS LIVED, 1868-70



POND AT THE REAR OF THE LUTHER HOUSE, HANSON, MASS.
HOUSE AND BARN IN VIEW TO THE LEFT

in this expression of our sympathy and regard we do but echo the sentiments of every member of the Board, and we assure you that there is but one feeling, that of deep regret for the circumstances which occasion the loss to the bank of the services of so faithful, honest and efficient an officer, and one so entirely worthy of our respect and confidence — earnestly praying the same all-wise and beneficent Providence, who has seen fit to afflict, may also in His mercy speedily bless your relaxation from harassing cares and labor, to the entire recovery of health and strength; and with the assurance of the personal friendship and esteem of every member of the Board, we remain,

Very sincerely

Your friends

AVERY PLUMER,
M. B. SEWELL,
Committee.

At first the family had to drive to Boston, but on 6 July 1868 the train began to run on the newly constructed Hanover Branch Railroad. It was less than two miles from the Hanson house to the South Hanover station. On 13 July father got in his first crop of hay, and on 7 Sept. his daughters Hattie and Velma began school in the little public school house at North Hanson. His brother Edwin presented him with a horse and carriage, and later he bought a sleigh, in which we children took our first sleigh ride. He soon found it necessary to employ a man on the farm and to drive the children over two miles to and from school when it was not convenient for him or his wife to drive them. A negro who had recently been a slave in the South came to Hanson, and Lloyd Briggs hired him. He was an interesting character, named Jack, black as the ace of spades and with a very large mouth. When he opened it to speak it looked like a cavern, and a most thunderous voice came from it. He was a faithful servant and was in the family for many years, first in Hanson and afterwards in Hanover. He died in South Scituate (Norwell) at a good old age.

I can remember my father shooting wild geese from our front yard as they flew south in the fall or north in the

spring, and also wild ducks that lighted in the pond back of our house. He once shot at an eagle after it had stolen many of his fowl; he broke its wing, and for a long time had it captive in the farm cellar, which opened to the south.

Sebec potatoes and Goodrich potatoes were the favorites in those days, and I find this entry in his diary: "July 5, 1869. We had new potatoes from our garden today, planted on April 16."

Father's brother Harrison went to Europe in 1869. He wrote to Lloyd Briggs, North Hanson, Mass., from Liverpool, 10 July 1869:

Your farming must take up your time at present, but I wish you to write just as often as you can find the time. . . . My business day is from nine in the morning until six at night. As the sun does not set here until ten minutes before nine, and as the twilights are very long, we generally take a ride around the country for two hours after tea. Frank enjoys riding donkeys, which can be had all equipped for ten cents an hour, and this includes a boy to run after them and do the whipping. He makes a comical figure as he gallops along the beach about three miles in length. Ella has not visited Ireland, but will go on Tuesday next to stay a fortnight. Lizzie and Flossie will go about this country and to Scotland. Does Edwin accompany Studley to New Hampshire this season? . . . We have slept under flannel blankets every night since we arrived here. The air has been very mild and the climate absolutely perfect.

Affectionately yours,

HARRISON.

TO LLOYD BRIGGS, NORTH HANSON, MASS., FROM C. C.
LORING

"CITY POINT WORKS," BOSTON, July 13, 1870.

The spring is now fast approaching and farm matters are having consideration. I would like to know how you have succeeded with the "Dark Brahmas." I think you can raise fancy fowls. You will have from them much pleasure and good profit. How many roosters have you, and the weight of each? When were they hatched? What color? — that is, how much white have they on breasts and underneath, if any, and have they any or many reddish feathers on wings? For the pullets, how much do they weigh each?

— and what color, a dark gray or reddish gray or little yellowish gray? . . . I have six pullets and a Cock that are truly elegant; the pullets are young, but will now weigh almost ten pounds each and the Cock eleven pounds — from light Brahma eggs. They are pure white with black pencilled necks, black-tipped wings and black tails. I am selling the eggs for hatching at \$6 per dozen, but would give you some to set.

Yours truly,

C. C. LORING.

In the fall of 1869 Lloyd Briggs began to be restless and was anxious to get back to work in the city but, realizing that he must live in the country, he planned to locate permanently near a railroad station, where he could go regularly to business in Boston when his physicians gave their permission, so on 14 Sept. 1869 he bought a house lot of one acre for \$300 of Joshua Stetson, which Mr. Stetson had bought of Joseph Eells, about three minutes' walk from the railroad station at Hanover, Mass. On 5 Oct. he staked out the lot, and contracted with James Ford of Pembroke to build the house, and on 23 Nov., for \$50, with Lawrence McGough of Hanson, to fill in with gravel around it. On 7 Feb. 1870 Mr. Ford began to build the house in Hanover. On 26 Apr. 1870 Lloyd Briggs bought some Arbor Vitæ in East Bridgewater, and on 3 May planted a hedge of it in front of the house lot, which in 1936 is in perfect condition. On 22 Sept. 1870 he left Capt. Job Luther's house, near Teague's bridge, Hanson, and moved into his new house at Hanover, and on 22 Oct. he set out many of the trees now (1936) on the grounds about the house. The family for a time used the boat from Hingham to Boston, driving to Hingham. On 5 July 1872 my father commenced work again at the National Bank of the Republic, going to Boston each day by train, taking the place of Mr. Charles A. Vialle, the cashier, while he went on a vacation, and again, Mr. Remick's place. Later he became bank notary for some of the banks, and went into the banking and brokerage business with his brother Harrison at 60 State Street, Boston, and Jay Gould personally had a desk in their office.

The land that Lloyd Briggs bought on Elm Street, Hanover, opposite Broadway, was a part of what was at that time called the Joshua Stetson place, which is now (1936), with the house that he built and the land opposite to the east of it, owned by the Federation of Bird Clubs of New England, Inc., to whom it was presented by me (L. Vernon Briggs), who desired to keep the estate together and always as it was when the family were living there. I included in this gift the land to the south of it, extending to the North River, and altogether this makes a beautiful place for a bird sanctuary.

The house which stands to the south of the house that Lloyd Briggs built was probably built by Abner Dwelley about 1724, as on that date William Wetherell, grandson of the Rev. William Wetherell, first minister of the Second Church in Scituate, conveyed to his son-in-law, husband of his daughter Sarah (who married Abner Dwelley in 1721), the land on which this house (which may have been built earlier) stands. Sarah Wetherell Dwelley died in 1730, and Abner was killed 1 Sept. 1732 "by falling from a load of hay." Another granddaughter of the Rev. William Wetherell of Scituate, Hannah, married Samuel Eells, and resided on Broadway near Hanover Four Corners, possibly next or near Abner's house. This land was conveyed by Mr. Wetherell when Hanover was still a part of Scituate. The Abner Dwelley house was after his death occupied by the Eells family, and Samuel Eells and Hannah, his wife, lived here. Later Alexander Wood, the noted lawyer of Plymouth County, lived here and had an office in what was later the Flavell building at the Four Corners. In 1936 this is part of the property of L. Vernon Briggs.

In 1872 occurred the great fire in Boston, and the first we knew of it was from the charred papers and bank bills of various denominations which we picked up in our garden, that had floated twenty-five miles in the air, owing to the great heights to which they were driven by the heat. As there was no telephone or telegraph in the town, it was some time before we learned the truth. Lloyd Briggs' work as notary was tremendous following this great disaster, and



HOUSE IN HANOVER, MASS., BUILT BY LLOYD BRIGGS IN 1870, AND LIVED
IN BY THE FAMILY UNTIL 1897



VIEW OF THE GROUNDS IN FRONT OF THE RESIDENCE OF LLOYD BRIGGS IN
HANOVER, MASS.

he writes in his diary Wednesday, 13 Nov.: "Have been working day and night; tonight is the first night I have taken my clothes off since Sunday the 10th." During winters, beginning the fall of 1872, our family went to Boston, spending most of the winter seasons in hotels — often in Chamberlain's Hotel, later the Adams House. The last few winters before father bought a house of his own were spent in a house hired of the estate of his cousin, the late Miss Abigail T. Otis, at 12 Joy Street, and still later at the Parker House. In 1873 and in 1877, my father again visited Portsmouth and Kittery, where he enjoyed going every few years. On 3 Nov. 1875, he moved into an office in the new building, 82 Devonshire Street, corner of Water Street, and thereafter confined himself entirely to legal work for the banks and trust companies, and to passports, etc. He finally, in 1893, had the business of about 54 of the 61 banks and trust companies of Boston before their consolidation. Later he took an office at 35 Congress Street, which he occupied until his death.

In 1876, with his wife, he went to the Centennial Exposition at Philadelphia. The family continued to live in Boston from about November to March, the children attending schools in Boston. The exception to this rule was the winter of 1878/79. On 29 June 1878 Dr. Henry I. Bowditch examined my sister Hattie, and finding her lungs were diseased, advised her to go to the hills of New Hampshire. Two days afterward my mother went to Atkinson, N. H., and engaged a place for Hattie and herself to board, at the Hoveys. Caleb Dow, mother's old friend, often took them to drive through that beautiful country.

It was a very hot summer, the thermometer reading 108° in the shade on 3 July and 102° on 4 July, and it was extremely hot all the month of July. Hattie seemed to improve in Atkinson, and when she returned in the fall, Dr. Bowditch decided that the family should remain in Hanover to give her the benefit of the country air. As the spring of 1879 approached she grew very much worse and died of pulmonary tuberculosis 23 June, aged 19 years, 4 months, 25 days. Lloyd Briggs was never the same after losing his

daughter. She was his first-born, a beautiful character, unusually intelligent, a great reader, good musician, and she danced and skated beautifully. He had great hopes of her future in every way, and her loss was irreparable. After her death, always on Sundays when in Hanover he could be seen carrying flowers early in the morning usually walking, to her grave two miles away, as long as he lived, and when not in Hanover he arranged with devoted friends to have flowers placed on her grave every Sunday and on other occasions, as on Easter, Christmas, her birthday, etc.

In 1880 he increased his business materially by taking over the work of Charles Hall Adams' father, who had recently died, and took the son into his office, so, in addition to the banks he previously had, he was given the work of the Atlas National Bank, City National Bank, Union National Bank, State National Bank, New England National Bank, Columbian National Bank, Tremont National Bank, Traders National Bank, Boston National Bank, Webster National Bank, Mount Vernon National Bank, and Boylston National Bank.

His business increased so rapidly that it often became necessary to remain in Boston all night when his family were in Hanover, and on Sundays he was so anxious to spend the day with his family he frequently took the morning train to South Braintree, or later to South Weymouth, which was as far as it went, and then walked the thirteen or sixteen miles to Hanover; or, if he could get a late Saturday night train, he would walk in the night, often not arriving home until 2 or 3 o'clock Sunday morning. He had as many as 115 notes to protest some days, beside his other legal work.

In his relation with banks and bankers my father saw great changes during his later years. About 1898 the banking system of Boston entered upon a period of reorganization. There were at that time between fifty and sixty national banks all members of the Clearing House Association. These national banks depended largely for their profits upon note circulation; their privilege to issue money and the amount of notes that a bank could issue were based upon its capital. Aside from issuing bank note currency their



EDGEWOOD

RESIDENCE OF LLOYD BRIGGS, HANOVER, MASS., 1868-94
DR. L. V. BRIGGS AND HIS MOTHER, 1889

business consisted in receiving deposits of government money, the cash reserves of insurance companies, savings banks and trust companies, on which they paid interest, and commercial accounts of borrowing customers, on which no interest was paid. Trust companies began to enter the field of commercial banking, and through the payment of interest on deposits and other inducements started a competition for the securing of desirable accounts. And this at the very time when the national banks were finding that note circulation was no longer profitable, and their existence depended upon their holding and increasing their deposits. After the panic of 1893 this competition for deposits on the one hand, and the desire of the savings banks and stockholders of the national banks to sell out their stock at good prices caused a great number of bank consolidations, so that in 1903 there were only 20 banks. In the course of a few years more there were only about a dozen comparatively large banks, but trust companies increased, many depending chiefly on savings accounts for their business. Changes in the banking laws permitted one bank to buy the deposits of another and operate as a branch. Thus had come about within thirty years great changes in banks and banking.

After 1885 my father usually spent his vacations traveling with his wife and sometimes with his daughter Velma. In 1888 they went to New York City and up the Hudson to Albany. In 1892 they went together to California, visiting Los Angeles, Santa Barbara, Cape Horn, Santa Cruz and San Francisco; again they visited Cincinnati, New Orleans, Mammoth Cave, Kentucky. They went, in 1895, to New Boston, N. H., for one summer, and to Petersham and Southborough, Mass.; in 1899 to Stafford Springs, where they had previously visited Mr. Julius Converse and his family on several occasions; and they went to Bar Harbor, Maine, several summers.

In 1889 my father wrote from the St. Louis Hotel at Quebec saying that they had been three nights and two days on the water, sailing 645 miles, and that they had had a most enjoyable trip, never-to-be forgotten, during which they had most perfect weather. After this trip on the St.

Lawrence River, the Saguenay River and Lake St. John, they went to the Windsor Hotel in Montreal, from which they made further excursions.

In 1892 they made one of their many trips to the West, and my father writes from the Grand Hotel, San Francisco, on 8 Apr. as follows:

On this my birthday I received Vernon's letter of congratulations and good wishes. Today I took the trip to Marshall Pass, going up 10,832 feet. It was a beautiful day. Every one felt the altitude with headaches and other troubles, but Mother, having been up 10,000 feet yesterday, did not wish to repeat her experience. The railroad grade at one place was 365 feet to the mile.

From the many letters they wrote home while on trips in New England I quote. On a driving trip from Boston to the western part of Massachusetts, my mother writes from Warren, Mass., June 5, 1895:

We are here for the night. I never felt better in my life. We came from Worcester today to Leicester where I called at Mrs. Gilbert's; then through Speneer, Brookfield, South Brookfield, through beautiful rows of sugar maples in many places, and willows arching over the streams. Many of the barns are 150 to 200 feet long; the soil is yellow, red and dark — not at all like our soil.

On 1 Aug. 1896 father wrote from Hotel Weirs, on Lake Winnepesaukee, N. H.:

This is a very good hotel, kept by Dr. Greene of "Greene's Nervura" [a patent medicine]. He wanted to be Governor of New Hampshire, and is running his hotel in great shape. Governor Busiel of New Hampshire is here and other prominent people. Velma is perfectly delighted. I think we made no mistake in choosing this hotel. The view is the finest you ever saw. It is on a hill overlooking the lake, and we have two front rooms. It is mountain air and Velma, who hardly knows where she is she is so happy, says she feels like a new being, and I feel like a new man.

Tonight they had a big dance in the hotel, four hundred present. It lasted until daylight. Refreshments were served free to all, which included claret lemonade and punch.

On 28 Sept. 1897 he writes from The Tavern, New Boston, N. H.:

Your mother says we are living two days in one, and wonders if Heaven is any better than this. You see we are having a good time, and I am glad to see her so well and so happy. We had a delightful drive to Francestown this P.M.

Mrs. Ballou, the mother of M. M. Ballou, President of the Boston Brokers' Board, with her niece, who is a daughter of the man who bought and died in Capt. Nat Barstow's house in Hanover, are here.

Perhaps you'd better sell my Butte at 29. If I do not sell Butte and Bell Telephone, I am afraid they will go down.

Like his ancestors, my father was a religious man. He had been brought up in the Congregational Church, but joined the Episcopal Church after his marriage — my mother was an ardent churchwoman. In course of time he became prominent in St. Andrew's Church in Hanover, and I find among his notes that "in April, 1899, a special meeting was held in the Sunday school room of St. Andrew's Church in Hanover," at which meeting John B. Bates was chosen Senior Warden and Lloyd Briggs Junior Warden. In July, 1890, when he was in Peterboro, N. H., for part of the summer, with his daughter Velma and Dr. and Mrs. H. I. Bowditch, at the Shedd's, he writes that "B. P. Cheney is spending lots of money beautifying his place, as are also George Morrison and Andrew Wheelwright their places."

To be nearer his work my father decided to move to Boston, and he bought a house at 112 Mount Vernon Street. This was an interesting old house, built prior to 1826, at which date it was conveyed to Cornelius Coolidge by William Sullivan. The lot was set off to Henry Jackson as *Lot C, 8th Division* in 1809, and Mr. Sullivan represented the Jackson estate. The house had been owned, respectively, by Oakman Gardner, Paul Adams, Chandler Robbins, Charles Cushing, Lorin F. Deland, Polly R. Hollingsworth and others.

On 23 Nov. 1897 the family left Hanover, at which time my father deeded the Hanover property to me. They lived in the Boston house until after the death of my mother, which occurred on May 7, 1909, when my father sold the house at 112 Mount Vernon Street, and, with his daughter Velma, moved into an apartment at 149 Newbury Street,

at the corner of Dartmouth Street, where he died 12 Mar. 1911, of heart disease, aged 81 years, 11 months. He was at his office until within a few days of his death. He had held commissions as notary under every Governor of Massachusetts for fifty-three years. He was probably the best known man in the banking centers of Boston, revered, loved and respected by all who knew him. Upright and generous in all his dealings with mankind, he had a host of friends who deeply mourned his loss. A special train conveyed his body and his relatives and friends to Hanover, where services were held in St. Andrew's Episcopal Church, of which he was warden for many years. Rev. William H. Van Allen, rector of the Church of the Advent, conducted the services, assisted by Rev. Joseph Dinzey of St. Andrew's Parish, Hanover. The ushers and bearers were chosen from his many old and young friends: Edmund Q. Sylvester, Joseph S. Sylvester, Frederick H. Curtis, Rodolphus C. Waterman, Edward M. Sweeny, Andrew J. Webster, husband of his niece, Charles A. Vialle, who was with him in the National Bank of the Republic, and a close friend always, Henry D. Tudor, and Clifford Ramsdell.

Before closing this account of the life of my father, it seems meet to pay some tribute to the men who served long and faithfully as his clerks in his work as bank notary. Foremost of these and longest in his service was Hickman G. Brooke, who served my father and afterwards myself for forty-six years. I know little of Mr. Brooke's early history. He was son of Frederic and Anna McWade Brooke of New York and later of Pennsylvania. He was a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania and a brilliant scholar. He worked efficiently for many years, content to lead an obscure life, until my father's death in 1911, and after that he continued in my own service as private secretary until he died suddenly of heart disease, 8 Dec. 1933, aged 75 years. Mr. Brooke's cheerful face and pleasant personality were well known to the older officials in the banks and trust companies around State Street. He was distinctly a gentleman of the old school, always courteous and interested in the matter in hand; but of intimate friends or personal life

aside from his business he apparently had none in the forty-six years that he served our family. He had requested that he should be buried near my father in our family lot in Hanover, and he was taken to St. Andrew's Church, Hanover, where services were conducted by the Rev. Stanley Ross Fisher, and then he was laid at the foot of the grave in Center Hanover of Lloyd Briggs, whom he loved.

Children of Lloyd⁷ and Sarah Elizabeth Ellms Kent Briggs:

- i. HARRIETTE STETSON, b. 29 Jan. 1860, named for her aunt, the wife of 145. J. Edwin Briggs. She d. 23 June 1879 of pulmonary tuberculosis. She had a strong character and an unusually brilliant mind, and commanded the respect and love of every one with whom she came in contact. She was a good musician and was well versed in languages. She always led her classes and still had time for social activities, and excelled in dancing, skating, and had many other interests.
 - ii. VELMA, b. 20 Oct. 1861, named for Judge Wright's daughter, a friend of her father. She made her home with her parents at Hanover, Mass., and at 112 Mount Vernon Street, Boston; a most devoted daughter and a delightful companion. She served God according to all her opportunities and capacities. She did not know envy or jealousy, and was brave and patient under pain or provocation. She had a tranquillity of spirit, an unwearied forbearance, a loving heart, great beauty, pleasant speech and gracious manners. She gave offence to none, was generous, always serene and sweet, and while she comforted and was a tower of strength to others, few knew if she suffered or had disappointments. She was of the greatest help to her brother all her life, especially in his genealogical work; they were inseparable, and always adored each other. She was a wonderfully beautiful character, and true to her principles. The last few years before her death on 8 June 1937 she was happy in a little apartment at 15 Charles Street, near her brother.
193. iii. LLOYD VERNON⁸, b. 13 Aug. 1863; m. 1 June 1905 Mary Tileston Cabot.

CHAPTER XIX

SARAH ELIZABETH ELMS KENT, WIFE OF LLOYD BRIGGS

MOTHER OF 193. L. VERNON BRIGGS AND GRANDMOTHER OF
209. LLOYD CABOT BRIGGS

My mother, SARAH ELIZABETH ELMS KENT, wife of Lloyd Briggs, was born 22 Sept. 1834. Her father, Noah Brooks Kent, born January 1806, was son of Samuel Kent, the ship-builder, of Scituate. [See "Shipbuilding on North River," and "Kent Genealogy" and Kent Family in this book.] Her mother, Elizabeth Elms Dunham, daughter of Josiah Dunham, born September 1815, died 27 Sept. 1838, aged 23 years, was his first wife.

Noah Brooks Kent was a prominent shipwright of South Boston. After his trip to Europe, while still a young man, he married, in South Boston, Elizabeth Elms Dunham. Their first daughter, Mary Ann Kent, was born in South Boston in Apr. 1832. She died 7 Sept. 1847, when only 15 years of age.

In the spring of 1834, as his wife was in very poor health and her physician, Dr. Thaxter of Boston, had urged him to take her to the country, Noah Brooks Kent purchased a house at Bryant's Corner, near Mount Blue, South Scituate (now Norwell), near where some of his ancestors had lived.

Here they moved in the spring of 1834, and my mother was born on 22 Sept. 1834. Dr. Cushing Otis of Scituate officiated at my mother's birth, and it is interesting to note that he also attended my father's mother at the time of his birth, although Lloyd Briggs and Sarah Elizabeth Elms Kent did not meet until after 1850. Many years later I bought the interesting old house in Scituate in which my mother was born, which was built prior to 1687. I had it moved to a convenient location, between the church and the James Library, Norwell, and presented it to the First Parish, Norwell, in memory of my mother, to be used for parish meetings, sewing circles, etc. It is known as the KENT MEMORIAL HOUSE.

My mother's parents found the country very lonely, and as his wife's health had improved, my grandfather sold the house on 29 Oct. 1834 and they moved back to Boston. Four years after my mother's birth my grandmother died in giving birth to a third child, Thomas, who died with her. She was only 23.

Her two daughters went to live with their mother's parents, Josiah and Mary Ann Dunham; and in 1840 Noah B. Kent married his second wife, Mary Ann Pettingill, of Augusta, Me. They both became members of the South Congregational Church in that place, she in 1842 and he in 1843. He continued to live in Augusta until his death, 19 Jan. 1861, at the age of 55.

My mother's grandfather, Josiah Dunham, in whose home she spent her childhood, owned and operated one of the largest ropewalks in the country, "equal to, if not exceeding in size, that of the Charlestown Navy Yard," and he gave employment to a great many people. He was one of the first Aldermen of Boston, and during this time he was among the most influential men of the Peninsula. On his retirement the people of South Boston presented him with a solid silver water pitcher and six silver cups engraved with a suitable inscription and made by a silversmith in Boston of that day. The interests of South Boston never lacked an advocate while he held a position in the city government. An old acquaintance wrote of him, "He was thoroughly democratic in his habits and instincts. I think he was the most unselfish man I ever knew, and very strong in his friendships." He dressed picturesquely in the fashion of the day, and we still have his shoe and knee buckles, and a silver pin set with a stone, which held his stock together.

Simon says, in his "History of South Boston," page 271:

Prominent among those who have been for a long time identified with the interests and history of South Boston, stands the well known name of Josiah Dunham. He was born in New Bedford, March 11, 1775. He was son of Jesse and Susan Dunham. His father was a sea captain. The family were among the earlier settlers of Plymouth, the first record of which goes back as far as the year 1635. The branch from which he descended subsequently moved to Martha's Vineyard. When a youth, he came to Boston and served an apprenticeship at rope-making with a Mr. Richardson, the father of the Hon. Jeffrey Richardson of Boston, whose ropewalks extended from Purchase Street to Milk Street, near the present location of Pearl Street. He first commenced the manufacture of cordage on his own account in a ropewalk which stood adjoining Boylston Street, near where the Public Garden is now, in Boston. In the year 1807 he purchased several acres of land in South Boston

in the vicinity of B Street, and built a residence for himself and a ropewalk, where he continued to carry on the cordage manufacture until the close of the year 1853. During all the years of his residence in South Boston he was engaged in the building of dwellings and stores, and without erecting a large number in any one year, in the aggregate he was the moving spirit in the erection of more buildings in the place than any other man. For foresight, energy, perseverance and power of memory he had few superiors. He was impulsive, easily excited, and an injury, real or supposed, was not soon forgotten. On the other hand, his friendships were strong, his benefactions generous and long-continued, and he would often do favors to others even to his own injury. He was an active participator in the efforts for building the North Free Bridge, and was untiring in his zeal for whatever promised to be of advantage to the place of his chosen residence. He served the Twelfth Ward in the Common Council in the year 1833, and for three succeeding years was an efficient member of the Board of Aldermen. While a member of the latter board he felt a deep interest in the grading of the streets of South Boston, but few of which previous to that had been put in a respectable condition. Finding his associates on the Board rather slow in their movements in this work, he followed the example of one of whom he was an ardent supporter, and in his capacity as one of the Surveyors of the Highways, "took the responsibility." He set men to work in ploughing down and levelling up Fourth Street and Broadway. When completed, he carried the bills for the same, amounting to some \$2,500, before the Aldermen, who with some shrugs of their shoulders and a few smiles at the boldness of the act of their associate, approved the bills and ordered their payment by the city. In the year 1823, when the Congregational Church was formed which is now known as the Phillips Church, he generously erected a hall on Fourth Street for their place of worship, and gave them the rent and other substantial aid till they erected their church building. He had a wonderfully strong and vigorous constitution, and died April 28, 1857, aged 83 years.

Josiah Dunham's wife was Mary Ann, daughter of William and Mary Elms of Middleborough, born Oct. 1797. She must have led a busy life at her husband's hospitable home, over which she graciously presided. She died on 16 Feb. 1858.

"Horace" was Josiah Dunham's personal servant as well as the family butler. Mr. Dunham kept open house; neighbors, friends and relatives were always welcome, even without notice, to sit at his table at any meal. Like my mother in her day, he always had one or more extra places set at table for any guest who might drop in. Horace waited on table and served the wines, of which there was always a generous supply of the oldest and best. Only wine was served, never strong liquors except on

holidays and for special celebrations, when Horace made his famous rum punch.

Mr. Dunham usually drove his own horses, and Horace acted as footman, sitting behind on a somewhat elevated seat, with arms folded in solemn state.

My mother enjoyed entertaining her own young friends. A little invitation, written in a fine, careful hand, which has been preserved for eighty-five years, has recently come to me. It reads:

Miss Sarah E. E. Kent's
compliments to the Misses Ann
and Sarah Knapp requests the
pleasure of your company this
afternoon and evening.
Tuesday Morning.
Boston, Jan. the 8th, 1850

Her grandfather being a prominent man, she was in touch with many interesting events which have now become a part of our local history; among other reminiscences she told me of meeting Kossuth when he visited Boston in the early 50's.

Lizzie Kent, as she was often called, in 1848 became a student in Bradford Academy, and afterwards she went to the Holyoke Academy; but her happiest memories of school days were connected with the two years, 1851 and 1852, which she spent at the Atkinson Academy, at Atkinson, N. H. Her uncle, Barker B. Kent, had been a pupil at this academy some time before 1830.

Atkinson Academy, incorporated in 1791, was organized about 1786 "for the promotion of piety and virtue and the instruction of youth in writing, arithmetic and the art of speaking; in geography, logic and geometry." There was but one earlier academy in New Hampshire. The first building was erected in 1786-87, on land given by Dr. Cogswell, and the good Parson Peabody wrote in his journal:

The Frame is up. They are boarding it fast. I went over and gave them a bottle of rum in grog.

Until the one-story building was ready, a Mrs. Colby taught school for both sexes in Parson Peabody's house in the spring of 1787. The first "exhibition" was held in 1789.

The present Academy building, which is here illustrated, was built in 1803, on plans drawn and presented by Ebenezer Clifford, and the land on which it stands was generously given by the heirs

of Enoch Knight. The building is 34 by 60 feet, two stories high and surmounted by a cupola.

The Reverend Stephen Peabody was one of the original Trustees. Parson Peabody, as he was usually called, was a graduate of Harvard College and "a man of original genius, of great physical might, dignified bearing and manners befitting the gentleman of his time." Stephen Peabody preached at Atkinson during the Revolution, and was minister there for forty-six years. His portrait still adorns the library. He used to wear a three-cornered beaver hat; his large single-breasted coat swept down on each side with an ample curve, and his waistcoat, fully twice the length of those worn in these degenerate days, ended at his thighs with large pockets and lappets. He wore a white pleated frill; his knickerbockers were fastened at the knee with silver buckles over his long black silk stockings, and his shoes were adorned with shining brass buckles. Many years later my mother was given a large and beautiful wing chair, used by Parson Peabody all his life. It is now in the possession of her grandson, Lloyd Cabot Briggs.

In June 1803 the friends of the Academy obtained a grant from the New Hampshire Legislature for a lottery to raise \$2,000 needed for its support. This mode of raising money for approved educational and charitable purposes was popular in the different States at that time. In June 1809 the General Court gave Atkinson Academy a half township of wild land containing 13,000 acres, in Coos County, most of which land was disposed of at 50 cents an acre, 6 Nov. 1818, to liquidate the debt for the erection of the present building.

The Reverend Jesse Page, whose daughter, Mary Ann Page, was my mother's classmate and close friend, was President of the Board of Trustees of Atkinson Academy in my mother's day, and also, for several years, one of the Trustees of Bradford Academy. He was minister of the church at Atkinson, and visited the Academy to give "words of sound wisdom and encouragement to the students" — an able, pious man, who readily responded to the demands of the Academy and anticipated its wants. He was a graduate of Dartmouth College (1831), and often made mention of the college in his prayers. Mother used to tell us of his stirring sermons and of the revival which took place about the time she first went to Atkinson.

The Principal, William C. Todd, A.B., was a graduate of Dartmouth College (1844) and had spent some time in England. He was



HARRIETTE STETSON BRIGGS

1860-1879

DAUGHTER OF LLOYD AND S. E. E. BRIGGS

(See page 813)



HARRIETTE S. BRIGGS, L. VERNON BRIGGS,

VELMA BRIGGS, 1867

(See Chapter XVIII, page 813)



ATKINSON, NEW HAMPSHIRE, ACADEMY

SARAH ELIZABETH ELMS KENT WAS A STUDENT HERE IN 1854-55

HER SON VERNON WAS PRESIDENT OF THE BOARD OF TRUSTEES, 1909 TO 1938

a man of scholarly instincts and an observer of men and circumstances, of absolute veracity and integrity. He left Atkinson in 1854 and became head of the Girls' High School in Newburyport. Through connection with the development of the Bell Telephone Mr. Todd later became a wealthy man, a generous giver and a leader in his State. He was one of the organizers of the New Hampshire Historical Society, and in 1883 and 1887 he represented Atkinson in the New Hampshire Legislature, his acceptance of the nomination being based upon the condition that he should be the choice of all parties and should occupy an absolutely independent position. As a legislator Mr. Todd was invaluable and almost unique. His independence of party gave him opportunity to prevent much shortsighted lawmaking, and to expose many devices. He possessed a quaint and unusual personality, and had a pungent and penetrating wit. His friend, Mr. Benjamin A. Kimball, said, "That squeaky, husky voice will never be forgotten."

When my mother was a student at the Academy, Latin, Greek and French had been added to the curriculum. It was one of the earliest (if not the earliest) educational institutions to teach shorthand. My mother's studies included French and Latin, and she became very efficient in shorthand, although she never used it after leaving the Academy. I have her textbooks, as well as some of her work in shorthand, which show her proficiency. She was musical, and I have many of her books of music and pieces of sheet music, and my son has the beautiful Gilbert piano which her grandfather gave her about the year 1854, with its wine-colored figured cover of soft felt.

The Catalogue of the Trustees, Instructors and Students of Atkinson Academy for 1852 mentions 144 students attending that year. Among them were the following classmates of my mother's: William Cogswell of Bradford, Mass.; James P. Rousseau, Newburyport; Hiram J. Noyes, William D. Brackett and Edmund H. Hammond of Haverhill, Mass.; James P. Dow of Providence, R. I.; William D. Herrick and Sarah W. Emerson, Methuen, Mass.; Benjamin F. Gilbert, Cambridge; and from Atkinson were Harriet A. and Susan H. Dow; Laura A., Ellen L. and Sarah A. Knight; Sarah J., Caroline R. and Lavinia J. Noyes; Mary Ann Page; Abigail Piercc; Nathaniel, Jerome and Aaron W. Clark; James L. Gilbert, Eldridge G. Greenough, George Knight, Samuel B. Mason, Woodbury and Gilman Noyes, Hiram P. Piercc, etc. The Hon. William Cogswell, who had been one of her classmates both at Bradford and Atkinson, died 22

May 1895 in Washington, D. C., after a life given to the service of his country; he served four years in the Civil War and rose to the rank of General; he was with Sherman on his famous "March to the Sea." After the war he was mayor of Salem, member of the State Legislature and member of the United States Congress. His wife, formerly Miss Miriam G. Clay, a celebrated southern beauty, was a granddaughter of Henry Clay.

The prospectus of the Academy in 1852 tells us that "Lectures will be given from time to time by gentlemen from abroad on subjects of interest and profit to the students."

My mother's beauty and charm made a strong impression on her classmates. Her friend and classmate, Miss Lydia M. Kimball, wrote me in 1913:

Lizzie Kent was always full of life as I knew her — fair and lovely, with beautiful auburn hair that I always admired. We corresponded and she wrote me of her engagement and marriage, of the coming of each child into her life — and that she was *so* happy. She was a loving, generous girl. She had her laundry done at home, and when it came back, with it would always be a box of candy and other dainties, which we all enjoyed as much as she. Her uncle, Barker Kent, was foreman of some parts of the ships my father was building.

A story is told of how Barker Kent, when he was a student at Atkinson, used to pay a good deal of attention to Miss Mary Page (afterwards Mrs. Pierce), but his real affection for her was not known until one of his letters misearried and unfortunately reached the hands of another Miss Mary Page, not the object of his attentions. It was because of his admiration for his friend that he suggested that my mother should board with her when she went to Atkinson; so she first went to Mrs. Pierce, who had become a widow and had two children to support.

Atkinson Academy was, it is said, the first co-educational school in the country. The tradition is that Polly Peabody, daughter of the founder, told her father that she expected to attend the Academy. He was amazed at such a proposition, for up to that time few girls were given more than an elementary education; but he could not deny his only daughter, and in the end she and some of her companions were admitted, sat with the boys, joined their classes, and co-education was established. The advocates of women's rights should give merited credit to Polly Peabody and Atkinson Academy for this advance movement in the higher education of women. Probably this opportunity for

the freer association of the "young ladies and gentlemen" at Atkinson was one of the secrets of the school's long popularity.

After my mother had been a few weeks at Mrs. Pierce's, one of the students, John Gilbert, escorted her home from the Sunday evening church service, and with her usual hospitality she invited him to come in. This was evidently against the rules, for Mrs. Pierce ordered him out of the house and threatened him with an alder switch! The following morning Lizzie Kent left the house, cut across the fields to the home of the Principal, Mr. Todd, and told him she could not continue at the Academy under such conditions! He sympathized and counselled with her and finally invited her to remain at his house so long as she attended the Academy, which she did. After leaving school, and as long as he remained in Atkinson, she often returned to visit at Mr. Todd's.

Several of my mother's classmates remained her dearest friends all her life; she loved them and she loved the old town. Her most intimate friend among her schoolmates was Miss Lydia M. Kimball. They kept up an ardent correspondence during the holidays and continued it after they had left school. I still have a great many of Lydia Kimball's letters, full of girlish devotion and enthusiasm. The "preceptress," Miss S. G. Hitchcock (originally from Randolph, Me.), was their favorite teacher, and my mother corresponded with her for some years. Miss Hitchcock wrote to my mother from Wrentham during the spring vacation in 1852:

MY DEAR LIZZIE: — Your very affectionate letter was received with a great deal of pleasure. I like anything that reminds me of the scholars whom I have loved. I was waiting to hear again from "Tidd" to write and ask you to meet her here, when she wrote that her mother thought that she should not leave home for any visit during the fortnight. . . . I shall probably be here during the summer vacation and shall hope then to see you both. I could then offer you the attraction of summer weather. [Then follows a minute description of her rooms and contents and the view from their windows, and of the "incessant pattering rain, the cheerless gray sky and the wind that is never weary."] I am sorry to learn from your letter that your grandmother continues so ill. Will her illness prevent your attending school this spring? I hope not; these golden moments. . . . I shall always hope to be remembered as your affectionate friend and teacher,

S. G. HITCHCOCK.

Probably my mother did remain at home that spring to care for her grandmother during an illness (the latter lived, however,

until 16 Feb. 1858). That summer Lydia wrote one of her enthusiastic letters, welcoming her dearest Lizzie back to school.

Miss Hitecock wrote again, during the winter vacation, to "Miss S. E. E. Kent, c/o Josiah Dunham, Esqr., South Boston."

MY DEAR LIZZIE: — I have been in Boston for some days and have been trying to come over and see you, but it was stormy all the first part of my visit, and now it is pleasanter I have a cold which makes me afraid to be out much in this icy air. I have forgotten, too, half your directions as to how to find your grandfather's, though I remember the name and think I could find it. I shall be very happy to see you and your aunt here. I stay during the rest of this week; shall probably go home some time the first of next. If you should call while I am out, leave on your card the directions, what omnibus I am to take and the No. of your house, and I will try to come over. I had a sweet letter from Lydia from Atkinson a few weeks ago. You hear from her, I suppose, very often.

Love to your aunt I hope to see her and you here very soon.

Yours aff.

S. G. HITCHCOCK.

Boston, 22 Mt. Vernon St.

Thursday morn, Jan. 14.

Most of Lydia Kimball's letters are long and full of news. She enjoyed visiting Atkinson after her school days were over. She wrote from there on 3 Feb. 1854:

. . . I came to Atkinson last week Friday — Saturday Frank Stevens called. He is very pleasant, laughs and talks *more* than ever. Sunday I went to meeting all day. Mr. Page still officiates. On Monday I visited the school; found but few faces I recognize, especially on the gentlemen's side. Ellen, Anna and Laura Knight seemed to be the most prominent of the ladies. . . .

I suppose you will like to hear the "fashions" here in Atkinson at this time: "White aprons" are "all the rage" this winter. You know they look *warm* and *comfortable*. Light faded (or rather *delicate*) ribbons are worn in rosettes, with "streamers" on the side of the hair — and on "particular occasions," *velvet ribbon!* I will not mention the other articles of apparel worn here. All are equally tasteful as those above. I can assure you I feel *dreadfully* "out of fashion." . . .

O Lizzie, if I *only* had *you* here to *laugh* with me! Last night David Clough called. He is in love with Margaret Messer. Mr. Todd told him he heard he wrote a letter to her father. . . . You can imagine how silly he looked, Lizzie. . . . Mr. Todd and Mother send their regards — also Mr. and Mrs. Dow.

Another letter from Miss Lydia M. Kimball ("Tidd"), also signed *L. M. K.*, is dated from Marblehead, 19 Jan. 1855:



SARAH ELIZABETH ELMS KENT, 1858
(MRS. LLOYD BRIGGS)
GRANDMOTHER OF L. CABOT BRIGGS

. . . I am spending a week or two with my dear Lydia Broughton. What a stormy week we have had! I hope we may have sleighing now. Have you had any sleigh rides this winter? I am sorry your dear grandmother is so unwell. I have not been to New York yet as I anticipated; it has been so stormy ever since I came from Atkinson and there have been so many accidents during the past year.

Lizzie, have you heard from our *dear* Miss Hitchcock? Oh, if we could only go to school at *dear, dear* Atkinson one more term and have Miss H. for our teacher wouldn't it be delightful! How much we enjoyed those days. I haven't forgotten anything connected with those calm, autumn days. Does Mrs. Dow write you often? I used to enjoy running in to see her so much.

It is nearly four years since we met in dear Atkinson Academy, but it seems as if I had always known you. . . . Do you ever hear from Will. Mont. or Willie Cogswell? I believe Frank Stevens is in Boston. I have not heard a word from "F. S. K." for some time. I like him as well as I ever did, as a schoolmate — nothing more. . . .

After leaving school Lizzie Kent used to come with her grandparents for short stays in Atkinson at "Cape" Dow's, and "Cape" enjoyed driving Grandfather Dunham to a hotel kept by one Robinson, at Salem, N. H., for dinner. He also took Josiah Dunham with him on his visits to Chester, where dwelt a Dr. West, called the "King's Evil Doctor," whose treatment consisted of passing his hands over his patients — "pawing them," as Cape used to say, and giving each a piece of money to wear.

Nothing rested my mother so much when she was tired nor so quickly completed her recovery after an illness as a visit to Atkinson. Up to the time of her death she went there frequently, and sometimes boarded with a Mrs. Irving, but Caleb Dow's was her favorite boarding place. "Cape" Dow, as he was called, became very fond of her, and Miss Mary Ann Page, Mrs. Knight, Mrs. Charles Tenney and a host of others of the residents of Atkinson looked forward to her coming, for she had wound herself around the hearts of them all with her brightness, charm and thoughtfulness. Miss Mary Ann Page until she died was the mainstay of the Academy; she gave liberally of her money for its support and of her brains and efforts to keep up its standards. She was a truly gracious and remarkable lady. I came to know her very well and to respect her greatly. Later I, also, was Trustee of the Academy.

I have many receipts for board (including one from Caleb Dow dated July 26, 1867, two weeks at \$21 a week), which show how frequently my dear mother returned to the spot she loved, taking her family with her after her marriage. When her daughter

Hattie was taken ill with tuberculosis, the first place she sent her was to Atkinson. Miss Mary Ann Page once wrote me that my mother "always claimed delightful associations with the fragrant clover growing near us which, as a schoolgirl, she used to enclose in letters to your father." She always visited this same spot when in Atkinson, and put sprigs of sweet clover in every letter she sent home. She had another favorite field where she found four-leaf clovers, and these she also enclosed in her letters.

During the last twenty years of her life she revisited Atkinson each year.

She wrote from there on 31 Aug. 1896:

. . . I am reading a book that interests me, "John Bull and His Island," by Max O'Rell. . . . I went, or rather rode, to church yesterday. The same bell rang to call us that was rung almost 48 years ago. Many came to speak to me and seemed very glad to see me.

Saturday afternoon I went to the Academy ground, sat for a few moments on the same steps, and let my mind go back, and in my mind's eye saw the scholars of so long ago. . . . I am enjoying all this; shall stop the two weeks if nothing takes place to prevent. I enjoy going in for a chat with Miss Ada A. Page and her aunt. This morning they brought me a little lunch of *fresh* butter, with crackers.

A man was buried from a house near here yesterday; the funeral passed my window — the hearse oh! so old-fashioned, the small panels on the sides green with age and for want of paint; the rusty old wagons were covered with dust. The farmers as they sat in them and the procession moved along were talking of their crops — how much hay they had cut, how many apples they were likely to have. I could hear them from my window — all reminded me of "change, decay and loss."

We have met a young married lady, very pretty, who is here for a rest. She is a very sweet singer — I can't write quite as clear a letter when she is singing, as she now is. . . . This flower is nothing in particular, only a wild one I picked by the roadside this morn. . . .

I give extracts from only a few of her many letters from Atkinson. They are too numerous, too personal and full of affection to quote in full, but they are very precious to me and show her interest in all about her and her keenness for the beautiful, which did not leave her with increasing years.

ATKINSON, Aug. 1, 1897.

. . . I have met quite a number of the friends of my youth, and am very fortunate in finding my teacher, Mr. Todd, in town. I have never met him since I left school — he says about 45 years ago.

He looks the same to me as he did then, not a day older, only his hair is white. He is 74 years old, very wealthy — made his fortune in cotton

during the War — borrowed some money — had a little, and was very fortunate in his investments. He is a recluse and odd in his ways, but seems very glad to see me; will call here tomorrow before he leaves town for a place farther up in New Hampshire, to stop the rest of the summer with an old college friend. His home is in Newburyport. I stood with him in the barn next this house, and he pointed out Monadnock, near Peterboro, perfectly plain to be seen, and other places more than twenty miles away . . .

I shall stop here one more week. Miss Mary Ann Page comes very often to take me to drive. Every one says how much better I look than when I came. . . .

ATKINSON, October 16, 1898

This is a bright fall day. My room is warm with a good fire, and sun shining into the window. The wind whistles around the corner.

I went to the funeral of Mrs. Caleb Dow yesterday. She was buried beside her husband. She was 85 years, 7 months old. I went to board with her when I had been to Atkinson Academy a year or more, after I had boarded with Mrs. W. C. Todd's mother.

The old church bell tolled as we entered the church and again as the procession started for the burial ground headed by the same old hearse and the sexton, with long nose, black hair and face drawn down. One could not say, "O Death where is thy sting, O Grave where is thy victory," but this came to my mind: "to blackness and darkness forever!" She asked to have buried with her a ring her husband gave her and a pocket handkerchief I gave her a long time ago. The ring was left on her finger and the pocket handkerchief put in the pocket of the dress she was buried in.

Today I did not go to church, but watched the people going to the little brick church, arriving on foot and riding. It is very near and I love to watch them — It is the event of the week.

Again she writes from the "Clay House, Atkinson:"

July 15, 1901

I enjoyed every moment of Max's visit yesterday. . . . After one of my morning naps there came to my ears the old-time bell, from away up four miles in Hampstead, tolling out the age (not old) of someone passed to the other world. I could have counted, but was so lost in thought I forgot to. It may seem very strange to you, but I do now and always have thought it a kindly thing to do; most people dislike to hear it. I cling to all that is bygone that is not, or does not bring, suffering Mr. Todd I have seen often.

SUNDAY, July 23, 1901

I am fine — The rain has made all nature smile. I have a beautiful bunch of clover blossoms, red and white; the roadside is filled with

many kinds of wild flowers. I love to pick them and name them; this bunch is for Vernon, that one for Velma and another one for Papa. I live my youth over again. I went to a gathering at the Academy one day this week with friends of long ago, walked up some stairs, turned in to the same schoolrooms, looked about the anterooms where we did our experiments — especially electricity, when we all enjoyed seeing each other jump, and then they would scream. I heard the old bell ringing as it used to call us to our rooms to study or to recite. Many are gone to the unknown land — some just ready to go — but many, like Mary Ann Page, are here and are glad to know I love the old place and give me a hearty welcome.

She went back to Atkinson that winter to visit her friend, Mrs. Knight. She wrote on 5 Dec. 1901:

My chamber windows are covered with real Jack Frost, just the kind I remember in my childhood, that made trees and churches and real palaces on the small window panes. . . .

I wish you could have been where you could see us today. We were invited to dine at Hiram Pierce's. He came for us in a horse sled, such as is used in this part of the country to cart wood or hogs or anything in large bulk, with five new warm blankets, and Mrs. Pierce and I got on some of them and putting others over us, away we went through the high snowdrifts, laughing as we rode along without one thing to hold on to, as if we were only ten years old. Just think, she is 78 years old and I am 67! He brought us back at twilight, the sun just going down behind beautiful glowing clouds of every shade of red, and blue sky. The broad fields were covered deep with pure white snow, and there were many places where we could not see the stone walls that outlined them. There were many beautiful great trees, without a leaf, only branches stretching away up against the sky, and we could see a distance of many, many miles and, away off, houses close together. You can not think how I love all this, and I have gained in every way here.

And so she continued, sometimes several times a year, to visit Atkinson. She and I spent a wonderful day there on 24 Aug. 1887, the one hundredth anniversary of the founding of the Academy. Old alumni and their immediate families and descendants to the number of eight hundred came from far and wide to celebrate the event; it was a gala day at Atkinson. Again, on 29 Aug. 1912, I attended the one hundred and twenty-fifth anniversary, but this time without my dear mother, who had died three years earlier. I responded to the toast, "The Children of the Alumni," partly as follows:

When I was asked to respond to the toast, "The Children of the Alumni," my first thought was "impossible," but when I considered the



LLOYD VERNON BRIGGS, 1930

request seriously and realized how much of my happiness and success depended upon my mother, who received her early education and training at this Academy, I felt that I owed it to her to brave a semi-public assemblage and say a few words.

My mother's uncle, Barker B. Kent, was a student here prior to 1830. He it was who told my grandfather about the Academy and its teachers, and about the beautiful town and its healthful situation, and advised him to send his daughter (my mother) or "Sis Kent," as she was then called, to Atkinson Academy. This was in the early fifties. Mr. Todd was Principal of the Academy and the Rev. Jesse Page minister of the town. These names, and the names of many pupils attending at the time, have been familiar in our family since my earliest recollection, and were always spoken with affection. I do not know of any other alumni where the affections have been stronger or the early teachings or influences have lasted longer and even grown more powerful as the years rolled by.

Each year my mother was anxious to make longer visits to Atkinson among the friends of her school days, and to frequent the pastures or fields where she went to stroll as a schoolgirl; and she showed me, as a child of the alumni, where the sweet grass and clover and the prettiest wild flowers grew. Her letters from Atkinson always contained a fresh flower or sweet grass in season.

I have always felt stronger and happier after a visit here, among the people, mostly alumni, whom she loved so dearly. Among those who are left to us, no one represents what the Academy stands for in its teachings and influence more ideally than Miss Mary Ann Page, who, thank God, is still spared to us.

The children of the alumni should always keep up a lively interest in this valuable institution and be ready and anxious to come to its aid whenever it needs assistance of any kind. They should be ready to give all aid necessary to keep up its high standard of teaching and its sweet influence, which is now felt by the children of its alumni all over the land.

I have always continued my interest in the Academy. In 1916 I was elected a Trustee, and the Trustees chose me Vice-President, which position I held until I was elected President, which position I still hold (1936).

My mother, Sarah Elizabeth Kent Briggs, died on 4 May 1909, at her home, 112 Mount Vernon Street, Boston. My father survived her for some years. She had been my chum for more than forty years; we were inseparable.

The following data are from the notices in the papers at that time:

Mrs. Sarah E. E. Briggs, wife of Mr. Lloyd Briggs, died at her home in Boston last Friday, after a long illness, aged 74 years, 7 months, 15 days. . . . Mrs. Briggs is survived by her husband, one son, Dr. L.

Vernon Briggs, and a daughter, Velma Briggs, who during her long illness have given her their most devoted and loving care. The funeral services were held on Tuesday afternoon at two o'clock in St. Andrew's Episcopal Church (Hanover) by Rev. Joseph Dinzey, Pastor, and Rev. D. Harmon Van Allen, D.D., of the Church of the Advent, Boston, private prayers first being said at her Hanover house at one o'clock, where she was taken the evening before. The interment was in the family lot at Hanover. The floral tributes were numerous and beautiful. ("North River Pioneer" of 14 May 1909.)

The death of Mrs. Lloyd Briggs at her residence, 112 Mount Vernon Street, . . . leaves a sorrowing family and a wide circle of friends to mourn her loss. Enriched with all those rare virtues which combined to make up the perfect woman — gentleness, charitableness, naturalness she endeared herself to all who rejoiced in her friendship and companionship. . . .

A dutiful wife and a loving mother has gone to her reward, and those who knew her will cherish in their heart of hearts, while life lasts, the fragrance of her sweet memory. ("The Boston Evening Transcript.")

Mrs. Lloyd Briggs, wife of Lloyd Briggs of Boston and Hanover, was laid to rest in the cemetery at Hanover yesterday. A special train left the South Station in the forenoon, carrying to Hanover the many Boston friends of the family.

The funeral services were at St. Andrew's Church. . . .

The bearers were Joseph S. Sylvester, Hanover; C. A. Vaille, Max Goehr, Messrs. Purdie and James of Boston, and Clifford Ramsdell of New York. ("The Boston Herald.")

Throughout her life my mother retained, to a remarkable degree, her youthful charm and vivacity, her great joy in living and giving. A great many letters written by her old friends after she died testify to the impression her charm and personality made upon them, even from her school days. Her beauty was but the expression of her character. It impressed every one who knew her. Mrs. J. M. Hoyt, a lifelong friend, wrote to us as follows:

I never had a friend I thought quite so much of as your loving mother. She always had a winning way about her that won one to her. I often think how many pleasant days Mrs. Knight and I passed with her in Atkinson. At the table she always liked to talk about her old school days, and it was very amusing to hear her. She looked so pretty at that time that I loved to watch her. That summer she wore a black summer silk, soft and fluffy and very becoming. . . .

Mr. J. A. Remick, who had been one of her classmates, wrote several letters to my sister and me, characterizing her as "one of the dearest women that ever lived." He wrote:

I can remember her when she was sweet sixteen, a marvel of jollity and sunshine — and all through a long life these characteristics elung to her. In all my wide acquaintanee with the girls in my schoolboy days, she had no superior in sweetness, winning ways and saintlike disposition. She scattered sunshine in every footstep, and the boys and girls worshipped the ground she trod on!

She had a heart fraught with all the generous eharacteristies of our nature, and many a good deed was done, many favors dispensed, by her to those that were needy, that the Good Angel on high has placed to her credit in the Book of Life. . . .

Again he says:

Life has no finer lesson to teach us than how to *leave off*.

“I wish you would promise me one thing,” said one friend to another; “that you will not leave off before I do.” And he answered:

That is one thing no man can promise another. We can promise not to *break friendship*, not to cut loose, not to cease loving, not to forget. Isn’t that enough?”

Your mother’s life was an illustrious example of this doctrine. She had more cheery words, scattered more sunshine, than all of her old-time friends and acquaintanees. When a girl, she was the center of attraction, a bunch of loveliness and naturalness. They elustered around her as bees about a hive of honey. The Rev. Mr. Carpenter, a noted English divine, the brother of the present Lord Bishop of Ripon, once said to me, “God pity any woman when she loses her naturalness!” This your mother possessed to an eminent degree and made herself attractive and companionable to her host of friends. . . .

My mother’s strength of character, her sweetness to and thought of others — especially of elders — have all been inherited by her grandson, the only grandchild she ever had. He seems to have all the beautiful qualities which make for friendship and respect which she so fully possessed. (See Chapter XVIII, Lloyd Briggs.)

